3 M's, My Many Mother

Chapter 1

(Kathryn)

"You bit me you fucking bitch!"

Damn right I did! I warned him! I warned him I would if he did it again. Serves him right. Shooting his cum in my face and hair, then he wants to gag me again?

The son of a bitch shoved his prick down my throat one to many times. I hate that. I told him what would happen if he did it again. Besides no blood no foul I say!

"I fucking told you not to do that!" I yelled at him. I heard my blouse rip as I pushed away. He stepped away his cock still dripping as he moved.

"You fucking bit my cock! I heard you were a cold one but no fucking way do you bite me and get away with it bitch!" He yelled.

I reached for my purse and was almost clear of the door, but in my inebriated state I was too slow.

"Let me go you asshole!" I protested. My blouse tore further the bra followed suit. I could feel the fresh air hit my chest.

"Get back in the truck cunt!" He yelled. My date swung me against the fender, my left elbow hit the cold hard steel. I heard the CRACK and then the pain. He heard it too.

"Let me go! Please just leave me alone!" I screamed.

The pain seared through my arm. I'm not sure if it was panic or he was granting my wish. My date zipped himself up and went around to the driver's door. He stood in the darkness cursing me then himself.

"Get in I'll take you home!" He offered getting in the driver's seat.

"Don't you ever come near me again or I'll ..."

He started the engine. In the dim glow of the dash lights I could see him look at me one last time. He hesitated then began driving back to the road. I slumped to the ground awkwardly. My bare tit pressed into the gravel.

He stopped at the asphalt looking back making sure I hadn't changed my mind. In the glare of the headlights I flipped him the bird. He spun around then hit the gas, dirt and gravel flew around some of it hitting me as he left me there on the ground. I could see the tail lights growing dimmer as I tried to stand.

The pain in my left arm caused me to cry out in pain. The gravel dug hard into my knees. Standing, I walked to the edge of the road. Alone in the darkness all I could see was the soft glow of a light in the distance. With just one shoe to be found I tossed the other one and picked up my purse.

Kathryn I thought to myself. What were you thinking?

(Daniel)

As soon as the phone rang I knew it was bad news. Why me? Why tonight I thought? Looking over at Nikki the night wasn't going well and this wasn't helping. I answered the phone.

"Daniel Masters?" It was a man's voice on the other end of the phone.

"This is Dan." My worst fears weren't confirmed but my second worst were. "Thank you. I'll be there as soon as I can."

"Is she alright?" Nikki knew from my end of the conversation it was my mother. She was noticeably upset but tried not to show it. I knew then she was hiding something.

Nikki knew my mom but her reaction was too emotional for such a casual acquaintance. I suspected before and now this was just more proof. I filed it away then started to move back in her direction. Even though Nikki was concerned she was still pissed.

"Kat is hurt but safe. She's down on the Old Mill Road. Not sure where, I just hope I can find the house." I explained watching her carefully.

"I'll go with you. I know that road very well." Nikki looked at me still scared. I also felt she was genuinely offering to help.

"I can drop you off at home. It's on the way." I replied.

The night was shot, I might as well end it now and hope it didn't get any worse.

"Dan this is your mother we're talking about! I think we can be civil for a few more hours." Nikki protested.

There she did it again. It was subtle but clear to me. I was in no mood to argue any further. The last hour was enough. I grabbed my hoodie and a

spare blanket from the closet. With keys in my hand and Nikki leading me I opened her door to the truck.

"Do you know how bad she is?" Nikki asked. Her attention clearly shifted back to my mom.

"He said it looks like she may have a broken arm. Some bruises. He couldn't say much more." I explained.

We drove in relative silence Nikki giving me directions when needed. The oncoming headlights lit the cab of the truck. I could see as upset as Nikki was with me, she was anxious to see Kat. If it wasn't clear earlier I could clearly see it now. That's what I do. I notice things.

It took almost half an hour but we finally found the place. I pulled in the gravel drive. The headlights from the truck illuminating her as she sat on a picnic table in the yard. An older couple was on their front porch looking on as I covered the distance to my mom. Removing the sheet over her shoulders I could assess what damage was done.

Kat was a mess. Her blouse was ripped exposing her chest. The straps no longer attached her bra barely covering her breasts. Her left arm was swollen at the elbow. I could see scrapes and dirt everywhere. She smelled of booze. And then there was this stuff in her hair.

Nikki had moved in behind me and gasped as she looked on. In the shadows of the headlights I placed Kat's right arm through the sleeve of the hoodie. Any attempt to move her left arm resulted in immediate protests. I removed my belt and made a temporary sling and closed the hoodie over her covering her body.

The older couple stood silently watching us from the porch. I walked Kat to the truck and helped her in the passenger side. Nikki followed us there and helped slide mom to the middle before Nikki sat beside her. I retrieved the

sheet and returned it to the woman on the porch she looked at it as if it was infected with the plague.

"Take it with you! I don't want it back." She turned abruptly and went into the house.

"Don't mind her. She's too old to remember what it's like to be young!" He was smiling at the truck as I looked up to him.

"Yeah. Well she isn't that young!" I replied back. I looked back at Kat. I offered my hand with an apology. "Sorry about this."

"Young man, you her son?" He gave me a quizzical look.

"Yes sir. My dad died when I was young. It's just me." I normally don't talk about my life to strangers but I was hoping to explain enough he might understand. My hand still extended.

"Daniel you be easy on her. You hear me?" He took my hand and shook it.

"Yes sir." I released his hand but he held firm. He gave me a serious look taking his time before he spoke. His grip seemed familiar. There was a strength to it but at the same time a softness.

"You do that. You mind me Daniel. That is a special woman." He released my hand but his gaze didn't alter.

"Yes sir. I know that! Thank you again." He kept me locked eye to eye with his. I wanted to look away but I couldn't.

"She needs you son. She loves you!" I had never met this man and yet he seemed oddly familiar.

"Goodnight sir." I said. He smiled and nodded as I left him on the porch. There was something about what he said and the way he said it that unsettled me. I shook it off as I saw my mother setting next to Nikki.

The mood in the truck was quiet. Too quiet. My suspicions became more of a confirmation. I would file that away for later too. It's just the way I am. I backed out the drive the man on the porch looked on as we left.

Heading down the road the smell finally hit me. Mom was either sleeping or passed out. Nikki looked at me nodding in agreement with my assessment of the situation. I rolled the windows down. It was a nice early summer's night and under any other circumstances I would love to be out feeling the wind pass by as I drove. But this wasn't just any night. This was a night from hell and my gut told me it wasn't over yet.

We were almost there. Another couple of miles and at least part of this epic nightmare would be over for now. But, as we all know, these things come in threes. From out of her slumber mom woke and ...

She tried she really did, but with her seat belt on and sleeping she wasn't as quick as she might have been. God was punishing me. I'm not sure why, maybe he and I'll discuss that later. All I know is he's surely not talking to me right now!

Kat puked. Yep. I can't make this up. Sure most of it made it out the window but what didn't make it, you guessed it. Right on Nikki's lap. It's a wonder I didn't kill us all, besides the screams and flailing arms was the putrid smell. I reached under my seat and handed Nikki an old towel I kept for cleaning the windshield. The look she gave me was equal to the one she gave me when I dropped her off at her house.

I opened my door to get out like a gentleman should. Her door was already closed when I reached the hood of the truck.

"Goodnight Daniel. You better get her to the hospital." Nikki said coldly. She turned and walked straight to the front door.

Mom was passed out when we reached the emergency room. I don't know how those people do it. They must see so much worse. When a half dressed drunken women in her late thirties comes in they don't even bat an eye. They had her in a room before I even finished filling out the forms. The whole staff was incredible. Even the orderly was professional as he helped guide her back in the truck.

The cast on her arm was proof that this was a more serious failure than her earlier exploits. I support her efforts but she has to find a better caliber of men. Mom was awake but fortunately she chose not to try to explain. That would come later.

I pulled in the drive and walked to open her door. Her eyes avoided mine. It was almost one in the morning but we weren't done yet. Holding her steady we went into the house. I took her straight to the bathroom. Setting her on the toilet I stood looking at her contemplating my next move.

"I'm sorry Daniel." Kat whispered.

She only called me Daniel when she was mad at me. It was always Dan. Danny if she was really happy or wanted to tease me. My guess is she was mad but at herself not me.

"You ok?" I asked. Her face was flush her eyes bloodshot either from the booze or crying it really didn't make much difference right now.

"It hurts!"

"I'm sure it does, but right now we need to get you cleaned up. Here let me help you." I replied a bit peeved. I bent to remove her shoes only just now remembering she wasn't wearing any.

"Didn't the doctor give you a prescription for the pain?" Mom asked. She looked desperate.

"He did, but, he said because you had been drinking not to give it to you until morning. I can give you some aspirin when we're done here."

"Done with what here?" Kat asked still a bit loopy. Mom swatted my hand as I tried to remove the hoodie covering her.

"You need a shower." I explained as calmly as I could.

"How the hell am I going to do that?" She protested.

"You aren't, we are!" I tried to be low key.

"Like hell WE are!" Kat protested her eyes open and defiant.

"Mom, you're dirty and, you stink like vomit!" I explained firmly. I wanted to mention the cum in her hair but thought better of it. "You're getting a shower before you go anywhere! This night has been a real nightmare. I am in no mood to argue with you too. It's going to happen! Just like you tell me. Get over it." She started to respond but my stare let her know it was futile.

Carefully I removed the hoodie and threw it on the floor. Next came her blouse which I just cut off her as well as the remnants of her bra.

"Are you happy now?" Kat looked at me as I saw her naked tits for the first time.

Sure I've seen her in a bathing suit or a bra or hidden by some thin material, well you get the picture. But never in my eighteen and a half years have I ever seen them out in the open.

I know I shouldn't say this but I was happy. Just a little bit. Maybe for the first time tonight. I could think of many better scenarios to see them for the first time but I was happy just the same. I broke loose staring at them and started to remove more clothes.

"Well are you?" Kat repeated waiting for my answer.

I thought of saying something to remind her why we were here. But I didn't. I remembered the old man on the porch. I knew she was still drunk. My mother, my sober mother was way to straight laced to be asking such things.

"They are very nice." I looked her in the eyes and answered calmly.

Kat held my gaze for an extended moment, and without blushing, smiled broadly. And yes, I noticed. That's what I do. My mother, for whatever her reason, was happy I approved.

I lifted her up and removed her skirt. I started to remove her panties, her good hand gripped my wrist.

"That's far enough young man I am still your mother!" Kat protested. It seemed however happy she was exposing her tits was drawing the line here. I thought about arguing but I knew it was pointless. Besides she was buzzed and still not thinking clearly.

"Stay here I'll be right back." I said. I left her standing and went to the utility room. I came back with a plastic bag and some duct tape. "I need to cover your cast so it doesn't get wet."

Kat lifted her cast and I sealed it off, the whole time trying not to just stare at her tits. Turning on the shower I removed my shoes, socks, and shirt. I then reached in and tested the water.

"I need to pee!" She said. I smiled at her. She now knew what I thought of earlier.

"Be my guest. I'll wait in the hall." I replied.

I even closed the door most of the way while I waited. I could hear her struggle knowing she wouldn't ask for help. I heard the toilet flush. I was afraid she might fall she was so drunk but all I heard was her cussing. She called my name.

I opened the door her panties were at her feet. Mom boldly stepped out of them leaving them on the floor. This was a side of her I had never seen. As her son I daren't look, but as a young man this was torture.

"Not a word you hear me?" Kat glared at me. She sounded almost sober. I didn't need to answer. I helped her in under the shower head the warm water seemed to sober her up even more. Still dressed in my shorts I followed her in and closed the door.

I started with her hair the dried cum was easy to remove but the smell took two applications. Moving down I had her hold her left arm up so the water would run off. Her shoulders and right arm were easy. Her back was more of a challenge. The challenge was stopping before I reached her sexy ass. I wanted to go slowly and savor these moments. I wanted to remember every inch I covered. But I had a mission to accomplish and my pleasure wasn't part of it.

Maybe God was answering my prayers, because when I reached her breasts all I could think of is how great this new day was. I washed them as if they were my own. I never once fondled or made a big deal of it. Sure I wanted to. It took every ounce of restraint to resist. But I had too much respect for her. Even when she let slip a light moan I resisted temptation.

I was half way home and was feeling pretty good about finishing this without embarrassing either one of us. Standing to one side I started on her ass. The soap and warm water enhanced every contour. When I went down her crack the second time I noticed her eyes were closed and she pushed back ever so slightly. I had to move on or this was going to get serious.

I shifted to her right side my right hand slid smoothly across her stomach and then slightly lower. My fingers felt the small scar where she had her tubes tied after I was born. She tensed up at that moment then relaxed as I worked back up to her stomach again.

I looked down her eyes closed tightly her breathing sporadic. I moved to the outside of her thigh down to her knee and started back up I stopped just short of her vagina when her hand gripped my wrist.

"Lake Danamanski" The voice in my head was back. What was it saying and why? I had no idea what it meant.

"No please!" Kat held my wrist firmly in place.

"Lake Danamanski"

There, it's in my head again, but it didn't make any sense. I never heard of the place. Mom moved my hand higher and any thought of some stupid lake was now forgotten. I could see her spread her legs ever so slightly. Mom's hand guided mine along her inner thigh to her vagina.

"Mom!" I managed to protest. Her grip was strong on my wrist.

"Kathryn! It's me Danny!" I called out. I was sure she was drunk now but her hand held me still.

"SSHHH!" She replied. It was but a whimper but I obeyed just the same.

I feebly tried to pull back just to test her decision. Kat held me firm. And then it happened. Mom put my hand directly on her pussy. I have kissed several girls and touched only one set of tits, Nikki's, and that wasn't about to happen again any time soon.

The problem is I have never seen or touched a real pussy. Worse I didn't know what to do now that I have. With one hand on her ass the other was over her vagina cupping it like a baseball.

Kat slipped her hand over mine and soon her legs spread even further. Before long her hand was guiding mine and with her help I explored her sex. I was inexperienced but not stupid.

This was no longer a shower. In and out, around and over, up and down she took me places I had only dreamed about. She put two of her fingers inside and then pulled them out and had me repeat it. She thrust her hips and pressed my hand hard against her mound.

"Yes. Oh God yes!" She hissed in my ear as I bent over to reach her. The water was still pulsing over her, the soap long gone but it was wet and it was slippery, and she was moving faster than ever. I knew it was wrong but in a strange way it felt so right.

Nature has a funny way of taking over when you least expect it. My left hand was following the motion still gripping her ass. Something clicked in place in my head, maybe it was the voice I had been hearing lately?

My left hand I found the soap and lathered it up and eased it down the crack of her ass. When I reached her asshole I lightly touched it. With two fingers in her pussy and one against her asshole she started bucking back and forth screaming in pain.

No wait! It must be pleasure as she kept saying "Yes. Yes. Yes". Her hand was inside of mine rubbing further up the slit.

"I'm cumming Danny. I'm cumming!" Kat announced.

There was no doubt she knew it was me now. I watched as her stomach tightened then released then tightened again. Mom pulled my fingers from her pussy and clamped her legs tight. Her body trembled as I reached out to hold her up. Turning she kissed me square on the lips her tongue forcing its way in my mouth. My hands went around her to keeping her from falling.

I had witness my first female orgasm. I may have even helped? I had my first French kiss, and I'm embarrassed to say, I came myself while touching a woman! The problem is, the woman is my mother.

I stood holding her as she fell against my chest. Her nipples felt glorious against my skin. I turned off the water bringing us both back to the reality of what just happened.

There was so much I wanted to say. She looked up. Her eyes now looking for forgiveness. She started to say something but I beat her to it by putting a finger to her lips. I kissed her forehead.

"Let's get you dried up and into bed. You need to get some sleep." I grabbed a towel and helped her dry off. There was no protesting now. Kat helped but I got to feel her tits through the towel and her whole ass.

I grabbed another towel for myself. My remaining clothes were soaked but I helped her get dressed and gave her some strong over the counter pain pills the doctor suggested. I went upstairs to dry off and clean myself up. Kat asked me to come down and see her before I went to bed. Slipping on a pair of boxers. I headed downstairs.

Kat had dried her hair and brushed her teeth. She was sitting on the edge of her bed in one of my tee shirts only the right arm through the sleeve. It was so big and so long on her it barely covered her tits and went well past her ass. Beside her mom had a pair of panties. She held them out to me.

"Will you help me put these on?" Mom asked politely.

I hesitated but not for lack of wanting to assist her. Did she want me to because she needed my help or was this in some way a reward for what happened in the shower?

I placed the panties at her feet but instead of slipping them up her legs I held my left hand out.

"Stand up." I suggested. Now she hesitated. Tilting her head in reply. I took her right hand and helped her stand. When she was erect I took the sides of the panties and slid them up her legs under the tee shirt and hopefully into their proper place. She watched intently at my actions and further more at my expressions.

"Daniel please kiss me goodnight!" Kat whispered. I could see her eye lids were getting heavy but she was still holding on. I stood and started to kiss her on the cheek. With her right hand she took my jaw and moved it in front of her mouth. "I think for tonight we are beyond that don't you?"

Kat pulled me in for a real kiss. A man and woman kiss. I did my best before she broke free. A happiness I have seldom seen crossed her face. "Daniel stay with me tonight. I don't want to be alone."

I wanted to argue. I should have argued, I should have been stronger. Kat seemed so fragile at that moment. With no will to fight I caved in. I helped Kat find a comfortable position for her broken arm. Turning off the light I slipped in behind her.

"I love you Daniel!" Mom said. I could hear the emotion in her voice. Calculating my options I replied.

"I love you mom!"

I was up early. The sun was just above the horizon. I washed the truck inside and out. Fortunately most of what was inside was on the vinyl surfaces. I called my uncle George and told him a sanitized version of what had taken place. George and his wife Sally lived on the side of the mountain but were out of town at a convention. He said they would stop in Sunday afternoon on the way home from the airport.

Suggesting I stay with mom he gave me the day off.

Back in the house I started the coffee. I could hear mom starting to stir so I looked in on her.

"You ready for that pill yet?" I couldn't help but smile. She closed her eyes and tried to go back to sleep.

Finishing outside I went back in to check on mom again. The coffee was ready I set out the prescription and started a load of laundry. When I finished sorting my clothes I knocked on the door.

"Come in." Mom replied. Opening it I stuck just my head in.

"You ready for some coffee?" I asked politely. I saw her wince as she moved to sit up.

"You have anything stronger?" She tried to smile.

"It's with your coffee. I'll make some eggs and toast, it says not to take it on an empty stomach." I turned and went to the kitchen as she stood. The eggs were started the toast just popped up when she sat on the stool.

"Dan about last night. I'm sorry! I ... we should talk!" Kat struggled to explain.

"Yeah I figured you might say that." I replied.

The problem is I wasn't sure what part of the night she wanted to talk about.

"I have been making some poor choices lately. I'm sorry for that too. It won't happen again I promise." Mom said not able to look me in the eye.

I was waiting to hear which choices she thought were poor. She finally looked at me for a response. I slid the eggs and toast in front of her as she took her pills.

"Exactly which choices are you talking about?" I asked.

When you are a social outcast like me, and a bit of a nerd as well, you learn quickly in life to never offer information until you know specifically what the other person is asking.

"You know? These losers I have been going on dates with these last couple of years." She looked at me reading my expressions.

Shit! Damn is she good. I can fool anyone but her. Well, and my grandmother Eve. "What did you think we were talking about?" Kat asked waiting for an answer.

"Just how much do you remember from last night?" I asked without emotion.

Answering a question with a question was an old trick she rarely let slide. This could get interesting.

"I remember that asshole broke my arm. I remember setting on a picnic table. I remember being in the hospital." She offered.

"Is that all?"

"Is there more?" Mom asked.

This was how it was between us at times. Like a game of chess always positioning, never exposing your flank. Now she was answering a question with a question. I knew I had to give her something.

"You remember going to a stranger's house half dressed? You remember barfing on Nikki's dress and my truck?" I stopped there hoping I had given her enough to think about.

"Nikki? Oh Dan! She was...you didn't... I threw up on her?" Kat was wracking her brain trying to remember.

"Yes she was here, and I'm not sure what you think Nikki and I did or didn't do, but we only talked. And yes, you... on her dress." I grinned.

"Oh shit! Shit! Shit! Shit!" Kat was starting to see the picture. "Well. I'll just have buy her a new dress. You can take it to her?" She insisted.

Kat was red with embarrassment. I wasn't sure if she thought it would help me in some way to deliver it or if she would be embarrassed to do it herself.

"Well we should probably replace the sheet from those people too, and I think you will have to deliver the dress. I don't think she is too happy with me right now." I explained.

"Oh Daniel you didn't. She is such a nice girl. She is so perfect for you." Mom said giving me that disappointed look.

See I told you she called me Daniel when she wasn't happy with me! I figure it's time to get outside and cut the grass before we have another one of 'those' conversations.

"You should probably lay down, those pills will knock you on your ass! I talked to Uncle George he gave me the day off. He and Aunt Sally will stop by tomorrow on the way back from the airport. I'm going to cut the grass. If you need me I'll be outside." I said. I moved around the counter to leave.

"Danny there is one thing you didn't mention. Don't think for a minute we won't talk about that also." Mom gave me that sly look now. She stood and pulled me close and kissed my cheek. "Still nice try. I appreciate your sensitivity and maturity on the matter."

I had a lot to think about as I cut the grass, and plenty of time to do it.

(Kathryn)

I took Dan's advice and went back to bed as the pills took over. God he is such a great kid. Closing my eyes I thought back to when Duane and I got married, I was so happy. After my miscarriage. I thought kids were off the table. Fate had a plan for me even though I didn't want to accept it.

Here I was in the hospital, in the maternity ward. Duane hesitated to show him to me knowing I would be emotional. We discussed all of the options. Duane was brutally honest with me. He laid it all out. I'll admit there were moments I didn't want to accept the responsibility but when I saw Daniel in that incubator I knew what my answer was.

"You tell them to do whatever it takes to save our baby!" I said. That was over eighteen years ago and although there have been difficult days, even weeks. I have never regretted one moment of his life.

Duane worked for his Uncle George in construction. Twelve years ago we were in a terrible accident. Duane pulled Danny from the wreckage. They talked briefly at the side of the road. I was trapped. Duane tried to free me but I could see the strength drain from his body as an ashen color came over him.

"Make Dan a man Kat! Promise me!" Duane said as he collapsed.

I screamed in vain as he fell to his knees and then laid sprawling on the grass. The paramedics took Duane. Daniel refusing to leave me until they cut me free.

God he is such a great kid, no, a young man. He has fought every day of his life to overcome every obstacle. As a preemie he fought for life. As an infant he fought to stand. As a toddler he fought to learn. As a child he fought to keep up even when we held him back a year. As a teenager he fought to be

accepted. And now as a young man he is fighting to learn how to be independent. To be his own man.

George and Sally have been my closest supporters. Without them I don't know what I would have done. George sold me the house we live in for half of what he could sold it for on the market. It's a small house tucked in the corner of his first development. It was the house he and Sally lived in at one time.

Thoroughly modern in all ways it's still small. With only one bedroom on the main floor and one large room upstairs. The original living room and dining room have been converted into a great room with the kitchen in an open floor plan. There is a bathroom on each level and a laundry and mud room on the main floor. There is a two car garage and a shed on the almost one acre of land. The property is in a pie shape the house nestled in the center of mature trees. To the east is an upper middle class neighborhood George built.

Dan now works for George's construction company after school and on weekends except during basketball. He wanted to play football like his closest buddies. At six foot three and barely 165 pounds George and I both thought it best he avoided the punishment and risk of injury of that sport. He put up a fuss at first but decided since practice was during summer break it would cut into working full time and maybe even his yearly trip to Florida to be with his grandparents Eve and Charles.

The basketball coaches always wanted him to play but he was so gangly and just not that coordinated. As with any challenge Dan took it personally and although he is no star he did play in several games last year. As a senior I expect he might make the first team this year.

My mother-in-law Eve (Sally's older sister) has been both a source of support and conflict. Charles her husband has been very generous and supportive. They live on the coast in Florida. Charles was a partner with George many years ago but decided to move south and became a realtor instead.

He is a big man loud and bellicose, always smiling, drinking, and eating. A big fat teddy bear that loves to golf. Eve couldn't be more opposite. Tall for a woman with her build she is maybe five nine. Slender and always tan. An effervescent personality she can be outgoing and yet at times reserved. She suffers no fools and has an air of confidence and grace without being bitchy.

An exercise and fitness fan and yet she isn't devoted to it. Still she looks athletic without giving up a feminine look. All of that has paid off and maybe even a few surgical enhancements to help her look closer to fifty than her real age of sixty.

Financially secure Eve comes back home about every three months or so usually staying for about a week. She stays with Sally but is a regular visitor here as well. During the summer they pay to have Dan visit. It started when Duane passed away. Danny's stay was just for a week then. Now it's closer to a month. The last five years I have gone down for a week to be with them.

I have few close friends. Mostly people I know from either work or sitting in the stands at school games and functions. I work for the Turner's and elderly husband and wife team that own their own insurance company. There is just the three of us now. They do the selling and I do the books. I also update policies and answer the phones. Just a few months ago they told me they were looking for a buyer for the business.

I haven't told anyone yet hoping they would hang on a bit longer. I worry about many things but this scares me, I have been insulated in that little office for eleven years. Maybe that's why I have been so irresponsibly lately.

Last night was so not me. I rarely drink and never to excess. Not like when I was a teenager. I'm not an easy lay. I've had a few encounters over the last five years but nothing close to serious. Most offers are from married men pretending they aren't or like the asshole last night use to be and should never be again.

I'm not desperate. I just need a diversion. Something to keep me from these feelings that started months ago. Then there is Daniel, I never planned last night. The problem is I'm not as strong as people think I am. What if last night wasn't because I was drunk? What if I am wrong and what I'm doing pushes Daniel away?

(Daniel)

Not sure how much I need to worry about mom, this isn't like her. From the day my dad passed away she has always been my rock. Life has been good for me but never easy. I was a preemie when I was born. I remember Kat never letting me use that as an excuse.

Kat has taken the approach, if I ever got down or tried to feel sorry for myself she always made me try. I learned that giving your best isn't always enough. Sometimes you need to be better than that.

Kat taught me to try and then try some more. She taught me if the first way didn't work to find another. I learned that if working harder wasn't the answer working smarter might do it. She also taught me you can't learn everything in a book. Sometimes you do need to do the hard work, maybe even get hurt. Sports are like that. I know how to play but my body doesn't always do what I want it to when I tell it to. So I struggle with it but I always get back up and try again. Always.

Through thick and thin she was with me. Late nights at the library. Bandaging me when I came home battered and bruised. Holding me when I needed a hug. Kicking me out the door when I need to face my fears. Doting on me when I was younger but adding responsibility as I could handle it.

I know how to cook, clean, and do laundry. I now pay all the bills and handle all of our money. I make sure we save and still are able to splurge occasionally. I was held back a year. It use to bother me for a while but I'll admit it was the right decision. I am an A- to B+ student going into my senior year. I play basketball and work part time for my uncle.

I never had expensive toys as a kid. We still don't have a computer at home and never had a Play Station. I learned that the friends of mine that do, either never use them or always do. Going to a restaurant is still a treat.

The only cell phone I have belongs to the construction company. My friends may have more money and stuff but I am happy with my life, something most of them can't say. I have a great Aunt and Uncle. Awesome grandparents and, a mother that I love and respect.

I put the lawn mower in the shed and headed back in to check on Kat and make some lunch. I found her on the couch dozing so I made some sandwiches with her favorite salad and took them out on the patio. Gently shaking her I watched as she came around.

"I made you some lunch. It's on the patio when you're ready." I said softly. Kat stood up and headed to the bathroom. "You need any help?"

She looked at me as if I was suggesting something inappropriate.

"So that's how it's going to be?" Kat asked accusingly.

I wasn't sure if she was offended or was in pain but this wasn't like her. Mom could take a joke as well as dish it out. The only problem is I wasn't joking, I just wanted her to know I was there for her. I closed the gap. I learned many things in school and one of them was to stand up for myself.

"This is how it's. You're hurt. You have no use of one arm. You're in pain. You're frustrated, and maybe a bit embarrassed by it all. Now you can get mad at me if you want but that will not change your predicament." I kissed her cheek, sending a signal that last night was over. "If the positions were reversed would you offer to help me?" I challenged her.

Mom's attitude softened recognizing my offer was sincere.

"I'm sorry. Yes I would." She said demurely.

"Good now let me rephrase the question. If you find you need assistance I'm at your service." I held the door open and closed it as she entered. I didn't need to wait long.

"Dan, can you come in?" Mom called.

I took a deep breath to calm myself and opened the door. She had her robe held high her panties partially pulled up but way crooked. I stood behind her and slid them into place. I didn't ogle but I did look. She knew I did as she watched me in the mirror.

"I'll meet you on the patio." I explained.

"Dan can you help me wash my hand?" There was a quiver in her voice.

I went to the sink and started the water. I grabbed her special soap and worked a lather in my hands. Kay slipped her hand between mine until it could no longer be seen. She held it over the sink as I washed it gently. Her fingers spread I slipped mine between working the lather along the sides.

The softness of her hand drew me in. her delicate fingers kept me there. I was taking way too long for such a simple undertaking but I didn't care and she made no move to stop me. It was the ringing of the phone that interrupted the task. I quickly rinsed our hands and grabbed the towel wrapping it around hers. I reached the phone and answered it.

"Hello?"

"Daniel. How is Kat?" Eve asked bluntly.

"Eve! Hello how are you doing?" I said.

Eve refuses to be addressed as Grandma or Grandmother. No Gamma or any such variation. Her name is Evelyn but except for Charles even that is off limits. It's simply Eve.

We talked and I repeated the story I gave Uncle George. Eve suggested she would be coming in to help Kat for a couple of weeks. I use the word suggested loosely. She more or less decided she was coming and that was that.

Eve has a way of getting her way with just the words she uses and the inflection in her voice. I know I'm doomed when she calls me darling, as in, "Darling would you please ..." How can you say no? Or even get mad? There are more but you get the picture. She is smooth. That's for sure.

"Great I'll see you then." Kat was waiting in the hall as I hung up the phone. "Eve is coming in on Tuesday. Sounds like she wants to stay here!"

"You ok with that? You may have to give her your room." Mom asked.

Rumor was years ago before my dad passed away they would hardly even talk. As a kid they seemed to get along fine. The last five years or so they seem close. But now they are even closer. I think I know how close but I have no proof.

"I think it's great! We can make it work. Come on let's go eat." I said cheerily.

We went out to the patio and sat down for lunch. I thought for sure she would want to talk about last night but she was either still under the influence of the pain pills or had other things on her mind. Maybe it was Eve.

"How's the arm? Still in pain?" I asked. She looked down at her elbow in the sling.

"The worst is over. Just a dull throbbing right now. Every once in a while I have a moment. What are your plans for the day?" Mom asked.

"Well I usually work on Saturday so I have no plans if you need me. If not I might go see some buddies."

"I thought we might go shopping but we can wait until tomorrow. You go have some fun. I'll see you for dinner?" Mom asked more than stated.

"Dinner for sure. I'll be back by five." I picked up the dishes to take them in the house.

"Just set them on the counter and I'll finish cleaning up." She called after me.

I took them inside but stayed long enough to rinse them and load the dishwasher. Saying my goodbyes I headed out the door.

I found Kyle and Carlton at his house. They were going to the school football field to play a game of flag football. Kyle suggested I come as they were always looking for extra players. I tagged along planning to just hang out. When we got to the field there were plenty of others and soon I found myself on the field.

They wanted me to play on the line but it was soon clear that my lack of weight and strength wasn't a good fit. Carlton had me go out as a receiver. I only caught three passes but one was a thing of beauty. We headed back to

Carlton's house. Once we arrived we went out back and were setting on the deck when Carlton nodded to Kyle.

Carlton headed inside and soon I saw what they were being so stealthy about. Carlton had a joint in his hand, a big one. Lighting it up he took a couple of drags and handed it to Kyle.

"You up for a hit?" Carlton asked me. I won't go into all of the conflicting arguments on the issue, suffice to say it wasn't my thing. Still being a teenager and hanging with friends the desire to fit in was strong.

"Na. I'm good. Thanks for the offer." I looked at the joint as Kyle offered it to me. I held up my hand as he handed it back to Carlton.

"You don't know what you're missing. That is some primo stuff. Grown locally you know?" Kyle offered.

I wanted to. Just once. Just to see for myself. Fuck I am almost nineteen. Don't be such a pussy I said to myself. Carlton saw my indecision and handed it to me. I took it and held it. I was looking at it knowing this was wrong.

"Daniel be a man step up!" There it was again. That same voice I have been hearing for the last six months. I looked at the joint one last time. How would I explain this to her. She would know. She always knows. How could I tell her after all these years I did it because someone else was doing it. I handed the joint to Kyle.

"I appreciate the offer but I'll pass. You two enjoy it I need to get home." I stood and walked to the drive leading to the front of the house.

"Pussy!" Carlton shouted.

"Mama's boy! Kyle followed. I wanted to go back and punch them both but knew from my earlier lessons in life I usually lose those battles. Instead I just flipped them the bird.

I walked back in the house a quick glance for Kat turned up empty. I went to her bedroom, not there. The bathroom door was partially open what looked like a foot came into sight. I rushed in only to find her on the tile floor in tears. She held her hand up indicating I shouldn't come closer.

"Are you ok? Are you hurt?" I asked desperate for an answer. I sat on the edge of the whirlpool tub. I saw the mess on the floor. Kat she was sitting in it.

"I had an accident!" Mom sobbed. "And then I stepped on my robe ..." She looked helpless as she tried to explain.

"It's ok. Let me help you up and I'll take care of this. No big deal as long as you aren't hurt." It took some time but we got her cleaned up for the moment and I cleaned the bathroom.

"You still up for dinner? I was planning on taking you out. We could order in or I could whip something up. Your choice." I offered. I sat beside her on the couch her hand in mine.

"I'll need to take a shower now if we go out." Kat looked over. Her meaning wasn't lost on me.

"Well you better get started cause I'm getting hungry!" I teased her.

I wrapped her arm in plastic. I undressed her and sent her on her way. When she was done I helped dry her off and dress her. She watched me intently as she stood naked in front of me. I looked but didn't stare, she was amused at the constant grin I had.

I could tell there were moments the anticipation of me moving to the next part of her body affected her. I think we both enjoyed it more than we should. I took my own shower and met her in the kitchen.

Kat looked nice in the flower print dress she wore. I picked a casual place with good food at reasonable price. After dinner we drove back home. After a pit stop we walked the half mile to the ice cream stand. The night was warm and clear, the stars were out. The line at the counter was long. It seems we weren't the only ones who thought of this.

We walked home as we enjoyed our cones. I could tell she was getting fatigued. I gave her another round of pills and let her lie on the couch as I sat in the recliner. We watched the latest movie that came in the mail.

I made sure she was tucked in before I headed upstairs myself. I finished in the bathroom and turned out the light slipping into bed. It had been an interesting couple of days. I lay awake in the dark replaying the last two days in my mind. The voice I kept hearing concerned me. I thought I knew who it was, but that can't be possible, dad is dead. Am I going crazy? What about that lake place? I need to go online and check that out.

I was just nodding off when I heard the steps creak. In the faint light I could see her form at the side of the bed.

"Are you ok?" I asked. Setting up I turned on the lamp.

"Can I join you?" Mom asked.

I could tell she was still upset and fragile. I pulled back the covers and she slid in front of me. I turned off the lamp.

"I love you Daniel!" Kat whispered.

"I love you mom!" I replied knowing it was what she needed to hear.

For a few months after my father died mom had let me sleep with her. That was well over ten years ago and we have never repeated it since. Now it has happened two nights in a row. Kathryn is a complex woman, she's tried to hide it but to no avail.

She thinks I don't know, but I do. Not just about me but all of it. This is where the real story begins.

Sunday we were off to go shopping right after lunch. We stopped by the linen store and found a sheet that was much better than the one they sent home with me. Kat shopped at several clothing stores before she found what she wanted. We then bought some groceries before heading back to Mill Road.

Finding the house in the daylight was a cinch. I offered to deliver the package while she waited in the truck. Kat readily accepted.

I walked to the front door, the screen was closed but the main door was open. I knocked.

"Daniel? What brings you here?" The old man opened the door. "Come on in." I stepped into a large foyer to the right was the living room to the left was a room that looked like a study. Trophies lined the shelf above the fireplace.

"I wanted to replace the sheet your wife sent home with me." I explained. I held out the package.

"You know you didn't have to do that?" He replied.

"That may be, but I was raised to respect things that belong to others. So you see I did have to do it." I replied. The old man smiled, a wide grin spread across his face.

"You wait right here, let me fetch mother." He led me into the den. I looked around at all the pictures on the wall. Teams of almost every sport, football, basketball and, baseball covered the walls. Trophies made out to Coach Andersen. I don't believe it. This is the house of the most successful coach in the school's history.

"Daniel this is my better half Gladys. Honey this is Daniel. Duane's son." Coach said.

It all made sense now! He knew my dad. He knew who I was! I extended my hand.

"Please to meet you again ma'am." I said happily. She wasn't friendly but she did take my hand. It was warm and soft. It almost reminded me of my mothers.

"Mother be polite he has something for you." Coach explained.

The old man winked at me as he pulled her close. He called her mother again. I remember watching Andy Hardy movies with Mickey Rooney. Even back then husbands called their wife mother if they had kids. How quaint.

"Ma'am I would like to replace the sheet you gave me. The receipt is in the bag if you would like to exchange it for another pattern." I offered her the package.

"I told you to keep it. You didn't have to buy me another!" She snipped.

"Your husband said the same thing, but as I explained to him it's something I had to do. It's just the way I was raised!" Gladys looked at Mr. Andersen and gave him a scowl. She smiled at me.

"So the woman that was here Friday night was the one that taught you to have manners like that?" She asked. Gladys was waiting to hear my response.

"Well I'm not inclined to discuss my dirty laundry in public, but since you knew my dad." I nodded to the old man.

"I suppose it isn't easy raising a teenager on your own these days. Finding the right man to replace the love of your life, probably isn't any easier. It's never happened before and my guess it won't happen again anytime soon. It's too bad to. She really is a fantastic person." I looked out the window making sure Kat was still ok. Looking back at them. "I only hope I can find someone as great as she is."

Gladys took the package and set it on the hall table.

"Can you boys give me a few minutes there is something I need to do?" With that she left us in the den.

"So you knew my dad Mr. Andersen?" I was trying to be polite.

"Andy, please, or Coach if you prefer." He walked to a picture on the wall pointing out my dad.

"Played football for me. Was pretty good. Even played at college a couple of years before he started to work for his uncle. What he lacked in talent he made up for in smarts and effort. One of the best I ever coached. You play?"

"Basketball. Kind of a sixth man position. Might have a chance at starting this year but no guarantee just because I'm a senior."

"Looks to me you just need to bulk up a bit. Ever thought of playing football? Basketball players usually make great receivers."

Gladys came back in the house.

"Daniel, your mom is waiting for you. Thank you for stopping by. The sheet will be a treasured gift." I shook his hand and headed to the front door. Gladys taking my hand as she led me that way.

"You ever decide you want to play football you come see me. I'd be happy to help." Andy offered. I nodded in acknowledgment.

Gladys opened the screen door and stopped me on the porch. Pulling me close. "You take care of her she's a special woman Daniel!" Gladys squeezed my hand firmly to make her point.

"Yes ma'am. I will." I replied. We were rolling down the road when Kat spoke.

"What did you say to her?" Mom asked pointedly. I looked over to see what she was talking about.

"What do you mean?" I asked confused.

"She came out and apologized to me! What did you tell her Daniel?" Kat took my hand in hers.

"I told her I love you Kathryn!" I squeezed her hand. Mom looked deep into my eyes and seemed affected by my reply.

'Smooth one Sport' the voice in my head was back. I shook it off as we headed to Nikki's.

Mom smiled all the way until we got to the place in the road where she puked. We followed the same route as the last time only this time the without the same results. I dreaded this stop as much as mom probably dreaded going to the last one. I wanted so bad to tease her but thought better of it. I stopped on the street. Nikki's car was in the drive I guessed she was home.

"You coming with me?" Kat asked, she looked nervous again.

"I think its best I don't for both of our causes. You go. Take your time. I'll wait right here for you." I replied.

After the Friday night I had with Nikki, and mom with her date, getting them together may be a good thing. Kathryn didn't know I knew and I wasn't about to show my hand yet. I went around and helped her out of the truck handing her the dress.

(Kathryn)

Dan dropped me at Nikki's house and waited in the truck. I was nervous for two reasons. The dress of course but there was more, much more. I rang the doorbell torn between wanting to see her and not. The door opened. There she was, my stomach flipped.

"Mrs. Masters. What brings you here?" Nikki looked over my shoulder. I could tell she saw Dan at the truck.

"I brought you a dress to replace the one I. ... I ruined. That and to apologize." I explained. I shifted nervously on my feet. I saw her look back over my shoulder again.

"Please come in. Mom and dad are out on the boat with Aunt Becky and Tina. Kyle is over at Carlton's, probably getting high again." She explained obviously happy to see me.

I stepped into the foyer she looked at Dan one last time before she closed the door. I knew I shouldn't have come inside the moment the door closed. I couldn't help it and neither could she. Mentioning Becky told me that.

"I see your arm is in a cast. Does it hurt?" Nikki moved closer and kissed me lightly. Her breasts brushed my cast.

I hesitated just to see how far she was going to take this. I hoped for the best.

"Not so much during the day. Nights are worse for some reason." I looked down at my sling then back up at her moist lips. We kissed again this time a bit harder.

"Do I want to know?" Nikki looked at me with interest.

"Some asshole I should have never been out with in the first place. He got me drunk. I blame myself for that. He then tried to gag me with his cock. So I bit him!" I confessed. I couldn't help it. I needed to tell someone. Besides I didn't want her to think it was something else entirely.

"You didn't!" Nikki squealed in reply.

"I did and I would do it again. This is worth it!" I said proudly as I raised my cast. "What about you? I assume since he is in the truck things didn't go as planned?" I pried just a bit. If Dan wouldn't talk maybe Nikki would.

"I won't say much. What you don't know you can't tell him by mistake. Many a fool in school underestimated Dan. We can't be so careless. I'll say this he is a tough cookie. I'm going to let him stew for a while. School doesn't start for a couple of months. You ok with that?" Nikki asked.

"Of course. You know I appreciate it don't you?" I replied. Nikki flashed a naughty smile.

"Kat you really want this for him don't you? This is important to you. You love him that much don't you?" Nikki said.

She pulled me to herself my arm making it a bit awkward. Her lips found mine our tongues danced. I was flush with desire and so was she. But now wasn't the time for this.

"Nikki he can never know. Never!" I hissed in her ear. She gave me another quick embrace.

"I promise. Remember I have my own problems if he finds out." She whispered in my ear. As we separated I could see her desire.

"I guess we both do!" I agreed. I held out the dress. "I hope you like it. I hope it fits you."

Nikki took the box and led me to the kitchen. Placing the box on the counter she opened it.

"You know the other dress isn't ruined I just had it cleaned, that's all." The lid came off the box she pulled the dress free. "Kathryn, it's lovely!"

Knowing we were alone in the house relieved any anxiety of her using my first name. I could tell she was truly happy with my choice. She held it in front of her body it looked great.

"I should put it on! Let's see how it fits?" Nikki giggled.

She grabbed her top and pulled it over her head. Next she slipped her shorts down. I still can't believe a twenty year old young lady has feelings for me. She was in her bra and panties. Nothing revealing, but it seems everything young ladies wear today is sexy. Her full breasts filling her bra and then some. My pussy dampened. Nikki slipped on the dress standing right there in the kitchen.

"Well?" She asked.

"It looks great on you. Do you really like it?" I hoped she did I made Dan take me to several stores to find the right one.

"I love it. Come see for yourself!" Nikki took my free hand and brought it up under the dress and placed it on her moist panties.

"Nikki! Stop that! Dan is in the truck! I need to get going." I acted shocked. I pulled my hand slowly away but only after I gave her pussy a quick squeeze.

"That's right he is. Wait I have an idea." Nikki pulled the dress off and removed her bra. Her 36 C's sat firm on her chest. Her puffy nipples extended. "Suck them for me. Make my nipples hard Kat!"

I couldn't believe she said that. Not now. Not here. Nikki was so adamant resisting was pointless. I gripped one breast and massaged it until she gave out a soft moan. Her tits are so sensitive. I sucked first one and then the other. Just like clockwork her nipples became hard and extended. Her moans

became louder. I released her tits from my hand and mouth. Nikki growled in disappointment.

Nikki pulled the dress back in place. She smoothed the material her nipples could be seen from a blind person a mile away.

"You better get going before I spread your legs and eat you for dinner!" Nikki teased

"Nikki please. You know..." I looked at her hoping she wouldn't go there.

"Ok. Ok. I know. But it's going to happen. We both know it!" She gave me that sexy smile. "And we're both are going to love it!"

Nikki backed me up against the counter she reached under my skirt and put her hand on my pussy. I wasn't soaked but very damp. Too damp.

"See we both want this? Don't we?" Nikki replied rubbing my pussy.

She kissed me hard this time like the lovers she wants us to be. Like I promised her we could be for just one night if she kept my past a secret. I kissed her back just as hard. I gathered myself and stood in the foyer letting my breathing even out. Nikki tweaked her nipples keeping them hard.

He looked on from the truck. I could see he noticed her nipples. Still he was composed as I got to the door.

Dan helped me back in the truck and slipped in behind the wheel.

"George and Sally should be at the house soon. We should get home and get these groceries put away and let you rest." Dan pulled out into the street. "The dress looks good. Was she happy?"

"She was surprised. You'll know if she likes it if you see her wear it in public." I replied. We both laughed at that. "She asked about you Daniel."

"Mom. We aren't going there today. Ok?" I glanced over at him. He smiled with a slight grin. "What did she say?"

I smacked him with my good arm as we laughed once more.

We unloaded the truck and set the groceries on the counter. Dan was going to put them away. I was just about to turn when he stopped me.

"Hold still." He said stopping me. He grabbed a tissue and rubbed each corner of my mouth. Holding the tissue he showed me the smudge on it. "Looks like Summer Peach. Nikki's favorite. I guess she really was happy wasn't she?"

I could have died right there. I was so busted and yet he just turned and started putting the groceries away. That was it. No teasing. No questions. Just a simple gesture letting me know he knew something was up.

I wanted to talk about it. We have always talked about everything, and yes about sex too. Not often. Mostly on how to act, protection, respect and such but we could always talk about it as grown adults.

"Dan can we talk?" I asked. Fuck it. I might as well get this over.

Dan moved close to me. He gave me a look that stopped me in my tracks. Slowly he lifted the front of my dress and rubbed my moist panties softly. I let

out a slight whimper as I stood frozen in place. He lowered my dress and leaned closer.

"We can, but not now. Later. Our guests should be her soon and you need to rest. In fact come with me." Dan whispered. I started to say something but he put a finger to my lips. "Trust me, and not a word."

He took me into the bathroom and standing in front of me he reached up under my skirt again. He gripped my panties and started to lower them. The crotch stuck for just a second to my steamy cunt. I stepped out of them Dan reminding me to stay quiet. I could smell them now my scent filled the small room. He tossed them in the hamper. Turning he found a clean wash cloth and soaked it in warm water handing it to me. "Call me when you're ready I'll bring clean underwear."

I dropped on the toilet like a rock. I was so, so busted. He knew the moment I got in the truck I bet. My pussy was getting wetter. Daniel knowing turned me on even more. The bastard knew I was dripping wet and never said a thing. He never let on in any way. Nikki was right he was not to be underestimated.

With my skirt in my lap I wanted to finger myself so badly it was all I could do to restrain myself. I wiped myself clean with the wash cloth and then took the opportunity to pee. I wanted to wait but thought if I did he might think I was doing the nasty. I took a deep breath. "Dan!"

He walked in holding a pair of black lace panties with a silk panel covering the vagina. It was the second sexiest panties I owned. Dan knelt down holding them out for me to step into. I pulled my skirt up to my waist with my one good hand displaying my pussy for him. Two can play this game I thought. He looked in my eyes as he slipped them up never once glancing down at my sex. Fuck how does he do that?

"You should take a nap. You've had a very 'exciting' day." Dan teased. With that he walked out and started to the kitchen. "Remember what I told them. You were on a date and tripped in your heels."

"Mom!" A faint sound woke from my sleep. "Mom they're here!" Dan was gently shaking me from my sleep.

(Daniel)

George and Sally pulled in the drive. I woke Kat and then went to the door and welcomed them. I hugged and kissed Sally. She looked at me with a stunned expression. Sally took my hand and held it between hers. Her shocked look slowly melted into a slight smile. She knew. I don't know how but I could feel it in her hands. I turned to George and shook his hand.

"Mom should be out in a minute I just woke her." I led them to the living room and we sat down.

"Did you hear from Eve?" Sally asked.

"I did. I'm picking her up Tuesday at the airport." Sally looked at George. "She is staying here. It's all worked out.

"You sure? She can come up to the house!" George replied.

"Thanks. If she gets too wild I may take you up on that!" I joked.

Just then Mom appeared from her room she looked the best I had seen her since I brought her home. Sally went to her and fawned over her injury as George and I talked business. George took us all out for a nice steak dinner and dropped us back at the house.

"Are you ready to go to bed? You have work tomorrow." I asked mom.

The plan was Monday I would take mom to work before going to the job site. George let me know that I could take as much time off as I needed to take care of her.

"I think I'll call in sick." Kat looked over to see my reaction.

"No ma'am you will not. If you can go shopping you can go to work!" I scolded her. "Now follow me."

We headed to her room and I helped her undress to her panties. In just days I had seen her naked more than my entire life. It was starting to affect me. Until a few years ago Kat had always been just my mom. That started to change, slowly at first, then I turned eighteen. Just like the voice in my head I can't seem to control my feelings for her.

Something was different now. Not just seeing her naked, although that was part of it. I guess thinking about her having a sex life fascinated and excited me. Sometimes I was even jealous.

I helped her on with the tee shirt and sent her across the hall.

"Call me when you're done." I picked up her clothes and placed them on the bed. I heard the toilet flush and the water run then shutoff.

"Danny I am ready!" I grabbed her dirty clothes and pulled back the covers to her bed. I went into the bathroom. Mom was naked waiting for me, her panties and tee shirt in her hand. She walked past me. I placed her dirty clothes in the hamper and followed into her room.

"Kathryn what are you doing?" I asked taking in her nakedness.

"You said we could talk later. It's later."

I walked over to the bed and sat beside her. "I'm listening!" I said.

She was still holding her panties and tee shirt.

"What do you want to know?" She asked.

"I want to know why you are naked right now?" I replied.

"That's it? You don't want to know about Friday night or this afternoon at Nikki's?" She asked as if she was upset.

"Well as interesting as that may be. I think as your son its best I shouldn't ask such questions. Nor do I think you should tell me. Maybe there are some things we shouldn't know. Some things we shouldn't discuss." I wasn't exactly polite.

"Daniel what happened Friday was a mistake. I got drunk. I lost control and a man I shouldn't have been with tried to take advantage of me. He tried to force himself on me. I bit his dick!" Mom just threw it out there.

Maybe she was trying to confess in some way. Maybe she just needed to get it off her chest. I know that the last thing I wanted to hear was how some asshole had his cock in her mouth, at least not from her.

The fact I already knew didn't seem to make much difference to me. I don't know if I was upset or sorry for her, or a bit jealous. I wanted to say something. I wanted to hurt her like she just did to me but I loved her and just couldn't do it.

I kissed her on the forehead.

"I love you mom. Goodnight." Was all I said. I went upstairs to my bathroom and closed the door. I took care of my grooming and turned out the light. I went to my bed and started to lie down.

Something told me I needed to check on her. I went down stairs skipping the steps I knew squeaked and stood in the hall way outside her room. I could hear her sobbing.

"Be strong. Don't give in. Still she needs you!" I said to myself.

The feeling was so strong it was almost painful. I opened the door she looked up in the dim light from the window. I crawled in behind her. She was wearing the tee shirt. Kat pushed back tight against me. She took my hand and placed it on her hip. I could feel the panties below the material from the shirt.

"You got your panties on I see?" I wasn't shocked I knew she could if she really wanted to.

"I wanted to protect you from me. I can't be trusted." Kat sobbed. That was the moment. That was the exact moment I knew our relationship would forever change. She just admitted what I had known for some time. Kat wanted me as more than just her son!

I rolled her over and kissed her like a lover. She took my hand and guided it to her breast. I squeezed before releasing it.

"I think it's a good thing you covered up. I'm not sure I'm ready for this mom, or with any woman." I whispered.

"You're not upset that I feel that way? I am your mother Daniel!" She pleaded emotionally.

"And you always will be. Regardless if we go down this path or not. I just think you are in a very emotional state and we should take this slow." I replied. She turned and faced me.

"So you ..." I took her hand and placed it on my hard throbbing cock.

"Clear enough?" I asked. We kissed one more time before I broke it off. The situation was getting out of control.

I spooned behind her she pressed back against me. Her ass pushed tight against my cock. I could feel her cheeks spread slightly so it could settle in the crease. I started to move away slightly.

"Daniel please put it back I love the way it feels on my ass." She whispered.

I moved back tight my hard cock snuggled between her cheeks. She took my hand and pulled it tight against her and guided it back to her tit.

"Goodnight Daniel. I love you!"

I dropped mom off at the office Monday before heading to work myself. At the end of the day I picked her up. Kat look tired but seemed happy she went. Tuesday was the same only I picked up Eve at the airport before picking up mom.

Eve ran into my arms giving me a big hug, we exchanged kisses on the cheek.

"Stand back let me look at you! I think you have put on a few pounds." Eve gushed. Always effervescent she made sure I was the center of her attention when we met.

"Well I must admit I have added about five pounds. Thinking of going on a diet." I teased her.

"Stop that. I have a feeling you will start filling out that radio tower of a body you have very soon!" She teased back.

"Well my coaches would be happy. Not sure about mom and the grocery bill however?" We both laughed again.

"So how is Kathryn?" Eve asked. We had reached the carousel waiting for her luggage.

"Dislocated her elbow. Bruised a bit. Probably more embarrassed than anything. She's at work right now." I explained.

The carousel started and soon after bags started to appear. Eve showed me hers and I carried them to the truck. Mom didn't get off for another hour I asked Eve if she wanted a coffee or something. She agreed we stopped at a little cafe and sat down at a table outside with our beverages.

"Daniel I need to ask you something. It's very important. I want you to be honest with me." Eve reached across and took one of my hands in both of hers. "Do you hear voices or get images in your head?"

The look alone gave her my answer.

"Yes. Sometimes I think I hear a voice. Maybe dads?" I replied. I could see a look of relief cross her face.

"I thought you might. When we talked the other day I was sure of it. Thank you for telling me the truth." She let go of my hand and took a sip. "How long has it been going on?"

"It started just after my eighteenth birthday but it has been more frequent now." I felt a weight off my shoulder as I told her. "So I'm not crazy?"

"Well we are all a bit crazy in some way but no." Eve seemed calm and relaxed as we talked about it. Almost like we were discussing the weather. "Have you told Kat about this?" Eve asked. She shifted forward in her seat

"No. no one. I wouldn't have told you but you asked." Eve settled back in her chair. I had a feeling she knew more that she was letting on.

"Daniel I would like you to keep this between the two of us for now so I can think about it. Now before we pick up Kat do you have any questions?" Eve asked.

"Just one. Does Lake Danamanski mean anything to you? I looked it up it doesn't exist. But he keeps repeating it? I was hoping it was a place from my youth I just don't remember." I explained.

"No Dan. I can't say I have ever heard of the place. Have you asked Kat about it?" Eve questioned.

"Not yet. Something about it's familiar. Like I have been there when I was a kid. You think I should?" I asked.

"Well she raised you. If anyone would know it would be her." Eve suggested. We picked up our cups and headed to mom's work. I was feeling much better knowing I wasn't alone, that I had someone I could trust to talk to.

The next two weeks flew by. Eve and I didn't get a chance to talk again here. Kat and I were scheduled to go to Florida in a couple of weeks. Eve said we could talk when I got there giving her more time to think about what was

happening. While Eve was around Kat backed off a bit with her flirtatious displays.

Eve didn't stay in my room. She slept with mom. On more than one occasion I had the impression they were closer than they let on. Knowing mom had a thing with Nikki, her and Eve would be no surprise. The first time was one morning.

Kat was running late for work, something that was usually not a big deal. She was fretting over everything running around forgetting what she just asked about. Eve sat at the counter she had on a sexy pajama set and a robe that wasn't tied. She drank her coffee looking on seeming to find satisfaction Kat was so frazzled.

The next time was when we were going to dinner. They were both in the bathroom getting ready at the same time. They were both flushed. Mom explained it away saying we were in a hurry and they need to get ready quickly.

I figured they took a shower together as well. Besides we were in no hurry. There were many more small instances. I acted like I didn't notice. At times Eve went out of her way to make sure I did.

I realized the whole time Eve was there she wasn't only involved with my mother but making overtures to me as well. Call me arrogant or delusional but I persevered in school by observing every detail of my world. It was a matter of survival. School can be a very cruel place for kids like me. Eve was subtle, that was her style. I let her play her game. I even let her know I enjoyed it several times.

The day after Eve left however I was rewarded with the return of Kat's new found freedom. Nothing blatant but for some reason Kat decided that bras were for outside the house and tee shirts with panties was appropriate attire inside the house. I for one wasn't complaining. It was fun and harmless and

seemed to make us both happy. We kissed often but except for some flirtatious groping we seemed to have backed off a bit physically.

Everything was going smooth. Mom and I were in Florida soaking up the sun and just hanging out with Charles and Eve. I even went golfing with Charles a couple of times. What a character. I never laughed so much in my life as when he is with his buddies. Even when most of the jokes were about me, they show no mercy. Eve and I talked again but it seemed that dad only came when I was very emotional.

Kat and Eve were less guarded when we were in Florida. Except when Charles was around they took turns taunting me. Eve had this orange bikini she only wore when I was around and Charles wasn't. Kat had a similar dark green one that had the same affect.

Then the call came. It was Nikki.

"Dan. I am sorry to call you on your vacation. I called to tell you my brother Kyle and Carlton were killed last night in a car accident." Nikki said calmly. I could tell she was holding back tears. "I just thought you might want to know. Goodbye."

"Nikki don't hang up. Please." I asked quickly.

"Ok." I heard her crying.

"I know this isn't the time for questions. I just want to say how sorry I am for you. They were great guys. My best friends. Please let me know when the services are. I would like to be there." I said.

"Dan you don't need to come home from your vacation!" Nikki sobbed.

"Nikki. Mom and I'll be there if I have to charter a plane. You going to be ok?" I asked concerned.

"No!" She said breaking down.

"I'll see you in a few days. Nikki, I'll bring Kat" I replied.

She hung up. I found Kat and told her the news. I called a few other guys they played football with. They promised to call with the details. Two days later we were back home.

I called Nikki but her mom said that she would prefer if I waited to see her until after the service. The next day we attended one service the other was the day after. We saw Nikki but she was so distraught we never had a chance to do anything but offer our condolences.

Sunday I just finished the lawn and taken a shower. With the cast now gone and the healing taking place mom was able to drive again. Kat was at the market getting groceries and some special ingredients for the dinner I was making.

A shadow was cast through the screen door. I heard a knock. It was Nikki. I walked to the door and looked at her through the screen. She looked beautiful in the dress mom had given her. I could see she was distraught. I opened the door and she flew into my arms.

"Hold me Dan. Please just hold me!" She pleaded.

I wrapped my arms around her we stood there inside the door in a quiet embrace. She felt good as she pressed against me. I had missed her and I could tell she missed me. I could feel her desire but I still couldn't give her what she wanted. Not that. Not yet. But what she needed right now was a friend. This was different. This I could give her. This I could willingly give her.

"I miss him already." She whispered.

What could I say? Nothing seemed appropriate. I just held her. I saw mom pull in the drive. She saw Nikki's car and came straight to the door. Looking in she saw us standing there.

Kat looked at me frozen in place. I could see she wanted to come in to console Nikki. She was in a dilemma and we both knew it. I could see it in her eyes as tears started flowing down her cheeks.

"Nikki. Kat is here." I whispered.

I let her go as she spun to see her on the other side of the door. I opened the door Kat stepped in she offered her hand, Nikki taking it. They stood separated each weeping. They wanted to kiss, to embrace each other, to console each other like lovers would. I decide to help them both out of this situation. I made the first move knowing they couldn't.

I kissed Nikki on the lips.

"It's ok. I know about you and mom!" I whispered. She looked at me with a questioned look. I let her know it was ok.

I then turned and kissed Kat squarely on the lips for Nikki to see. I pushed my tongue to her lips she parted them for me and took my passionate kiss for Nikki to witness. Mom looked to me with a questioned expression.

"It's ok if Nikki knows?" Kat asked.

"No more secrets ok?" I asked looking at them both.

Kat nodded then looked at Nikki. Still shocked from me kissing mom and learning their secret Nikki slowly nodded too.

"I'm going for a walk. A long walk. When I get back I'll make us all dinner. Nikki. I hope you like Italian?" Nikki stood mute. "Nikki, is Italian ok?"

"Italian would be great." She answered, looking at me still in shock. I turned to leave. The door hadn't closed when I heard them embrace.

I had only been walking about ten minutes when my phone rang.

"Dan, we're hungry!" It was Kat.

When I returned their eyes were red but dry.

Nikki was getting ready to leave about ten giving me a prolonged hug and kiss. It was the most passionate kiss we ever shared. As I went upstairs to get ready for bed Nikki and Kat were locked in a loving embrace, kissing just as passionately as I have ever seen.

From that day forward things started to change even further at our house. Not by much but there was a new openness about how we expressed our feelings about certain people in our lives.

That night I was in bed and just turned out the lights. Before I knew it Kat was on the steps and then slipping into bed with me.

"Kiss me Daniel. Kiss me now!" I rolled to my side Kat was naked!

My lips found hers and she kissed me deeply. Suddenly she grabbed my hand and placed it on her pussy. Guiding my hand she rubbed her sex. Her pussy was on fire and dripping. One then two fingers of mine were guided into the depths of her pussy. Moans filled my mouth as she urged me on.

Her hips pressed up against my hand forcing my fingers deeper. Then she did something that change the way I viewed my mother forever. Removing my fingers from her pussy she guided them lower. Lifting her legs my slick fingers slipped over her tight asshole.

"Yes. Right there. Rub me right there!" Mom begged. I dipped my fingers in her pussy again and followed the path she showed me.

"Don't stop Danny!" She moaned.

She moved her hand and I could tell she was rubbing her clit. I dipped my fingers one more time and coated her entire ass crack with her fluids.

"Oh god Daniel I've wanted you to do that forever! Please don't stop!" Her moans dripping with desire.

Mom's hips were moving up and down pushing harder. I could feel the pace picking up on her clit. I dipped my middle finger in her pussy and got it good and slick and pressed it to her asshole.

"Do it baby! Push it innnnnnn..."

I hadn't gotten past the immediate opening when she bucked my hand free and clamped her legs closed. Kat came hard. She pulled me back into a kiss hungry to have my mouth on hers. All too soon she was glowing as her breathing returned to normal. Turning she pushed her naked ass hard against my raging cock.

She took the hand I had in her pussy and placed it in her mouth licking it clean. She stroked my cock between her ass cheeks through the thin fabric of my boxers.

"Take them off I want to feel it on my ass!"

"Mom!" I protested.

"Daniel. Please?" Kat begged again.

How could she want this more than I did? I pushed my boxers down I felt her hand slick with saliva coat my cock and guide it back along the crack in her ass. Pushing back she moved her ass along my length. I was in heaven and hell at the same time. I reached around and found her tit I gripped it firmly.

"Do it Danny. Do it for me. Just this once. You deserve it." Kat growled.

She had me wound up like a top. I was right on the edge.

"Are you sure?" I asked stupidly.

"I want it and Nikki wants it for you also! Do it for both of us!" Mom shrieked.

That was it! My cock spewed cum up her back and on my chest. She pushed her back against me trapping the warm goo between us. I rolled onto my back. Kat got up and retrieved the towel from the bathroom. She cleaned me up and then allowed me to clean her back.

"Get your boxers and come down and sleep with me." Kat ordered.

"Can I trust you?" I asked half teasing.

"For the rest of the night you can. But tomorrow..."

I slept in her bed with her that night. The next day we talked about how I was still not comfortable having sex with her or any other woman. I don't think she understood. How could she when I didn't understand it myself. I had a feeling one day soon I would.

Later that week Mom had gotten word that the people she worked for had sold their business to a large agency. The details were still being worked out but they would be giving her a generous severance. She put on a brave face but I knew she was terrified inside.

Friday I received a call from the current coach from the football team. He asked if I could come and meet him Saturday. I explained that I worked during the day but would be available in the evening or Sunday. He asked if he could come out Sunday afternoon.

Coach Watkins was at our door and beside him was Coach Andersen, the one whose house I had been to. I welcomed them in. Mom and I listened to their pitch. Besides the passing of my two friends others were suspended from the team for being involved at the party contributing to their deaths. The team was decimated. Some of the guys I played flag football with recommended me. Coach Andersen had also called the current coach.

I had a long talk with George. He agreed that I should give it a try. Coach Andersen started me on a training regimen to build body weight and strength. When I joined the team I played wide receiver tipping the scales at just over 180 pounds. In time I would become a force to be reckoned with. My speed was better, my strength was greater, but mostly I was more durable. We had a good year despite our shortcomings.

Football was over with and I was on to basketball. I had just turned nineteen in September. Tall and lanky I was still not bigger than most of my

teammates. On other fronts Kat was no longer employed. She planned to take a couple of weeks off but was now just hanging out at home.

Mom was miserable and now so was I. Nikki was back in college, jammed with classes so she could graduate early, because of that she was seldom around. With school, sports and some work I was busy also. I knew I had to do something.

"I thought you were supposed to go interview at the new agency?" I asked Monday night over dinner.

"I will. I just need to get prepared. I have never worked in a place with so many people!" Mom replied. I knew she was stalling.

"Kathryn, tomorrow you will set up an interview. After dinner we are going to the mall and get you a new outfit." When there was no reply I knew I had gotten my point across. That night with the help of a great salesperson we bought Kat a new business suit.

The next day Kat informed me her interview was scheduled for Thursday at ten thirty with a Mr. Sheets.

Thursday I was in my second period class when I had a feeling something was wrong. I looked at the clock, my class would be over in fifteen minutes. I decided then I would call her. The bell rang I bolted out the door, the image of our house flashed through my head. I went past the locker straight to the parking lot.

I pulled in the drive opening the garage door. I could see her car was still parked inside. I was in the house in a flash. I looked around the living room and then her bedroom. Mom was not in the bathroom. I stood in the hall looking at the stairs to my room.

"Kat what's wrong?" I asked stopping at the top of the stairs. She was curled up in my bed crying. I looked at the clock it was just past ten. "Kathryn! Get your ass out of that bed and get yourself dressed right now!"

I gave her my sternest look and grabbed her hand. She was in her robe. She smelled fresh from the shower. I led her down stairs and waited for her to get dressed. She fixed her hair but would have to do her makeup in the truck I looked at the clock it was ten thirty. Setting beside me she used the rear view mirror for her makeup.

We reached the agency office I pulled into a visitor spot just in front of the building.

"Relax and be yourself." I said calmly. Kat looked terrified.

I gave her a long gentle kiss on the lips so as not to smudge her lipstick. Kat stopped shaking but was still nervous. I gripped her hand and helped her out my door. I looked at the building and could see a tall dark hair woman looking out the window at us.

I could see several other people standing with her in the office talking to each other. Ignoring the others the striking woman was looking directly at us. With a tilt of her head she smiled at us. Something about her struck me odd. It was the way she focused on Kat and then me. Her whole body language was wrong for work.

This woman was completely focused on us. Sizing us up. I knew that look, it was very familiar. It's the same look I give people when I am searching for clues. Holding mom's hand the whole time we walked to the entrance. Kat started shaking again when we reached the outer door.

"Mom settle down, it will be ok. They aren't going to make a decision today. They just want to talk to you. Relax. Be yourself and you'll be fine." I tried to calm her down.

I kissed her on the cheek this time. We entered the foyer a long reception desk was in front, a glass conference room to our left. To the right was the glass office where the woman still stood with the other people. Behind the reception desk are rows of cubicles the quiet roar of business being conducted there.

"Tell them you're here. Don't mention why you're late. I'll sit here in the chairs and wait for you." I whispered. Nervously mom walked to the counter. My seat was near the conference room looking at the office and the counter.

"Hello I am. I am Ms. Masters. I am here to see Mr. Sheets." Kat explained.

I noticed the woman in the office walking out, the group followed her. They passed within feet of Kat waiting at the counter.

"Ms. Masters, I am Kevin Sheets what can I do for you?" He was short and terse.

"I have an interview scheduled with you." Kat was shifting nervously.

"Did have an interview. You were to be here at ten thirty. It's now almost eleven. If you can't be here on time you do not need this job!" Kevin said condescendingly.

The woman heard this. She held her hand up and stopped, the troupes stopped with her. Turning she indicated the troupes should continue on. She stood well to the side and rear of Mr. Sheets silently watching and glancing at me on occasion.

"I know I am late, and to be honest it was avoidable. It's just." Kat held back her tears. Mom looked at me briefly. I knew she thought of all those times I wanted to give up on myself.

"Mr. and Mrs. Turner suggested I come here. Maybe I can reschedule?" She was gaining confidence as her words came out. The woman looked at her and then at me. Even the receptionist seemed to understand her predicament.

"Wait here a minute I have something to take care of. I'll be back shortly." Mr. Sheets turned his back and left Kat standing at the counter.

The woman passed right by mom and headed straight to me. Her heels clicked on the tile floor. I stood as she stopped in front of me. A smile crossed her face as I did.

"Sharon Peterson and you must be?" She took a quick glance back to the counter. Mom's back was to us, she extend her hand.

"Daniel Master's. That's my mom." I shook her hand confidently. She crooked her head at my admission.

"So Daniel, why is she late?" Sharon was much like Eve. She has the innate ability to be both forceful and polite.

"Kat has worked for the Turner's for over twelve years. It was just the three of them. They did the selling and mom ran the office. She did almost everything alone." I explained.

We both looked at her patiently waiting for Mr. Sheets to return. I could see Sharon was just as unnerved seeing her standing alone as I was.

"Mom is a bit overwhelmed by the possibility of working with so many other people. She was a bit shy about coming. Kat will be fine, she just needs some time to get acclimated." I said. "She is good at what she does just ask the Turner's. She is as good as any of these people I bet, heck maybe even

better!" Sharon looked back to the counter I could see she wasn't happy with Mr. Sheets.

"So your mom knows the customers?" Sharon turned her attention back to me.

"Most on a first name basis. Any changes or updates she handled personally. Kat probably knows more about the clients than the Turner's do." I replied looking to see if Mr. Sheets returned.

"Thank you Daniel. I believe you." Sharon reached out to shake my hand again.

"Ma'am it was all my pleasure I am sure." I shook her hand and waited for her to return to her office before I sat down. I could see her pick up a phone and speak briefly then hung up.

Mr. Sheets returned to the counter. "I am sorry Ms. Masters but my schedule is full. I have no openings for you." He turned and walked away.

Kat turned and gathered herself walking in my direction. I could see her disappointment. I stood waiting for her to reach me. I saw Sharon walking out of her office to the counter mom had just been standing at. I indicated Kat should wait for me.

"Ms. Peterson." I waited so as not to interrupt. Sharon turned to face me. "Thank you for not making her wait any longer. I think he has humiliated her enough." I said clearly. "Again thank you." I turned to leave.

"Daniel wait!" Sharon called out.

I turned to face her. She looked me up and down then looked at mom.

"Would you ask Kathryn to join us in my office?" Sharon asked. I gathered mom and stood at her office door.

"Come in, would you both please have a seat? I'll just be a minute." She picked up her phone. "Kevin would you please come to my office? Thank you."

Moments later Kevin showed up at her door.

"Kevin, Ms. Masters will be joining our staff as of Monday." Sharon said firmly. She turned to mom. "Is Monday ok with you?"

"Why yes. Of course!" Kat replied. Mom could hardly believe what was happening.

"As I was saying, she will be here Monday. I want you to have Heather come see me when I am done here. Kat. May I call you Kat?" Sharon asked, mom nodded. "Kat will be taking her position so Heather can be promoted. That is all. You may go."

Kevin turned red in the face and left.

"Kathryn I have to tell you, your son is an amazing young man. Please be here on time Monday we start at nine. It would look bad for the rest of the staff if they thought I was playing favorites. Any questions?"

"Ms. Peterson. I understand you are offering Kat a position here but what will the compensation be?" I asked tilting my head with confidence.

"Ah yes. Her agent I see. Well how about we start her at her previous wage plus ten percent?" She tossed the ball back in my court.

"Plus commissions!" I volleyed back.

"Commissions? What commissions?" She seemed shocked.

"Ms. Peterson you bought the business from the Turner's but once clients find out the Turner's are no longer their agents they will feel free to go anywhere to get their insurance. My guess, and I'm sure yours, is if they were contacted by someone they were familiar with, let's just use my mom for an example, most would likely stay." I said smiling.

"I'm listening." Sharon chuckled.

"Now you pay your sales force to pick up new business but the cost to retain existing customers significantly affects the bottom line. If these clients decided to leave you may be able to retain what? Maybe 25%? Just a guess, but if Kat gets involved I bet it would be closer to 75%." I explained. "That and if they do leave and then you get them back you would pay the full commission on the new sale. So my suggestion is she gets compensation for any clients she can retain. If she doesn't you are out nothing."

"What you are suggesting is quite unique." Sharon replied

"The person you are getting is quite unique." I looked over at Kat.

"Mr. Masters you have a deal." She stood at her desk and extended her hand. I shook it and so did Kat.

"Thank you Ms. Peterson." Kat gushed. Mom and I walked to the door to leave.

"Daniel. May I make a suggestion?" Sharon asked.

"By all means." I replied.

"This is a large office. Public displays of affection can keep the rumor mills working overtime here."

"I understand. I'll remember that." I moved into the hall outside her office. "Thank you Ms. Peterson. Mom will be here on time Monday." I announced clearly to anyone within earshot.

I took mom's hand in mine as we started to leave. Sharon and I exchanged one last knowing smile as I walked past her office windows. I helped mom in the truck and gave her a quick kiss on the lips. Sharon tilted her head one last time before we left.

I was on the first team in basketball no longer the wimpy kid being pushed around. The Christmas break was a needed time off. Eve offered to fly us to Florida but with Kat's new job and Uncle George needing me on site we decided to stay home. Kat was disappointed when Nikki didn't visit, but her parents took a much need trip to see family that weren't able to come to Kyle's funeral.

I knew how important it was to her. I was feeling the loss of Kyle and Carlton both. Sure I had other friends but none as close as they were. Also on my mind was the fact that I needed to sort through college offers.

Christmas day was a special occasion. With mom's new job and additional income I decided we could finally get her a new vehicle. The day before Christmas they delivered it hiding it in the garage while we were at George's for a family get together.

On Christmas Eve, Kat and I went to George and Sally's where we had a great time. We drove my truck. I left the keys in her car and the side door open. They were to back the new car in at an angle with a big bow on top. When we came home I opened the overhead door and the trucks lights

illuminated the new car. Mom was completely stunned of course. She started hugging and kissing me for many minutes before and after she sat in it.

Christmas morning I was hoping to slumber in bed. It was earlier than I hoped when I heard mom slowly ascend the steps. I faked being asleep when she sat on the edge of the bed.

"Are you coming down sleepyhead?" Mom said knowing I was awake.

"Awe it's Christmas, can't a guy get some sleep?" I laughed turning to face her.

Kat was wearing her satin robe and from the looks of her nipples little else below it.

"You have presents to open!" Mom grinned. "You used to love to open presents."

"Well how about I just open this one?" I teased reaching for her hand.

Kat stopped smiling. She looked at me in earnest. My hand held hers I could feel how conflicted she was.

"Are you sure Daniel?" Kat asked her eyes never leaving mine.

"Can I trust you?" I replied smiling.

"It's your present, do with it what you will." Kat teased.

"So you're giving it to me?" I asked for clarification.

Kat knew what I meant by that. She raised me too well to know there could be no question of her intentions. Kat nodded. Still I waited. Knowing me as she did mom slipped the top of her robe off displaying her tits to me.

"Kiss me Daniel!" Kat whispered.

I sat up and took her in my arms. Sitting on my lap we kissed passionately for several minutes. I worked my hand inside her robe and up her back. Mom quivered in anticipation. Slowly our suppressed desires took hold. I pulled the robe from her body further unwrapping my present.

"Mom you are so beautiful!" I said just trying to be honest.

"Thank you son." Kat replied naturally.

"I'm really not just saying that, I mean it." I blushed a bit. "But you know that don't you?"

Kat looked deep in my eyes confirming what she already knew, I was in love with her. Mom moved up slightly offering me her tit as she gave herself to me. Instincts kicked in as I took the soft fleshy mound in my mouth. I can remember every sound Kat made, every movement, every texture as I kissed my way around her breast. Mom desperate to open her present was pawing at my boxers.

I knew how awkward I must be. I had always struggle in the beginning. Mom knew this of course and helped as only she could. Just like when she taught me how to dance I let her take the lead. We shifted on my bed as our passion started to build.

I took Kat's panties off and slowly moved my hand over her stomach. How to get there was today's lesson what to do once I got there I learned months

ago. She was writhing on the bed as mom guided my fingers to touch all of her hot buttons. Kat squirmed as my finger grazed her clit then slowly slipped deep in her pussy.

As for me? Well this was Christmas. So in the interest of giving, as well as receiving, I allowed mom to pleasure me as well.

As my fingers worked in her oozing pussy her hand was stroking my cock. The feeling was one I had never experienced. Having someone other than myself stroking my erection was one thing. Having Kat doing it was more than magnificent.

Kat had my cock hard and straining to cum. She brought me close several times but then let me settle down as her excitement built up to match mine. Here we were mother and son masturbating each other, and of all days, it was Christmas!

As my cum shot from my dick her pussy clamped hard on my fingers. With Kat's impeccable timing we both orgasmed in unison. Moments later we were locked into another passionate kiss as the mess I made coated our bodies.

Knowing I was still not ready for the next step Kat slipped from my arms and kissed me one last time. She stood slipping back on her robe, I could see she was happy.

"Are you going to come down now?" Mom laughed.

"Can I trust you?" I teased back.

"For today my love, for today." Kat cooed.

With both of us sexually satisfied I got up but we went to our separate bathrooms to prepare for opening our actual presents.

The car was really not a gift since she would be paying for it so I bought her a new cell phone. The present under the tree for me was a laptop computer. The rest of the day was spent relaxing. I held her as we watched a few movies, Kat and I kissed almost the whole time. Later we shared dinner before going to bed, there she wrapped my arm around her to caress her tits.

"I love you Danny." Kat whispered just before she fell asleep.

I on the other hand was wide awake remembering probably the best day of my young life and wondering what was in store for the future.

Chapter 2

(Daniel)

Basketball was over at the end of February. My only focus now was deciding what college to attend. With the money I had saved and college funds from Uncle George and my grandfather Charles, money wasn't a deciding factor.

Mom was pushing for me to attend the state college that had a campus across town. Nikki attends there and I could also live at home. I was leaning towards going upstate to the other university and live on campus. They were even offering a partial sports scholarship. I knew I wouldn't get to play much but I would have the benefit of using their state of the art work out facility and all the other perks jocks get on campus.

I was sitting down at my desk paying bills and looking over college brochures when I ran across the paperwork from Kat's emergency room visit. I decided to look and see exactly what they charged the insurance company.

Shocked at some of the charges I sat it to the side wanting to go over it with Kat later. I finished paying bills and looked over more college propaganda. I decided continuing education was just a new way of making money. I threw them all away except the final two.

Fall enrollment started the end of March. To get the classes I wanted I needed to make a decision soon. Days later I made my decision but decided to have a bit of fun with it. My plan required the help of an accomplice. I had a feeling that wouldn't be a problem.

I called the office and asked to talk to Ms. Peterson.

"Hello this is Sharon Peterson." She said happily.

"Ms. Peterson this is Dan Masters. Do you have a minute?"

"Please Dan call me Sharon. I have all the time you need." She replied. I filled her in on my plan asking her to keep it a surprise. "Dan you're a tough negotiator. What do I get in return?"

I was stumped then it hit me. I saw the picture of her kids on her desk. I love kids. Mom loves kids.

"You do this for me and Kat, and I'll come babysit for one day! No charge!" I gushed. I could hear her laugh on the other end.

"You would do that?" She giggled.

"Is it a deal?" I asked.

"Consider it done."

"Thanks Ms. Pe... I mean Sharon!"

My plan was in place now, I just needed to set the rest of it set up.

Wednesday night I told mom my truck was in the shop. George dropped me off after work. I asked if I could use her car the next day taking her to work and picking her up. She readily agreed and the plan was in motion. The next night I picked mom up from work in her car. I had loaded our supplies into the trunk last night. Thursday night as I turned onto the expressway she looked over at me.

"Dan where are we going?" She was concerned but calm.

"I have a surprise in store for you. We're going on a bit of a trip!" I reached my hand out and she took it. She didn't ask any more questions until we were about two hours away.

We mostly talked about her new job and how much she liked it. We talked about Sharon and what a pleasure it was to work for her as her personal assistant. We talked about all of the previous clients she retained and about her bonuses. She told me about how she was getting to know more people in the office and how much gossip went on. She was happy and I was happy for her.

"Daniel where are we going?" I could tell she was getting concerned.

"I told you it's a surprise!"

"But I have work tomorrow how far are we going? How will I get back in time?"

"Kat check your phone." She opened her purse retrieving her phone. Opening the screen she saw there was a message. "See you Monday. Luv. S"

"She really put love in the text?" I asked.

"She spelled it luv silly. That doesn't mean what you think. You are starting to have such a dirty mind!" mom teased.

"Kat, everything means something. As for dirty minds I believe you are the one that started that whole process!" I teased back. "Speaking of dirty minds here's our first stop."

I pulled off the expressway and turning a few blocks away we were at our first hotel. I chose a mid-level major chain based on George's recommendation. I checked us in, the room was nice sized with a king bed, a desk and a table with chairs. I brought just one bag in and another with our toiletries. We spiffed up and headed to a nice restaurant for a late dinner.

Kat pried all through dinner trying to find out what was going on. She must have trusted me because she eventually gave up as we started to leave.

I knew she thought we would fool around but I had a plan and tonight that wasn't on the agenda.

I showered first and was in bed when she got done. It was still early but I faked being tired from the drive. Still she curled up inside me her ass lodge tight against my soft cock. This was her favorite position and on those few occasions when we allow ourselves the treat of sexual contact this was where we started.

I had purposely brought the least sexy pajamas for her to wear tonight night. She still filled them out nicely. It was all I could do to not get excited and ruin

the plan but with all the planning and trying to keep it a secret I was truly beat. Jacking off in the shower just now probably helped too!

I was up early in the morning and brought her breakfast in bed. She looked content as she sat up against the pillows.

"So what do you have planned for today?" She gave me a teasing smile.

"Well you'll need to get dressed in the next thirty minutes to find out."

We were on the road as planned the next leg taking just a bit over an hour. I pulled into the hotel we would be staying at tonight. I left her in the car and checked in making sure my last surprise had arrived.

The woman behind the counter didn't look too happy with me when she looked at it, but hey it was a last minute thing. She would get over it. I took it to our room and hid it in a drawer and ran back down to continue on our journey.

I started downtown and we saw some sights. It was awesome seeing some of the old houses and historic places. We had lunch at a small cafe sitting along the walk out front. I checked my watch and decided it was now or never.

As soon as she saw the sign I could tell she was upset. She pulled her hand from me and crossed her arms. God I hoped this works. I didn't want to punish her. We parked the car and followed the temporary signs. Entering the lobby I signed us both in. Without a word to me she followed the lady to her assigned room as I headed to mine.

We were at the university that offered me a partial scholarship. The school mom didn't want me to attend. This was a special tour of the campus for athletes and their parents.

We started at two and by four thirty we were finished. I walked into the lobby and saw the parents starting to come out of their room. I went against the grain and stood just inside a giant lecture hall.

I found mom her back to me. I could see her release a big sigh and stand to leave. She put on her best fake smile when she saw me waiting for her. I wasn't done just yet. I needed to sink the hook in just a little deeper.

As we walked to the car I spouted about all I had learned making everything sound like it was just what I wanted. Kat played along but I knew she wasn't happy in the least. I drove her back to the hotel. The same lady was at the counter as we walked past to the elevator. She glared her disapproval at me once again. I waved in response.

The game had gone on long enough. I knew that anymore would ruin my plans for the night.

"Why don't you go take a shower first? I have something special in store for you tonight."

"Daniel can we talk?"

"Shower first. Talk later. Now go!" I kissed her.

Kat responded weakly. She turned and went into the bathroom. I took the key and rushed back to the car and pulled out a hanging bag that lay flat in the trunk. I was back in the room the shower was still running. I laid out all of her clothes and beside them I laid out mine.

I was ready when she finally emerged, her demeanor hadn't changed. I slipped past her into the bathroom, I closed the door making sure not to lock it and jumped in the shower. Why was it taking so long?

I put it right under her dress. Did she not see it? Had I played this game too far? I was just about to go check on her when the door opened.

Mom pulled back the shower curtain. It was my turn to be surprised. She had put it on with nothing else! Stepping into the shower with me the white material soon turned opaque. I could see her areolas and hard nipples through the shear material. Her pussy was only partially covered.

"I hate you!" She pulled me down and kissed me with a passion I have not experienced to date. Her tongue forced its way in my mouth made easier by my desire to let it in. Then she did something I didn't expect. Kat grabbed my cock. I broke free.

"Kat no!"

"Yes. I hate you! She tightened her grip and stroked me harder.

"We need to talk!" I responded feebly.

"Cum now talk later. I hate you!"

"Later. We can do this later?" I was so close the argument would soon be moot.

"Now Daniel. Cum for me now! Then you can cum for me again later!" Kat insisted.

My cock heard her words and a stream of milky white man juice landed on the name of the school on the tee shirt. The school I was going to attend. The school that was the hated rival of the one I toured today. The one the woman at the counter glared at me over. That school was just across town from where

we lived almost four hours from here. I was going to State and live with my mother. God help me.

A second stream landed next to the first. Kat closed the distance and kissed me again. About the time my cock stopped twitching I could hear the voice in my head 'if you want more than this, fix the problem'. Like the phrase about the lake I had no idea what it meant, but something told me I would need to find some answers. It had been months since he last contacted me. It always seemed to be when I was intimate with Kat.

Kat looked magnificent in her new dress. Nikki helped me pick it out one Saturday afternoon when I got off of work. Shiny black it hugged her body just right ending mid-thigh. Spaghetti straps and low cut front was daring but appropriate for a woman her age. The shoes were a pair she had in her closet. The garter and stockings was my idea of course. I wore a new suit. Black pinstriped to match. Dinner was at one of the finest restaurants in town. We walked along the banks of the water to get there. When we were finished eating we were walking back holding hands.

"Daniel. Why did you bring me here?" Kat finally asked. We stopped and looked at the water.

"I wanted to find a special way to tell you where I decided to go to school." I replied coming clean.

"And you did. Thank you. But I really do hate you!" Mom teased me. "Daniel why did we drive four hours and spend money on hotels for something you could have done at home?"

"I wanted to reward you for your new job. For being such a good mom and friend." I said.

"Is that all we are mother and son? Friends?" Kat turned to face me.

"Well maybe friends with benefits!" I replied. I looked at her she seemed at a loss. "Is that a problem?"

"Oh Daniel you know it isn't. You do know that? Right? I just want ..."

"More?" I asked.

"I know it's wrong but I need to tell you how I feel. Sometimes I think you feel the same way and yet..." She looked to me for answers.

"Kathryn. I want so much more too. I want to take you and bend you over that park bench and show you what kind of man you raised. But I can't right now. There is something in here that won't let me do that." I put my hand over my heart.

"Is it because I'm your mother? Because if ..." Mom stopped suddenly!

"I wish I knew." I replied. Questioning why she stopped mid-sentence.

"Is it because if Nikki?" Kat questioned.

"In a way she is part of it. But it's something deeper than that. She wants more also. She isn't my mother and yet I can't seem to get past this ..." I pulled Kat to me we kissed like lovers.

"This is something I need to figure out. Until then I still want you. I still want the 'benefits' we share if that's ok with you. I just can't take that final step. Not just now. Not until I figure this out. Are you ok with that?"

"Take me to bed and I'll show you my answer!" Mom replied.

"We were in the room when Kat started to undress me, soon I was standing just in my briefs. She sat me on the bed I leaned back against the pillows as she stood on a coffee table in front of me. Slowly she swayed as she started to disrobe.

With only a dress covering her body it didn't take long before she was in just her garters, panties and stockings. She unhooked the stockings and slipped her panties down her legs and kicked them in my direction.

I watched as her fingers played with her pussy and the watched as one slipped between her hairy but trimmed pussy lips. She moaned as she spread her lips for me to see the pink waiting inside. I slipped my briefs off and started stroking my cock.

Kat looked on as precum oozed from the slit. Stepping down she walked over to the side of the bed. Pushing my hands aside she took over stroking me. Kat kissed me and then bending at the waist kissed my cock head before sliding her mouth over my cock!

A new line had been crossed. The pleasure offset any apprehension I was feeling at that moment. It had been done and I was going to enjoy it for now. Besides this was the first blow job I experienced and I had no desire to remember it as anything other than fantastic. I let my animal instincts take over and thrust my hips hoping to get her to go deeper. 'Lake Danamanski!' popped in my head.

Conversely the second thing that popped into my mine is the night she bit the assholes cock! Not wanting the same fate I decided to just let her control the situation.

Kat was close enough I could reach her tit, so I did cupping the weighty mass in my hand. Hanging down it formed an almost perfect cone the nipple begging to be sucked. I knew about the sixty nine position and had thoughts

of trying it now so she would get pleasured also. We had all night so I figured I would let this be all about me and then it could be all about her. All of this taking place in my brain in a matter of seconds. I realized how truly inexperienced I was.

Instead of thinking I just started to savor the moment and let Kat pleasure me. I held out as long as I could but again my inexperience showed as I started to feel my pending release.

"Kat I'm gonna...cccccuuuuuuummmmmmm!" I groaned.

I couldn't tell you if it went in her mouth or all over her or all over me all I could feel was my balls tighten and a sweet release. Fuck. I didn't even have my eyes open. Her mouth was on me now I could feel the warm wetness. Opening my eyes I looked around and couldn't see a drop.

Kat let me cum in her mouth! Sweet! She looked up at me after my cock was thoroughly deflated. Her lipstick was smeared. Traces of cum clung at the corners of her mouth. She grinned like a little girl in a new frilly dress. She moved over me her tits dragged over my chest her pussy pressed against my limp cock. I could feel her wetness coat it and my stomach as her face hovered above mine.

"Are you ok with this? Too many benefits?" Kat teased.

I pulled her into a kiss I tasted the remnants of my cum. It could have been a mouthful of shit and I probably would have enjoyed it. It wasn't bad but I wouldn't pay money for it either. Still I licked the corners of her mouth and fed that to her. She gave a strange look but said nothing. I think she was impressed at my boldness.

I may be inexperienced but I am no idiot. I've heard guys talk and even a couple of girls once. I do read and there is always the internet. Most guys don't like cum. I got it. Most girls don't either.

They don't swallow it because they like it. They do it because they love the person they are with and know that doing so is a sign of commitment and devotion. I did it because I wanted to acknowledge I understand her devotion to my happiness and I wanted Kat to know that I'll return that devotion myself.

"I am definitely surprised and ok with it! That was awesome!" I beamed.

"Was that your first time?" Mom asked. Her question took me back a bit. I struggled with the answer. "I'm sorry Dan. It's a question I had no right to ask. Please forgive me."

I could see she was upset with herself. She was concerned that her being my mother and asking a motherly question would ruin the night. I had no intention of letting that happen. I rolled her over and pinned her to the bed her hands above her head.

"Don't move a muscle." I sat up at the side of her near her waist. "This is awkward for both of us so let me make it easier for you.

"I have never fucked anyone." I said almost bragging.

I grabbed her tit and massaged it gently.

"I have never had a blowjob until just now."

My hand moved across her stomach stopping at her navel before moving to the scar on her abdomen.

"I have never gone down on anyone male or female ever."

My hand moved to her pussy and then down her leg. I pushed them apart, Kat willingly allowed me.

"The first I hope to avoid at all costs!" I replied laughing.

My hand slipped back to her pussy. I slid my finger along her lips feeling her juices starting to flow along her slit.

"The latter I was hoping to learn about this very night if I could find a willing teacher?" I gave her a naughty grin.

I slipped two fingers in her pussy. Kat arched her back and moaned. She started to bring her hands down.

"No moving!" I reminded her. She raised her hands back into position.

"I have never masturbated myself with anyone watching nor have I watched anyone masturbate save for the brief show you gave me tonight. I might add that I hope you will repeat it in the future to completion." I whispered.

I started fingering her pussy. Her breathing picked up she looked at me with begging eyes. Kat wanted to say something but I had her right where I wanted her, and she was mine at the moment.

"I have never seen a woman completely naked in person until the night I helped you take a shower. You were my first. I never touched a pussy until you forced me to finger you like I am doing now." I explained.

Kat was panting she was so close I could see her stomach tense up and then contract. I pulled my fingers from her pussy her moan of frustration was gone the minute she took my fingers in her mouth and licked them clean. I pulled them from her mouth and slid them on either side of her clit. She thrust her hips

desperate for more contact. I slipped them in her pussy and fucked her hard. Then I stopped!

"I have never cum on another person until you used your ass cheeks to stroke my cock!"

I slipped my slimy fingers down her pussy across her perineum and across her asshole.

"Oh god Daniel don't tease me any longer!" Kat hissed through clenched teeth.

"Quiet mother. I am not done answering your question!" I said firmly.

I slipped my fingers back in her pussy she gave a slight shudder.

"Where was I?" I pulled my finger s from her pussy and slid them back to her asshole where it was now covered in her juices. "Oh yes I was right here. About to talk about how I had never had made anyone cum until you used my fingers as a dildo to satisfy your drunken needs." I teased her.

I pushed one finger to the opening of her asshole she pushed back against it hard. I let just the tip slip in before I pulled it back out. Kat moaned in frustration. I moved my fingers back in her pussy the fluid gushed as they slipped easily in her gaping hole.

"Lastly I have never..." I pulled my fingers from her pussy and traced them back to her asshole pushing hard against her skin so she knew exactly where I was going. I slipped one pussy juice coated finger to her asshole and like before pushed the tip in her ass. "Lastly I have never fucked another person's asshole like I am doing to you with any part of my body!"

I flicked her clit with my thumb and slid my finger deeper in her ass! Kat pushed down with all her might burying my finger all the way. Her pussy

bucked against my thumb she grabbed my arm pulling herself up impaling her ass as far as my finger could possibly go.

"Fuck me! Fuck my ass you magnificent man! Don't stop. Don't ever stop! I love you Daniel. I really do love you!" Kat wailed.

I thought her screams would bring security if anyone heard. Kat didn't just cum she exploded! She grabbed my wrist and fucked herself with my hand. She groaned and whimpered until her body went limp. I slipped my finger from her ass my thumb moved into her pussy the sheets were drenched.

"Are we even?" I asked as she kissed me over and over.

"Daniel that was one of the most intense orgasms ever. And you say you're inexperienced?" Mom sighed. She kissed me some more as she held me tight. "How did you ever become so smart?"

I pushed her back on the bed placing her hands above her head once again.

"Don't move!" I ordered her.

I crawled between the legs she parted as my hands requested.

"Daniel what are you doing?" Mom whispered.

"You are going to teach me!" I grinned.

"So soon?" She giggled.

"Didn't you say, now Daniel, cum for me now! Then you can cum for me again later!" in the shower? Well this is later for you." I teased.

I slipped my tongue in her pussy. Her resistance faded with the first moan. I knew she would be sensitive but I also knew her first orgasm was because of clitoral stimulation. I avoided it at all cost. I worked a finger in her pussy she responded with another moan. I worked it down to her ass. Her arms came down and lifted my head.

"Not there. I want to remember the last time and savor the experience. Another time, ok?" Kat pleaded. I gladly nodded my head.

She guided me to places I hadn't been to. Gently she showed me where to go by responding when I figured out what she wanted. I was a quick study and soon she was revved up and ready to blast off. No teasing this time I let her guide me to the best spots and when she had enough she pushed her clit to my mouth.

"There baby, right there! Suck my clit. Lick all around. Make me cum for you one more glorious time. I love you Danny. I love the way you...make...mmmmeeee...ccccccuuuuummmmm!" Kat hissed.

This time was less violent more of a vibration and then her legs clamped my head as she pushed my lips from her pussy. She lay back savoring the afterglow I kissed the insides of her thighs. Setting up I raised one leg kissing along the length until I reached her knee. I looked down her cunt was begging to be fucked.

I wanted to. My cock was hard. Her pussy was coated with my saliva and her excitement. But something held me back once again. I can't explain it. I can't explain it because I don't understand it myself. That's why Nikki and I argued that night. She wanted more also.

Then I heard him again 'you have her where you want her. Make me proud. Fuck the bitch!' I tried to block it out. I was closing my eyes and trying to concentrate, the next thing I knew lips were around my cock.

Opening my eyes Kat was kneeling on a pillow on the floor. I shifted into a better position as she started pleasuring me for the second time with her mouth. I knew this would last longer but my inexperience and over excitement was working against me. I started responding sooner than I hoped. Kat seemed to sense this and stopped. She came to my face and kissed me deeply.

"Don't hold back baby!" Mom purred.

She licked the pussy juices from my face and shared them with me. Our eyes met again.

"You have nothing to prove here. Let yourself go. Enjoy the moment. There will be more of these anytime you want!"

She licked my face again and finished with a long French kiss.

"Use my mouth and cum over my face and tit's. Let yourself go Danny!" Kat smiled.

The words she used were almost more effective than her mouth. I stood up so I could have freedom of movement. This allowed Kat better access to my balls. The pleasure I felt when she took me back in her mouth wanted me to delay as long as I could.

As it was I lasted another two minutes then heeded her advice. I pulled from her mouth and hosed her down. Kat smiled as each rope of cum landed on her face and tit's. I slumped back onto the bed she lay down on top of me smearing my cum between us.

"Is that enough benefits for one night?" She smiled teasing me.

"If the teacher says class is over for the day. I can accept that." I pulled her in for a kiss. I had a feeling somehow this night was a turning point for me. "Just how many classes are there in this subject?" I teased back.

"Well I'm still writing the curriculum but I have a feeling they will probably last as long as the student shows interest." She kissed me again.

"Any idea what kind of a grade this student is going to get?" I asked. Mom was giddy by the question.

"Well that's hard to answer with just one test turned in. I'm thinking the student knows more about the subject than he's letting on. Still I saw areas for improvement. However he was a fast learner?" Kat was still teasing me so I played along.

"Well he does have a great teacher. She has this way of keeping his attention as she guides him through the lesson plan. But you still didn't answer the question. What grade did he get on his test?" I took a nipple in my fingers and gave it a gentle tweak.

"Well the grade for the day is hard to explain. It started with a D-. Then there was an A+ just before dinner. Dinner was an A. On the pop quizzes I would say an A+ and A-. Then there are extra credit points that are too many to list. For the day I would give him a B!"

"That's the best you can do. A B?" I acted hurt.

"Well that D- really brings the grade down. The teacher was put through a lot of pain and suffering. I know the student was trying to surprise her but that wasn't something she would want to go through again. As much as she loves

him and appreciates how he made it up to her. She has to factor that in her grade." She was making her point. A well-deserved point.

"I understand. You're right." I said accepting my grade. My answer was sincere and she knew it.

"Well the day isn't over yet I say we take a shower and see if you can get any extra credit points to raise that score up!" Kat gave me a naughty look.

We took a shower together but that's all. We finished getting ready for bed. I slid behind her naked body with mine and slipped my cock between her ass cheeks. She wiggled her ass in response.

"Ok a B+." She pulled my arm across her chest and snuggled in deeper as I gripped her breast.

It had been a great couple of days and a fantastic night. I didn't think much about it at the time but dad and his crude remarks unsettled me. We slept together that night and woke late in the morning. I loaded the car and we took a leisurely but informative drive back home.

(Kathryn)

As Dan was driving us home we were just listening to music and chatting away. I was a bit tired since I didn't sleep that well the night before. I tilted the seat back and closed my eyes. Dan stroked my hair letting me know it was ok to sleep.

I started thinking back on the last few months and all that has gone on. We all have our secrets, our phobias, our fears and our burdens, just as we have things that bring us joy. I have all of those too.

Dan will be graduating from a high school in just a couple of months. We held him back as a child thinking he wasn't developed enough at that age. Well he has surpassed all my dreams and more. He is years ahead of his friends at school, even Nikki has said as much and she is two years older than Dan.

When I became infatuated with Dan as more than just my son is a moot point. When he started to think of me as more than his mother is a bit more difficult to say. It probably started when his dad died. Ever since then I have been the object of his affections. Valentines cards when he was a kid all the way to last night. It was never sexual until the night of my drunken escapade. Sometimes I wonder if I did that on purpose. I don't think so but it was the start of something much more serious.

Dan was about thirteen when he came to me with a dilemma. His friend Kyle had an older sister he was sweet on. He wanted my help on how to win her over. Knowing it was just a phase I helped him work on how to win a girls heart. Bubble gum stuff, trinkets, cards, maybe the latest hit song. I figured it would keep him busy until nature took its course and she would move on and he would find his next true love.

But you see Daniel isn't like most boys. Once he gets something in his mind he never let's go. Not until he has won or lost. Anyway it all came to a head when he was fifteen. She had been polite this whole time. I even think she liked him. He asked her to a dance at school. She turned him down of course but only because she couldn't be seen dating a boy two years younger. Nikki was one of the 'in' crowd and to be seen with a skinny, awkward, nerdy, wimp just wasn't possible.

I thought he would be devastated, instead he invited her over one night. Her parents came, the two of them went into my bedroom, the door open of course, and twenty minutes later they emerged. She gave him a hug and then left with her parents. Dan never said what they talked about to this day.

All I know is everything I taught him about winning over a woman he started using on me. Dan was so subtle it was impressive, but at the same time so obvious it was funny. Did I say he was relentless? Well time moves on and he

dates a few girls but never for long. Nikki graduates high school. We even attend her graduation. I remember Dan getting her a present on his own.

Kyle her brother being one of his best friends kept Dan in constant contact with her. They had a pool so during the summer if Dan wasn't working he was at Kyle's or Carlton's house. Only occasionally did they come here.

It was New Years Eve of Nikki's freshman year at Sate. Nikki's parents invited Dan and me over for their annual party. It was always a big celebration, this time was even more so. This was New Year's 1999, the last year before the new millennium. I agreed we could go until midnight and then come home.

It was at that party I ran into Becky. The same Becky I went to college with. The same Becky I had shared a bed with and not just to sleep! This was before I met Duane.

As a teenager I wasn't into drugs or anything illegal, but I had been known to drink a bit too much on occasion. I was a free spirit sexually but remained a virgin mostly because I attended an all-girl school before college.

I graduated school and started working part time and took classes at the community college. That's when I met Becky. I needed a cheap place to live when one of the girls I had been slightly intimate with at school suggested I call Becky.

Becky was a for sure lesbian but the place was clean, inexpensive, and safe. I moved in, it was months before one drunken night and sexually frustrated I purposely walked in on her and her lover. It didn't take long for us to become lovers as well.

Becky was definitely the aggressor but I was no pet. My hard life early on taught me how to stand up for myself. I was just drifting without a compass, letting her take me wherever the wind blew. I knew I wasn't a lesbian but I enjoyed a woman's touch as much as a man's.

Becky was looking for more than I could give. She started to be controlling and more demanding personally and dominating sexually. That's when I met Duane. He was everything I wanted in a man. Sexually he was my first total lover. After that I knew I needed a man in my bedroom too. After a year we married to much opposition from his mother.

Dan and I are at this New Year's Eve party at Kyle and Nikki's house. I'm shocked to see Becky here but fortunately she doesn't see me yet. It's been twenty years since we last met. My leaving her didn't go well.

With her is a younger woman, I'm guessing early thirties, she is wearing what is obviously a very expensive collar. Dan finds Kyle and I mingle meeting parents from school. Nikki sees me. We know each other well of course but just through Dan.

"Ms. Masters it's so good to see you." Nikki takes my hand.

"Nikki please call me Kat. Ms. Masters seems so old!" I joked.

"Kat there's someone I want you to meet." Nikki gives me a taunting smile. Leading me in the direction of Becky. Becky interrupts the other woman talking when she saw me approaching.

"Kat this is my Aunt Becky. I believe you know each other!" She squeezes my hand. "And this is Tina!" I lean in to embrace Becky and kiss her cheek but she forces herself to my lips.

"Surely you want more than a peck on the cheek from your old lover?" Becky said this loud enough for both Nikki and Tina to hear.

I turned red. Tina looked pissed. Nikki seemed thrilled as she was still holding my hand. Nikki gave me a look suggesting she knew all about me and Becky. There was a glint in her eye.

"Surely I do not! Becky I was young. You were a marvelous friend and even a better lover. But I have moved on from that. I have a son now." I said firmly trying to hold back my fury. "He's right over there. I can have him come over and you can tell him all about our past, if you are the kiss and tell type."

For the first time Becky was speechless.

"I see you have your pet, no offense Tina. I'm happy with my decisions and I truly hope you're happy with yours." I continued knowing I had taken her by surprise. "Now if you don't mind I think I'll say hi to Abby. I have some planning to do for Dan's basketball game next week." I kissed Becky on the cheek this time and Tina on the lips. I wanted them both to know where I stood.

I took Nikki with me. She followed like a puppy still shocked at what just happened. I didn't go see Abby just yet.

"Nikki I need a drink!" I suggested. She brought me a glass of wine and then another.

"Becky told me you and she were lovers once but I never expected her to pull that!" Nikki was trembling.

"She told you that? When?" I asked. Nikki confirmed my fears, then I looked at her. I saw the signs.

"She was in my room last week. She showed me some pictures of the two of you." Nikki replied.

I knew I hadn't anything to worry about as far as compromising pictures. The most was maybe in a bikini or us kissing.

"Becky found out I knew you. She insisted I invite you to the party." Nikki explained.

"Nikki? Are you. Is she?" The answer was flashed across her face the moment I asked.

"Just..."

"Not now, not here. But we need to talk sometime soon!" I replied scanning the room.

I did go and meet Abby and some other parents. I was with Dan when the official New Year's moment came. I was ready to leave around twelve thirty. Dan wanted to say his goodbyes. I agreed we would meet back in fifteen minutes. I had said goodbye to some friends when Nikki caught me again.

"Becky wants to say goodbye." Nikki announced. I had looked for her earlier but she was nowhere to be found. "Come with me."

Nikki led me upstairs to her bedroom door. Knocking on it Tina opened the door standing directly in the opening. She had weights on her nipple clamps, a ball gag in her mouth, and clothes pins clipped on her pussy lips.

"Nikki bring her in!" Becky commanded. I was furious Becky would expose Nikki to this in her niece's house.

Nikki pulled me in Tina closed and locked the door. She turned I could see a big butt plug filled her ass. Whip marks leaving welts on her cheeks. That is when my pussy started to betray me!

Tina moved back on the bed. Becky was dressed as some dominatrix wearing a harness with a long thick ribbed dildo attached. Tina's tits were stretched by the weights. Her pussy gaping between the clothes pins, her stuffed whipped ass high in the air. That type of dildo was my favorite and Becky knew it. This is one much bigger than any we used on each other however.

"Here to say goodbye or here to play?" Becky asked seductively. She plunged the fake cock into Tina's pussy eliciting a yelp.

"Well I thought it only polite to say goodbye, but I see you're busy." I replied acting bored.

My pussy was dampening as the seconds ticked by. Becky knew the influence she had. She knew all my buttons. That's the problem with jilted lovers. They know us better than we know ourselves sometimes. She pulled the dildo from Tina's pussy showing the glistening juice covering it. Becky reached down and gripped the butt plug in Tina's ass. She started to pull.

The skin around her asshole strained to give up its prize. Extending up almost an inch Nikki and I could both feel the torment Tina was in. Then the large orb started to show itself. No less than two inches I would bet. The plug then quickly popped out catching on the next rib still embedded in her ass. Becky watched us as she pulled another then another each smaller than the first until all seven were pulled clear. Lining up the harness she put the ribbed dildo to Tina's ass.

"You see Kathryn this is what you want isn't it? You want this ass to be yours!"

Becky plunged the cock in Tina's ass. If you would have touched my pussy I would have cum instantly. I wasn't going to play this game. The reason I left was just this. This isn't love this is just sex. I knew if I didn't stand strong for both of us Nikki would be her next conquest. Becky buried the cock deeper then pulled out.

"Becky, you are one hell of a fuck no doubt. My ass thanks you for each and every time you fucked it, and I might add my pussy thanks you every time I fucked yours! Oh I can still remember the screams we shared as I stretched your ass like you are doing to Tina's right now. The times we spent licking pussies, teasing each other. I can't think of too many things we didn't do as lovers!" I agreed just to diffuse the situation.

"Yep. I guess you could say we were both a couple of lesbian sluts for one another. But I need a real cock, not a plastic one. A warm cock that could fill my pussy letting me know I had done a good job. You not so much. It's true that my ass hasn't been used since you last filled it but if it does it will be by someone that loves me, not just wanting to use me for a pin cushion. Good night Tina. I hope she lets you cum soon so you can enjoy your love making. Good night Becky. It was good seeing you."

I turned and unlocked the door taking Nikki with me.

"Nikki we need to talk tonight!" I hissed as I pulled her down the hall. We arranged for Nikki to follow Dan and me home, claiming I had too much to drink and Dan only having a permit. Her parents readily agreed.

"Kat I'm so sorry. She has this power over me!" Nikki confessed.

She and I were on my couch having sent Dan upstairs to his room.

"I know darling but you need to be strong." I replied.

"How do you do that? She seems to have this ability?" Nikki fidgeted.

"Like the Wizard of Oz. The power is fake. Hidden behind your desperate need to satisfy her. Think about this. When Tina was being fucked you wanted to be the one in her place right? Getting pleasured and showing Becky how far you would go to make her happy" I asked.

"God yes!" Nikki moaned.

"But what I saw was the clamps on her nipples with weights adding to the pain. I saw the whip marks on her ass to the point she will not be able to sit comfortably for days after the pleasure of being used wears off. I saw the clothes pins on her pussy, no doubt that will be left on way too long." I said bluntly.

I took Nikki's hand in mine. "I have been there. Sex with a woman can be so, so fulfilling, in a way a man can never understand. I like the toys. I like the occasional naughty situations. I even like a little soft discipline on occasion. But what you need to understand is you can have those things with someone that is trying to please YOU. Not trying to use you to please themselves. Do you understand?"

"I guess I never thought of it like that!" Nikki replied. She moved closer to kiss me. I let her have a quick peck before I pulled away.

"Maybe I'm wrong. Maybe Tina has this need to be dominated in a way I don't understand. Maybe she likes it really rough. But Becky is acting like a drug addict, always looking to find a higher high. How could she even think of having you bring me to that room and allowing you to watch? When is she going to go over the edge?"

I didn't tell Nikki, but I knew she was capable. She has done it before. I know for a fact. I have the evidence proving it. I think it's time to use it before it's too late.

"Kat you really think that could happen?" Nikki questioned.

"Do I think she would do it on purpose? No. But accidents do happen. Look Nikki you're a smart girl, if this is the path you want to take there isn't

anything I can do to stop you. You're an adult, you need to make your own decisions. All I am saying is find someone, man or woman that makes you feel good. Start slow. Start in kindergarten and then work your way up the ladder. I think you will find what you want as the journey unfolds. If what you want is to be used in this manner then at least you have the knowledge and experience to make an informed decision." I tried to explain.

Nikki lunged to me, kissing me, pressing her lips to mine firmly. Stunned at first, I kissed her back, I could feel her melt into my arms. Hoping to show Nikki how nice it could be we kissed for a few minutes then I pulled back.

"Kat will you be my teacher?" I knew what she wanted the moment our lips touched.

"No Nikki. I won't. But not for the reasons you think. You need to find someone your own age to figure this out." I kissed her lips letting her know I wasn't rejecting her.

"But you? You seem to know what I want." Nikki looked at me begging for help.

"I'll tell you what. I will not be your teacher but I'll offer to be your guidance consular. You're welcome to come see me or call anytime you want. What we discuss is strictly between you and me. No one else. That's as far as I am willing to go." I explained. "Do we have a deal?"

"We'll see?" Nikki argued.

"Nikki. Just so you understand me, if you decide to get involved with Becky, now or at any time in the future, we are finished. Period. Do I make myself clear?" I said bluntly. A sobering look passed over her face. She knew I was serious.

"Yes Kat. I understand. I don't think that will be an issue, thanks to you."

"I hope not. Just know I am serious. Please call me when you get home I want to make sure you're safe." Nikki kissed me one last time and headed for her car. I could see Dan's reflection in the glass as I closed the door. I figured he was listening in. He's like a ninja in this house.

I never knew how much Daniel saw or heard. He never brought it up, but then again that wasn't his style. He obviously knows now and even encourages us at times. How did he ever get to be so smart and mature?

Nikki did call but well after the short drive should have taken her. Becky had started to sink her claws in already, this in retaliation for my defiance.

The next morning Becky and I sat across the table alone for coffee. She tried to dominate me again but I wasn't twenty any longer. I had survived without her. I had survived Duane and his death and had raised a child by myself. One dominatrix, although a challenge, wasn't going to ruin my life.

"So you called me here?" Becky scowled.

"I did. I want to tell you how disappointed I am in you. I'll not discuss what you and Tina do. She is old enough to decide for herself. I just wanted you to know that I have concerns for what you are exposing Nikki to."

"That is none of your business!" Becky blustered. Her temper was rising.

"That may be, but as of now I am making it my business. Only as it relates to you. There are many fish in the pond. I know how attached you get to the ones on the hook but this time I am asking you to throw this one back in the water. Besides most fish prefer to prey on fish that aren't their own species." I said. I was hoping she understood what I meant about seducing her niece.

"Let's say I throw her back. What are you offering" Becky grinned. She understood completely.

"I am offering you nothing. You continue to live your life as you see fit. Nikki hers and myself the same. If she sees fit at some point let's say in ten years when she is fully grown and has experience and you see fit to fish again and she bites then I would say you deserve your catch." Becky looked at me with trepidation.

"What if you decide to go fishing during this time? What would you do with such a catch? Would you also throw the fish back in?" Becky asked. She was jealous.

"I see your point. First, I am not a fisher of the female species anymore. I have no pole or net. But just to be clear if the fish did jump into the boat I would return it to the sea as many times as it takes until I feel it's mature enough and has enough experience to know if it wanted to jump in the boat again. Even then I would think long and hard to decide what is BEST FOR THE FISH."

"What if I deny your request? What then? Would you be willing to take her place on the hook?" Becky was testing me to see how far I was willing to go.

"You have one pet. I don't think I would make a good playmate. Besides I am not house broken anymore. I have been with the male breed and have peed on too may carpets to stay true to any owner that didn't love me and nurture me." I explained. "As for your first question. I would be willing to guess that as disappointing as it would be to lose such a prized catch that it would pale in comparison to how disappointed Rachel's parents would be with you!" Becky immediately froze when I mentioned her name.

"You wouldn't?" She turned beet red.

"You're right and you're wrong." I stood leaving her at the table. "I hope you enjoy the rest of your stay. Give Tina my regards. It really was good to see

you. I have so many fond memories. Goodbye Becky." I left her there pondering my willingness to expose her.

That was years ago.

Back in the car I opened my eyes, Dan looked over and saw I was awake. I looked up and saw we were about half way home. The memories of the past left me flush.

We stopped for gas, had lunch and was back on the road. Dan seemed to be in a happy mood, so was I.

"So mom I was thinking. Since you know my sex life how about you tell me about yours?" Dan said playfully.

"Daniel I am your mother! That isn't appropriate!" I snapped back. I looked at him he seemed stung by my words. I mean truly hurt. I felt bad but he kind of sprung it on me.

"I wasn't looking for details. Just a bit of a history." Dan replied sheepishly, I guess in a way, it was a bit of an apology.

We rode in silence. I got to thinking about my sex life and the choices I made. He was part of that now. I guess he should have some basic understanding.

"I was a bit of a wild child when I was a teenager. Going to an all-girl school left me with little contact with boys, and when it did little opportunity for anything serious." I started nervously.

I looked over he was smiling now. I took his hand and held it in mine.

"I dallied with a few girls, nothing serious. Mostly just kissing. We were all practicing for when we got a real boyfriend. A very few of the girls were gay but they were honest about it and never forced themselves on anyone. My senior year I had my first orgasm with another person, it was a girl that will remain anonymous. After that not much happened until I was in college. I dated several guys but never had intercourse." I explained. "I met Becky. I believe you know all about her."

Dan looked over at me with a guilty expression.

"I even thought I was in love with her at one time. She wanted to go in a direction I didn't. I left her. I dated a few guys and then met your father Duane. He knew my past and I thought I knew his." I said shifting in my seat. "We dated I fell in love. He was my first and only, until he died of course. Since then I have dated several times. One guy in particular was promising but then I found out he was already married. Nothing special since then you know all of my recent failures."

Dan squeezed my hand.

"What about Nikki where does she fit in?" Dan asked.

I was surprised he brought her up, that's not his normal style. When he did I wasn't exactly prepared to answer.

"Nikki is special in a different way. If you want to know if we have been intimate, it's none of your business, but the answer is no." I sat back in my seat hoping that would be the end.

"What about Eve? Are you going to tell me about her?" Dan asked looking my way. Oh shit! He knows fucking everything.

"We have long complex history, which is all I am saying!" I said defiantly.

"Thank you!" Dan smiled.

"For what?" I asked.

"For not treating me like a man last night and then like a kid today. I hope you and Nikki find what you're looking for. And I hope you and Eve still stay close." I had a tear in my eye when he looked at me.

"Oh Dan I hoped you would understand." I replied.

"What about me. Where do I stand?" His question knocked the wind out of me.

"Where do you think you stand?" I stalled.

"Kat. Don't do that. If I am going to be a man then I need to hear it straight." He had me boxed in. Damn is he smart.

"Daniel, you know I never planned any of this right?" I looked to see his expression.

"Yes, but would it make a difference if I thought you had?" He protested. "You know how I've felt about you for years." Dan replied. He had a point.

"When you helped me that night in the shower. I was drunk, but not so drunk to not know what I was doing. We both know that. But then you didn't resist like I thought you would. After that I felt vulnerable and when I needed you, you were there." I answered truthfully. "I guess I expected some sex starved teenager but you gave me what I needed and didn't try to take advantage of me. I felt I could trust you."

"You can mom."

"When you told me that intercourse was off the table I was very disappointed in a way. Then I remember that I was a virgin when your dad and I had sex for the first time. Now I understand why you want to keep that for the right girl. What we have done so far is out of love not something casual and without meaning am I right?"

"I couldn't have put it better." Dan replied. He glanced over.

"Where we go from here isn't as important as where we've been. I know this is temporary. I have no illusions. I am willing to continue knowing the boundaries we've set. As special as these have been they aren't the only ones I'll remember. Now your turn." I shifted and looked at him as he drove.

"I feel the same. I am willing to continue as long as I feel there is no one I am betraying by doing so. I have so much more to learn. If that special someone comes forward then we may need to talk. I too will cherish these days." Dan explained.

I had tears running down my cheeks. I was so happy and so proud.

"How did you ever become so smart?" I asked.

"Good genes I guess." His answer was right, but it stung just the same.

"What about you and Nikki?" I was afraid to ask.

"Well I don't think that is going so well right now. I haven't given up hope but the sun is setting fast. Maybe when I get into college I'll see what my options are." Dan said. He handed me another tissue.

"Kat can I ask you one more question?" Dan looked at me.

"Sure honey what?"

"Do you know where Lake Danamanski is?" Dan asked.

"What did you say?" I asked.

"Lake Danamanski do you know where it's?" He repeated.

"Were did you hear that?" I replied.

"If I told you, you wouldn't believe me. So you do know it?" Dan said impatiently.

"I don't know where any lake by that name is. Now tell me where you heard it! Please Daniel it's important."

"In my head. Dad talks to me sometimes. Well at least I think it's him. Eve thinks so too." Dan replied.

"Eve knows about this. When?" I tried to remain calm.

"Just last fall. Why? Is there a problem?" Dan seemed concerned.

"No problem. I was just surprised to hear you say that. Does he say anything else?" I pried.

"Just a few things. Not very often. Sometimes it may be a month or more." He explained.

"Do we need to talk? Maybe get you counseling?" I asked.

"Na I'm good. Nothing scary or spooky. Mostly suggestions or patting me on the back. I'll let you know if it gets to be a problem." He looked at me and knew I was terrified. "Really, I promise!"

I let the conversation end so we could move onto other subjects. I enjoyed the rest of the trip as Dan filled me in about his elaborate planning for the past few days.

(Daniel)

The weekend wasn't over but the last few days were awesome. I learned so much about my mother and came away understanding her much better. Sure the sex was great but more than that we learned that we both wanted it equally. I had so many questions answered and new ones to figure out. Something was bothering me more than usual. Something she didn't say. No one but me would have even thought of it but that is just the way I am. Details make the difference.

Sunday was a day of chores and Monday it was back to school and work. It was two weeks before Kat joined me in bed. I thought something was wrong but I think she just wanted to make sure I didn't expect special benefits too often.

Life around the house actually got better than before. Kat seemed happier. I know I was. Her dress around the house was a little more provocative. I was allowed the freedom to grab some ass or squeeze a tit on a regular basis.

Kat enjoyed showing me the goods and then watch me try and hide my erection or she would just grab my cock when I least expected it. We teased and laughed, watched movies, and cuddled in each other's arms. On her birthday I even found a couple of free porn sites. The best was two girls and a guy going at it. We both came twice that night!

Spring break was here so I called Nikki just to say hello. She came over to visit one day, a complete surprise. We talked and hung out for a couple of days. Kat and Nikki even went shopping one day and then we all went out for dinner.

I was swimming in happiness and self-confidence. Mom was making serious money at work. Nikki and I were talking again. High school was almost over. Kat planned a graduation party the end of June. Eve and Charles were flying in and all my friends and neighbors would be there.

The one thing I noticed is my dad talking to me every time Kat and I were being intimate. In the shower, during hand jobs and oral sex, even passionate kisses became fair game. It used to be only suggestions. Now it was getting more explicit and even borderline disgusting.

I tried to block him out and was successful several times but it became a distraction that I wasn't comfortable with. The last time he even talked to me when I was with Nikki and we weren't doing anything special at the time. I mentioned it to Kat and Eve but they hardly even responded. Eve gave me some exercises to try but it really didn't seem to help.

It was the last week of school Kat had a special night planned for my final day. I cleaned out my locker and came home. George giving me the next two days off. When I came home about four Kat was in the kitchen. I hauled my stuff in and laid it in the front room. She came and gave me a gentle kiss.

"Dan please take your stuff upstairs, and I might suggest you take a shower." She suggested.

I hauled my stuff up none too happy about it. I thought she might join me in the shower. I waited as long as I could but it was obvious she wasn't coming. I pulled on some clothes figuring I could get the grass cut since it was growing like weeds. I went downstairs expecting to see Kat in the kitchen. I looked around and then called out.

"In the laundry room honey could you come help me?" Kat replied.

I walked down the hall and turned in and there she was standing on a short stool bending over the washer. She had on a pair of black lace panties trimmed in red and a matching bra with holes for her nipples.

"Is my student ready for another lesson?" Mom hissed. We hadn't played that game since the hotel.

"What lesson is it you want to teach me?"

Kat shook her ass at me, then arched her back.

"Well since there is one thing we can't do. I can only think of one thing we can do?" Mom teased. "Are you game?"

It took me a moment. Sorry but it did. Kat shook her ass one more time.

"You mean you WANT to do that?" I replied shocked.

All I had ever heard about was the horror stories and how women hated it. Like swallowing cum it was just not something they liked to do. Sure they do it on porn sites but they get paid to do that! Kat stood up and kissed me.

"Well a good teacher teaches. The question is do we have a willing student?" Kat pushed hard against me. "This isn't the same but its close?"

She kissed me some more my cock was hard.

"I think I can be persuaded. As long as the teacher plans on getting enjoyment too?" I teased.

"Well there's only one way to find out? She's never done it before with a man!" Mom explained. I stood back extending my arms holding her.

"Are you serious? This would be your first. Our first?" I was stunned and excited.

"Becky used a dildo several times. What I am offering you a real live cock has never been!" Mom whispered.

I pulled Kat in and kissed her then picked her up and carried her to the bedroom. I laid mom on the bed and stripped naked.

"I'm ready!" I said proudly. My cock was sticking straight out.

"I see you are. But first I think we need to take the edge off. Me first and you second. That way when we do it will last longer for both of us." Kat purred.

I liked what she was saying. We started by kissing for almost twenty minutes. I was eager but knowing that the prize was mine allowed me to relax and take my time. It wasn't until I was eating her pussy that dad showed up. He was egging me on telling me how I was wasting my time trying to get her off. I ignored his advice. I focused instead on remembering what Kat had taught me. It was a poor effort but she eventually had an orgasm.

Kat started giving me a blow job. It felt great and then just as I was getting really excited he popped back in again. He all but ordered me to fuck her mouth, to gag her with my cock. I tried to resist but he became stronger the more I resisted. I thrust one time too deep she looked up at me I could see fear in her eyes.

Mom gagged for a moment but Kat didn't stop, she stayed with me. Then just as I was starting to cum I thrust my cock deep in her mouth and came. Kat gagged and coughed. Spit and cum drooled down her chin. Dad was ecstatic. 'That's my boy! That is the way to be a man!'

When I calmed down I apologized to Kat but she made no mention of my abuse.

"That was a great start. Now I have just one little thing we need to do first." Mom gave me a devilish grin.

Kat handed me a small butt plug (I think it was small because the one I saw on the porn we watched were much bigger) and some lube.

"Now coat the plug and my asshole. Maybe take some and work it in with your finger. Then slip this inside me!" I think she was more excited than me.

I did just as I was instructed. I lubed my finger and worked it inside of her. She moaned then looked at the dildo. I picked it up coated it, the bulb slipped right in against the flange. Kat moaned again as the intruder entered her rectum.

Dad wasn't happy. For some reason he left preferring not to stay for this show. Kat took me in the shower and we washed each other. Kat squealed in delight each time I played with the plug.

After we dried off I was surprised when she started getting dressed. She teased me shaking her stuffed ass at me while she picked out clothes. She

wore a skirt with no panties and a blouse with no bra. Following her cue I threw on some jeans and a pull over. This was a whole new side I hadn't seen.

Kat was hungry and wanted to get something to eat. I knew she would never go inside looking like this. At least I didn't think we would?

We pulled into the drive thru at a greasy burger joint. Cheeseburgers and strawberry shakes later we drove to the corner of the lot and ate dinner. We didn't talk much but she did show me her pussy a couple of times, once far enough to see the plug. She stroked my cock on the way back home. Once in the house she pulled me in her room where we both undressed in seconds. Mom handed me the lube.

"Nice and slippery, and go slow!" Kat instructed.

Kneeling on the bed she presented her ass to me in what I can only describe as a woman possessed. Kat was hungry for this. Her tits hung down, her pussy glistened with desire as her hips swayed in anticipation.

I was hard as nails watching the dildo quiver in her ass. My mind raced taking in every minute detail hoping I didn't pass out from excitement.

"Danny please don't tease me!" Mom whimpered.

Tease her? If anything I was scared shitless, if you'll excuse the pun. Taking a deep breath I gained my composure and prepared to learn another lesson.

I lubed up my cock and pulled the plug slowly from her ass. I watched in amazement as her skin gave way, the bulb spread her asshole then it just popped out. The gaping hole closed slowly.

Remembering her instructions I smeared her asshole with more lube. I lined my cock up to her opening and leaned forward. My cock started to open the hole that just closed. Her hand touched my thigh. I instinctively stopped letting mom adjust.

I could feel her leaning back. My cock started to pushing firmly then I felt the head slip past the opening. God I was so nervous. Now mom's steady pressure continued to bury my cock deeper in her ass. Then she let out a sigh. The pressure encircling my cock was not only intense but exhilarating.

"There that wasn't so bad!" Mom moaned. I wasn't sure if she was talking to me or herself. "Danny you're stretching me too much, give me a moment." She hissed.

Before long Kat moved slightly, I pulled back watching her asshole grip my cock, the veins straining against the tightness of her opening. When I was to the end I pushed back in.

"Yes Danny that's the way. Oh it feels so good!" Mom purred.

Urging me to move faster soon were fucking. Fucking her ass but still fucking.

"Yes baby. That's the way. Use my ass. Cum in me!" Kat squealed in ecstasy.

It was all too much for me to hold out much longer. The tight grip of her muscles, the warm cavern of moist pleasure, even moms constant praises worked against me. I started giving her all I had hoping she would cum soon. 'What you waiting for fill her up!' dad burst in my head. 'Maybe we can hold out until she is ready to cum?' I thought.

'Be a man! You cum when you're ready. If she ain't ready so what? Come on let's do this!'

"I'm going to cum!" I announced figuring I owed her that much.

"Wait baby I am almost there!" Mom cried out.

'Don't you dare wait! This ship is ready to blast off even if it is her ass!' Dad demanded.

"I'm cumming when I am good and ready!" I told her. 'That's how a man does it!"

I don't know why but I so wanted him to be proud of me. I had this overwhelming feeling Dad was happy.

"Please Danny don't make me beg!" Mom protested.

"Beg all you want bitch because here it comes!" I yelled in triumph.

My body trembled in a massive orgasm as I blasted a load in her ass. The feeling was absolutely overwhelming. It all happened at the perfect moment for me. 'That's my boy, this is how you do it. Man I am so proud of you'. One more hurdle and I think your old man may just be the proudest guy I know!' He left me then, I basked in the knowledge that my dad, who I hadn't seen for over twelve years was so happy with me.

I knew the moment I watched my shriveled cock slip from her ass I messed up. She was so looking forward to this but I was selfish. Mom didn't say a word but held me and told me how great I was. We got cleaned up together then Kat had me look at a note. I pointed to the word yes.

Kat looked at me, a tear was forming in her eye. She hugged me letting me how much she loved me and let me know it would all be ok. I went up to my room and looked myself in the mirror.

It was one of the happiest days of my life for me, but I knew for Kat it could have been better. I don't know why my dad Duane shows up at these times but I knew I owed it to mom to stop it. The problem is I just don't know how.

...

The party is tomorrow. Charles and Eve arrived last night but went to Uncle Georges and Aunt Sally's place. Kat has been driving me nuts cleaning and such. I had my chores done including the yard and cleaning the garage out. George called to see if we wanted to go to dinner but I suggested that Kat would want to stay home and finish getting prepared. She was having a company cater it but she was still fretting over every detail.

I was sitting at the desk paying bills. In the stack of paperwork was the brochures from the university. I moved them aside and filed some old bills that I had neglected. When the desk was cleared I opened the brochures to look through them.

I ran across the invoice from the hospital for Kat's arm. I had been planning to look it over earlier. It must have found its way in one brochure. I glanced at the invoice amazed by the prices they charged. Scanning the document I saw a date crossed out and a new one in its place.

I made a note to come back when I wasn't so busy. I placed it in the drawer and started to peruse the brochures. At the bottom of the pile was the programs for Kyle and Carlton's funerals I had saved.

Then I had an idea.

I decided to set out the brochures so people that were making donations could see where I was planning on going to college. I had never forgotten about Kyle and Carlton but as each day goes on the memories seem to fade.

I felt bad that they weren't going to be here. I missed them. I know Nikki misses Kyle. I found mom and ran an idea past her. She hugged me and suggested I follow through.

The party started at 2 and ran until 9, mom not wanting the neighbors to get upset. Like every other town this size there were several graduations on the same day. Many started earlier so I cut out to visit them promising mom I would be here by two.

The yard was filled when I returned. My whole family (many have not been mention as they have no bearing on the story you are here to read) showed up during the day. Moms boss Sharon and her husband came along with their kids. A few of my mom's friends from work also came.

School friends came and went. Carlton's parents came as did Kyle and Nikki's. They were very appreciative of the tribute to their sons I included behind the table where guests could leave gifts for me.

It was after eight. Most of the older folks left. Everyone attended that I expected to see except Nikki. I was a disappointed when George, Sally, Charles and Eve left. I was hoping they could see Nikki again. There were maybe twenty people left, mostly my friends from school and a few neighbors. Some had been to other gatherings and had walked down to see me and then talked to mom.

The caterers were clearing the tables when she showed up. Walking up the drive all eyes were drawn to Nikki. I had never seen her dressed so slutty. Her hair was up she had big hoop earrings on. Her blouse was cut way too low for a family function. Fortunately she had on a bra and several colored layers. She had on a short skirt and high heels. To walk on the lawn?

I met her at the top of the drive I tried to give her a kiss but she avoided me. She was cold and distant. Nikki handed me a present and congratulated me

on my accomplishments. She saw Kat and bolted in her direction. I could see them embrace. She was visibly upset. I was concerned. This wasn't like her, not at all. I wondered if there was something I had done?

Kat and Nikki move from the crowd I could see they were having words. Good or bad I couldn't tell my guess it was bad. They embraced Nikki look like she was going to leave. I intercepted her before she could escape.

"Are you ok?" I asked, but she avoided my eyes.

"I am fine. I need to go! Now!" Nikki demanded. She started to leave yet again.

"Please. Just give me a moment. I want to show you something. Promise it will only take a minute then you can go!" I pleaded.

"One minute. I shouldn't have even come!" Nikki was pissed.

I took her over to the tributes I made for Carlton and her brother Kyle.

"I was thinking how they would be doing this today also. The three of us graduating together. I started a fund in their names. I am hoping to raise ten thousand dollars and start a scholarship in their honor." I explained.

I looked at Nikki and that is when I saw it. The choker she had on was in a pattern. Embedded it that pattern was the word BECKY. My blood boiled. I knew what that meant. It all started to make sense. Her dress, her aloofness, why she was avoiding me? Her argument with mom. She looked at me knowing I had seen it.

"I'm sorry Dan. I didn't mean to hurt you. I shouldn't have come!" Nikki was now crying.

She started down the drive. Dad told me to let her go. She wasn't the one for me. She was fast approaching her car down the block. I ran after her. Nikki was just about to open the car door when I reached her.

"So this is it? All of this time and this is what you're going to do?" I asked.

I was loud but not screaming. Dad started in on me. 'let her go she isn't worth it. She isn't the one for you!' I tried to block him out but he was strong.

"Well Daniel Masters. I have waited too. I'm done waiting for you. You and your antiquated ideas of commitment. Well I have moved on. I need more than an innocent boy!" Nikki belittled me. Dad was furious 'You can't let her talk to you like that you're a man not a boy. Tell her!'

"Nikki. I understand you need to move on but not like that!" I pointed to the band around her neck. "Anything but that!"

"I'm starting to think you may need help!" Nikki replied. She was cutting deep. 'Tell her now!' Dad demanded.

"Well maybe I am not as innocent as you think. Did you ever consider that?" I replied smirking. "You think you are the only woman on the planet? Do you think you are the only one that can break the rules? Keep thinking that!" I yelled.

"Daniel you didn't?" Nikki asked. I saw true fear in her eyes.

"You know me Nikki do I ever lie? Ever? Well I am not starting tonight!" I yelled again. Dad seemed happy I was breaking her heart.

Nikki pulled the door open and sped off leaving me gloating in the street. 'That's my son! Say goodbye to that bitch!'

I agreed with him. If I was going to be the man he wanted me to be it was time to quit messing around. I was a man now. I'll make him proud of me yet! I could feel my confidence build. I went back to the party. Kat started my way.

"You ok?" Kat took my hand.

"Never better. Should have done that months ago." I sneered. I pulled my hand free.

"I'm going out with my friends. I'll see you later!" I turned to walk away.

"Daniel I was hoping you would stay to help clean up?" Kat replied.

"Why don't you handle that? It was your idea to have a party. I'll be back when I get back!" I turned and headed to some friends and decided to crash a party we knew was serving booze. I headed out looking to let loose. 'now you're talking son let's go party!'

I knew I was in a car. Next thing I knew I was on the side of a street throwing up. I woke on the patio laying on the lounge. There was a blanket covering me and a puddle of vomit in front of me. The sun was out I looked up I was in the back yard of my house. I stood up but my head was pounding. I wasn't even sure how I got here. I went to open the back door but it was locked. I looked for my key but didn't have it. I pounded on the door.

Kat looked through the window. I could see she was pissed. She opened the door.

"You look like shit!" She said.

'Forget her! You did great! This is what being a man is about. Do as you please when you please!' Dad replied.

"That's ok I feel like shit!" I said mostly to myself. 'Maybe you could have eased me into that drinking lesson' I thought back to my dad. 'Yeah, but now you know'

"Come in and get undressed before you go up and take a shower." Mom said calmly. "I'll make you some coffee and breakfast."

'I'm telling you. You break that bitch like I did and there isn't anything she won't do for you. Just remember this isn't the prize.' Dad mumbled on. He was just as drunk as I was.

The hot water help immensely. A cup of coffee was on the sink when I came out. I was feeling much better when I went downstairs. I ate breakfast as Kat looked on. I thought she was going to give me shit but she held her tongue. I read the note and pointed.

"Dan if you don't have plans Eve will be coming over later. Charles and George are going to meet up with some old friends." Kat said.

"Eve is coming? Sure I'd like to talk to her." I replied. Dad was letting me know that this was a good thing.

She slid a note to me. She pointed to the word yes. I shook my head no. She pressed her finger to the word yes and removed the paper. She slid another piece of paper in front of me.

It read. 'remember whatever happens I love you. I always have. Let him win. When the time comes you will know what to do. I trust you with the rest of my life'. Kat took that paper from the counter.

Mom slid another. 'when we're done go to the desk, the answer you've been looking for is there'.

The booze from last night was still lingering. I took a deep breath I tried to compose myself. Maybe I had over done it?

Kat hugged me and then left.

I went to the desk. I looked at the picture on the corner. Mom, dad, and me when I was a toddler. On the other corner was the last picture mom took, it was dad and I with his new car. Duane looked so happy. When I looked at me I saw a different expression. I diverted my eyes immediately. I looked around on the desk. Nothing else seemed to pop out at me.

I opened the drawer and there was the paper work from the hospital. I looked at it again. The prices still seemed outrageous. I was just about to file it when the correction caught my eye.

It was in the history field. I remember filling out the forms when she was in the room with the doctors. The year I gave them was clear and correct. They had crossed it out and entered a date three years earlier. That was impossible.

"Kat!" I yelled. She came running. "Do you have something to tell me?"

I held out the insurance forms.

"What are you talking about?" She asked. I think she was genuinely terrified.

"This!" I pointed to the change in date.

"Danny I broke my arm. You knew that. Those are just the insurance company's copies for us." Kat replied. I could see her tremble.

"I know that. I am talking about that. This line!" She looked at the question and turned ashen white.

"You know I had that done." Kat answered but she was avoiding the question.

"Look at the date. It's been altered?" I was almost yelling.

"They must be wrong honey!" Kat replied.

'She is lying' dad suggested, he was back stronger than ever.

"Well I intend to find out!" I grabbed my keys and left Kat begging me to stay. "You better be here when I get back! If you're lying to me..." I yelled threatening her.

I started the truck.

'Thank you Danny boy. I have waited so long for this. I have been hoping you would find out. I couldn't tell you I promised I wouldn't. The hospital! Go to the hospital!' Dad urged me. I was way ahead of him.

Even in my semi-inebriated state I knew I should drive cautiously. It took twenty minutes to get there and another half hour to get a staff person to see me on a Sunday. I told them it was an emergency. Fortunately I was a name on Kat's privacy form. The nurse looked up her file. Sure enough the correct date wasn't the one I had given them it was three years earlier. Same day.

I was just about to leave when I had a thought.

"Can I see the hospital copy of my birth certificate?" I asked. The woman seemed perplexed but since it was my information and I was over eighteen she agreed. She showed me the original.

"How can this be? It isn't possible?" I murmured mostly to myself. I struggled to understand.

I was driving back. I had my proof. 'I am so proud of you boy now we can finish this. You just need to do what I tell you and I'll never doubt you as a man again. Man I am so proud right now!' Dad was swollen with pride.

I could feel his exuberance flow through me. It was intoxicating. So this is what it feels like to be the star football player. The guy that could have any girl. Everyone wanting to be your friend. I liked this. All of those years of being the dweeb were now over. I could feel it. Dad and I were becoming one. He would know how to deal with this. We would deal with this like a man!

I pulled in the drive and walked into the house. I answered a note on the counter and called out for mom.

"Mother! Where are you?" I yelled out. Kat came from her bedroom her face in tears. "You lied to me bitch! You aren't my mother you are just some disgusting piece of white trash posing as my mother!" I lashed out.

I was pissed and feeling like I was the man. "Where is my mother? I thought you said she would be here!" I screamed.

"She should be here any minute!" Kat replied sobbing. Tears were flowing down her cheeks.

"Well until then why don't you get naked and do what you do best. Suck my cock!" I demanded.

'That's my boy put the bitch in her place. You think you can do that or are you still a mama's boy?' Dad was testing me. He wanted to know if I could follow this through to the end.

"Please Dan, let me explain!" Kat tried to say.

"Did I ask for an explanation cunt? No! I told you to strip and suck me off." I yelled again.

I removed my shirt, kicked off my shoes and dropped my shorts. I was naked and she was on her knees my cock glistened with her saliva. I was getting excited. I could tell dad was truly proud. 'You handled that like a real man. You showed her who's in charge!"

I could feel my balls starting to boil. I wanted to cum but dad was trying to get me to hold back. I pulled my cock from her mouth.

"Over the back of the couch cunt." We demanded.

Mom jumped up and positioned herself over the back of the couch. I lined my cock covered only with her spit to her asshole and drove it in. Dad protested. Kat screamed.

"Daniel you are hurting me! You need more lubrication!" Mom yelled.

"Fuck you bitch. You will take it as I gave it to you. This is all you are good for and all you will be good for! A good ass fucking!" I cursed her.

"I'm saving this cock for just one pussy, and she better get her soon or you are in for a long night!" I promised.

Dad chimed in. 'Wow. This isn't my thing but you're a fast learner. She's yours to do what you please with. She's your slut!' When he referred to her as my slut I just lost it. I unloaded my balls deep in her ass not pulling out until my shriveled cock slipped free.

"Lick it clean slut!" I demanded. 'Damn you are bold!' dad replied.

"Daniel!" I heard Eve behind me. I turned to face her.

SLAP! Eve smacked my face so hard I thought she broke my nose. "Don't you ever call her a slut again! EVER! Do you hear me?"

I was caught off guard. She struck first but I outweighed her by almost double. I grabbed her arm by force holding her in place.

"Well aren't you the sassy one. Mother!" I sneered letting her know I knew the truth. Eve gave me a wicked grin.

"I was wondering how long it would take you to figure that out. Did Duane tell you?" She asked teasingly.

"No! My dad said he promised he wouldn't." I sneered. "I found the insurance form."

"You're a bright kid. So you fucked her in the ass. And got your nut off? Too bad I was hoping you might want to help Duane finish what he started." Eve removed her blouse and skirt.

She was standing in a see through bra and panties. When I looked at her she looked forty, her tits have a slight sag and she shaves her pussy. My cock got hard. Correct that, our cock got hard. I knew dad couldn't see but he could read my emotions well enough to know what I was feeling.

Emotions were high and I had a feeling it would be off the chart real soon.

'Danny my boy this is it. This is what will make you a man. Tonight is your night! You fuck her and I'll never doubt you again! I am so proud of you!'

"Duane is with you isn't he?" Eve asked.

I nodded.

"I have wanted to tell him how sorry I am for the last time we were together. I've been waiting to find a way to show him. Daniel I believe you can do that for us. Will you help me?" Eve asked seductively.

'Say yes' dad demanded.

"Yes. I'll do anything to help. What do I need to do?" I could feel dad getting excited.

"The last time we were together Duane wanted to fuck me again like he had before. But I was scared he would hurt me again, like he did the night you were conceived. I pushed him away. I thought he was going to rape me again. But Daniel I was wrong to do that. Tell him that." Eve urged me.

I nodded that he was listening in.

"Then he...then he was with us no more. Oh how I wish I would have seen that what he really wanted was to own me. Tell him Daniel. Tell him I have been waiting to prove to him how much I love him. That's why I'm here. To show him I mean it. To prove to him I was wrong!"

'Damn right she was. You could have had another bother! Let's do this son let's show her what she missed out on.' I could feel dad trying to take control but I knew he need me to help.

"What do you want mother please tell me how I can fix this?" I asked. I looked on in lust as she leaned back on the couch. Eve was stroking her pussy.

"Very simple Daniel, you need to fuck me, and when you do let Duane know I will always be his. For you both. You are both my babies. Who knows maybe we can make another one tonight. I am ovulating!" Eve said sexily.

I started to lunge at her.

"Whoa big boy not so fast. We have all night. Here let me clean that off for you!" Eve leaned forward and took my cock in her mouth.

'No' dad yelled. 'That was in Kat's ass.' he reminded me.

"Mother you know that was just in Kat's ass?" I informed her.

"I do boys. You don't mind if I call you boys I hope? Since I'll be fucking you both. I want you boys to know I'll do whatever you want tonight as long as the next load of cum is in this pussy!" Eve teased.

With that she pulled her panties to the side. The pink inner folds glistened as she stroked her slit. She was back on my cock. It was hard as nails.

'Steady son take it slow.' Dad interrupted. I reminded him I had just cum minutes ago and could hold out for some time.

"Take off your panties!" Dad and I said in unison. Letting my cock go Eve removed her panties and her bra.

"My, my, boys, I see you have quite the cock there. So much bigger than I remember." Eve squealed. "I don't know if I can handle all of that? It's huge!" Dad was stung by the remark.

"I can't wait to feel it inside of me!" Eve said seductively. "When you do this pussy will belong to you and only you!"

That brought him back. Eve stroked my cock. I reached down and grabbed her tit it felt exquisite in my hand. I could tell dad was rewarded with the memory. Eve laid back she opened her pussy and slipped in two fingers. She brought them to my mouth. I sucked them clean her juices tasted heavenly. My cock twitched.

"Oh boys that is a lot of pre-cum leaking from that big cock of yours. I hope that means there is a big load waiting to get inside me. I have always wanted to have someone fill my pussy until it just gushed out!" Another zinger, but I was so excited I wasn't sure he noticed. "Here baby rub your cock over my clit. Make me want it!"

'Do it son she's dripping wet I can tell. Make her beg and then when she does make her tell you are a man. Her man!' Dad had me ready to just plunge in.

"Like this mother?" I teased her. I let the weight of my cock rest on her clit a trail of pre-cum was on her shaved pussy.

"Just like that boys. Why don't you call me what I really am. Call me your slut. Isn't that what Duane wants? He wants me to be his slut? Take my pussy whenever he wants. Well here it is Duane. Tell me I'm your slut and you can have it!"

'Do it! Call her a slut and let me feel her squirm when we fill her slut cunt!' Dad said excitedly. Dad was ready and I was ready. One word and my life would change. Hopefully forever.

"Get ready slut here we come!" I yelled. Eve grabbed our cock to guide it in front of her pussy.

SMACK. SMACK. SMACK! My ass was burning and my cock was in pain. Dad protested 'what the fuck is going on?' He was as stunned as I was. This was bad. This wasn't what he wanted.

I spun around and there was Becky! Dressed head to toe in black leather. The complete dominatrix outfit. She was holding a short whip with dozens of leather straps. It was the one she used on my ass. She has a long thin black dildo in a harness hanging from her crotch.

"You will not call her slut. Ever! These two bitches are my sluts and you are next!" Becky screamed.

I knew who she was and what she was capable of I remember Kat telling Nikki how evil she was. Dad soon had the same fear I had. He was vulnerable. He had put all his effort into making me the man he wanted me to be. We were so close.

"Stand still bitch!" Becky moved behind me. Eve grabbed my swollen cock tight. Kat moved to my side holding me also.

Becky had us right where she wanted. Eve was right in front of us waiting.

"Lube his ass up and this cock." Becky hissed. Kat coated my asshole and guided the tip of the dildo to it.

Dad was fighting this with all his strength. He was so close! There was no way he was going to let some woman get the better of him.

'Help me Daniel together we can still do this!' Dad pleaded. With Eve holding my cock in a death grip he was losing the struggle. I could feel the intruder start to push against my asshole. Physically they had me but mentally he still had control. I started to pitch in. The tide was about to turn.

I was bent over Eve she pulled hard on my cock.

"I love you Daniel. Please let him go, you're nothing like him!" Eve kissed me. It was like a burst of sunshine that blinded me. My head seared in pain.

Just then someone grabbed my face turning it to the side. It was Kat.

"I love you Daniel. I trust you. I am proud to call you my son just the way you are. You're better than he ever was. Do this for me. Do this for Eve your mother. Do this for yourself!" Kat pleaded.

"Come for me Daniel. Let me see it!" Eve stroked my cock just once and stream after stream coated her body. "Yes Daniel! Yes oh my God there is so much cum. Duane was a boy compared to you!" Eve praised me.

I could feel the hurt he felt. Dad was losing her. His own mother was calling him a pussy. But he was strong and they knew it.

'Daniel you aren't helping!' He cried out.

'You're right. I'm not. I'm not you and I never want to be what you became. Goodbye Duane. You aren't welcome here anymore! I pushed back and let Becky fuck my ass.

"Oh yes!" I cried out. "YES!" I screamed so all three women could hear it.

I let the intruder in. The door opened. It released the flood of emotions.

Dad was strong. Stronger than I was. He knew that and so did I. He knew he would have to leave but would only do so after he made me pay for my betrayal. Then something happened that surprised us both. There were others with us.

'We've got this Dan, let go buddy. Let us take care of this'. It was Kyle and Carlton! Not just them but more as well Walter, Michael and others whose names I didn't catch in the commotion. It's a good thing they came I wasn't going to hold out much longer. I remember telling Kyle I owed him one. Then it all went black.

I was drained my head felt like it had been run over by a semi. I tried to open my eyes but just the glimpse of light caused a shooting pain. I tried to relax. The pain started to subside. I could hear voices, distant at first. I couldn't understand what was being said. I could feel a hand on my shoulder gently holding me down.

"Daniel its ok just rest. Take your time you have been through so much." It was Eve. I was back.

"See, I told you he'll be ok. Now come here Kitten let me give you some loving." It was Becky. I opened my eyes she was kissing Kat! I jumped up and attacked Becky my hands around her throat.

"You leave my mother alone bitch or I'll kill you! You hear me?" I screamed choking her. She was terrified as my hands started to squeeze her throat.

"No Daniel it's not what you think. Let her go honey! Please let her go!" Kat was pulling me off. Eve joined her. "Danny please. She was just looking at where you hit my face. Please baby let her go!"

I loosened my grip Becky was visibly shaken. Kat and Eve led me to a chair. My head was throbbing in pain I closed my eyes while Kat held my hand. I knew she was safe. I could feel it. Kat wrapped her arms around me, her lips pressed to mine, I have never felt so loved.

(Kathryn)

I had my concerns about Daniel recently when we were intimate. I knew something was wrong and when I talked to Eve she confirmed my suspicions. I had promised that I would tell Dan the truth about who his mother really was by his twenty first birthday. Knowing Daniel the way I do, it was no surprise he was starting to figure it out sooner.

Eve and I have several theories about why and how, but for now my only concern is Danny.

When I miscarried for the second time the doctors suggested I have a hysterectomy. I couldn't bring myself to do that. It was so permanent but agreed to have my tubes tied. Science was making breakthroughs every day. At least this way I had hope. Duane became despondent knowing that I could never bear him a child. He gradually became more and more abusive.

Later that year Eve admitted she was pregnant with Duane's baby. For six months Charles, Eve, and I struggled with what to do. Then her health took a serious turn for the worse. Eve had a blood clot and they were concerned for her life. They knew it was a high risk pregnancy from the beginning. When the doctors insisted in terminating the pregnancy early Charles new he had no choice.

With Eve in an induced coma the question was if the baby should be saved.

Duane took me to see Daniel. Daniel was delivered four weeks early. I knew the minute I saw him we needed to do whatever it took to keep him alive. The decision was made that Duane and I would adopt Daniel with the agreement that if we did he would be ours. Eve was in the hospital for months recovering and over a year in physical therapy. Charles was a saint from the beginning.

Duane changed as a person. He became the loving and attentive husband he was when I married him. The first four years after Daniel came into my life were the happiest. Sure he was a slow learner but he was bright and happy. Daniel had tenacity from day one. Even as I trained my body to breast feed he never gave up. He was rewarded with what every child deserves.

The doctors were very encouraging explaining I should forget all of the statistics. Progress was what was important. Duane started to become impatient. He took it hard when the school suggested we hold Daniel back a year. They felt by waiting another year he would probably not struggle and run the risk of being held back later in life when the social implications could be devastating. I agreed. It was the one argument I won, but in my victory there was defeat.

Duane started drinking heavily. I know he was unfaithful. George threatened to let him go if he didn't get his act together. One day we were over at Charles and Eve's when an argument ensued. Duane left for hours, when he came back he ordered Dan and I to get into the car. I knew he had been drinking. Charles was out looking for him. Eve and I tried to stop him but he was too strong for us.

Dan and I should have never gotten in that car, but I was weak. You know the rest. Fortunately Daniel and I were buckled in. Duane wasn't. They said it was internal bleeding that killed him. They were wrong it was his pride and drinking that killed him. I can still remember his last words to me as he tried to get my door open.

"Make Dan a man Kat! Promise me you will make Dan a man Kat." His eyes rolled back in his head and he dropped. He was alive when the ambulance arrived but he died on the way to the hospital. I have tried to honor his wishes. I tried to make sure Dan got a good rounded education. He has friends, was in the boy scouts, even played sports. I refused to have a video game consul in our home. Danny wasn't going to hide in a plastic box and TV screen.

Charles and Eve moved to Florida after Duane passed. Dan spent every summer there. I owed Eve that much. She visited often but stayed with Sally and George. We both found it too difficult to share Dan when he was young. We have grown very close again over the last couple of years.

It's only because of her that I figured out what was going on. Eve has a gift, a sixth sense she calls it. She had suggested that Dan was being visited by Duane, real or imagined. I wasn't surprised, Eve always felt she and Dan had a connection, one he didn't understand and one she wasn't going to pursue until he had.

We needed Daniels help but talking to him would be risky. If it really was Duane we figured he was feeding off Dan's emotions. Eve suggested writing the questions down with multiple answers that Dan could point to quickly. Like riding a bike. Reading is something you can do without thinking.

The questions were short and quick, spread throughout the day. I would leave him notes even when I wasn't around he left an object behind on the answer. Writing would be risky for Dan. That would require thought and possibly emotional thoughts. So even if we didn't ask the right question or the answer he wanted to give we would keep at it until we got it right.

We thought of trying something before the party but Eve said that we should wait until it was over. One she wanted Dan's graduation to be a happy occasion. Second she thought it would give us an opportunity to take advantage of his happiness to keep Duane off balance.

Eve knew we needed to get Dan so emotional he would let Duane take control. It was Duane we wanted to purge. She suggested we give up our secret. I protested at first then remembered it was going to happen in a year anyway.

Eve thought she and I would be enough. I suggested Becky. I wanted a nail in his coffin. Duane had fucked with my son. I was sure Dan knew all about Becky and what she stood for. If she could get her hands on Duane I hoped he would never show his face again.

Well you know the rest. Dan is resting, I gave him a couple of the pills from when I broke my arm.

Becky is gone. Eve is on the couch sleeping, she was almost as drained as Dan. Charles, George and, Sally are on the way. Eve and I figured the truth was the best explanation.

I made some sandwiches while I waited for the others to arrive. George walked Dan to my bedroom so he didn't have to go up the stairs. We sat at the dining table Eve and I taking turns explaining what we knew. There was much discussion as you can imagine. Heated at times but always civil.

It was Eve's sister Sally that finally spoke. She has been my anchor and big sister through all of these years raising Daniel.

"There is plenty of blame to go around this room several times. I myself have been guilty as well." She looked around the table at each of us. "What we need to figure out is what's best for Daniel. He's the only one that had no choice in any of this."

The response around the table was in agreement.

"Assuming Duane has been vanquished, as I too believe he has!" Sally continued. Eve looked at her sister stunned at her revelation. "Yes dear, I to have started to use the gift again. I just choose to keep it to myself."

"You crafty little witch you. I always suspected as much! All smug and demure while all the time knowing exactly what was going on. Well played sister!" Eve smiled.

"Ladies as much as I would love to hear more about your voo doo shit. Let's get back to Daniel? Sally you were saying?" George interrupted.

"Assuming Duane is no longer a problem, there is the fact Dan just found out a secret we've been hiding from him for years. Kathryn is in a particularly delicate position. For twenty years she's shouldered the burden of this secret. She's in a position that we should have never allowed her to be in."

"Sally is right. I am to blame for this. I should have made different choices." Charles stated.

"Charles! Don't you ever say that! Any other choice, and I know you didn't just mean termination, would mean that I would have missed out on the best twenty years of my life! Thank you Sally for saying that but the burden isn't anything compared to the joy of raising Daniel. I haven't been alone through this. You have all been there supporting us both." I explained. Eve reached over and took my hand and gave me a knowing smile.

"I'm glad you feel that way. My concern is that young man is going to wake up soon. Knowing what he now knows may be more than he can handle under the circumstances. We need a plan for the next few days and weeks. Maybe even professional help." Sally suggested. She had a sobering point.

The discussion went on for over an hour. We finally agreed that we would hold off on getting anyone else involved until we saw what Dan's reactions were.

The plan was for George and Sally to take him home with Charles for the night. Eve and I would be the most likely people for him to lash out at. We hoped George and Charles would have time to talk to him and answer any questions. Sally was always close to him and is a calming influence. We all agreed no matter how painful it would be we wouldn't lie to him. We owed him that.

George and Charles loaded him in the car. I wrote him a note and sent them on the way. Eve embraced me as tears flowed down my face. I was truly afraid he may never want to see me again.

(Daniel)

The softness of her lips on my cock was all I could think about. I closed my eyes and drifted off in a feeling of complete happiness. Over time Kat had learned how to satisfy me with her hands but it was her mouth that felt so delicious. I looked down to see her smiling face but it all looked so fuzzy.

I felt a presence in the room, somehow I knew we weren't alone. I looked to the side and there she was, it was Eve. Suddenly it was no longer Kat sucking me it was my real mom. I closed my eyes and had the same feeling as before, complete happiness. When I looked down her face she too looked out of focus. I had the feeling someone was watching.

I was dreaming.

I opened my eyes slowly hoping it wasn't true. I looked around and I was in bed alone. As I woke my head was feeling much better than the last time I was awake. I knew right away I was at Uncle George's house. My grandfather Charles was in the corner of the room reading.

"Good morning Daniel. How are you feeling? Does your head still hurt?" He asked concerned. The room was dim, just a light near the chair was on.

"Yeah. Just a bit of a headache. Nothing a couple of aspirins won't handle. Where's mom... I mean Kat?" I asked concerned.

Charles smiled at my correction.

"Your mom and Eve are at your house. Sally put some aspirins on the nightstand beside you. There's a note from your mom as well." He pointed to the side of the bed.

"If it's ok with you. I'll let you take a shower and get cleaned up. Kat packed some clothes." Charles explained standing up.

"I'll let Sally know you're up. She's waiting to make breakfast. After that I hoped you, George and I could talk. Or if you prefer we can start now?" I had known Charles my whole life and I have never seen him so calm and serious.

"I think a hot shower will do me good. Sure, we can all talk after we eat." He started to leave the room. "Gramps. When can I see mom?" I decided to call Kat that as he suggested.

"Daniel you can see her whenever you want. I was hoping we could talk first. She's pretty emotional right now too." He studied me as I looked at him. "Tell you what you get cleaned up and maybe you can call her before breakfast. Just to say hi. Ok?"

"I would like that."

Charles nodded, then closed the door. He made his point I wasn't to get into a long conversation with her. I picked up the note and read it, then sat it back down. I took the pills and headed to the shower. It was a long shower. I thought of so many things past and present. I think I figured out why I was

here. Why they wanted to talk to me. It could only be one of two things. I hoped it was the first. The second was just not an option.

Sally was the first to greet me, she gave me a big hug and asked how I was feeling. I resigned myself to the fact I should get use to that question. At least I knew they cared. Charles handed me his phone and pointed to the den. I called the house.

"Hello this is the Master's residence." Eve answered.

"Eve. This is Dan, and yes I am ok, just a headache. Sally is on top of that too. I called to talk to Kat but I'm glad you answered. I need to thank you for what you did last night."

"Daniel I am so sorry you had to go through that! Baby I have wanted to ..."

"Eve. I'm sorry to cut you off but I promised to keep this short. We will talk later. Ok?"

"Yes honey I understand, of course." She replied shaken. That wasn't like her either.

"Mom, I mean Kat, is she there?" Eve hesitated long enough for me to know I had touched a nerve.

"Daniel your mother is still sleeping. She had a restless night. I could wake her if you want?" Eve called her my mother which must be hard on her too.

"No, that won't be necessary. Just let her know I called." I walked out of the den into the kitchen. "I'm going to have breakfast, then the coppers here are going to take me into the interrogation room and beat the truth out of me." I joked. Charles and George started laughing. Sally wasn't so amused.

"Daniel what are you talking about? Are the police there?" Eve asked concerned.

"Just a minute. Here, you can talk to my lawyer, I may need bail money!" I handed the phone to Sally. "It's Eve." I explained as Sally took the phone.

"Eve, how are you two holding up?" Sally pause for just a second. "No honey there are no police here. He was just kidding. The only ones here are George and Charlie." (pause) "I know it isn't funny, but you know men." (pause) "Yes I'll have him call later. Bye."

The three of us were trying not to laugh but weren't having much success. One phone call broke the tension in the house as well as let them know I was ok physically and mentally. Breakfast was much needed nourishment.

George invited Charles and me into the den. He was about to close the door.

"Can Aunt Sally come in too? I want her to hear this and get her opinion also." They looked at each other. George shrugged his shoulders. He returned with Sally. She sat beside me. I held her hand as an eerie silence filled the room. George started.

"Dan we have a pretty good idea what happened last night based on what Eve explained. The five of us all talked while you were sleeping. I want you to know we agreed to tell you anything you want and tell you the truth, regardless of how it affects us personally. You ok with that?"

"Thank you for not treating me like a child or an idiot. I know you all love me. I know this isn't easy for you so I will try and only ask questions that really matter to me. What can I answer for you first?" I replied warmly. Charles looked at George and Sally.

"Dan the first question is about your father, Duane, do you know where you stand on that front?" I could feel Sally tense up as he asked the question.

"I believe he's gone, at least for now. I don't see him coming back soon if ever. If he does I'll let you know. I promise. I have friends and family on the other side. I know that now."

"Good. That gives us all peace of mind. You know that we have all kept something from you since the beginning. How does that make you feel?" George continued.

"How does that make me feel? How does it make me feel that you kept the truth from me?" I repeated trying to stay calm. Sally started to get very tense. "It makes me feel like the luckiest kid alive! That is how I feel!"

Sally looked at me stunned. George looked at Charles in disbelief.

"You mean that Danny?" Sally beamed.

"Am I a bit pissed no one told me earlier. Sure. Did I feel a little betrayed. Ok. Yes. But you are my family. I trust you to do the right thing. Well at least try. I thought long and hard about this in the shower. After I wallowed in self-pity for a minute I asked myself what I would have done different at the time you had to make those decisions. My answer was there isn't much."

"That is very mature of you Daniel. I'm sure we will talk more about this later. Do you have any questions now?" Charles asked. This was the chance to find out what I wanted to know.

"Kat. Where do I stand with her? You obviously know that she and I have been intimate to a certain degree?" The room fell silent once again. "I love her, and more than just the mother she really isn't, and even if she was I still

do. I know what you're going to say. I'm smart enough to ask those questions myself." I stated a bit defiantly.

"Can you tell us how the two of you started to become intimate?" Charles politely asked.

"Well it isn't what you think. I am not my father. I didn't ask for this, and neither did she come to think of it. Circumstances just put us in a position to act on feelings we were hiding from each other. I guess you could say it just happened!" I defended us both.

"Kat told us as much. Don't be mad but we felt we needed to ask." Sally replied.

They were right. How would they know if my mother didn't take advantage of me? Instead of being upset. I was glad they asked.

"I understand why you asked and I appreciate it. Now are you going to forbid me to be with her?" I asked getting excited now.

"Danny, you're a man now. We have concerns for sure." Sally explained. She looked at my uncle and grandfather. "The five of us talked last night. We have a suggestion to make. It will be up to you to decide."

"And your suggestion? Does this include me no longer being with Kat?" Now I was getting very emotional. My eyes started to water. I didn't want to fight with my family. Charles spoke next.

"Daniel. I suggested you and your mother drive down to the condo next weekend and spend a week with Eve and myself. When you return we would like you and Kat to spend some time apart. Maybe for the summer. Then we feel you both will have clear heads so to speak and see where you stand at that time." It was better than I had expected but not what I wanted.

"So you are ok with us spending two weeks together and then you want to rip us apart?" I asked crying now.

"No Dan, not rip you apart, just, well there is no delicate way to say this. Just sleep in different places. You would be staying here. You can still see Kat, every day if you want. Just..." George was saying before I interrupted.

"No sex?" I asked regaining my composure. George looked at the floor.

"Dan, how about we say just living apart. You have been together for twenty years. We aren't asking to send you off to the moon. Kat was with us on this by the way, we just want to make sure Kat is who you really want. She wants to make sure also." Sally explained. She took my hand and pulled me close. "We just want what is best for you. We all know you think you know. We just want to make sure."

"Dan. You know the old saying if you are a hammer every problem needs a nail to fix it. Well for some jobs a screw is better!" George explained.

"Really George? That's what you came up with?" Sally scolded him. Charles and I were laughing. George looked at us in bewilderment. "Telling a teenager the way to fix his problem is to get laid?"

George finally caught on which was funnier than the joke itself.

"Aw shit. You knew what I meant!" George was now laughing at himself.

Sally was still not amused. "Guys really?"

"Ok here's my answer. I'll take your suggestion under advisement. I want to talk to Kat alone. If she doesn't object I'll agree to enter your rehabilitation program on a volunteer basis." I said. Sally still not amused kissed my cheek.

"I'm proud of you Daniel. You impress me more each day." She replied.

George dropped me off at home Kat was waiting at the door. Eve was going to ride back with George but I asked if she could stay. George returned home after we agreed that we should all go out for dinner.

I walked in the door Kat stood at the kitchen counter Eve by her side. I pulled out her note. I sat it on the hall table. She started to move. I held my hand up indicating she should stay.

"They want me to stop seeing you for the summer. Is that what you want?" I asked pointedly. Kat started crying.

"No." She sobbed.

"But you agreed?" I tilted my head looking for clues.

"Yes." She tried to come closer but I stopped her again.

"Why?"

"Because I love you!" Kat sobbed. She was crying steadily now. Eve put her arm around Kat to comfort her. I waited for her to settle down.

"Do you think I love you?" I asked. It wasn't intended as a trick question.

"I don't know Daniel. I don't know what to believe. Duane has me so confused." Mom Replied. She looked down avoiding my eyes.

"Kat. Duane is gone. There is just me. Look at me. It's just me. You know me better than anyone else. I can never fool you." I said calmly. Kat looked at me. "Now do you think I love you yes or no?"

"Yes. Yes Daniel I do." She was still crying.

"Then why did you write this note?" I held up the piece of paper.

"Because I lied to you. I should have told you. This is all my fault." She sobbed harder.

"Kathryn that isn't true. I'm the one to blame?" Eve interrupted. She turned Kat to face her.

"You're to blame? Mother?" I asked forcefully,

I did it. It was easier than I thought. It felt good. It felt right. They both looked at me shocked.

"Did you just call me mother?" Eve's eyes started to tear up.

"Well aren't you my mother? Did I or did I not pass through the pussy you showed me last night?" I asked bluntly. They both looked at me stunned.

"By the way giving birth vaginally to a preemie is quite rare I want you to know!" I was showing off how smart I was.

"Well I always said you were special!" Eve replied. Smiling through her tears had found her sense of humor.

"So, let me make sure I understand this. My dad, Duane, raped you and you got pregnant with me. You almost die from the pregnancy. I pop out before the timer goes off. Kathryn agrees to raise me with the Duane as hers. You recover, the whole family knows, including Charles. Duane gets restless because my one mother can't have kids, which he knew, so he cheats on her. Then in a drunken rage he wraps the car around the tree hoping to kill the three of us to make one of my mothers live her life with the guilt of rejecting her fucked up son."

They nodded.

"My other mother and I miraculously live. And just before he dies he tells me how much of a disappointment I was. Then he tells my not dying mother something that he knows will make her feel guilty as long as she lives. 'Lake Danamanski'. That's what a six year old, which just learned he was worthless from his father thought he said. But what he really said was 'Make Dan a man Kat'. He said that because he thought I would grow up a pussy. But then something happened. Something that he nor anyone else expected. That pitiful little boy had a woman that treated him like her own son even when the worthless husband killed himself leaving her alone to raise his illegitimate kid. Then his real mother that should have aborted the little sperm and her husband stood by that woman and the boy."

They nodded again.

"I was that constant reminder of the brutality she endured, and the embarrassment he must have felt. Not once did they break the oath of silence. Add to that the time and money she spent to be close to him, supporting him. She even brings her sister and her husband in, who by the way hated the very thought of the bastard child. Duane was irritated that I didn't give up but flourished with the woman he betrayed and the supporting cast she assembled. But what really pissed Duane off was that his wife not only taught me how to become a man but fell in love with me doing it, and I with her. He

learned I was a better lover than he ever was. He knew that his mother knew this and even encouraged it in her own way. And he knows she wants to get even closer with me too. My real mother was, and continues to sleep with my adopted mother even to this day. He wanted revenge. Does that about sum it up?"

Eve looked at Kat and Kat to Eve.

"Daniel how do you now all of that?" Kat asked.

"I have my ways!" I replied. Eve gave me a wicked smile.

"So ladies back to the matter at hand. No Kat I do not hate you. I never will. What you did by not telling me was the right thing to do. And to prove to you how much I love you I am willing to live apart from you for the summer and longer if that's what you feel is best. But for the next two weeks I hope to catch up on my classes." I grinned. She wanted to approach. I held her back.

"Eve you aren't to blame either, in fact I speak for myself, I am glad what happened occurred. Maybe not the way it did, but we find strength in struggle. I appreciate all you and Charles have done and the way you both have handled this. I would like to talk to Charles about being my dad. He has been better than my real dad ever was. I never expected you were my real mother but I always knew we had a special connection. Maybe one day we can act on our other desires?" I suggested.

"Daniel we both have so much more we want to say" Kat said looking at Eve.

"No more talking. I found out I have two mothers yesterday, and I miss them both so much. I need to hold them!" I went to them and hugged them both. We went to the living room and sat on the couch with me in the middle.

It was during this discussion that Nikki's name came up. Kat explained that her appearance at the party was part of Eve's plan along with Becky the next night. Kat explained that Nikki and she had words at the party that night about her concern over me. Nikki was upset when Kat wouldn't allow her to come the next night with Becky.

I was getting a bad feeling about this. I knew Nikki as well anyone. She was a strong woman but could be reckless. I had a feeling Becky wasn't going to give up on her just yet. My gut told me Becky was going to take advantage of our situation to pursue Nikki.

Kat and I cleaned up and we all went to Georges so Eve could get ready for dinner. The six of us enjoyed a pleasant dinner not once talking about recent events. They wanted Kat and I to stay but I needed to do something. George tried to insist but Eve cut him off.

"You know something don't you?" Eve whispered to me as we were leaving the restaurant. Her hand gripped mine loosely at first then tighter.

"I don't know, but I need to find out, and soon. I can't take a chance." I explained. Eve gave me a knowing smile.

"Trust your instincts Daniel." She squeezed my hand and I felt suddenly at ease. "I suggest you take Kat with you."

She knew what I was thinking. This was another test. She wanted to know if her suspicions were right. Kat and I started heading to Nikki's house. Her dad explained she wasn't home, that she was out with her Aunt Becky. I thanked him then we headed out Kat visibly shaken. On the way to the hotel I tried to reassure her that it would be ok. We rode the elevator up Kat gripping my hand firmly. It all came together. As complicated as it was, the answer was clear to me. The only question is if I could live with it.

"Let me do this Dan. Becky is still a bit scared of you!" Kat suggested.

I waited at the elevator several doors down. I watched as Kat gathered herself and knock on the door. Tina answered. Kat asked to see Nikki. Becky stood just inside the room.

"Kathryn, why are you here?" Becky demanded to know.

"I have come for Nikki!" Kat said firmly.

"Please come in."

"No, that will not be necessary. I will not be staying." Kat was steadfast but polite.

"Scared what we might do?" Becky taunted her.

"We wouldn't do anything. Please, I just want to get Nikki and leave now." Kat said raising her voice. "I don't want to make a scene."

"What if she doesn't want to leave?" Becky sneered.

"Then I'll go and leave you in peace."

"Let me think about it." Becky stalled. I walked down the hall and stood beside Kat.

"Becky she said please." I said glaring at her. The sight of me unnerved her.

"Nikki! Kathryn is here to see you." Becky glared at me as she called out. Nikki appeared with Tina.

"What do you want?" Nikki was trying to be indifferent but it was just a front. Kat looked at me not sure what she should say. I whispered in her ear. She looked at me. I nodded my head in the direction of Nikki.

"I want you. I want you to come with me right now." Kat held her hand out.

"Are you saying that just to get me to leave?" Nikki asked digging her heels in.

"No. I mean it. I want you to come home with me." Kat confessed. She was having a difficult time saying this in front of Becky.

"What if I choose to stay?" Nikki replied stubbornly.

"If that's what you want then we will leave." Kat was getting scared. I could tell and so could Becky.

"You wouldn't fight for me?" Nikki asked. She started getting emotional, her eyes watering.

"Fight for you? I'm here asking you to come home with me in front of these people. Is that not enough? Do you really want me to beg? You know I won't do that anymore than I would let you do that. If we are going to see where this leads it must be as equals." Kat had said her piece.

The decision was all Nikki's.

"What about Daniel?" Nikki asked. Kat looked at me her eyes watered now too.

"Don't you understand? He's the reason I'm here! Nikki. I..." Kat tried but just couldn't do it.

There was a long silence. Everyone was waiting for what she would do. Becky looked at me, somehow I knew what she wanted, I nodded in agreement, her attitude softened. She understood we were both letting go of something we didn't want to.

"Nikki, let me get your purse." Becky replied. Nikki looked at her and ran into Kat's arms. Becky handed me Nikki's purse. "You owe me one!"

"Becky are you ok with this?" I asked making sure she understood what I was asking. Becky looked at me long and hard.

"You have my word." She offered her hand. We shook.

"Then you have mine. I'll call you soon." I shook her hand again. Becky closed the door. I walked to the elevator and pushed the button. The doors opened.

"Are we leaving or do I need to get you two a room?" I called down the hall. Nikki pulled free from Kat. They ran to the elevator, once inside Nikki kissed me as well.

Kat had left for work when I woke. I got dressed and went to the construction site. George was there. Making sure I was ok he put me to work. Thursday night Charles and Eve were heading back to Florida. Kat invited everyone to the house for dinner, Nikki included. I was on the patio grilling some steaks and chicken. Kat and Nikki were in the house preparing the rest of the dinner. We set up everything on the picnic table. George and Charlie walked around back I heard Sally and Eve in the house. Soon we were all at the table talking.

Everyone wanted to know more about Nikki. You know school, how we knew each other, and what her major was (business / technology) and such. Nikki

explained that she was a junior but she was taking some summer classes so she could get through school on time or early. She and George talked about the changes since he graduated there. Dinner was over and we were finished cleaning things up, Charles and Eve would need to leave in about an hour. Charles made a brief phone call while we sat in the living room.

"Daniel we haven't given you your graduation present yet. We wanted to make sure it was the right thing to do. I think it's time to open your present." Eve walked over to me and handed me a box. When I opened it there was a map and several brochures. On the bottom was a set of keys. I picked them up and looked at George. He pointed to the front window and just then a Ford truck pulled into the drive. It couldn't have been more than three years old.

"Just came in off lease. Only has fifteen thousand on it. It's loaded, leather, stereo, sun roof, the whole deal. It's yours from the four of us." Charles said.

I looked around at my family and gave each one of them a hug. They led me outside the delivery guy handed me the other key and left with another driver. I walked around it, four door, four wheel drive, Lariat Edition. It looked like new, I was overwhelmed.

"Take it for a spin!" Sally suggested.

"Nikki will you go with me?" I asked. She looked surprised that I would ask her. She looked at Kat the hesitation was obvious to everyone.

"Sure!" She finally said. I helped her in the truck. We headed out down the street. The truck was awesome.

"I wanted to talk to you." I explained as I pulled onto the main drag. "Kat and I are leaving tomorrow night for Florida. You're welcome to come if you want?"

"I know. She told me. I don't think that I'm ready for that yet." Nikki glanced over.

"What part? Me or Kat?" I reached over and took her hand.

"Dan what do you mean, you or Kat?"

"You're not ready to spend time with me, or not ready to spend time with mom in public?" I clarified. I could feel her struggle to answer as I held her hand. "You do know I still have feelings for you. Right?"

Her heart skipped a beat. I had hit a nerve. She looked at me unable to say what she was feeling.

"I can go without her if you want. She can stay here with you!" I squeezed her hand.

"You would do that?" Nikki asked surprised. "She's looking forward to being with you. Kat told me the deal you have with your relatives.

"If that's what you need right now, I'll survive." I replied. Her heart was still unsure of what she really wanted. I decided to back off. "You think about it. You're welcome to come. If you need some time to think about this I understand."

We pulled back down my street.

"Dan you really are in love with her aren't you?" Nikki whispered afraid to hear the answer.

"Nikki. I'm in love with both of you. You just don't know it yet. When I get back we will need to work on that." I pulled in the drive. I opened her door and helped her out. We went into the house where I expressed my happiness over the new truck.

It was time for Charles and Eve to go. I thanked George for everything. Eve pulled me aside down the hall.

"Are you sure about this?" Eve asked. She looked at Nikki and Kat standing together.

"No, but somehow it just feels right. Do you disapprove?" I asked not sure why she asked.

"Daniel I have complete faith in you. I told you earlier to follow you instincts. Now give me a kiss and say good bye." I kissed her on the cheek.

"Goodbye mother." I said.

Eve seemed thrilled I called her that again, then she pulled me close and kissed my lips firmly.

"Is that is how you kiss your other mother?" Eve asked with a naughty grin. "I want you to kiss me the same way!"

I slipped my tongue in her mouth, she felt like putty in my arms. We kissed passionately for several seconds before I let her free.

"If we are going to do it that way then we need to do it right!" I replied. She looked to make sure we couldn't be seen.

"Well ok but we should probably not do that in front of the others!" Eve stammered.

It was the first time I had seen her blush in ages.

With the family gone there was an awkward silence in the house.

"I'm going to go out and put my things in the new truck and head up to bed. I need to get packed for next week." I announced.

I went out and put my new truck in the garage and the shop truck in the drive. I went in the back door and headed upstairs. I packed my clothes for the week and took a shower. I had an idea. If mom drove the new truck to work I could take the shop truck. She could pick me up at the storage lot not far from her work and we would just have one vehicle.

I slipped on some boxers and went down stairs to tell mom. Her bedroom door was closed and Nikki's purse was still here so I knew they were together. I went into the kitchen and left a note with my keys. I went in the fridge and got a bottle of water and started back to my room. Mom's door opened and she came out closing the door behind her.

Dressed in just a robe and not even tied she stopped me. I looked at her swollen pussy. Her hard nipples were holding the flaps of the robe from exposing her tits.

"I need you!" She declared. When I looked at her my cock started to rise.

"Mom you have company. I don't think I'm invited." I started to turn.

"I'm inviting you now." Kat hissed.

Kat dropped her robe turned and shook her ass at me. She went to the door and opened it holding her hand out. This was the moment I had been waiting for. I took her lead and headed to her bedroom. She ushered me inside. Nikki was lying on the bed. She had on a nice looking bra and panty set. Nothing sexy, my guess it was what she had under her clothes.

"Rule one no touching the company." Mom explained.

"Rule two?" I asked

"Fuck me in the ass!" Kat moaned. Nikki's eyes got big.

"I thought you were kidding?" Nikki squealed. She was surprised now I bet.

"Are you sure this is the best way to start?" I asked. I was hard as nails.

"Well if you want to ease into it, let me suck your cock!" Kat said.

Mom pulled my boxers down my cock sprang free. She pushed me onto the bed near Nikki and started licking my knob. Before long precum leaked from the end. Mom dipped her finger in it and tasted it. She repeated it and held it to Nikki.

"This is the best. The other stuff is an acquired taste let's say." Mom teased her. Nikki hesitated but stuck her tongue out and let a drip touch it.

"You're right that isn't gross at all!" Nikki replied. Kat went back to sucking me off, soon Nikki pulled herself closer.

"Have you ever sucked a cock?" Mom asked. Nikki froze at the question. I'm not sure if she thought we would think she was inexperienced if she hadn't or a slut if she had.

"It's ok there is no wrong answer." Kat giggled.

"No. I have jacked a few off but never had one in my mouth." Nikki looked at it like it was some disgusting vegetable her mother made her eat. "They're so gross!"

"And a woman's pussy isn't?" I asked a bit offended. They both laughed at my sensitive ego.

"I guess you are right about that!" Nikki teased. The ice had been broken. Nikki was becoming more relaxed and so was I.

Mom continued to work my cock. She stopped and offered it to Nikki.

"It's ok Daniel is a gentle lover. He would never force himself in your mouth. He can be aggressive if you want but only if you make the first move. I think he likes just feeling you enjoy doing it." Kat looked at me. I smiled in agreement.

Nikki took my cock in her hand I let my head lay back against the pillow and enjoy it. It took a while but soon I felt her warm lips cover the end of my cock. I lifted my head and watched as one of my dreams started to come true. Kat slipped another pillow under my head.

"This wouldn't be a good time to cum in her mouth." She whispered. I had no plans of doing it but the advice was appreciated.

Nikki seemed to take her time and I wasn't one to complain. She pulled it from her mouth and studied it. She put it back in and sucked and pulled it free again. Kat was stroking my balls at times and caressing Nikki's hair and back.

Then Kat did something that made me go wild. Kat slipped her hand into Nikki's bra. She held her large tit and squeezed it trying to pull on the nipple while it was still in the cup of the bra. Nikki moaned and went deeper on my cock. Kat switched tits and did the same thing. The images were too much. I tapped Mom on the shoulder. She moved next to Nikki.

"You better let me take it from here." Mom suggested.

Nikki pulled off my cock and sat up. Mom took me in her mouth and with her experience had me filling her mouth in no time. She swallowed, Nikki was stunned, Kat moved to kiss her. Nikki pulled back. I needed Nikki to trust me, to let her know I was there for her pleasure. I pulled mom to me and kissed her like she wanted Nikki to. I licked the corners of Kat's mouth and shared the remnants as we kissed again.

"That is so fucking sexy! I can't believe you just did that Daniel! Now I wish I had done it." Nikki looked at my flaccid cock. "Well I guess the butt thing is off?"

"Not quite. Daniel will be ready when I am." Kat stood. "I prepared earlier however since we have few minutes and you're a guest I'll do so again. He will last considerably longer now!" Mom laughed.

Kat left the room, surprisingly Nikki went with her. While they were gone I could hear them giggling, squealing and laughing. It was a good ten minutes before they emerged. I was hard and ready when they returned Nikki still had on her panties but I could see a big wet spot at her pussy.

"Do you want to lube him up?" Kat teased. Nikki grabbed the lube and took her time coating me. She looked at my cock and was impressed with its size.

Mom got on the edge of the bed and positioned her ass to me. She had a butt plug in her ass that wasn't there before.

"Go ahead you pull it out, you put it there!" Kat teased Nikki.

Nikki squealed as she took hold of the butt plug. When the first bulb cleared Kat's ass she moaned.

"So fucking nasty! Kat you should see this!" Nikki squealed. Mom and I were both happy she was so excited.

"Pull it out and put Danny's cock in me now!" Mom begged.

Taking my cock Nikki lined it up. My slick cock pushed against mom's anus.

"He's too big mom! It will never fit!" Nikki suggested.

Did I hear her right? Did she just call Kat mom? Kat was too focused to notice, I guessed because she started pushing back harder.

The end of my cock separated the wrinkled skin and pushed deeper. I stopped when Kat did and then she let out a deep breath and the end of my cock disappeared.

"Oh god Daniel I love that feeling. You are so fucking big it hurts, but then it feels so fucking great I want more! Show her how to do it so it feels so good for me." Mom moaned. I gripped Kat's ass and spread her ass cheeks. Nikki fed more of my cock, almost half was buried in her ass.

"Kat your asshole is fucking taking it. Nasty. So nasty." Nikki squealed again. Nikki stroked the part of my cock that still remained exposed. "Do you want more Kat?

"Yes. Fill me up I want to feel his balls on my pussy. I took my time so Mom and I could enjoy the sensations. I wanted Nikki to see this was something that wasn't hurtful.

Nikki moved her hand and soon my balls were coated in pussy juice. Kat started rocking slowly. I found her rhythm and matched it.

"Baby come here and let me eat your pussy!" Mom pleaded.

"He can't see my vagina!" Nikki protested.

Vagina? I'm fucking my mother's ass and she's in biology class? It never occurred to me until just then how innocent Nikki is? She isn't a ten maybe, but she is at least a strong eight. She had scores of guys after her. Kyle told me about them. She was part of the 'in' crowd at school.

"Cover his eyes. He knows the way around my ass!" Mom offered. Kat wiggled it as I pumped in. Nikki found a scarf and covered my eyes. Damn it!

Soon I heard the sloshing of pussy as mom ate Nikki's cunt. If I hadn't cum earlier I would have blasted a nut right here. But I wasn't even warmed up.

"Kat you're so good at this. Oh yes, right there. Lick my vagina!" Nikki cooed.

"Pussy. If you're having sex it's a pussy. A cunt if you are a guy being crude!" I explained!

"Dan I can't say that!" Nikki giggled.

"Sure you can! If I can't see it at least let me fantasize about it!" I laughed. "Kat eat her pussy. Make that cunt cum for me!" I teased.

Kat slammed hard on my cock. I thrusted back she went deeper in Nikki's pussy.

"He's right Kat eat my pussy!" Nikki squeaked.

Nikki's breathing changed, she started to pant. "Oh yes eat my pussy. I'm going to cum!"

The bed was starting to shake, in my mind I could see her thrusting her cunt harder against mom's talented tongue. I wasn't ready to cum but the feeling was starting to build. I reached under Kat and found her clit. She shoved back hard. I heard Nikki groan.

"Hurry Nikki I am going to cum!" Kat hissed

"My pussy. My pussy is cumming! Oh yesssss, my pussy is cumming ..." Nikki was in the throes of an orgasm.

The bed started shaking violently. Kat reached down with her hand and pressed my hand hard against her clit. They were cumming together! I could feel the orgasm rip through mom. She slammed against me. Kat shuddered as she rode my cock through her orgasm. I felt Nikki move. She removed the scarf and kissed me deeply as I continued to fuck mom's ass.

"Thank you Daniel, that was so fucking awesome!" Nikki whispered in my ear.

"Daniel I need to switch positions." Mom begged. The orgasm had left Kat spent.

I pulled out and she moved to the center of the bed now on her back, I lifted her legs up and aimed my cock back to her asshole. Nikki added some more lube and I slid right back in. Firmly in her ass mom opened her legs to the side. I supported myself above her.

"Kiss me. Let me at least taste her pussy!" I asked.

"What do you think Nikki? Does he deserve it?" Mom taunted me.

"Nikki pushed my head to the side. She locked on moms lips and kissed her. She licked her pussy juice from Kat's face and kissed her again.

"Make him wait just a bit longer!" Nikki hissed. The bitch had a mean streak I liked that.

I kissed mom and tasted Nikki's pussy anyway but she made her point. Nikki could give as well as take. The time was fast approaching for me. Kat could sense my imminent orgasm.

"Fill me Danny. This is the best ass fucking ever. Show Nikki how happy you make me. Fill my ass with your hot love." Kat encouraged me. I picked up the pace mom lifted her legs high and wide.

"Now son. Do me now!" I shot the first blast deep in her ass. "Yes baby I feel it. Give me more. That's it all of it, don't leave any in there for that mean girl!"

I finished emptying my cock in her ass. When I started to go soft I pulled out and went down and started eating her pussy.

"Hey that wasn't on the menu!" Kat protested.

"Do you want me to stop?" I asked. She put her hand on my head and pushed me back down.

"Never!" She hissed. I did only when she begged me to stop and pushed me from her pussy after another climax.

I kissed them both good night. I don't know when Nikki left. All I know was they were both gone when I left for work in the morning.

I stopped by Kat's office. While there I had the opportunity to talk to Sharon. We had an interesting conversation. First about work then about my deal to babysit. I committed to do so on my return. Just before I left with mom she suggested we should come over some night with Nikki.

I politely agreed. We dropped the company truck off at the storage lot. I hopped in my new truck and we headed off in the direction of our first city. We stayed just outside of Washington DC. In the morning we took a short tour of the city. After lunch I found our first stop. It was on the south side of the Treasury Building.

There is a statue of Alexander Hamilton. I knew who he was but had no idea why Charles wanted me to see this. Kat knew nothing about it so we went to the next stop. It was the General William Tecumseh Sherman Monument.

We walked around the monument. Impressive as it was I still had no idea why he chose this tribute. Sherman was a Civil War hero but other than that it made no sense to me. We spent some more time looking over the city.

We headed south for Florida. That night we found a book store and purchased a book on famous Americans in history. The book was just ten to twelve pages on each person. Both Hamilton and Sherman were in the book

along with many others. Hamilton a hero and statesman during the revolution. Sherman a hero in the civil war and later dealt with the Indians. I read the Hamilton biography that night. The next morning I started reading about Sherman. I knew two pages in what Charles wanted me to learn.

Kat asked me what Charles was trying tell me. I explained that these two men were both born out of out of wedlock. Both were conceived in questionable fashion, they were in fact bastards. Yet through it all they became great men. I have a new appreciation for Charles.

Chapter 3

Sunday we headed to the condo. It was during this drive Kat and I talked about more personal issues.

We pulled into the condo in time for dinner, Eve and Charles were waiting for us. We went down the coast to a nice seafood restaurant.

Back at the condo I usually slept on the couch when mom is here. This time there was no bedding set out? I looked at Eve she knew what I was thinking.

"Charles and I think under the circumstances it's silly to pretend. As long as you are both here you may share the same bed." Eve explained. "Your agreement starts when you get home remember!"

I felt like a real man that week. I was trusted to share the bed with my lover. Even better Kat was just as happy. Having me with her helped us both get over the stress of learning the truth about my life.

With few exceptions the week turned out to be just like every other week Kat and I had spent in Florida. Charles and Eve treated us just like they always did for the most part.

No mention was made of the fact Kat and I slept together. Eve knew each time mom and I had a romantic night. You could see it in their eyes as they looked at each other the next morning.

Eve had always worn this particularly skimpy orange bikini whenever I came down the last few years. This trip she found another even more risqué than the others. Still orange. She and Kat both seemed intent on keeping me hard when they were out sun bathing.

My grandfather Charles and I spent more time than usual together. He even took me golfing a few times, once with some business friends of his. Mostly we just looked at real-estate and talked. I think we are closer now than ever before.

It was not until Kat and I were leaving that Eve and I shared another passionate kiss.

We left Friday a day early and headed home. I took Eve's advice and made some arrangements for Saturday. The Fourth of July was Tuesday. Kat had Monday off as well. I figured now was time to get this answered one way or the other. Friday night Nikki came over.

Saturday morning early I woke Kat. I told her she had to get ready and pack a bag for three days. She wanted to know what for. I told her it was a surprise. I left a note for Nikki. The sun was just coming up when we headed to the airport. We checked her bags at the curb I handed her the ticket. Kat looked at her destination.

"Danny I don't need to go there!" Mom protested. Her words were saying no but in her eyes she wasn't so sure.

"Kat it's no use. I know. There's only one way this will get answered. You need to go by yourself. Away from me. Away from Nikki. This is your life. I'll always be here. You know that."

"What about Nikki? I can't do this to her." Kat replied. She was almost shaking when I took her hand.

"Well that's a decision you will have to make. She's young, she'll get over it. Would you rather wait until the two of you have made real commitments and then decide to do this?" I kissed her cheek.

"Danny I am scared!" Kat said.

"Of what? The truth? This ticket is transferable. You can come home early or stay longer." I stopped at the security station.

"Before I go Daniel, what do you want? What's your plan? What do you want for your future?" Kat asked.

I looked around and pulled her to the side.

"What I want is you and Nikki in my life, and in my bed. That may be selfish but that's what I want. But more than that I want you to be happy. I'll always be your son. Now go say hi to an old friend and tell her this makes us even." We kissed one last time then she headed through security.

I was confident in my decision but not so much in Kat's ability to withstand Becky's influence.

I arrived back home and found Nikki at the counter dressed. She was drinking coffee. She smiled at me when I came in. She looked to see if Kat was following me in.

"Good morning beautiful! How you doing?" I asked passing her. I walked to the fridge for some orange juice.

"I'm great. You two were up early!" She glanced at the door.

"Yeah mom had a plane to catch. I need to make up some hours so I'm going to work." I stopped and looked at her knowing this would be a crucial moment.

"A plane to where? She didn't tell me she was leaving." Nikki looked confused.

"She didn't know she was leaving until this morning. She's on her way to Dallas for a few days." I explained.

"What's in Dallas?" Nikki asked concerned.

"Not what but who. I sent her to see Becky and Tina. She should be back Tuesday, but she can come home earlier or later."

"You did what? Are you fucking crazy? Do you know what that bitch is capable of?" Nikki yelled. "Daniel what were you thinking?"

Nikki stood up and paced the room. "You need to call her and get her back here Daniel!"

"Look Nikki I know you're upset, and maybe you should be, but you need to trust me. Kat has been avoiding this situation since the New Year's Eve Party over two years ago." I explained. "You do remember that night. When you took her in the room?"

Nikki looked at me as if she thought I didn't know about that.

"The deal was made when you refused to come out of the hotel room. Some of this was your doing. She's trying to protect you as well" I moved in her direction. "I'm not going to call her but you can if you want."

"Daniel I hate you! I thought you loved me?" Nikki yelled at me. She grabbed her purse and started for the door. She turned as I stood across the room.

"Nikki. Don't you want to know? Do you want to worry every time the two of them see each other? Nikki it's bound to happen. If that's the path she chooses wouldn't you want to know now? If she chooses you then you will never have to worry about it again! Shouldn't the time to know be now?"

"NO. And Daniel if she doesn't come back to me, to us. I'll never talk to you again!" She screamed.

"I'll call you ....."

"Don't you dare call me!" Nikki screamed. She opened the door and slammed it behind her. I opened the door and stood out on the porch.

"So if she comes home you want me to send a carrier pigeon?" I asked. Nikki glared back at me as she closed her car door and drove away.

My initial confidence would be tested for sure. The decision may not only cost me Kat but Nikki as well. I started off to work praying Kat was as strong as I thought she was. After work I packed up some stuff to take to George and Sally's. She was planning on me for dinner.

"Eve told me you were sending Kat to Dallas." Sally asked. George rose his head.

"Yeah I figure I might as well know where we stand sooner than later." I looked at her. She saw my concern.

"That is very brave of you. What does Nikki say about it?" Sally asked. George sat back trying to figure exactly what we were talking about.

"She's pissed. I tried to explain but ..... She says she will never talk to me again if Kat doesn't come back to her." I shrugged my shoulders.

"That's a big risk you took. You ok?" Sally replied.

"I'd feel better if she was here but I want what's best for her. I want her to be happy." I tried to explain.

"And you think Becky is the best thing for her?" She asked. Sally was making the point that we don't always know what's best for ourselves. Sometimes we need to depend on others to show us.

"Heaven knows I don't think Becky is the best thing for her. I told her that. I told her what I wanted for her and for us. I am hoping she can decide that for herself." My concern started to grow. "Do you think I'm wrong for trusting her to see that?"

"I think you are wise beyond your years. I told you before to follow your instincts." Sally said winking at me. "This will all work out. Kat may surprise us all again. She's good woman your mother."

"Thanks. I know I can always depend on you. After dinner I'm going back to the house. I'll pack up some more things. Kat is scheduled to come on Tuesday.

I'll stay at the house until she arrives then come here for detention!" I replied. George finally put it all together. Sally was still not happy with my sense of humor.

I was in my bed, I looked at the clock it was five thirty AM. The covers lifted and she snuggled in front of me just like always. She was naked. Her ass pushed back against my hard cock.

"I missed you!" I whispered.

Kat reached back and started pushing my boxers down. I helped her by removing them. She pushed back again this time I could feel the lube coating the crack of her ass. Her hand reached back and coated my cock with more lube. She placed it at her asshole and pushed back firmly. She held her breath and then with a long sigh she released it as my cock slipped deep in her ass.

"I missed you to!" Mom finally said.

"You're home early." I reached around and gripped a tit.

"I'm home to stay." Kat took my hand over her tit and squeezed.

"I'm glad. You don't know how happy that makes me feel." I said kissing the back of her neck. We had a bit of a rhythm going. Slow and gentle.

Kat pulled free. Rolling me on my back she faced me. Straddling me she lowered her ass until I was once again inside her. I reached up and pulled her down for a kiss. Her ass was filled with cock as we teased each other's tongue. We fucked for some time slowly but with passion. I squeezed her tits. Taking her hand I placed it on her pussy.

"Cum for me. Let me watch you cum!" I whispered.

Kat straighten out she parted her pussy showing me the pinkness. I watched as her fingers slipped inside. My cock could feel them slide along beside me. Her breath started getting shallow. Her fingers dug deeper I could see her stomach tighten. I squeezed her tits. Kat raised her ass and slammed it down on my cock. I groaned as my balls slapped her ass.

"Deeper mom. Do me deeper!" I grunted.

Kat moaned I could see her pussy stretched by her fingers and the cock in her ass. She lifted and slammed back down again and again.

"Baby I'm going to cum. Oh yes. So good. I love your big cock in my ass. Fuck me Danny, fuck me!"

Kat stopped ranting and slammed me one last time then rocked her hips front to back rubbing her pussy on me as she strummed her clit. She was gasping for air the whole time working her ass on my cock. Then she stopped and pushed back hard she was cumming!

"Oh baby. That is so fucking go.....od. Watch it baby. Watch my pussy pulse for you! Yyyyyyyeeeeessss. So good! Look at it baby look at that pussy cum!" Mom hissed starting her orgasm.

Kat spread her pussy and I watched as her cunt throbbed through her climax. Then something happened that I had never witnessed her pussy oozed a small stream of milky white female cum.

Kat fell forward on me her tits mashed on my chest. My hard cock still in her ass. I stroked her back she mewed in my ear. "I wish Nikki was here for that."

My cock lunged deep in her ass. "Your turn baby. Fill me up" She begged.

Kat lifted off of me and got on all fours. I looked and her asshole was still dilated. I added some lube and slipped back in her ass.

"I'll never get tired of that feeling when you do that. I want to cum again!" Kat moaned.

My cock swelled in her ass.

I pulled it out and watched her ass slowly close. When it was almost tight I pushed it back in again.

"Again Daniel do that again!" I could feel her fingers back in her pussy. My cock swelled again. I pulled out, waited and did it again. "Enough! Fuck it. Fuck my nasty ass and fill it up. Hurry Danny I need to cum again!"

Kat was shouting out in desire. I was going to make her wishes come true in short order.

"I'm almost there mom. Hurry cum for me. Make that pussy dance! I called out.

Her ass quivered. I felt her fingers along my cock and then without warning my balls started to empty.

"Goddamn it that feels so good!" She growled. I lowered my weight she stretched out and I pounded her ass as I drove her pussy into the bed.

Covered with sweat I rolled off her. She turned to me and we kissed until my lips were numb.

"I'm so glad you're back. I don't know what I would have done if you stayed." I said honestly. Kat pulled my head to her breasts and held me tight.

"Daniel don't ever try to do that again!" I could feel the love she has for me. Lifting my head so I could see how serious she was. "Thank you for doing that. I know how hard it was for you."

"And for Nikki. She told me she would never talk to me again if you didn't come back." I warned her.

"Did you know I would? Come back?" Kat asked.

"I know that I love you enough that I had to find out. I hoped you would." I caressed her arm.

"And Nikki?"

"I know that I love her enough that she has to find out too." I explained.

"You love her that much you would risk losing her?" Mom was touched.

"I love her as much as you. Differently in a sense, but just as much. I knew that if you stayed I would probably lose both of you in the way I want. But if I was right I knew I would never lose you, and I hope I never lose her." Kat pulled me back to her chest and held me tight. I could tell she was crying.

"When did you become so smart" She wept.

"The day a brave woman decided I was worth devoting her life to me!" I replied.

"Daniel. I am going to ask you a question and I want you to be honest." I raised my head to look her in the eyes. "If you had to pick between Nikki or myself who would you pick?"

"That's easy. Neither one of you!" I replied. Kat looked shocked at my answer. "Nikki is in love with you, and you with her. If I was to choose between you that means the two of you wouldn't be together."

"Daniel. What are you saying?" Mom seemed confused.

"What I have been trying to tell you. I want you both. At the same time. I want the three of us to be together. Don't you get it Kathryn? I don't just love you. I'm IN love with you." I confessed.

"Daniel you can't mean that!" Kat objected.

"Mom! Do you think I have been having sex with you to get my rocks off? I make love to you because that is what people in love with each other do." Tears rolled down her cheeks. "Don't try and tell me you don't feel the same way. That much I do know. I have known before the night you got drunk and had me finger you to an orgasm." She pulled me back to her chest.

"I am in love with you Daniel! You were right it started long ago but it was last night I knew for sure." Kat wiped her eyes. "Sit up I want to tell you so you know."

"When I got off the plane it was just Becky. We went to the suite at the hotel you booked where she called Tina to meet us. My pussy was so damp Danny, I wanted her so bad. First we took a quick shower together, it was nice but not as nice as ours. We went to the bed she insisted on going down on me first. Danny that lady can lick pussy!" Mom laughed.

"She hit all the right spots. My pussy was dripping hot, but my heart was back here with you and Nikki. I came of course. It was nice, real nice but when it was over I felt cheap. Like that night out on Old Mill Road, it felt like a one night stand." Kat explained.

I was leaning against the head board Kat turned and sat between my legs. She leaned back as I wrapped my arms around her.

"I knew she wanted me to eat her and I did. I tried to act like I was into it but again all I could think of is how many other women had been where I was. Then I asked myself why I wasn't at home between Nikki's legs. I gathered myself and gave her a great licking and she came. Becky even squirted a bit. She acted happy, I acted happy." Kat stopped and turned to face me.

Looking in her eyes I saw the coldness she felt for Becky. I kissed her and nodded for her to continue.

"I took another shower, this time alone. When I came out Tina was there with a bag of toys. Becky knows how sensitive my ass is. She was going to have Tina do it so she could roam and use me as her pet. When I refused Becky got angry." Kat eased back into me. "I thought about it Daniel, I wanted you, I wanted the real thing. I got on the first flight home."

"I love you Kathryn. I'm so happy you came home, but there may be someone even happier. Let's get some sleep before I call her."

Happy Kat was home, I was just as sad knowing I would be leaving it. I had my stuff packed when I called Sally and told her I would be on my way. Kat was crying while I loaded the truck. I dialed my phone outside while Kat was in the house.

"Nikki. This is Dan."

"I thought I told you not to call me. I'm still mad at you, asshole!" She yelled in the phone.

"Look. I just called to tell you that Kathryn is home. She's waiting for you. Can you come over?" The phone was silent. "Nikki?"

"You told me she wouldn't be back until Tuesday!" I could hear her crying.

"Well she loves you more than you thought. Can I tell her you'll come?" I asked. She made me wait for a reply.

"I'll be right over! Dan....." I turned off the phone before she could say anything else. I went into the house.

"When will I see you?" Kat sobbed.

"Sally says you can come anytime you want. I'll call you every day. I think it best I don't come to the house. You are way too much of a temptation. Besides I have a plan. I think it has a better chance of working if Nikki doesn't feel pushed." I explained.

"Are you really ok if she stays here?" Mom asked.

That was the question Kat really wanted answered.

"I think it's best she does what she feels comfortable with. Now remember what we talked about. Do not try and manipulate her on my behalf. This needs to be her decision on her time frame." I walked back to mom. I handed her a small envelope.

"When she gets here you need to follow your heart and you'll be fine. After dinner please give her this. She will know what it means." We kissed briefly.

"I love you Daniel. You don't need to do this. I know how much you love me. I was a fool for going along with this." Mom was crying.

"I made a promise to try, and you know I always keep a promise if it's within my power. Whatever you do remember I love you. You aren't going to lose me. I'll always be here if you need me. Call day or night." We kissed for the last time. "Nikki is on her way."

I got in the truck and turned down the street the opposite direction Nikki would be coming from. I pulled off and waited.

I saw her car coming down the street. If there had been a cop she would have been in jail. She parked in the drive near the garage I pulled down the street and watch her get out of the car. Kat met her near the front porch. They embraced but didn't kiss, probably in case the neighbors could see. As they turned to walk in the house Nikki saw me in the truck. She let go of Kat and started in my direction. I nodded to her and slowly drove away.

My phone rang, it was Nikki. I thought about not answering it but that was just impolite.

"Hello. Asshole speaking" I answered.

"Can we talk?"

"Nikki I'm driving so now isn't a good time. Do me a favor and take care of her. I appreciate the call. I love you. You know that don't you?"

"Yes. Asshole I know that!" She tried to laugh between her tears.

"Good now get in there and don't make me a liar when I told her how much you love her."

"Danny....."

"Sorry I have to go!" I hung up before she could hear me cry.

(Kathryn)

The whole deal with Duane has made it a crazy couple of weeks. Dan's graduation, his new truck, Florida and Eve. Then Dan sends me to be with Becky. I couldn't believe he did that but now that I'm back it makes me appreciate how mature he is. That young man never ceases to amaze me.

Yesterday morning was some of the best sex I have ever had. Then he tells me that not only does he love me but he is IN love with me. THEN he tells me he knows I am in love with him. I only knew for sure last night on the plane ride back home. The whole time with Becky all I could think of was Daniel and Nikki.

He just left. We agreed to live apart for the rest of the summer. This to see if we are truly in love with each other or just think we are because we have no options. He's moving in with George and Sally. Nikki is outside. I'm waiting for her to come in. Daniel is alone and I miss him already.

"He hung up on me! I was going to tell him I loved him and ....." Nikki protested. She was very upset. I went to her and hugged her again.

"Nikki. Honey. He knows you care." I consoled her.

"But I was going to tell him I loved him." Nikki pleaded.

"I know but Daniel is different. He knows you're emotional right now and rightly so. What he did was very risky. That and he didn't tell either one of us. If you truly love him, show him, tell him when the moment is right of course." I suggested. "Nikki you'll know when the time is right, but not today, and definitely not on the phone." I kissed the tears from her cheeks and then her lips. We melted in each other's arms.

"Kathryn I'm so glad you're back. I missed you so much!" Nikki whispered in my ear.

"Nikki I'm so glad to be home. I told Dan and I need to tell you that I'll never leave you two again." Nikki hesitated but we locked lips right there in the dining room.

I pulled her top over her head and released her tits. I sucked her nipple until she squealed and pulled my mouth off with a slurp. She was unzipping my shorts hoping to get to my soaked pussy. I headed her off by latching onto her other tit. I pulled at her shorts finding the cutest lace panties.

"I bought them for you." She swooned.

"I love them. Get on the counter baby!" I squealed.

I pulled her shorts from her legs and slipped mine off. I removed my top, I wasn't wearing a bra. Nikki spread her legs her panties still on. I placed my mouth over the lace and sucked the wetness through them. She was soaking wet. With my finger I traced the outer edges of her panties sucking her pussy through them every so often. My nipples were long and hard. I pulled the panties to the side and stroked her pussy with my nipple.

"Oh god Kat that feels so good. Fuck me with your nipple!"

"Call me mom! It gets you so excited!" I reminded her.

"Please mommy fuck my pussy with your nipple!" Nikki said like a baby.

I stroked her pussy with one nipple and then the other. My tits glistened with her oily pussy juice.

"Suck mommy's tit's baby. Suck my milk!" Nikki jumped from the counter and latched onto my nipple sucking her wetness from my tit. I fingered her pussy and when she finished one she moved to the other. She was so excited, she was getting close. I guided her back on the counter this time slipping off the panties.

"Spread that pussy darling, mommy needs some milk!" I teased. Nikki pulled her at her lips opening her cunt for my nipples I fucked her with each one and then licked my own tits clean. When she had enough I went down on her.

"Do it mom. Eat my pussy. Oh how much I missed your tongue in my pussy. Eat me mom. Make me cum for you. Don't leave me again mom. Make me ..... make me..... Oh Kathryn I am cumming for you!" Nikki yelled. She bucked her hips and with one hand she pulled my face tight so I could suck her clit.

"Don't leave me mommy. I'll cum for you. Please don't leave me. I'll be a good girl and cum for you!" Nikki pushed my head back and squirmed on the counter until she went limp. I let her rest and then pulled her down. She licked her cum from my face and we kissed for several minutes.

I took her into my room leaving the counter covered in her cum. She pulled me to the bed where she wanted to return the favor but I wanted to talk first.

"Nikki. I don't know where you and I are going with this. But I think we need to talk." I started.

"Does talking mean you are going to leave me?" Nikki asked scared. She pulled at my hand.

"No darling. Nothing like that. I just want to be honest with you. I never expected you and I to go this far. Becky warned me this would happen. I told her that I wasn't going to pursue you as a lover and I hope I haven't. But since then we became intimate. I didn't want that to happen....."

"You're going to send me away!" Nikki feared.

"Nikki please! This is hard enough." I scolded her. "I didn't want it to happen because you are so young. I could be your mother!" I said truthfully.

I reached out and caressed her cheek lovingly. Nikki pressed harder letting me know she still wanted me.

"Now as I was saying, I didn't plan for it to go this far. Now that we have, I won't ask you to leave as long as we have an understanding going forward. Can we discuss that?"

"What do you have in mind?" She asked.

"First let me explain what happened with Becky." I filled her in with what I told Dan earlier. "So you see what Daniel did was a favor to us all." I finished.

"So on the plane you realized that you're in love with Daniel?" Nikki asked.

"Yes. If I could marry him tomorrow I would." I said honestly.

"But you're sending him away so I can be with you?" She asked confused.

"Yes in a way. You see, Dan and I have been together..... well, for him forever. We decided that if we didn't live under the same roof for some time we would know if it's just infatuation or true love." I explained. "We both know the answer, but Dan made a promise, and you know that he takes that very seriously. Dan would never break a promise it if he has any choice."

"So where does that leave me?" Nikki asked nervously.

"That leaves you right here in my bed knowing what I know. I know I have serious feelings for you. I love being with you. I know when you are in my arms there is no other woman that makes me feel the way you do." I said kissing her. "I know that when you spend the night I'm filled with joy to see you there in the morning. I need to be honest with you Nikki. I offer you no guarantees and I expect none in return."

"Oh. Kathryn I feel the same way. But what about Dan? You said that I'm the only woman." Nikki was starting to catch on.

"Nikki, Dan has made it very clear he will not allow himself to come between us if that is what we decide." I explained.

"You're telling me that you are in love with your son who isn't your son, and he is in love with you, and he will stand aside so you and I can be together? He loves you that much?" She asked putting the pieces together.

"He does, and not just me, but you too." I confirmed.

"Me? Kat we haven't even had sex yet! How can he love me so much he would let me have you?" Nikki was surprised by it all.

"Nikki, Daniel isn't like most men. Heck maybe any of them. You should know that by now. He values the relationship above sex. Your happiness above his." I wanted to say so much more but remembered what Dan and I agreed on.

"What about you? Would you give him up for me?" Nikki asked.

"Honestly I don't know. Like I said there are no guarantees. All I know is we have the summer to find out if I'll ever need to make that decision."

"Anything else before I eat your pussy until you beg to cum?" Nikki composed herself then gave me a sexy smile.

"Just this. I suggest we keep our relationship private, not public. That way if you decide to leave me there will be few people who know. You may tell anyone you wish. I'm not ashamed of what we have. But, I think in public the less we expose ourselves for now the better."

"Serious. I can tell my parents if I want?" Nikki asked.

"I trust you. If you feel comfortable telling anyone I'll respect your decision. Just remember if you munch one pussy you're a pussy muncher forever in their mind! Now get munching baby!" I wanted to remind her that once she exposed our true feelings to anyone that it would forever be known.

Nikki proceeded to pleasure me. We took a shower together and I couldn't help but bring her off again. After a light dinner I prepared I gave her the envelope Dan left behind.

"What's this?" Nikki asked.

"Dan didn't say. He just asked me to give it to you." Nikki opened the envelope.

She read the card inside and handed it to me. It read 'I know you hate me for what I did. I hope you know I did it all for you. I love Kathryn with half my heart and you with the other. Take care of her. Kat isn't as strong as you think. Maybe one day you'll find it in your heart to forgive me. I am returning something that I have carried since the day we signed it. With all my love D.'

"What is it?" I asked. I looked up only to find Nikki in tears. She handed me the paper and embraced me.

I read the tattered slip 'I'll wait for you to be my first, until I first reach twenty' it was signed by Daniel and Nikki. Nikki was crying uncontrollably.

"What's the matter baby?" I asked confused.

"I hate him. I hate him I hate him!" She started to cry.

"Why? What did he do?" I was puzzled by her response.

"He's fucked someone? He has fucked you hasn't he?" Nikki said, she was shaking as she wept.

"Nikki baby. Danny hasn't had intercourse with anyone. Definitely not me!" I assured her. Shocked Nikki looked at me, I nodded that I was telling the truth.

"Then someone else?"

"No baby there is no one else but you." I tried to calm her down.

"Then why did he give me this back? How do you know? He told me at the party he wasn't as innocent as I thought. This is what he meant!" Nikki was clearly upset.

"First, I know because like I said before, Daniel always keeps his promise. From day one he told me that intercourse was off the table. We haven't even come close, though you know I wanted to. Second he gave this back to you, he'll be twenty soon. He is reminding you he's still waiting."

"Are you positive?" Nikki asked desperately.

"I promise you it's true." I reassured her.

"I need to call him and tell him I have waited too!" Nikki confessed.

Now I was shocked. Here was this beautiful young sexy woman that was a cheerleader, a finalist for prom queen, second year in college and still a virgin?

"You're still a virgin? Nikki!" I asked in disbelief.

"Yes. Does that change anything? Is there a problem?" Nikki asked. She started getting defensive.

"No baby. I..... I just. Oh Nikki I'm so proud of you!" I pulled her close and squeezed her tight.

"I just want to make sure if I ever did he would be the right person. Dan and I signed that the night we were here. I never thought about it until Kyle passed. He always told me I would be lucky to find someone as special as Dan." Nikki confessed. "Kyle was a bit of a perv. Always trying to see me naked and stuff. Pinching my ass. He even copped a feel one day!"

"Your brother?" I laughed.

"Oh, he acted like it was an accident. But I knew. One day I asked him if all guys were like that and he said yes except for one. Daniel! I told him then that was the guy for me. That's when he told me all about Dan and how unique he was. After he died I never forgot what he said. It was like he needed to tell me before he passed." Nikki said.

"Nikki I am so sorry." I tried to comfort her.

"I need to call Dan and tell him!" She sprang up.

"Nikki. Wait! I think it's best if you don't tell him for now." I said.

"But why?" I explained to her my reason. She protested at first. But agreed for now to hold off telling Dan. She stayed the night and by the time I fell asleep my pussy and ass were sore in pleasure.

Monday I went to work and Nikki had a class. I had planned to take it off but I knew I had pushed my time off farther than I should. Sharon greeted me with a hug welcoming me back. Before we left for the day she asked if Dan and I would like to come to a party on the fourth. She was hoping Dan could watch the kids one day as he offered.

Sharon thought the party would be a good way to introduce the kids to Dan. I told her I would ask him. I then asked if I could bring a friend along. Without hesitation she said yes. It was an informal affair. Just show up and leave when you feel like it. That night I called Dan and he readily agreed. I told him how much I missed him. He did the same. Nikki was so excited that I would ask her to go along with us she wanted to go shopping for a new outfit!

(Daniel)

I left our house, well mom's I guess since I no longer live there, and went to George's. Sally was so happy she made my favorite apple pie for desert. I unloaded the rest of my stuff into one of the spare bedrooms. It was on the other side of the sprawling house. I had my own bathroom too. This was one of the houses George built in the side of the mountain.

That night Sally knocked on my bedroom door.

"May I come in?"

"Of course. I am just trying to put some clothes where I can find them again." I replied.

"Dan can we talk?" Sally looked concerned. I sat on the side of the bed with her. She took my hand and closed her eyes for just a second.

"Is everything ok?" She asked.

By now you know I am not big on lies. With everything that's going on, now wasn't the time to start.

"Mom is back as you know. Nikki hates me for what I did. She will be moving in with Kat I suspect. And, I'm not allowed to be with my mother. All in all I would say things are great!" I said sarcastically.

"This Nikki. You have feelings for her don't you?" Sally asked.

"That obvious. Eh?"

"No, you are good at masking your true feelings. George hasn't a clue!" She smiled.

"But you do, and Eve I bet?" Sally knew I discovered I had the gift they did.

"Do you really love her?" She asked. I pondered the question.

"If I don't know if I'm in love with Kat, how would I know if I'm in love with Nikki?" I smiled knowing I had put her in a pickle.

"You are very clever Daniel. But clever and smart doesn't always work in your favor. What is it you really want? I need to know!" Sally asked seriously.

"Aunt Sally I would never lie to you but I won't answer that question unless you are willing to hear the truth. If you do, you and George may think less of me." I replied, still holding my hand she looked straight in my eyes.

"Daniel. Just Sally will be fine when were are alone. Now please tell me." She had this way of making you feel comfortable.

"Nikki loves Kat, but what she doesn't know for sure is if she loves me. I think until she does she will never be happy. That's why I am here. Not to determine if I'm in love with mom. I am. I was and I always will be. I feel the same way about Nikki. Sally like I told Kat just days ago. I want them both equally!" I confessed.

"What if Nikki doesn't want you in that way?" Sally asked.

"Then I'll honor my promise to Kat that I'll walk away. I'll leave them enjoy their life together. Kat will always be my mom and I'll always be her son. But we will not so much share a kiss on the lips."

"Daniel you are serious?" Sally asked. She squeezed my hand tight.

"Sally their happiness will always come first. I owe my life to one and my love to the other."

"What's your plan?" She asked.

"My only plan is to allow Nikki to find the answer to her question. I have told mom she isn't to push Nikki or promote my cause in any way. I will not deceive her about this. I won't make the same mistake I did before, but I will not play her." I said firmly.

"What if she has already has her answer? What if you're too late?" Sally continued to probe.

"That is what I intend to find out!" Sally rose, I stood with her.

"Follow your instincts Daniel they will serve you well." Sally kissed me on the cheek.

"Sally do you think it will work?" I asked.

She stopped at the door looking in the hall.

"Daniel. I have never met anyone like you in my life. When you learned that Eve was your real mother, and the way she got pregnant was because your dad raped her....." Sally turned to face me. "You are a miracle you know.....

"Go ahead say it!" I demanded. I wanted her to tell me the truth.

"I wanted you to die in that hospital! Did you know that?" Sally replied bluntly.

"And now?" I asked unfazed.

"I wish you were the son I never had. There is something about you. It's a gift you have." Sally whispered.

I went and hugged her. Pulling her close and she pressed against my body. Sally was soft and womanly, her head turned and pressed hard against my chest. It was like she wanted to hear my heart beat. I bent down as we separated kissing her cheek. There was a happiness about her at that moment.

"I'll never bet against you again!" She winked at me.

I went to work Monday with George. He and I talked a bit but for the most part his mind was on business. Kat called that night and asked if I would like to go to Sharon's on the fourth to meet the kids. I readily agreed.

Tuesday was the fourth George and I went to a construction site to check progress. That night before we left work he called me in the office. George explained that there was a class he wanted me to go to at State, the college I was going to attend this fall. It had started last week but since I wasn't getting credit for it he arranged for me to attend. It was a business class with a professor George admired. Besides the company was paying for it.

I made arrangements with Kat to pick her up around two for the party. I then needed to leave to attend a second event around five. Nikki was to come around four and take mom home. I knocked on the door at one forty five. Mom came to the door dressed smartly for such an event. Classy but casual.

"Come on in honey." Kat opened the door when I didn't.

"Sorry mom. I've been banned. I'll wait out here until you're ready." I said remembering the rules.

"Danny I've missed you so. Please at least come give me a kiss." She begged.

"I'll wait for you at the truck." I turned and walked away. I wanted to break the door down but this was the deal we signed up for. I helped Kat get in the truck. She was miffed until I gave her the kiss we both wanted.

"Why now?" She said coldly.

"Because if I would have come in and kissed you I don't know if I could have stopped there!" I explained. Kat sighed.

"I feel the same way honey! I do miss you!" Kat kissed me again.

"Well at least you have Nikki." I replied.

Kat knew that it bothered me but didn't say anything further.

When we got to Sharon's the place was alive. Kids and adults were in the yard. They had a small pool maybe two feet tall, volley ball, a slip and slide for the kids, and games at the table. Sharon met us as we entered. She took us to her husband Doug and then introduced us to her mother-in-law Val. Doug offered us something to eat. We grabbed a plate and had a burger. Sharon made a point to spend time with mom and I, as did Doug and Val. It was Doug that introduced me to Doug Jr., Elizabeth and Sam.

I've been around kids of course but not so many in one place. Soon I was talking and playing with their kids and a few others as well. Sam was only about five but he and I hit it off right away. Kat came over for a while.

Sharon and she talked while Doug and I played and rolled in the grass with the kids. It was getting time for me to go. I was hoping to see Nikki but she was still not here.

I thanked Doug for his hospitality and offered to come over anytime I could.

Sharon and mom walked me to the truck. I told Sharon to call me and I would pay off my debt whenever she wanted. She asked if I was available Sunday afternoon. I said I should be. Sharon said she might give me a call. We were at my truck several houses from theirs. I said my goodbyes and gave my mom a kiss on the cheek. I knew she was disappointed.

"Daniel? Is that any way to kiss Kat goodbye. I would be very disappointed if it was me!" Sharon scolded.

The way she looked at me reminded me of the first day at the office. I took that as permission and kissed mom like I had wanted to. A long passionate kiss.

"Thank you!" I addressed Sharon. She gave me a hug.

"Mom I love you. I'll call later. Tell Nikki I said hi." I kissed her one more time quickly.

I was driving down the street. I could feel her presence. I looked in my mirror Nikki got out of a car that wasn't hers. I had a feeling she was watching waiting for me to leave.

Thursday I was early to the school. I found help in locating the classroom. Actually it was a large lecture hall. I decide it would be safer near the back. I took a seat and waited for the class to begin. The hall probably held two hundred students, but this was summer classes so I didn't expect many today. I was wrong. The place was filling up steadily. By the time she walked in it was half filled.

Nikki sat near the front, close to the door. As a female student she didn't scan the faces, probably to avoid eye contact. I on the other hand see everyone male and female. I knew when every person came in and where they sat. The professor was good. I was here for work so I took my notes. When the class was over Nikki got up and left quickly. I didn't see her or look for her.

That Sunday I arrived at Sharon's. She had called earlier in the week. Doug was at soccer with Jr. Sharon and Val had a bridal shower to attend.

"Remember Doug should be home in an hour. If you need anything just call. I left instructions on the counter. Thank you Daniel."

I found it odd that Val, Doug's mother, dressed sexy for a wedding shower. Sharon and Doug must be mid-thirties, which would make her mid-fifties give or take. Don't get me wrong. Sharon was looking hot herself but Val.....she reminded me of Eve. Sophisticated sexy I call it. A cougar is what the media calls it.

The kids were great. Sam was like a leach and Lizzy was having fun bossing us both around. Doug and Jr came home as expected. Doug invited me out back for a soda while the kid's played. Seems Jr fancies himself a coach to his brother and sister. Problem is they just wanted to have fun.

Doug and I talked about his job and how he enjoyed the flexibility to work from home several days a week. Val lived with them watching the kids of course. But on those days she was able to go out and have some time for herself also.

We talked briefly about Sharon and her job. He told me how much Sharon has come to appreciate my mom Kat. I looked at my watch and explained I should leave. I said good bye to the kids. Sam walking me to the truck. I drove away a bit jealous of Doug.

Tuesday I was back for class. I just finished using the men's room. Entering the hallway full of students I found myself walking in front of Nikki. At six three it's hard to avoid being seen.

"Daniel what are you doing here?" Nikki grabbed my arm and pulled me to the side. "Are you stalking me?"

"Stalking you? I was in front of you! Why are you stalking me?" I teased her.

"I'm here for a class. Why are you here?" She wanted to be mad but I could tell she wasn't really.

"Just so happens I'm taking a class myself!" I showed her the text book the company purchased.

"I've been in that class and didn't see you." She scowled.

"Ah, but I have seen you, fifth row, fourth seat. At least one empty seat on either side." I confessed. Nikki started walking to class, now she was pissed that I hadn't talked to her earlier.

"If you would like I'll buy you lunch after class." Nikki kept walking she was struggling on what to do.

"I'm still mad at you!" She admitted. We were almost at the lecture hall.

"Hell hath no fury like a woman scorned!" I teased. Nikki turned she tried not to smile but she did. "It's just lunch."

"Let me think about it." She offered.

I sat in the same seat as before. She sat in hers. She looked for some time before she located me. Throughout the lecture she looked back a couple of times. I kept my eyes on the professor but I could see from my peripheral. When the class was over Nikki stood up her eyes locked on mine. I knew that very moment what she would do.

Like every night I called mom. Unlike every night she didn't start by telling me how much she missed me.

"Daniel what did you say to her today?" Kat accused me.

"What are you talking about?" I was stunned at the accusations.

"She said you were at her class today. She ran upstairs to your room crying and won't come down and talk to me. I tried to go up but she told me not to!" Mom said in frustration.

"Mom, George's company has me attending this class on business. George knows of the professor and thinks he may have some ideas we can use. I don't even get credit for it. I didn't even know Nikki was taking this class I swear. She saw me, we talked, I offered to buy her lunch. She said she would think about it. After class she took off before I could ask her about lunch. I looked for her but she was gone. I went to work. End of story."

"Danny I'm worried. Do you think you should come over here?" She asked.

"Nice try mom. Trust me she'll be fine. And don't you try and smooth this over. Remember what you promised me."

"Daniel are you sure?" Kat questioned.

"I'll tell you what. I can't come over there but how would you like to go on a date. You and me. Nikki if she would like. Dinner and a movie. I pick the dinner you pick the movie? Tomorrow?"

"I would like that. You have a deal!"

"Great I'll call the office and leave you details. Kat, if you want to make her happy do what makes you feel loved. Slip into bed with me, I mean her, and don't say a word!" I suggested.

"When did you become so smart? And I heard what you said." She laughed.

That night started like every night Sally made dinner. George and I would talk business, or sports, or trucks. After dinner was over I would clear the table. Sally would load the dishwasher. George would walk into the family room to read his paper and tease me about doing women's work. When we were done Sally would kiss my cheek.

I think I did it just for the kiss. Only tonight was different. During dinner I told them that since I was barred from mom's house I was taking her on a date. Dinner and movie tomorrow and wouldn't be home to eat.

I cleared the table. George left the kitchen picked up the paper and sat in his chair teasing me about doing women's work. Sally loaded the dishwasher as I finished wiping the table. Sally pulled me down for my kiss. With trembling hands she held both cheeks and kissed me on the lips firmly. Her finger slid to my lips as we parted. She leaned closer.

"Later we need to talk." She whispered.

George is in bed by nine earlier if he falls asleep reading. I'm usually up until eleven. At around ten Sally knocks on my open bedroom door.

I was reading my text book just finishing a paragraph.

"Come in the doors open!" I happily replied as I finished the last sentence. I looked up and am stunned at what Sally is wearing.

"Daniel can we talk?" Sally closed the door. Her silk robe open in front did little to hide what she wasn't wearing.

"Sally. You do know I can see inside your robe?" I gulped.

"Do you like it? I bought it for George but I'm not sure he has ever seen it." Sally asked.

She opened her robe to show me a sheer teddy and matching panties. Sally isn't a young woman and is a bit on the curvy side. Not fat in the least but not athletic either. Her large tits just the opposite of her older sister Eve, sagged noticeably but not as much as one would think for their size. Her thick waist flared to womanly hips. Her thighs and legs very attractive. I could see her thick bush from the view she was giving me. Her large areolas capped with delicate nipples.

"Sally I'm not comfortable talking about that." I confided.

She looked down at the boner in my boxers.

"That's the only answer I need." Sally moved beside me on the bed. I put the book on my lap covering my condition "I'm worried about you Daniel."

"In what way?" I asked. Sally covered herself with her robe.

"I do the wash here and there is something I expected to find and so far I haven't." Sally kissed my cheek. I blushed. "So you're going on a date with your mother? Tomorrow?" She asked sexily.

"Yes." I replied.

Sally's tit pressed on my arm as she pulled my face to hers. She kissed me on the lips this time.

"That could be a problem. It's a good thing I'm here to help. Kiss me son. Please kiss me!" Sally said softly.

I tried to resist but something told me it was ok, that it wasn't what I thought. I trusted my instincts. I pulled her to me and kissed her lips. Sally slipped her robe off and pushed the book from my lap.

"Again son. Kiss me!"

I kissed her again and this time I felt her hand on my cock over my boxers, she stroked me. I hadn't cum for almost two weeks. This couldn't be happening I thought! With her free hand she placed mine on her tit. Her tongue slipped into my mouth. My cock was throbbing to cum.

"Do it son cum! Kiss me and shoot your wad!" It was almost like my mother was telling me to obey. I wanted to make her happy.

"Oh Sally I'm cumming....."

She drowned my cry of joy with her mouth one last time. I had cum in my boxers. Sally stood up her panties soaked, her nipples hard.

"Now your date won't be over before it gets started. Throw those disgusting cum filled clothes on the floor. I'll take care of them in the morning. Not before you hear me?" Sally questioned.

I nodded.

"Good get some clean clothes on. Next time maybe you should bring a towel. I wasn't expecting so much of that nasty cum."

"Yes ma am! And thank you!" I grinned. Sally bent over her tits hung from her chest as she picked up her robe.

"You're welcome son. Now get some sleep!" Sally commanded

And just like that my aunt left me happy but bewildered. It was only because I was drained that I got any sleep at all. I felt guilty riding with George the next day but decided to say nothing for now.

I called the office the next day. Sharon answered the phone. Kat was making copies or something.

"Dan. I was going to call you. I was wondering if you would be available Sunday again?"

"Maybe? For how long?" I asked.

"Couple hours at most in the afternoon." Sharon suggested.

"Count me in, what time?" I offered.

"Can I call you?" She asked.

"Sure, no problem."

"Great here's your sexy mom." Sharon said.

"Did she just say what I think she said?" Mom asked.

"She did and she's right." I answered.

We talked over plans for the night. I would pick her up at six. Nikki wasn't coming.

I left work and went home (George and Sally's) cleaned up and got dressed as if it was a real date. Nice slacks, button down shirt, the whole thing. Sally even commented on how nice I looked. I picked mom up at her house waiting outside per our agreement.

She walked to the door. I was overwhelmed with her appearance. I haven't described her so far because, well, she's my mother. That and there isn't anything special about her. She is what you would describe as average. That isn't a knock by any means. To me she is the most beautiful mother any guy could ask for. But I am prejudice.

To the rest of the world she would be just that, average. She is about five feet five. Her tits are probably a c cup. She has a bit of a tummy, nothing some gym time wouldn't help. Her waist is pronounced her hips in proportion. Her face is cute but not stunning, her hair shoulder length. If you met her on the street you might notice her but I doubt you would look twice. Up until this moment she had never dressed in a way you would call sexy. Even when she dated the last few years she was very conservative.

Tonight she had on a skirt that was mid-thigh. Well above her normal below the knee attire. Her high heels accentuated her shapely legs, her blouse was silk the scoop neck exposed the tops of her breasts. The bra must have been made of tissue since her nipples were quite pronounced. She had on a necklace and earring set I had bought her one Christmas. Kat was beautiful.

"Mom you look.....you look HOT!" I gushed.

"You look pretty dapper yourself! As for this you can thank Nikki she helped me pick it out!" Kat looked over her shoulder where Nikki was standing.

"I guess I owe you one." I waved to her.

"Lunch tomorrow?" She asked. I wanted to tease her but thought better of it.

"My treat. My pleasure." I opened the door. "We better go, I don't have too much spare time."

I held my hand out Kat took it. She picked up a light wrap and placed it around her shoulders. I figure she was going to show me the goods but not the world. I looked back inside the door to Nikki.

"Don't worry baby I'll have mommy home before curfew!" Now I was teasing. She turned red but gave me a knowing smile.

"You will bring her back?" Nikki asked. The smile was gone. I looked at mom and back to her.

"I promise."

Mom and I left. We had a nice Italian dinner near the theater. We talked through dinner of course. How much we missed each other was a constant topic. She told me told me how she slipped into bed with Nikki the night before like I suggested. It worked so well they made love. I wanted to tell her about Sally but decide to hold off for now. We talked about Sharon, Doug and the kids. We were walking the short distance to the theater.

"Mom how much does Sharon know about you and me?" I asked. She squeezed my hand.

"I've told her a few things, but Sharon is a very smart woman. The rest I think she figured out on her own." Kat replied.

"And what about you and Nikki how much does Sharon know about that?" Mom stopped holding my hand tight. Looking at me she blushed.

"She knows all about that I'm afraid. She knows Nikki moved in. I told her some of the stuff with Becky. Is that ok?" Mom asked nervously. I smiled and kissed her cheek.

"It's the truth. Don't worry, I'm fine with it." We continued to the theater and saw a chick flick she was dying to see. On the way home Kat seemed on edge.

"Is something wrong? Didn't you have a good time?" I asked.

I knew that wasn't it but there was something she was anxious about. The closer we got to her house the worse she became.

"No darling I had a wonderful time. I can't remember ever having a better time on any date." Kat reached over and grabbed my hand. I could feel her tremble.

"What is it?" I asked. She was straining her neck as we pulled down the street.

"It's a sign! Oh Daniel it's a very good sign." Kat opened her purse and pulled out the remote for the garage and opened the door. Nikki's car was parked behind moms in the drive. "Pull in!"

I pulled in the garage. She shut the door behind us. Kat reached over and turned off the engine.

"Mom what are you doing?" She was folding up the armrest between us.

"I can't wait any longer Daniel. If you can't come in the house we will do this in the truck!"

Kat slid across the seat and kissed me with all the pent up desire she had. I lifted her skirt and cupped her pussy.

"Daniel I'm so wet for you! I don't know how long I can take this." Kat moaned. I pulled her panties lower and thrust two fingers is her dripping pussy. "Yes Danny. Yes!"

Kat was panting as I fingered her snatch. She was kissing me and groaning at the same time.

"Harder Danny. I need to cum!" Mom groaned.

I pulled her face to mine with one hand and the other I curled my fingers forward finding her G spot. She bucked against my hand her hips working like a jack hammer, Kat thrust one last time hard and I felt the waves of pleasure shoot through her body. I didn't stop fucking her pussy with my fingers.

"Do it again mother cum for your son this time!" Kat pulled from me, I thought she wanted to stop. Instead she pulled her panties off and removed her skirt setting it on the seat for a cover.

"Pull down your pants I want you to fill my mouth when I cum for you Daniel!" Kat hissed.

In no time I slipped my slacks down to my knees, turning slightly for clearance. I felt her heavenly lips around my cock.

"Oh!" I gasped. "I'll never stop wanting that!"

Mom was on her knees sucking me. With one hand I reached over her back and fingered her pussy. My other hand slipped inside her bra and pulled on her nipples. I thought I might come too soon for her to cum again so quickly, but she was so excited she pulled off my cock.

Hurry baby I need to cum for you again soon!"

Her mouth covered my cock. When I pinched her nipple she moaned. Then I did something that got us both ready to burst. I pulled my fingers from her pussy and placed it at her asshole.

"Yes motherfucker do it!" Kat demanded.

As I started to slip my finger in mom's ass, she responded by massaging her clit. Kat instantly started bucking again as I began filling her mouth.

"Ahhhhhhhhhh mom. FFFFUUUUUCCCCCKKKK. That's it! Take it all! I groaned.

"I did baby! Thank you. I love you more than you know!"

Kat took my cock and squeezed the remaining drops around her lips and mouth. I was still going to kiss her but she held me away.

"Next time lover. This is Nikki's reward for letting us do this!" Mom gave me a wicked grin.

"Her car in the drive. If it was in the garage....." I asked.

"See I told you she loves you. Take your time with her my love. I'll wait for you." Kat handed me her panties.

I held them up with a questioned look.

"For tomorrow's laundry. Tell Sally thank you." Kat opened the garage door. "Now go before Nikki thinks I won't come in.

I started the truck and backed out my slacks still at my knees. I saw mom walk from the garage to the house her bare ass hanging out. The back door opened for her.....

I drove off after buckling up both my pants and the seat belt. The night light was on so I went right to my room. I took another shower and started studying for class tomorrow. I was getting ready to turn out the light when a knock was at the door.

"It's open." I called out.

Sally swung the door wide. She had on the same robe but it was tied this time.

"How was your date?" Sally asked.

She came close but didn't sit on the bed this time. I pulled out the soaked panties and dropped them on the floor. Sally picked them up and felt the wetness with her fingers before she dropped them again.

"I'll do laundry in the morning. Understand?" She asked, I nodded.

"She said to tell you thank you. Seems everything went off as planned." I explained. Sally cracked a sinister smile.

"Glad I could help. Just remember son, I expect you to keep these disgusting things to yourself!" Sally said firmly.

"I make no promises." I replied. Sally seemed taken back by my comment.

"I don't want any son of mine to do those things to his mother....." Sally warned me "...without her permission!"

"Well let's just hope his mother doesn't ask him too. You do know he would have to do anything his mother asks. Don't you? Mom!"

Sally seemed impressed by my coy boldness.

"Yes he would. Wouldn't he?" She replied.

I nodded. She closed the door as she left but not before she showed me her licking her fingers. I needed to talk to George.

I didn't see Nikki until the class started on Thursday but I could tell as she took her seat something had changed. For the better I hoped. After class she was waiting this time.

"Lunch, that is all, agreed?" She questioned.

"That was the deal. Where do you want to go?" I asked.

"You pick!"

"Great I have just the spot." I took her to a quaint cafe with seating outside. We had lunch avoiding any serious discussions. When we were done eating I had this feeling she wanted me to start.

"Thank you for last night. It must be hard for you to share?" I said.

"You have no idea.....!" Nikki blushed not thinking about what she just said.

"Really? You just said that?" I cocked my head.

"Oh Daniel I'm sorry. Of course you do!" She was flustered now.

I reached over to take her hand. Nikki slowly accepted. I could feel the fear she faced. Her whole insides were twisted. She was so conflicted she didn't know what to say.

"Apology accepted and now forgotten." I smile and gave her hand a gentle squeeze. "Now I know you want to ask me something, so just do it!"

"Are you going to try and seduce me?" Nikki asked.

That was it? She was scared of what would happen if she really started to love me.

"Seduce you no, but I do plan on trying to win you over." I explained. Her heart skipped a beat.

"You know Kathryn isn't the same without you. I don't know how long she can hold out!" Nikki said. She seemed truly concerned.

"Last night. You did that for her? The car, if it was in the garage what was to happen then?" I asked.

"I don't know. I wanted to leave it in the garage. It's so hard for me.... but just like you sent her to see Becky I had to know. I had just moved the car before you pulled in." Nikki explained nervously.

"So I was that close to going home disappointed?" She didn't appreciate the interruption or the humor. I decide it was just better to let her finish.

"When I saw you pull in. I wanted to scream. It seemed like hours before the door opened and you backed out. I watched her take the short walk from the garage to the house only half dressed. I was so jealous of you at that moment. Then I saw her smile. She was radiant. Her face was coated with your cum, her pussy was red and swollen. She was so happy she had been with you. And yet she was so happy to see me she pushed me against the wall and made me clean her face. We shared the remainder of your cum then went to bed where I abused her pussy some more." Nikki looked at me her hand still clung to mine. "I'm scared Danny!"

"I know. Look Nikki, we can take our time. But I meant what I said, I do want you." I repeated. We stood to leave. "We better go. I have to get to work."

I dropped her off at school. As I opened the door to let her out, Nikki took my hand so I could help her out of the truck. It hit me. I have been the frightened one. I've always played it safe. I was always the one waiting the other person out. Nikki was different. She wanted me to take charge. To be a man. To be the aggressor. Just like Kat had been last night.

When Nikki's foot hit the pavement she started to walk away. I grabbed her arm twisted her to face me and kissed her hard on the lips. I offered her my tongue but she resisted. I tried again, she refused. I offered again and still she resisted. I wasn't going to give up. I offered again this time her lips opened slightly. I rubbed her teeth she opened and accepted my offer. I quickly ended the kiss not wanting to go too far. I had made my statement.

"Now was that so bad?" I looked at her.

"This was just supposed to be lunch. You promised!" Nikki was conflicted. I could see it.

"No so. What I said was and I quote "That was the deal!" you see if I had promised, you would have missed out on that awesome kiss." I teased her.

"I still hate you!" She protested.

"Well we'll have to work on that. Let's say Saturday, 6 pm dinner and a movie?"

"Are you serious?" She asked befuddled. I walked to the other side of the truck.

"6 pm, promise." I replied.

I was riding to work with George the next day. It was Friday. If Sally knew I was going out Saturday would she pull the same stunt? I felt so guilty not telling George. Sally always told me to follow my instincts. This time I felt I had to come clean. We stopped for coffee and donuts for the crew like he did every Friday. He liked to drink his hot so we sat in a booth.

"Uncle George can I ask you a question?" I spoke up.

"Dan I have told you to call me George at work."

"Uncle George." I spoke clearly letting him know this wasn't about work. "Can I ask 'you' a question?" Catching onto my meaning he nodded.

"Shoot!"

"Let say there's this older farmer and a traveling seed salesman..."

"The old traveling salesman joke eh kid. Been around forever!" He laughed. I didn't. "Sorry go ahead."

"The farmer and his wife live out in the country. They have no kids. The salesman who sold seeds for crops would come around often. He was young and he and the farmer were good friends. He wasn't the best salesman, and his seeds were only average but the old farmer took a liking to the young man. Maybe it was because he knew what he had gone through as a kid. The closest town was miles away, the farmer trusted him so he let him sleep in the barn on his visits. The farmer's wife loved the extra company and always made the young salesman feel welcome, treating him as if he had been her own son.

The salesman appreciated all that the farmer and his wife had done for him. Hell you might say if it weren't for the generosity of the farmer and the seeds he bought, the salesman might have lived a much different life. One night the

salesman is in the barn reading crop reports and studying what seeds to recommend the farmer in the morning. The door opens and there is the farmer's wife. The salesman knows the farmer is an early riser and was in bed hours ago. What surprises the salesman most is what the wife is wearing. Covered as she is, the attire is definitely not something she should be wearing outside her husband's bedroom." I stopped to see if I had his attention yet. George looked upset.

"Go on!"

"The salesman is a very uncomfortable with her there but feels powerless to say anything, less he embarrasses the woman he has come to love and respect. He decides to see what she wants. The wife approaches him offering to help on another sale to a friend she knows. She talks to him as if the salesman were actually a son she never had! During the conversation she kisses the salesman repeatedly and soothes his nerves on the pending visit to her friend. She leaves the poor salesman in good spirits but now greatly conflicted.

The salesman knows that if he tells the farmer he may get mad and blame the young man, or worse yet, punish the poor woman for going to the barn. The salesman thinks that since it was just a few kisses, and they were both fully covered at all times, maybe he should say nothing and hope it was a onetime occurrence. On the other hand his loyalty to the farmer is very strong, he wonders if he should tell the farmer hoping to explain what happened. Although innocent as such it was a great help with the sale. The salesman hopes by telling the farmer the wife might be spared his anger."

"I see. And the question is?" George stared me in the eyes.

"Should the salesman tell the farmer? Or should he pack his bags and leave now, never to return?"

"Can I ask you some questions?" George replied after he thought for a minute.

"Of course." I agreed.

"Does the salesman think the wife may do this again?" George probed.

"See that's the problem, he doesn't know when or even if she will visit. If he tells the farmer now the farmer may confront his wife leaving her betrayed by the salesman. If he doesn't tell the farmer he feels he would be betraying him instead." I explained the predicament.

"And if the farmer let's these innocent events take place, what guarantees does he have they will not escalate?"

"In that case the salesman would have to stop the wife making it clear he would tell the farmer if it didn't stop." I replied.

"Of course the salesman would tell the farmer about that event also?" George asked.

"He would. As well as report any other events taking place"

"Do you trust the farmer to do the right thing?" George questioned.

I could only hope he understood my position.

"With my life!" I answered.

"Let's go to work. I'll talk to the farmer today and have you an answer on the way home." George replied.

I ordered the coffee and donuts for the crew. George left me to pay for them. I was glad to do it.

The ride home was quiet. We pulled into the drive at the house. George turned off the engine. He looked up at the house. We both knew that Sally was inside. I had crossed a line when I talked to George. Now I was waiting for the results.

"I talked to the farmer today. He wasn't happy to hear from me but he understands his wife's loneliness. Not having kids is hard on her. He trusts the salesman, seems the young man has many clients to service these days. First he would consider it disrespectful if the salesman left under these circumstances. The farmer's wife might turn against the farmer in protest causing even more carnage. No, running away isn't the answer." George explained. I nodded in agreement.

"He agrees to not do anything at this time. He will not say a word. He also asked for me not to call him with any events unless the story changes significantly, such as complete lack of garments. He is a bit of a jealous guy you might know." George looked straight ahead.

"I understand."

"I assume the salesman will not tell this story to anyone else?" He asked still looking out the windshield at the house.

"Well, you can trust the salesman, but the farmer's wife....." I hesitated.

"Figures. Women. Ok, who knows?" He looked over now.

"Kat for sure. Probably Nikki. If she does she didn't say."

"Eve?" George asked as he shook his head.

"I would bet money on it." I had to be truthful.

"Daniel you did the right thing. I respect your understanding of the situation and handling it with delicacy. George took my arm firmly, so firmly I winced. "Make no mistake if I catch you fucking my wife I'LL cut your balls off! Are we clear?" I knew what he was referencing. The movie with the famous actor.

"Crystal clear sir!" I replied with firmness.

"Good now let's go eat. All this drama has made me hungry!" George said. Just like that it was over.

At dinner I explained that I would be going out with Nikki the next night. Sally was fine with that, they were going out to dinner themselves. I was surprised nothing happened that night. Maybe it was a one-time occurrence.

I showed up at mom's house at 6 pm as agreed. When Kat came to the door I was worried at first thinking I would be stood up, but she smiled and said Nikki would be right out. Nikki came to the door looking more beautiful than I can ever remember.

Her clothes were conservative but stylish. She wasn't try to seduce me like mom but man was she gorgeous just the same. I picked a seafood restaurant for Nikki knowing she ate light. We went to see a chick flick, the same one wouldn't you know. I suffered through it just happy to be with her.

I thought we both had a great time. We had kissed several times throughout the evening. On the way home I offered to take her to Sally's house. Nikki hesitated. Knowing I should be aggressive I started in that direction.

"Where are you going?" Nikki turned to me with a nervous look.

"To Sally's. I thought we could be alone." She didn't say anything so I kept driving. As we got closer I could tell she was getting more agitated.

"What if they are home?" She asked nervously.

"Nikki, they said it would be late before they got home. Besides we can just sit and talk or watch TV."

"Is that what you planned? To watch TV?" Nikki asked. I turned in the drive and parked.

"I planned to spend time with you to show you how much I love you!" I got out of the truck and walked around and opened her door.

"So you planned on having sex with me?" She said tersely. I was shocked by the way she said it.

"Nikki I love you. Yes I would like to make love to you. Hold you, caress you, if you don't want intercourse there are other things we could do!" I held the door open waiting for her answer.

I pulled her over and kissed her. I offered her my tongue but she resisted. I offered it again and like before she opened her mouth and accepted. I wanted so bad to pull her from the truck, to show her I could be aggressive, but it this wasn't the time. I closed the door and walked back around. I started the truck and backed out the drive. I knew if I said anything I would lose so I let her determine when she was ready.

"I'm sorry Danny. That wasn't fair to you!" Nikki whispered. I heard a sniffle.

"Don't be. But thank you for saying that. I love you Nikki. I've fought my whole life for what I believe. I'll continue to fight for you!" I replied.

She didn't respond. We drove in silence for a bit.

"Danny.....?" She stopped short of the question.

"Go on. Don't leave me hanging again!" I teased. Fortunately that brought a laugh.

"What does it feel like when you're in Kathryn's butt?"

Holy mother of Jesus where did that come from? She leaves me with a hard on and now she wants to talk about anal sex? This is going to be real tricky. I pulled over to the side of the street.

"Really? This is what you want to talk about?" I looked at her to see if she was sincere.

"I want to know?" Nikki blushed. She was serious as far as I could tell.

"Nikki I don't believe in kissing and telling. Nothing good can come from that. But I'll answer your question as I relates to me. Ok?"

"Ok!"

"For me? It's hard to describe. The actual penetration is one sensation. Kind of like pulling a splinter out. Discomfort at first and then when the head goes in that oozy feeling of pleasure as her asshole opens up. Then there is this firm pressure, not painful, almost like when you lace your shoes too tight. Then after I start moving and everything loosens up it's like .....? Sorry there are

no words that come to mind. But awesome, really awesome!" I said excitedly. I was getting hard again just describing it.

"And when you fuck her pussy. How is that different?" Nikki asked.

Oh no. Who told you that? I asked myself. I was glad I had pulled over to the curb otherwise I might have killed someone driving if I hadn't. I was so angry. I looked at Nikki and she was fidgeting.

"That, I wouldn't know. Not with her or any other woman. I made you a promise and until my birthday comes up in six weeks or so, or you decide otherwise, I won't know." I made my point and now I needed to calm down. "Nikki I don't care when or where you came up with that idea. But it's not going to happen without you before then. Ok?"

"What if I didn't wait?" She asked.

I was taken aback by her question. I was hurt by the insinuation but collected myself. I am a stickler for details. She said IF. Not that she hadn't.

"You are a beautiful young woman. I accept that you have had many opportunities." I replied. "I can live with that. It was a long time ago when we signed that paper. That still doesn't change anything for me."

"What about after your birthday?" Nikki took my calmer explanation to heart.

"I don't know. I really don't." I took her hand I could feel the fear of her next question.

"Will your mom be the first on your birthday?" Nikki asked.

"I would like to think it would be you. I know if she was, it might end any chance I have with you." I answered truthfully.

"Because you think you will be so good she will want to leave me?" Nikki asked. Stunned I looked over, she was terrified.

"No. It's because if I can't have you both then I promised to step aside and only be her son. If we did that then I feel I would be hurting you." I explained.

"Dan why do you fuck her ass?"

WHAT! What is this obsession with her ass? I quickly gathered myself and calmed down. I responded softly.

"I guess there is a bit of taboo about it. Forbidden sex I guess. But mostly because mom loves it. It makes her happy. That and it's the closest we can get to actually doing it I guess." I replied honestly.

"Would you do it to me if I asked you to?" Nikki asked fidgeting in her seat.

REALLY. You won't fuck me but you want me to plug your ass? It was hard to keep from saying these thoughts out loud. I had to be very careful with this answer.

"I guess you'll find out if you ever ask me." I squeezed her hand and started to drive.

"Or if I ask you!" I added teasing her a bit.

Nikki hit me in the arm playfully letting me know I still had a chance.

"I still hate you. You know?" She teased back.

"Lunch Tuesday?"

"You're buying?

"Yep." I replied.

"No funny business?" She asked with a smile.

"That's a deal!" I repeated the words I used before.

"Promise?" She laughed

"Of course not!"

"Ok!" She was giggling now.

We pulled in the drive no both cars were in the garage so I knew that wasn't going to happen. I went around and opened her door. Nikki pulled me in for a deep kiss offering her tongue to me. I accepted of course. I walked her to the door and kissed her one last time. I didn't see Kat.

I was in my room doing some light reading. I heard George and Sally come home. Sometime later, half hour or so. I heard a knock.

"Doors open!" I called out.

Sally opens the door and looks in at the floor. There are no panties.

"Bad night?" She asked.

"In one way. But I think I am making progress in other ways. Still I think the odds are less than 50/50." I replied.

"Well its progress then isn't it?" Sally smiled.

"Sally, it was you that arranged for me to take that class wasn't it? You knew I needed to find a way to stay in touch with her!" I asked, she only grinned. But it was the way she did that confirmed it.

"Good night son." She said winking at me.

"Good night mom! And thanks!" Sally beamed as she closed the door.

"Your welcome!" She said from the other side.

Sunday morning I had been up and showered. I pulled on my boxers and sat on the bed doing my bills. There was a knock on the door.

"It's open." I said hoarsely. Opening the door she had on her robe and another sexy nighty underneath. The panties in front of her pussy were transparent and obviously wet. Her large tits weighing down the flimsy bra. She moved to me and sat beside me. Her back leaning against my left shoulder.

"Give me your hand son!" I offered her my right hand she took it and placed it over her panties. "Show me the nasty things you do to those bitches of yours!"

Sally forced my hand along her panties rubbing her pussy.

"Mom!" I whispered.

"Shut up and do it!" She growled.

"Yes ma'am!" I said then started to rub her pussy.

I could feel the juices pouring through the sheer fabric. Sally leaned back and spread her legs a bit more. Her pussy gaped open the material delved deeper in her quim. By now my fingers were coated. I pulled them from her pussy and brought them to her mouth.

Sally pursed her lips, if she wanted to know I'll teach her now. I traced the oily slime over her lips. She closed them tighter. I made the circle larger. I dipped them back to her pussy she moaned. Raising my hand I returned it to her mouth.

"You wanted to know? Now lick them mother. Lick my fingers clean. I know you want to. Go ahead it's just me your son." I whispered.

Sally opened her mouth and I slid them in, she closed over them and sucked. I repeated this several times. Each time she sucked harder than the last. The next time I coated my fingers I raised them.

"Open your robe. Let me see your tits mother." Sally turned her head to face mine. As I kissed her she responded with another moan.

"Your tit's" I said firmly.

She pulled the robe open showing me the flimsy bra. Her massive tits hung low the nipples not quite pointing straight. I took the juice from her pussy and rubbed it on her nipple through the bra.

"Oh baby that is so .....do it again!" I slid my fingers over her panties, three this time coating them and rubbed each bra covered tit several times.

"Wider mother open your legs wider. You need to cum for me!" I insisted.

She faced me again I touched her thigh she opened up as wide as the space allowed.

"Your pussy is more beautiful than any of those bitches." I hissed.

My fingers rubbed her slit. Occasionally I let them rub her clit. Sally alternated between breathing and kissing me. I took her hand and guided it to her pussy I coated her fingers and had her suck them clean. The next time I coated them.

"On your nipples!" I commanded.

She proceeded to rub them on her bra like I had.

"No mother. On your nipples not your bra!"

She looked at me with fiery passion. Her hand quickly scooped her juice and with her other hand pulling her massive tit free coated the nipple and most of her large areola.

"Now lick that off and do the other. Don't stop until you cum." In a way I was taking charge making her do these things. In reality she was still in control.

"No baby please?" Sally moaned. She kissed me knowing she wanted me to make her do it.

"Do it mother! Show your son you love him!" I urged her on.

Sally brought her large heavy tit to her mouth she sucked her nipple clean and repeated it with the other tit. In the mean time I stroked her pussy. She was so close that by the time she had licked both tit's twice she was cumming in my hand.

"Oh Danny look what you're doing to me baby! I am cumming for you. jjjuuusssttt fffoooorrr youuuuuu!" Sally bellowed.

I was looking over her shoulder her tits were going in all directions at once. Her hand gripped mine and forced it hard on her clit over the panties as she bucked.

When she was done we kissed for several moments. Sally stood up with her back to me. She dropped her robe to her elbows and removed her bra throwing it on the floor. She replaced the robe and then proceeded to remove her panties. Sally closed the robe and tied it so she was well covered before she turned to me. Sally reached down and pulled my boxers down exposing my cock.

"Oh my! Now I know what all the fuss is about!"

That was it. That's all she said. It was enough for me but who was telling who what. George was right. Women!

With her soaked panties she wrapped them around my cock. Her wetness felt divine. Sally proceeded to jack me off until my belly and stomach was coated. Bending over her robe gaped open her large tits pushing the material down giving me another look at her charms. She wiped what she could with

the panties and threw them with the bra on the floor. She walked from the bed to the door.

"I can't believe a son of mine would treat a woman like that. That's disgusting! You should be ashamed of yourself!"

"Yeah ma. I should be!" I acted embarrassed.

Sally then closed the door. I knew better than to touch the bra and panties. I wiped the remaining cum from my chest with my precum stained boxers and added them to the pile. I resigned myself to the fact I needed another shower.

After my shower Sally served me Sunday breakfast like any other day with only a kiss on the cheek as a reminder. George had an early golf outing I learned and wasn't home for the entire time. I was trying to decide if this was something I needed to report but figured it was best not to just yet.

I was a bit early when I arrived at Sharon's. Val answered the door. Shopping bags were just inside. Val let me in, closed the door and led me upstairs.

"They're in my room on the right." She pointed to the end room. Sharon was talking to someone. I cleared the door and there was Kat.

"Well the guest of honor. Good to see you Daniel. I was just going over everything with your mom." Sharon said happily. "Like I said, plenty of extra clean towels in the bathroom. I know you said you came prepared but there are disposable douches in there also. The toys are in the night stand, mom has unlocked the drawers. If you use anything just leave it out and we will sterilize it later. Anything I missed Val?"

"The sheets." Val grinned.

"Oh right. The sheets are clean, there is a waterproof bladder underneath. Mom here is a bit of a squirter! I have to shampoo twice sometimes when it all gets up in my hair, but it sure is tasty." Standing there I couldn't believe what I was hearing. They were setting mom and me up to have sex!

"Doug will be gone with the kids for at least two hours so don't hurry. The walls are almost sound proof so feel free to let loose. We will be on the other side of the house in my room. If you need anything the door will be unlocked." Sharon looked around the room, took Val's hand and off they went. "Have fun!"

"Mom really?" I was both confused and happy.

"Well Danny. You won't come to our house. I wouldn't feel comfortable at Sally's. A motel is too expensive, and as much as I like your truck it does have its limitations. Sharon offered I accepted." Kat grinned.

"Don't get me wrong but exactly how much have you told her? Disposable douches?" I asked.

"I may have told her a few things." Kat gave me a smile that always gets to me. "Now come kiss me. Two hours may seem like a long time but I have plans for you!"

I started by kissing her and soon had her down to her bra and panties. Her wardrobe has taken a much needed turn for the better. I was naked sucking her tits before we touched the bed. We started in a sixty nine something we had only done once before. I think it's so we can take our time and focus pleasuring each other individually. Her pussy tasted just like I remembered. I brought her off first. Sally's hand job doing the trick once again I thought. She knew about this also I bet. Women!

Kat ground her pussy on my tongue and sucked my cock at the same time. When she was getting close I wet my finger and slipped it in her ass. Mom lit off like a fire cracker exploding all over my face. I rolled her over and pulled her face to mine. She licked me clean as we kissed sharing her excitement.

"On your stomach ass in the air wench!" I demanded.

Mom fake being insulted then got in the position. I stroked her back and reached around for her tits suspended below. I lifted each feeling the weight. I kissed each ass cheek many times then parted them to gain access to her asshole.

I started at her pussy then worked up until the tip of my tongue was at her anus. I could feel her take a deep breath and tense up. With just the lightest of touches I contacted it then quickly continued on. She tried to stay with my tongue.

I returned to her pussy she mewed her approval. I traced back to her wrinkled hole teasing her again. When I reached her pussy she thrust back hoping to get my tongue inside. When I accommodated her she let out a long. "MMMMMMMM." I pulled my tongue followed her perineum and stopped at her asshole one more time. I touched the center and applied a little pressure.

"Yes Daniel do it!" She whimpered.

"Do what mom. Tell me?" I teased.

"Lick it!" I moved my tongue in a small circle and stopped.

"Like that?" I asked as I repeated rimming her ass.

"Better baby. Do me better!" I wet my tongue starting at the opening I worked a bigger circle.

"Like that?" I teased. She shook her ass, her breathing was choppy.

"Deeper!"

"Oh you want me to stick my tongue in your nasty ass?" I gave it a quick lick delving deeper than before.

"Yes baby." She groaned in anticipation.

"Then say it. Say it and I just might do it!" I replied letting her stew.

I wet my tongue again making it as pointy as I could I placed it at her hole. I teased her sticking it in then quickly out.

"I want you to stick your tongue in my nasty asshole!" Kat cried out.

I forced it in wiggling it as far as I could.

"Oh. Oh. Oh. Yesssssss! Do it Danny! Do my asshole!" Kat forced her head against the bed grabbing the sheets in her hands she gripped them tight.

I worked my tongue in deeper and deeper. My spit making it wetter her asshole relaxing getting bigger. Her ass was slick with spit. My tongue was going numb. In desperation I found her clit. Mom jumped then started rocking back and forth fucking my tongue and rubbing her clit.

A deep moan alerted me to her impending climax her asshole clamped down on my tongue. Her hand found mine and held it just where she wanted it. Her legs clamped shut she fell to the side in a fetal position. I thought she would pass out for lack of air. Then.

"D aaaaa nnnnnnnn nnnnnnn eeeeeeee!

I pulled my hand from between her legs. Her arm was reaching wildly for some part of me her eyes closed. She found my hair and pulled me to her face.

"Kiss me now baby!" I kissed her, then spooned her as she slowly recovered. I think she fell asleep.

We spent the next hour with her giving me a blowjob and me filling her ass with cum. We showered but were too spent to do anything more. We got dressed and headed downstairs. Sharon and Val were in the kitchen wearing very fine matching silk robes. Tied loosely they did little to hide their charms, and probably enhanced their nipples. It was clear they were lovers.

"We will see you next week. Plan to stay the kids would love to see you." Sharon greeted us.

They had this all planned out.

They had picked Kat up to go shopping and I was going to take her home. We were saying our goodbyes. Sharon kissed mom on the lips, her hand drifting to her ass. Patting it slightly.

"I expect a full report tomorrow." She teased. Mom looked at me.

"It will be amazing!" Kat replied. I know she felt so naughty saying that.

Sharon approached me. She placed her arm around me pulling me in to feel her tits. Like mom they weren't big, C cup I would guess but still pert considering three kids. Her other arm slipped behind my head and gently pulled me down for a passionate kiss.

Our lips parted her tongue found mine. Both of our eyes were open. We finished holding just our lips in contact for a moment longer. Sharon closed her eyes I pressed back again giving her another solid effort. Sharon sighed as we parted.

"You're right Kat." She winked at mom. "Daniel if we can help you with Nikki please let me know. Maybe if the three of you came she could see what it could be like." I felt her hand grip mine.

"You would do that?" I looked at mom to see her reaction.

"Kat suggested it. You think about it. It could backfire. Anyways we would be happy to help. I'll call my sister she can watch the kids if you want just adults. Or we could have the kids here and just visit. We should do it on a week night so she doesn't think we are going to play."

"Thanks. I'll let you know." I replied flabbergasted.

I dropped mom off at her house but not before she gave me her panties.

That night I didn't even close the door. The panties were on the floor when Sally stopped by.

"You nasty boy!" Is all she said.

"Good night mom!" I replied.

The next few weeks of August were much of the same. Tuesdays and Thursdays Nikki and I had lunch and very productive conversations. We moved our date night to Friday.

Saturday's now became the night the three of us would go out together. No sex, at least not for me, but still something to enjoy. Wednesday night was with mom and of course Sunday afternoons. Nothing happened between Sharon and I but she did wear the same robe each time and kiss me goodbye the same way.

Sally still made sure all the panties were washed but only added to the pile one more time.

Nikki had turned down going to George and Sally's the first date we had. The next week we changed it to Friday instead of Saturday. Thursday at lunch she asked me if we would be going to Sally's. I said I was hoping we would. She smiled and said ok.

That night I talked to Sally. Kyle, Nikki's brother who passed away was asking me to help him get a message to his sister. His birthday would have been this Saturday. With my lack of experience and past problems I asked if I should get involved or not?

"What does your instinct tell you?" She asked while holding my hand.

"He helped me out with Duane. He was my best friend. I feel I owe him but I am afraid something may come up to upset her and ruin the evening. Sally, time is running out and this could ruin everything."

"Listen to me Daniel, if your friend's house is burning do you not go and help because it's inconvenient? Be strong. If this woman dumps you over a ghost she

isn't the woman for you. She held my hand firmly and closed her eyes. "If you would like I'll be there?"

"You would?"

George is leaving Friday night to go golfing with his buddies Saturday. I'll tell him she is staying the night. That will make him feel better." She winked at me. "I think he knows something is up but he won't admit it."

"Are you sure?" I asked a bit embarrassed.

"I would ask you if you told him about us but then you would have to lie. No son of mine is a liar." Sally kissed me on the lips. I think she likes that the most. "Besides he told you as long as he doesn't catch you fucking me you're safe right?"

"Mother!" I questioned.

She knew everything. I don't know how but she did. I actually felt better with her knowing.

"Ok son. But the next time you want me to lick my pussy juice from my tits, you my boy are putting it there!" Sally took my hand and slipped it under her top to her tit. I squeezed it once and pulled free.

"You are a naughty mother. I'll see you tomorrow night!" I smiled.

George asked me if it was true that Nikki was spending the night. I explained that she would be over and MAY spend the night but there was no guarantee. He also asked how the salesman was doing with the farmer's wife. I assured him that things were still R rated and saw no indication the rating would be

changed now or in the future. He was happy not only on the report but the rating system also.

Friday night Nikki was in a very good mood. We had an early dinner and saw an action adventure movie we both enjoyed. I asked her back to my place she readily agreed laughing at my choice of words for my living arrangements. We entered the house and Sally greeted us fully dressed as you would expect. We talked with her for a half an hour and then headed to my room. Nikki was sure I was taking her just to fool around but I had a promise to keep.

"Nikki I am going to ask you something that is very important to someone. Now before you start worrying this has nothing to do with you and me. Please sit down. Your brother Kyle came to me yesterday after we had lunch. He wants me to give you a message." I explained. Nikki seemed nervous. "Now I don't want to frighten you so I have asked Sally if she would come be with us. She knows much more than I do."

"Daniel you mean you can talk to Kyle?" She asked.

"It isn't quite talking. More of communicating in sign language. Like Pictionary only clearer. Are you up for this?"

"Yes Danny yes!" I went and got Sally she had already changed. This attire was the most revealing yet. I could clearly see her tits and pussy."

"Mother! You can't come wearing that!" I protested.

"Son, I am ready for bed and I am not changing back." She replied.

"Well then pull your robe closed and tie it tight." I demanded.

She followed me in the room Nikki didn't say anything about her attire and I wasn't going to bring it up.

"Ok Sally what do I do?" Sally took my hand and gave me instructions. I closed my eyes to focus and out of nowhere Kyle's spirit entered my head.

"Nikki he knows you're here. He wants you to ask him a question, he says you doubt he is with us."

"What day is his birthday?"

"Tomorrow." I answered. "He wants something more personal, something only the two of you would know." Nikki thought for a moment she had a naughty smile.

"What were his favorite panties I wore?" She squeaked.

"Nikki he is showing me a humming bird?"

"That's my little perv. He use to tease me, he wanted to be one of the birds so he could sample my nectar!" She laughed as she said it.

"No! I can't ask her to do that!!" Kyle was being the perv at that moment. "Sally?"

"What is it? What does he want?" Nikki asked. I looked at Sally she smiled.

"Go ahead. The most she can say is no!" Sally replied.

"What Danny. What does he want?"

"He wants to see you naked before he delivers the message!" I tried to say it as calmly as I could.

"What! Can he do that?" Nikki and I both looked at Sally.

"No I don't think so but he can read my emotions as I look at you for him." I explained. Sally nodded in agreement.

"No Danny. I don't think I can do that." I closed my eyes he wanted me to tell her again.

"Nikki would you like to touch him one last time?" I asked.

"Yes Danny. Please?" She replied.

"Take my hand and close your eyes."

Nikki took my hand. Kyle struggled. I felt Sally move I opened my eyes she took Nikki's other hand I felt a gentle jolt pulse through me. Nikki pulled free and stood before us. Without a word she started to remove her clothes one by one. I watched in silence scanning her body as she undressed. When she was naked Nikki put her arms to her side.

"Turn." I whispered. Without hesitation she turned slowly. She faced me again I looked at her shaved pussy and then Kyle guided me back to her tits. I closed my eyes.

"He is asking about Wilson? Mrs. Wilson. No, wait, a man, a boy? Mr. Wilson. He says find it, or find him. He's leaving now. He wants to say he's sorry he made the wrong choice. He hopes you will make the choice he didn't. Wilson will know. He loves you and he will always be near."

Kyle left.

Sally removed her robe. Nikki was shocked to see her virtually naked. She put the robe around Nikki.

"The two of you need to talk. I'll call Kat and tell her you will be spending the night. That should get her thinking!" Sally turned back and smiled her as her massive breasts swayed. "You can sleep here with my son or if you prefer come sleep with me. Sally went to the door and was going to close it but stopped.

"On second thought you would be safer with him. He's a virgin I hear." She winked at Nikki.

I walked to Nikki and pulled her to me. Holding her tight I felt her melt into my arms.

"Are you ok" I kissed the top of her head.

"Did that just happen?" She asked.

"Yes. Nikki I think it did." I replied not so sure myself.

"Can you do that anytime you want?" She asked.

"No. it's kind of a mutual thing. Kyle helped me out and I offered to repay him. I am not cut out for this." I explained.

"Dan I could feel him. How did you do that?"

"I didn't. I think we all did. I know it took a lot out of Kyle. It took a lot out of me." I moved her to the bed so we could sit.

"I'm sorry Nikki." I offered.

"About what?"

"I was hoping we could have a quiet evening just you and me. Then Kyle showed up. I thought he just wanted to say high and deliver a message. The whole undressing thing." I tried to explain.

"That's how I knew it was really him. Did he like what he saw?" Nikki asked excitedly.

"He did."

"Who do you think Mr. Wilson is? I don't know anybody by that name." Nikki asked.

I tried to focus but I was getting groggy.

"I don't know. Maybe we can talk about it tomorrow? I need to sleep!" I could hardly stand to undress.

I went into the bathroom and splashed water on my face. I brushed my teeth and walked back into the room. The last thing I remember was Nikki kissing my forehead.

The sun was up and I was alone in bed. I saw no sign of Nikki. I went to the bathroom and peed then jumped in the shower. I stood under the hot water

wondering how I fucked this up again. I could hear Kat in my youth to quit complaining and do something about it. I took a deep breath assessed the situation and told myself to be happy and find the solution.

The shower door opened, Nikki was naked and joined me! My cock started to grow.

"Daniel I want you to show me how it all started with Kat?" Nikki said.

"Started what?" I asked confused.

"The night you turned me down. The night she broke her arm. Show me exactly what happened!" She insisted.

I explained how I started by washing her hair because she had dried cum in it. Nikki handed me the shampoo. I washed her hair just as I washed Kat's. I then moved to her shoulders and one arm. The next was her back. I traced the steps on Nikki just as I had done on my mother stopping short of her ass just as low as I did over a year ago.

When I reached her breasts. I washed them as if they were my own, never once fondling or making a sexual advance. I explained that this was when Kat first moaned.

I showed Nikki how I was standing to one side. I explained how I had started on her ass, the water was warm, the soap enhanced every contour. When I went down her crack the second time Nikki closed her eyes and pushed back against my hand just like mom. Only Nikki moaned again.

I moved to her right side like I did with mom. My hand slid smoothly across Nikki's stomach and then slightly lower. I explained how I touched a small scar where she had her tubes tied before I was born. Nikki tensed up just like Kat did then relaxed as I worked back up to her stomach again.

I looked down Nikki's eyes closed tightly her breathing sporadic. I showed her how I moved to the outside of mom's thigh and down to her knee. I started back up I stopped just short of her vagina like I did with mom. I told her mom had gripped my wrist. Nikki moved her hand to my wrist. I explained how Kat had moved my hand higher and spread her legs so slightly. Nikki did the same.

"That's when she guided my hand along her inner thigh to her vagina." I whispered in Nikki's ear. She brought my hand to her pussy.

"Mom whimpered "No please no!" I told Nikki.

"No please no!" Nikki repeated.

I explained how I tried to pull back but she held me firm. Nikki pulled my hand tight to her pussy just like mom did. I explained how inexperienced I was and just held my hand over her vagina cupping it like a baseball. I did the same to Nikki.

I told her how Kat slipped her hand over mine and spread her legs wider. Nikki followed suit. I told her with moms help, her hand was guiding mine, and how I explored her sex. Nikki did the same showing me what she liked.

I explained how Kat put two of her fingers inside and then pulled them out. Nikki hesitated.

"That's what she did I whispered." Nikki followed suit. When she pulled out I place two of mine in her pussy just like I did to mom. Nikki's response was almost the same she thrust her hips hoping I would go deeper.

"Yes. Danny is this what she did?" Nikki whimpered.

"Exactly!"

"Then what?"

I showed her. With my left hand I found the soap and lathered it up and eased it down the crack of her ass. When I reached her asshole I lightly touched it. I had two fingers in Nikki's pussy and one against her asshole just like Kat.

I worked her pussy. Nikki started dancing on my fingers trying to get even more inside. I used my thumb and rubbed her clit. Nikki was so close. I pushed my soapy finger just inside her ass.

"I am cumming Danny. I'm cumming!" Nikki pulled my fingers from her pussy and she clamped her legs tight. Her body trembled. Turning she kissed me square on the lips her tongue forcing its way in my mouth. My hands went around her keeping her from falling.

I held her tight my cock was hard against her stomach. She looked up at me and I saw why she was so scared.

Nikki loved me.

She pulled me down to kiss her.

"Did she do this?" Nikki wrapped her hand around my cock.

"Not until much later." I answered.

"Well today I'm not going to make you wait." Nikki replied.

We ended with Nikki giving me a hand job hosing down the shower wall. When it was over I was on top of the world.

Chapter 4

This Monday Kat called me from work. There was an insurance convention in Orlando in two weeks. The employee scheduled to attend wasn't going to make it. Since the company had already paid for a spot Sharon offered to send Kat in their place.

It was the weekend of my twentieth birthday. Kat thought we could all go stay at the condo and have a few days off to celebrate.

The conference only lasted for three days but Kat would need to be there the Friday night to register. The conference was Saturday and Sunday morning.

We talked about Nikki's and my class schedules. If we left Thursday night we would be at the condo by noon Friday. Orlando was only an hour and fifteen minutes away. Kat would have plenty of time to register.

We could stay at the hotel or at the condo. The room was paid for the whole time one way or the other. We could leave Tuesday early and be home for my late class. Nikki would miss one class but it was an elective so not a concern.

I readily agreed. Kat was going to talk to Nikki and I was going to call Eve. By the next morning the whole plan was put in place.

Tuesday Nikki and I had lunch as usual. We talked about visiting a theme park while we were there. We also talked about going to Sharon's the next

evening. I wanted to make sure she was comfortable and didn't feel pressured into going.

I could tell Nikki was nervous, hell I was too. When we arrived the kids broke the ice, Sam clung to me the minute he saw me. We spent some time with the kids, maybe twenty minutes. Sharon asked Doug to take them upstairs so we could talk. The first few minutes were awkward, the tension in the air was thick. Val saved it by offering everyone a glass of wine. Val led mom and Nikki to the kitchen. Sharon held me back.

"Daniel you should go help Doug." I looked over her shoulder in the direction of the kitchen. "Don't worry honey we know what to do." Sharon pulled me down and kissed my cheek. "Now go play with Sam."

I went up and played with the kid's. Doug eventually put them down for bed. He and I went down to the living room. We could hear laughing in the kitchen but couldn't make out what they said.

For the next thirty minutes Doug and I enjoyed just guy talk. His work, my classes, and sports. In just the short time we knew each other we formed a friendly bond. He seemed to be a great guy from what I could tell. Doug admitted Sharon was the one that wanted both the kids and a career.

With the kids in school Val seemed the one that ran the home most of the time. From what I could tell Doug was more like a fourth child only older. He and Sharon put on a good front but I had a feeling it was the amount of time he spent with his mom Val he treasured most.

I knew Val and Sharon were lovers, I knew Doug and Sharon slept in the same room. What Doug's relationship was between the two women I didn't know, and to be honest wasn't my business. That said, with my background I had my opinions.

"Let me see where those boys are?" Sharon came out from the kitchen. She was carrying her wine glass and looked a bit too happy. "Oh they're right here!"

It was getting late we all had work or school the next day. We said our goodbyes with hugs and kisses. I loaded Nikki and Kat in the truck. The ride to mom's house was very jovial indeed. I kissed Nikki goodnight before she went in the house. I had mixed feelings from Nikki before she left. She enjoyed the night but was still scared.

"Would you like to come in? It's your night you know?" Mom asked.

"I would love to but won't. I have just ten more days. We can decide where we stand then." I kissed Kat and watched her go in the house. I rode home not knowing if anything had changed for the better or worse.

Thursday's Nikki and I no longer shared lunch but we did have a break between classes to meet. Ice cream was the choice today. I found over the last several months that these daytime lunches and breaks is where I learned the most. School distracted her before we met and since we had classes after there was no stress about what would happen next.

Humor is an excellent defense against the world. As a young boy growing up I found defusing the threat with humor was an effective way to avoid a more painful fate. I'm no comedian, one liners don't roll off my tongue, but I have been known to put people on the floor with laughter.

The more I'm with someone the more effective the results. It was during these times I had won over Nikki with humor. Today was no different. I avoided any discussion of last night preferring to keep her laughing and teasing me back. Nikki could give as good as she got maybe even better. We arranged our time together for tomorrow night. We kissed goodbye.

That night when Sally came to my room the door was open. With no classes until next Tuesday I was catching up on this seasons football games. I was reading a sports magazine Sally sat beside me on the bed dressed as she was at dinner. I put the magazine down.

"You ok?" Sally took my hand between hers and closed her eyes.

"I think so." I replied. She opened her eyes and looked at me.

"Have the two of you found Mr. Wilson?" Sally asked.

"What? Oh him. No but we have talked about it. Nikki even called her folks thinking it was some distant relative or something. Nothing! With school, work, and all of this drama I guess it hasn't been something I haven't spent a lot of time on." I explained. "Should I?"

I saw Sally start to say something then she hesitated.

"Daniel I think it's... Tell you what. You keep doing what your heart tells you. Follow your instincts. We will talk about this another time, promise." She leaned over and kissed my cheek.

"How did last night go?" Sally asked.

"I don't know. Well, I think. I wanted to ask but I don't want her to think I am pushing her." I replied.

"I think that is wise. Do you think maybe you need to be a bit more aggressive? She asked.

"I've been trying that. It's just that you know me, there's a line that I just can't cross." I replied frustrated.

I looked at the cover of the magazine with a star quarterback.

"I feel like these guys do. I know what it takes to win the big game. It just seems that I get to the goal line and then we fumble the ball. The next time we get sacked. The next we drop a sure catch. I know we have a better team. I know I am better for her than any other guy out there. I think she knows it. I just want the first time to be..."

"Perfect?" Sally asked.

"No, it doesn't have to be perfect. Just right. That will be close enough for me. I don't want to fake to the right and go to the left to win. No trick plays. I want to keep the ball and dive forward. I don't mind taking a few hits. But I can't move the pile alone! I need her to at least open a hole for me to go through!"

Sally started laughing.

"What?" I asked.

"Open a hole for me to go through!" Did you really just say that?" She laughed.

"Mom! You have a dirty mind!" I laughed.

"No more than my son!" Sally replied.

"You know what I meant. I was talking football." I protested.

"How do you know I wasn't?" Sally was still laughing.

"Are you done yet? I'm trying to be serious!" I scolded her. Now I started laughing at her laughing at my choice of words.

"Honey I'm glad you haven't lost your sense of humor over this." Sally pulled me closer and kissed me on the lips firmly. "I love you!"

Suddenly she stopped laughing and just looked at me. She had taken me by surprise by her timing but not her words.

"I know you do. I have always known." I responded. I kissed her on the lips. "I lo..."

Sally put her finger to my lips.

"Don't say it. Save it for her!" Sally insisted. I pulled her close I whispered in her ear.

"My heart is big enough for you too!" I kissed her again this time with passion. I moved back to her ear. "As my mother you should be careful how you say things, a son could get the wrong idea!"

"I look forward to seeing Nikki tomorrow night. I think your chances are better than you know." Sally stood up to leave. "Still I think you are right not to play games. Sooner or later Nikki will realize what she will be losing and when she does I think that hole will open."

Sally gave me a naughty laugh. "Daniel when it does you need to be a man and just make the plunge and score. That's what my son would do!" She winked and then left closing the door.

I was up half the night thinking of what she said. Could I be that man?

Friday I picked up Nikki she was dressed nicely as usual. I knew this would be our last time alone until next weekend. I wanted to make it a special night. I knew her favorite restaurant was impossible to get into on a Friday night but I knew some people who worked there. I was able to secure a table at decent time. She was pleasantly surprised when we walked in and a table was waiting. She thanked me again when dinner arrived.

We went to the football game at the high school we both attended. It was one of the first games of the season. They weren't very good yet but manage to pull it out at the end. Afterwards we headed to George and Sally's. George was gone on another golf outing. It dawned on me that a pattern was starting to appear. I had a feeling Sally was behind his absence.

Nikki and I went in the house. Sally was nowhere to be seen. That was strange, she knew Nikki was coming over and usually stayed up to say hello. Deciding not to disturb her we went straight to my room.

We were kissing on the bed. Nikki was being playful. I was down to my boxers she slipped off her blouse and I unhooked her bra. I caressed her tits then started sucking on one. She tossed her head back and let out a light sigh.

"I do like that!" She said.

"I like doing that!" I replied.

Nikki squealed in laughter. I switched tits, her puffy nipples were very hard.

"Danny do you have a girl in your room?" It was Sally.

She scared the shit out of Nikki until she came around the door. She had on the same sheer teddy and panties she wore last week.

"Mom! What are you doing?" I yelled. Part of it was play but part was me being pissed.

"I was invited!" Sally replied. I looked at Nikki. She gave me a guilty look and shrugged her shoulders.

"I see mother, so what are you here to do?" I asked now really pissed.

Sally moved around the bed to sit next to Nikki.

"Your little vixen asked me to come show her what you do to me! What you do to make me feel happy!" Sally replied.

This is so insane! First it was anal with Kat. Last week it was my first time with Kat. Now she wants to see what I do with Sally. Would someone please explain this to me I thought. I knew right away what Sally wanted me to do. What I couldn't figure out is why now? What was Nikki looking for?'

"Mom. You said this would be our little secret?" I winked at Sally. She knew the game was on.

"Awe baby. Just this one time. Do it for me!" Sally giggled.

I was positioned on the right side of the bed leaning against the head board. Nikki leaning against me to my left. Sally to her left leaning against the head board also. I moved across Nikki and kissed Sally her meaty tits hung down as she reached for my lips. She kissed Nikki and then kissed Nikki's tit.

"Just as good as last week." Sally grinned.

Nikki blushed. Damn, they must have done something while I was sleeping. Reaching across Nikki I spread Sally's legs slightly. I caressed her pussy. Like before she was already soaked. I took my damp fingers and held them to Sally's mouth she refused to let them in. I spread the juice around her lips then went back to her pussy again. Getting them nice and wet I put my fingers back to her mouth.

"Mom. This is the way we do it, now open!" I warned her.

Sally slowly let me feed her my fingers. She moaned and so did Nikki. I pushed her panties deeper in her pussy. This time I offered them to Nikki. She wasn't so reluctant and let me slip them right in. I went back to Sally's legs and pushed them wider. This time I pushed the thin material deep in her pussy my fingers soaked in oily ooze.

Sally licked them clean and then turned to kiss Nikki. She willingly shared the kiss. The next time I lifted Nikki's skirt and we all watched as I rubbed Nikki's damp panties into her pussy. Nikki gasped as her juice collected on my fingers. I offered it to her first, she willingly accepted.

"Take her panties off!" I whispered to Nikki loud enough for Sally to hear. Sally lifted up and Nikki slipped the panties from my aunt.

Sally took them and threw them on the floor. I took Nikki's wrist and moved her hand to Sally's pussy. I nodded for her to do what I had done.

"You need to do it, I can't!" I informed her.

Nikki hesitated but Sally gently took her hand as I removed mine. She guided Nikki's fingers in her pussy and licked them clean.

"That is so sexy!" Nikki whispered.

I started to remove Nikki's panties. Nikki stopped me, then removed her skirt and her panties herself. I dipped my fingers in Nikki's pussy and coated them with her excitement and fed it to Sally. She mewed as she licked them clean.

I tried to open Nikki's leg but there wasn't much room Sally took her left leg and locked it over her right. Now both pussies were wide open. I looked at Sally and then at her tit. She knew what I wanted.

I dipped my fingers in Nikki and then spread her pussy juice on Sally's left tit. Sally lifted her tit and licked it clean sucking her fat nipple in her mouth. Sally took Nikki's hand, guided it to her own pussy and then smeared her cum on Nikki's tit. I leaned over and licked it off her tit.

It didn't take long for Nikki to learn I was the only one that couldn't finger Sally. We took turns finger fucking both of their pussies, licking, sucking and smearing pussy over each other. When it was all becoming too much I fingered Nikki and she fingered Sally at the same time. There were few words but many moans. Eventually it all ended with cries of passion.

They came almost together. Nikki throwing herself on top of Sally so they could rub pussies as they came. I was so excited I could have cum right there but I had bigger goals.

Sally stood removed her teddy and threw it on the pile on the floor. Naked she headed to the door with pussy juice running down her thighs.

"Sleep in if you want. Or I'll be in my bedroom if you want that too." She looked at Nikki and winked.

Nikki was laying back on the bed her legs splayed. She looked ready and waiting. I pulled my boxers off, the front spotted with precum. I moved between her legs and started to kiss her.

Nikki put her hand against my chest to stop me. I applied more weight letting her know how much I wanted her. She pushed back harder. Nikki was terrified it seemed. It was like she didn't even recognize me. I rolled off the bed. I stood by the bathroom giving her space.

Nikki got up tears in her eyes. She grabbed her clothes and ran out the door. I went in the bathroom and honest to god took a cold shower. For all intent and purposes my world had just come to an end. I almost threw up.

I grabbed a towel and looked in the mirror. Kat looked back. Daniel don't ever give up. If you want it find a way to get it. I got dressed and went to look for Nikki. I found her dressed in the kitchen with Sally where she had been crying.

I looked over at Sally. In my mind Kat was asking me if I was going to give up and let the world determine my fate or was I going to keep fighting and make my own fate. She always said even if the outcome wasn't what you expected at least it was your outcome. I took a deep breath, she was right.

Sally offered to take Nikki home.

"I'll take her. She's my responsibility!" Sally saw my determination and nodded.

I helped Nikki in the truck. I had almost lost all hope. All I could think of was what I was going to do now. Driving along I looked at Nikki but who I saw was Kat looking back reminding me why I was on this earth. Why she devoted twenty years of her life to raise me. I was embarrassed with myself. I reached over to take Nikki's hand. She was leery of my offer.

"Please at least let me hold your hand." I whispered. I again offered her my hand. Nikki placed her hand in my palm I closed mine around hers.

"You're not mad?" Nikki asked quietly. She was still scared I could feel it. She loved me but something was still holding her back.

"If I am it's at myself." I looked at her.

"But I was the one..."

"That made a decision. One I shouldn't have questioned." I explained.

"Why do you keep doing that?"

"Doing what?" I asked.

"Taking the blame for what I did." She replied.

"What did you do?"

"I stopped you. I pushed you away when I really wanted you to continue!" Nikki admitted. She started crying again. "Why didn't you just do it? You could have you know?"

"Is that how you want to remember the first time we do it? You pushing me and me forcing you?" I asked. "Nikki how is that different than it was that night at the house when Kat broke her arm? Then it was to see if you were gay? Not the way I want to remember my first time." I looked at her. "I love you with all my heart." I squeezed her hand letting her know I meant it.

"And your promise until your birthday?" She looked back at me.

"That still stands!" I assured her.

"But no longer?" She asked reminding me of our agreement. I looked at her remembering what Sally said about not knowing what she had until she loses it.

"That depends." I replied. She squeezed my hand.

"I do love you Daniel."

"I know." We pulled in the drive. Kat was at the door waiting for us. I helped Nikki out of the truck and walked her to the door. Nikki kissed me like she had earlier.

"Good night Dan. I had a great time...

"It was memorable for me also!" I cut her off. "Good night!"

Nikki ran in the house crying.

"You ok?" Mom asked.

"A little battered and bruised. It was only first down and I still have the ball!" I replied. Mom looked puzzled. "It's a football metaphor. I'm fine it looks worse than it is."

"Daniel let me talk to her?" Kat was beside herself with emotions.

"Mom, I love you and I know you want to help, but this needs to be her decision. You know how I feel about this."

"But baby maybe..."

"I appreciate the offer. But please don't, we agreed." I kissed her and went home.

Sally was waiting for me in my room she had on just the nighty from earlier the panties still on the floor. I sat beside her still dressed. She pulled me close and kissed my cheek.

"Second down?" She asked. I grinned.

"Second down." I replied. She nodded.

Sally reached over and started removing my shorts. I raised up to help her and my briefs came off with them. My cock was semi hard laying on my stomach. Sally reached for my tee shirt and pulled it off. She shifted on the bed and started kissing me. Her hand went to my cock. I grew harder.

"I see your mom hasn't lost her touch!" She whispered in my ear.

"What is my mom doing, and why?" I dared to ask.

"She is going to make you happy so you can sleep tonight!" Sally shifted down in the bed she licked the end of my cock.

"You probably shouldn't tell the farmer about this part." Sally looked up grinning. With that she engulfed me half way.

Sally knew I had told George. No doubt he told her. He and I were the only one that knew about the farmer!

Sally was experienced I soon learned as she worked me with her hand and her mouth. She moved to her hands and knees releasing her massive tits so they hung down. The skin stretched as the weight shifted making them look twice as big. Fuck it I thought. I reached down and gripped one. She responded by going lower. The thought of Sally sucking me had me ready quicker than usual. She felt me getting ready. She pulled off.

"Stand up son!" Sally was panting she was so excited.

I stood up she got on her knees and took me back in her mouth. I looked down her hand went to her pussy, her hips rocked back and forth. She was close I could tell. My balls tightened my cock swelled.

"Mom I going to cum!" Her hand guided my cock to her tit.

"Come on mommy's tit's baby ..." My cock spewed a thick wad of cum on her tit.

Her hips rocked forward hard then back. Her hand slapped her pussy!

She coated the second tit then sucked my cock back in her mouth as she moaned through her climax.

Her hips stopped but jiggled slightly. She looked up with sheer joy in her eyes. I looked down cum was running down the slopes of her tits threatening to drip on the floor. With her pussy coated hand she scooped up what she could and sucked her hand clean she proceeded to clean both her tit's the sucked my cock to make sure it was empty.

Sally removed her nighty and wiped her chest and face clean and threw it on the pile. She stood up I pulled her close her big tits pushed hard against my chest. It was the first time we had actually both been naked at the same time. I leaned down to kiss her she stopped me.

"Danny I just suc..."

I overcame her resistance and kissed her firmly. My tongue separated her lips I tasted myself in her mouth. Sally moaned and pulled me tighter. We kissed for a good five minutes and then broke free.

"Oh my goodness that was a surprise! My son really is a nasty boy!" She exclaimed.

"Don't get any ideas. That's as far as it goes and ever will go. Can't say I like it but if it makes you happy well..."

"You know you can't tell George about any of this and especially that.' Sally warned me. "He's old school. Hell he wouldn't kiss me after a week of mouthwash if I swallowed a drop. We clear?" She asked.

I nodded I understood.

"I know you're loyal but some things are better left unsaid. In the future I'll try to avoid putting you in this position but I felt tonight it was justified. Agreed?" She questioned me.

"Yes mom!" I replied honestly.

"Goodnight son. You better lock your door. After that I might not sleep!" Sally teased.

Saturday night I picked up Kat and Nikki we had a nice dinner. We went to see an animated comedy at the movies. No sex, no heartbreaking love story, just silly laughs. That helped a bit since the mood had been a bit tense earlier.

I took them to get ice cream then home. When we kissed goodnight I felt Nikki was a bit less passionate but I wasn't going to read anything too much into it. Mom on the other hand was very excited and kissed me with complete passion. She was looking forward to our Sunday afternoon together.

I picked mom up early as she requested. Through all of the drama with Nikki she has been my rock. I had felt that emotionally I had been short changing her. Knowing this I took her shopping for some clothes for the upcoming trip. A bikini bathing suit for tanning was the sexiest thing I bought her the rest was just some newer styles. Albeit a bit sexier than she would have purchased.

We arrived at Sharon's on time. We talked to Sharon and Val for a while. Kat and I went to Val's room and enjoyed each other immensely. She wanted me to tongue her ass but I said the she would have to wait until next weekend. She acted disappointed but smiled when I spanked her lightly. It was time to get cleaned up, we normally showered together. Kat joined me and we took our time washing and drying each other.

We walked downstairs. Val and Sharon were waiting with the same robes as always. This time neither was tied.

"Daniel. Kat we have enjoyed having you. I hope all goes well." Sharon said. "I know when you get back you will no longer need to come here. If you would like to come just for a few hours Val and I would love to have you."

"Thank you both. We might just do that." I answered looking at mom to verify my answer. She nodded in agreement.

"I know you're busy this week, but I would like you both and Nikki to come after dinner Wednesday to see the kids and have desert. They ask about you all the time." Sharon suggested.

"We'll be here!" Kat replied. Sharon walked us to the door she French kissed Kat then turned to me.

"If there is anything I can do to make sure next weekend is successful, please call. I'll do everything in my power to help." Sharon spread her arms. Her robe spread open her shaved pussy had just a tuft of hair above it, her tits were exposed, her nipples pierced. A gold bar in one a silver in the other. I stared at them just too long.

"Val has a matching set! Val show him." Val was in the doorway to the hall she opened her robe her pussy was shaved with a matching patch as well. Her tit's came into view her nipples pierced to match. Sharon pushed her naked tits against me. We French kissed this time.

"Til Wednesday?" She grinned.

It was a quiet ride back as I tried to understand what just happened.

Nikki and I had lunch as usual Tuesday, only in the sense it was at the usual time. From the moment we met I could tell she was nervous. I kissed her cheek and held her hand as we walked the short distance to the restaurant.

I had a feeling this would happen but remained firm in my conviction. We finished eating, the conversation strained by what she wanted to tell me but couldn't. As we walked back I purposely took her hand.

"Thank you for coming today. I know it was hard for you." I said. Nikki looked surprised.

"How did you know?" She asked. I shrugged my shoulders.

"What's more important is what you want to say. Are you going to tell me or make yourself sick worrying about it?" I asked. Nikki seemed taken back by my question.

"I'm not sure if I can go to Florida?" She answered.

"Can't or don't want to?" I asked.

"Ok. Let's say I don't want to?" She was offended by me calling her out. I still held her hand.

"Then just say you don't want to go. You're an adult, you can decide what you want to do." I explained.

"Will you be mad at me?" Nikki asked. I had to be careful with my answer. This could go either way.

"Was I hoping you would go, sure? Would I be happier if you went? I would if you were having a good time. Do I want you to go and be miserable? Why? Look we both know you're scared about what may or may not happen. I understand."

"Do you?" She asked rudely.

"As much as you let me. Have you talked to your friends? Your family. What about Kat?" I asked hoping to get her to open up.

"I have."

"Good. Then the rest is up to you. Come Friday at one minute past twelve in the morning. I'll owe you nothing and you will owe me the same. What I OFFER you is my heart and myself. Fair enough?"

"What then?" Nikki looked at me.

"Then we make new decisions based on new information." I explained.

"You make it sound so easy. But it isn't for me!" She replied defiantly.

"Nikki, will you promise me one thing if you decide not to go. Meet me at mom's house at four on Thursday. I'll be brief and have something for you."

"Ok!" She answered.

"Promise?" I asked.

"Promise?" Nikki replied. Relieved I let her off the hook.

"Do you still hate me?" She asked. Nikki smiled for the first time today.

"I can if you want?" I smiled.

"I'm counting on it." She said nervously.

Wednesday evening I stopped and picked mom up at her home after work. Nikki wasn't going she was at her parents' house. I stopped by Sally's grabbed a shower and we went to Sharon's. Doug and I played with the kids and had ice cream. Before we left Doug, Val, and Sharon gave us three

matching boxes with a note not to open until Friday. They had Kathryn. Nikki, and Daniel printed on each box.

I drove Mom home. It was early she still had some packing to do.

"Daniel. Nikki will not be coming with us Thursday. I wanted to tell you earlier but didn't want to put a damper on the night."

"Thank you. Its ok, she told me as much yesterday. What about you? Are you ok with this?" I asked.

"I think she is making a big mistake. I have told her that but no more. She's an adult. It's her decision." Kat replied.

"You know Friday I'm free to make love to you like I have always wanted. Do you still feel that way?" My heart skipped a beat waiting for her reply.

"Yes Daniel I do. If anything having you gone has made me appreciate you so much more. I feel we have grown closer not farther apart." I kissed her feeling her desire.

"I feel the same way. Going out on dates, having to wait to see you was killing me at first, but I feel I have matured because of it. I savor every minute we are together. I think of you all the time." I reassured her.

"Daniel I'll be waiting for you with open arms, have no doubt about that. Goodnight!" Mom kissed me.

"Goodnight mom. I'll be here in the morning to take you to work. I'll pick you up, stop at Sally's grab a shower and we can catch the freeway from there." I kissed her one last time. "Tell Nikki I love her."

I got home and was packing when Sally came to my room.

"How did your night go?"

"With mom good. Went to Sharon's, played with the kids. I took mom home so she can pack and came straight home to pack myself."

"And Nikki?"

"Third down I am afraid." I looked at the clock it was early.

"He's not here. Out with an architect. Should be gone for hours, follow me."

Sally led me downstairs to the laundry room.

"Take off your clothes son!" I did as she requested.

"Take off your mother's blouse!" Sally hissed.

I unbuttoned her blouse, she had on a blue lace bra that hardly held in her tit's. Sally kneeled on a folded towel and took me in her mouth again. She worked me for a good time. Then stopped. She gripped my cock and pulled me down by it I winced in discomfort.

"My son is going to cum on my tits then he is going to lick it from my tit and feed it to me. The other one I'll save for later. Ok?" My cock surged with the depravity of it

"Yes mom" I replied a bit nervous.

"Bad boy making your mom do these disgusting things for you!" Sally scolded me.

She sucked my cock back in her mouth. Just the thought of what she wanted me to do had my balls boiling. She pulled her bra under her tits they hung free like I am sure they use to

"I'm cumming ma." I announced.

Rope after rope streaked across the slope of her tits. My cock swelled with each spurt. Sally pulled my cock and pointed it at one tit and then the other. She cleaned my cock then stood offering me the tit with the least cum.

I licked it up and fed it to her. It took three trips. She then lifted her tit and licked it making sure it was clean. Pulling her bra up she placed the cum covered tit in it and then the clean one. Sally placed her blouse back on making sure it was correct. She lowered her slacks, removed her panties and handed them to me. They were soaked.

"For good luck. Pack them in your bag and. take them on your trip" She pulled her slacks up with no panties. Again making sure she was properly dressed.

I got dressed completely. She handed me a basket of clean clothes and took one herself we went back up stairs. I walked in my room and sat the basket down and started removing the clean clothes and packed my bags.

...

I picked mom up in the morning we loaded her things. I worked in the morning. I had just one class in the afternoon. Finishing early I had time before seeing Nikki so I stopped and headed over to the gym and took a shower. I figured one less thing to do.

At four I was at mom's house Nikki's car was in the drive. I knocked on the door.

"Come in its open."

"Hello beautiful. Have you decided if you are going?" I asked happily. It was a mute question. I knew she wasn't but I still held out hope.

"Dan I'm sorry but I am not going with you." Nikki said. I tried to hide my disappointment but failed miserably. "I just can't make up my mind."

I took a deep breath. I looked at her. I reached for her hand she moved it away from me. That was a very bad sign. Before she always let me hold her hand. Not only is it a sign of trust but I could sense her feelings. I needed to at least hold her hand. Better yet have her kiss me.

"I know I said that I wouldn't take much time and give you a speech but I do have a couple of questions I hoped you would answer. May I do that?" I asked.

"I owe you at least that." I moved closer but not too close. I didn't want her to feel cornered. I reached for her hand. She didn't move hers closer.

"What are you afraid of? Why won't you come with me? What is it you feel you can't tell me?" I asked.

Nikki bit her lip. She shifted in her seat.

"What if we have sex and I don't feel anything. What if I really am a lesbian?" Nikki broke down and started crying? I reached for her hand this

time she offered me hers. She wasn't being completely honest this was a concern but there was something else.

"Nikki you have been living with my mother! In her bedroom I might add. We have spent countless hours together and have had some heated sex short of intercourse. I would think by now you have enough to go on to take the next step. No it's something else. Please tell me." Nikki started shaking. I knew the answer I just need her to tell me.

"I can't tell you. I can't tell anyone!" She yelled.

"You can tell me and you will. I'm not just anyone! I am the man you are going to marry and have kids with. I'm the man that is and will share the most precious gift he has in the world with you. Kat! Tell me Nikki. Tell me what it is!"

"I'm not good enough for you! There I said it!" She yelled at me. "What if I'm not good enough? What if I am not a good enough lover? Or mother, or wife? I have been so mean to you and through it all you will not give up. Why?"

Nikki cried even more. I pulled her and held her tight. She just bared her soul and was afraid I would use it against her. I held her until she calmed down. That's why she chose Becky over Kat at the time. She was afraid she wasn't good enough to be loved. She was wrong then and she is wrong now. She wants to know why I waited.

"Because I love you. I love YOU just the way you are. As for not being good enough? I won't insult you by even trying to justify it with a response. Wait here. I'll be right back." I went to the truck and came back to the house. I sat the items on the counter.

"Nikki I have been waiting for a sign from you. Maybe you need one from me. Here are two packages. The first is a round trip plane ticket to Orlando. It arrives at 6 pm Friday night. Mom and I'll pick you up at the airport. We

will drop you off at mom's hotel. Mom and I'll return at eight and come to the room. If you have opened this box I'll stay, if you hand me the box unopened then Kathryn will stay." I explained. "Is that clear."

"Yes." She sniffled.

"If you aren't on that plane then mom and I'll be in bed at eight that night." I explained. We kissed. Just lightly but we kissed. Nikki tried to say something but I stopped her.

"That's my sign to you it's all I have left. It's fourth down. I'm giving you the football. You either kick a field goal or score a touchdown." I said using football terms.

"What did you just say?" Nikki's eyes shot open.

"It's a football analogy. Call Sally she knows all about it. I need to go." Nikki kissed me hard on the lips. Her tongue searched for mine before we parted but she still let me leave alone.

I picked mom up at work. Sharon met me and gave me a quick hug to say goodbye. I headed in the direction of Sally's house but since I had already showered I headed straight for the freeway.

"I thought you were stopping at Sally's?" Kat asked.

"I grabbed a shower at school before stopping at your house." I explained.

"You saw Nikki?" Mom seemed surprised.

"I did. We talked longer than I expected." I looked over at her.

"Have you given up?" Kat asked. This was a loaded question.

"You taught me to never give up. So no, and I also have not given in. She kissed me goodbye."

"Yes. And?" Mom waited.

"Mom SHE kissed me goodbye!"

"Oh. Well let me call your aunt then you can tell me all about it." She dial up Sally but got a busy signal. It was ten minutes before she got through. "Sally this is Kat! Dan and I are on the expressway." (pause) "Yeah plans got changed." (pause) "No." (pause) "Yes that sounds great. Sally you are a life saver. Thank you so much. Call me if you need me to do anything." (pause) "Sure he's right here. Your aunt wants to talk to you. Daniel not long, you're driving." I gave her the evil eye.

"Hi Sally."

"Happy birthday Daniel."

"That's tomorrow?"

"Fourth down?" Sally asked.

"Fourth down. I gave her the ball and two options on how she can score." I explained.

"And?" She questioned.

"I'll know tomorrow at 8 pm at the latest."

"You ok if she takes a sack?" Sally asked.

"Mom I made it through the regular season. I won the playoff game at home." I said looking at Kat. "I'm in the Super Bowl. I've had several personal MVP awards. The one I'll cherish most is from you. If she kicks a field goal Kat will cover the spread. If she scores a touchdown my season, no my life will be complete. If she takes a sack? I can live knowing with the love and support of my friends and family I gave it my best! I'll dust myself off stand proud and start thinking about next season."

"I'm proud of you son." Sally gushed.

"Thank you. That means as much as a win I think." Sally started to cry.

"I love you Daniel. Always know that I love you." She sobbed.

"I love you Sally. I better go Kat is giving me the evil eye." I handed mom the phone. She talked to Sally for a few more minutes. About what I couldn't say. I was thinking of last night with Sally.

"Daniel. You now call her mom too?" Kat asked. Seems I have two stories to tell. Good thing it's a long drive!

I filled Kat in on both Nikki and Sally. She knew some things about Sally, as did Eve, but not about how far it had gone.

We stopped for gas when we did Kat called Sharon to discuss details on the conference. I smiled knowing what she didn't. There was no conference. Sharon and I made it up to force Nikki to make a decision. That and to

celebrate my birthday. Only Sally and Eve was in on it and they were both sworn to secrecy.

It really didn't matter since we were on the road. The one real thing was I had Eve reserve a room at the airport for tomorrow night. That was going to happen regardless.

"That was Sharon. Seems you have quite a little harem going. Are you sure you are going to have time for me?" Kat was kidding but her comment hit a nerve.

"I'll ALWAYS have time for you!" I assured her.

"What about Nikki? Will you have time for her when she comes?" Kat asked?

"Really? Do you know something?" I asked.

"Just trying to stay positive!" Mom teased.

"I appreciate that but you know the answer. So what are you getting at? There is only the two of you after this trip if you're right." I replied.

"What about Sally?" Mom asked with a grin.

"Well I hoped to move back home. I can come back home right?" I looked over for her reply.

"Daniel of course. Don't ever think that will change. I'm just saying what if she doesn't want to stop?"

"Really? I don't see that happening!" I looked to her for feedback.

"Just trying to stay positive!" Kat teased me. "Besides Sally says sex with George has never been better since you moved in. Maybe a little competition from her 'son' has the old boy worried!" Mom teased.

"Kathryn!" I protested her teasing me about Sally calling me her son also.

"Just saying!" She laughed. "Now Sharon wants to know when 'we' are coming to visit again. Meaning you!" She teased even more.

"Yeah? Or are you using me to get to her?" I teased back.

"Daniel! Seriously you do know why right?" Mom protested. "I want you to remember the gift you have is so rare...I WANT you to use it. You bring so much happiness to these women. Myself included." Kat said emotionally.

"Even Nikki knows that. If you use it wisely as you have you will make me proud." Kat reached over and took my hand I could tell she was sincere and talking from her heart."

I pulled off the highway we arrived at the hotel.

After dinner we talked for some time about her job and how much she likes working for Sharon as well as the company. Kat is making great money and likes the social interaction of having so many people to talk to. She joined the local fitness center, its women only, Sharon and many others are members also. We talked about school and my classes.

I explained how George suggested I should steer more into sales than strictly business. He likes my work with vendors and contractors. I even helped him sell two houses through his agent. I was on sight when a couple asked to see a partially completed home. I offered to take them through pointing out where

George's homes differ in quality. They came back the second time with another couple. I turned them over to the broker after a second tour.

It was getting late we got ready for bed. Kat took a shower first. I knew by her attire this was a no hanky panky night. I was fine with just kissing her goodnight. I deciding to take my shower in the morning.

Friday morning we got an early start. I showered then we took advantage of the free breakfast. We were on the road by eight with just over three hours to go. We were just twenty miles from our exit when I felt the steering wheel shake. Darned if I didn't have a flat tire.

Fortunately it happened at an exit. I wasn't able to make it far without destroying my rim but was off the highway. This close to noon the sun baked me. The dust kicked up from the passing traffic and I had to lay in the sand to get the spare from underneath. By the time I was done I was sweaty and covered in grime. We lost almost forty minutes but other than wanting to get there we were good.

Kat had been in a good mood the whole trip, she had made several calls while I was changing the spare. As we got underway she seemed even happier.

"Something I should know?" Hoping it was good news about Nikki.

"Eve says she will have cold beer waiting for you, and she insists on buying lunch." Mom looked at my grubby appearance and wrinkled her nose. "Oh, and she said Happy Birthday!"

I smiled since this was the first mention of it. The rest of the drive was uneventful. Kat sharing no other news.

We pulled into the condo later than I expected. Mom got out and suggested we go see Eve before we unloaded our gear.

"You go ahead I'm already a sweaty mess. Let me grab a few things and get this done." I replied. She looked like she wanted to say something but turned and walked to the door.

Eve opened the door and quickly ushered her in. I unloaded our luggage and took it to the condo. Mom asked me to set it down inside the door and she would put it in the guest room. I was dirty and sweaty from changing the tire so I figured Eve didn't want me making a mess. It took three trips but eventually the truck was empty.

Eve came from the master bedroom and looked at me.

"Happy birthday Daniel!" she came to kiss me but stopped. "You young man need a shower!"

"Yeah, I better take one before we go have lunch. Where's my beer?" I teased.

"After your shower. Now give me a kiss and hurry. I am starved!" I bent over and kissed her on the lips without our bodies touching.

"You better brush your teeth before you come back out and then I'll give you a proper birthday kiss!" Eve teased.

I grabbed my toiletry bag a pair of briefs and clean shorts then headed to the main bathroom. The door was closed just as Eve saw me waiting

"Dan go use the one in the master suite." I shrugged my shoulders figuring she was really hungry.

The warm water felt awesome cascading over me. Knowing time was short I finished washing and turned the shower off. I dried off and brushed my teeth. I slipped on my clothes and picked up my dirty clothes on the way out. I went to the guest bedroom and stored my dirty clothes, grabbed a shirt then went to the kitchen to find my mothers. There was a note on the on the counter.

'Daniel. Before your beer, open the present on the patio! Mom.'

It looked like Eve's writing.

I looked across the living room to the sliding door finding it was open, only the screen was closed. I tossed the shirt over the couch and headed across the room. I walked to the door and looked outside at the ocean expecting to see Kat and Eve.

I opened the screen, she looked at me. On the table was an open box. Beside it a football. Worn and tattered I saw three names.

Wilson football was stamped in the pigskin. 'Masters' in big black magic marker above the word Wilson. Above that was the word 'Kyle'. My eyes watered.

I looked back at Nikki she slipped her hand under her bikini bottom, the material gave as she fingered her pussy. She brought it out slowly using her other hand she lifted the top then coated the nipple with her excitement. She broke our gaze only long enough to lick it and then hide it away. She did the other one quicker as she saw me approach.

I held out my hand. Nikki took it. I felt her complete acceptance of what was going to happen. She stood, the robe she was laying on floated in place. It was the present from Sharon.

"I have it all juicy for you!" Nikki offered.

I cradled her in my arms and carried her like a bride over the threshold into the master bedroom. I saw the bed was pulled back, clearly Eve wanted us in this room. I placed Nikki on the bed. I slipped off her bottoms as she threw her top to the side.

I started to pull my shorts off but she stopped me. She slid them down and took my cock in her mouth two strokes with her lips my cock was glistening. We both knew why. Sliding her back I wanted to lick her pussy but I remembered what Sally said. I spread her legs, Nikki willingly complied. I lined my raging cock up to her opening pushing it in just an inch then pulled it out.

"This may pinch a bit but I promise after that it will be all pleasure!" I whispered.

Nikki was stunned I knew she was still a virgin. She wanted to say something I put my finger to her lips.

We both looked down as I slipped in her. The combined wetness made the tight fit easier. I pushed to her hymen and thrust through it. Nikki winced but kept her eyes on mine. I was almost two thirds in I held it there letting her adjust and accommodate my size. I could see she wanted more.

I pulled out slightly and then delved deeper. Nikki's face told the whole story, she was no true lesbian. I took each stroke slow and easy I was about three quarters in and that was the limit for now. I picked up the pace limiting my depth for her pleasure. I moved my cock finding her sweet spot, it didn't take long. She had waken the little bud with her fingers. I rubbed my cock along it.

"Yes Danny. YES! Fuck me baby. Fuck my pussy!" Nikki cried out.

She was panting and starting to perspire. When she closed her eyes I knew she was close. I wanted to bury my cock deeper but I knew only pain could stop her pleasure now. I continued with what worked. Nikki opened her eyes she looked down at my cock pistoning in her pussy. Her lips stretching with each thrust.

"TOUCHDOWN!" Nikki screamed!

She was cumming! She pulled me down her tits pressed into my chest I arched my back so I could kiss her. Her mouth was open searching for air to fuel the fire spreading in her body. She finally had caught her breath and latched onto my lips our tongues finishing the coupling. Her spasms never really subsided as much as went into slow motion. Her hips continued to work under my weight.

"That was fucking fantastic!" Nikki squealed.

Her whole body was red and damp. I rolled us over letting her be on top. Nikki's hips were now free to control the action. She was now fucking me! Nikki arched her back, her tits thrust up pointing to the ceiling. She tried to take more but the discomfort was too much.

"Nik. Just enjoy. All in good time." I said.

She had slumped forward looking to see there was more cock available. Nikki took my advice and focused on her own pleasure. I hadn't cum yet but that would change soon. Her pace picked up she was very close to another orgasm. I couldn't wait! She thrust down and I started to cum, she lifted up and I followed pushing against her. The first shot filled her empty cavern. Her eyes went wide.

"Your cumming in me I can feel it!" She gasped.

I wanted, no I needed her to stroke me, we were out of sync. I grabbed her hips adjusted my cock and thrusted up as I pulled her down. Another shot in her pussy.

"Yes Danny do it! I can feeeeellllll it...do it. Do it."

I followed her cadence shooting each time. Nikki slumped forward her breathing erratic her hips rapidly fucking my now empty but hard cock.

"Oh...Oh...oooooohhhhhhh...OOOOHHHHH FUCK ME!! She finished with one last pussy slam on my cock. Just in time I might add.

Nikki flattened out on top if me my cock slipping from her pussy. I tried to kiss her but she avoided me by turning her head. Her shoulders shook I felt tears rolling down my chest. I wrapped my arms around her and held her tight. We laid that way for a good several minutes.

"I hate you!" Nikki whispered.

"I was hoping you would say that." I teased. Again we lay not moving.

I could feel her heart beat. We lay there basking in the knowledge that the game was over. Slowly she traced my arm, she lifted her head her chin rested on my upper chest. It was like we both knew that words weren't needed. Nikki looked happy. Feeling her whole body on mine was incredible. I caressed her back and fondled her ass.

It was the first time for both of us and all things considered, I thought it went great. Nikki seemed happy, her body language led me to believe that as well. She scooted up to kiss me. It was slow and sensual. She whimpered as I kissed her back, I was caressing her ass with my hands. My cock started to stiffen.

"That was fun can we do it again!" Nikki looked up with a wanton smile.

"I thought you hated me?" I teased

"If you make me cum like I did the first two times I might hate you even more!" Nikki giggled.

I flipped us over my arms extended. Nikki grabbed my cock and spanked her clit with it a few times. The woman is completely uninhibited once you get her started. I wondered if she was that way with Kat?

My cock was hard and ready when she finally guided it into her cunt. I pushed in and she moaned in pleasure. Nikki grabbed her tits as I started pumping faster. Her tit fleshed squeezed from between her fingers as she gripped them with force.

"Harder Danny. Fuck me harder." Nikki wasn't screaming this time but she was demanding. "Yes baby. faster...

Her voice trailed off I was at a speed she was happy with and I could maintain at least for now. Her hips started to sway, one hand went to her pussy with two fingers she spread the folds exposing her clit it was red and swollen.

"When I tell you slam it in me!" Nikki pushed up against me the pace quickened. Then I saw her rub her clit. Her hips pushed harder I was pulling out when she yelled.

"NOW! She squealed.

I slammed her pussy she thrust her hips. She closed her eyes and held her breath.

"DANNY I FUCKING HATE YOU!"

She contracted over my cock as I pumped her pussy. Nikki was a woman gone wild moaning and cursing at the same time! When she started to slow I tried to stop but she grabbed my hips and kept me pumping. Nikki had finished her orgasm, she looked down, I was still not all the way in. She seemed disappointed.

"On your back Masters!" Nikki demanded.

I pulled out, her pussy gaped open, she turned facing my feet and pounced on my cock.

She was a woman on a mission. Nikki hammered her pussy on my cock. As hard as she tried she couldn't get it all in. I don't know if she resigned to the fact it wasn't going to happen or she wanted me to cum.

She bent over slightly and cupped my balls gently. That was it for me. She rubbed her pussy and then stroked my balls until they were soaked. I was close when I had a thought. I wet my finger with spit, she was bent slightly, her legs splayed over my hips her rose bud bouncing in front of me. I touched it with my slick finger, she felt it and immediately responded by pushing back.

"You nasty boy. Do it...!"

Nikki picked up the pace my balls were boiling she bent even more so I had better access.

I licked my finger leaving a large pool of spit on the tip. I found her rosebud and pushed ever so slightly.

"Yes you butt fucker ...ddddddooooo iiiiiittttt!" Nikki moaned.

She was pushing but her ass moved so fast and my balls were emptying. All I ever got in was just the very tip not even to the first knuckle.

Nikki came from just the thought of it. Nikki started to slip back to take my cock in her mouth she was going to move her pussy off but I guided her back so I could lick it. I felt her mouth on my cock I couldn't reach her pussy but I was young enough and flexible enough to lick her asshole several times.

Nikki rolled off and kissed me sharing our excitement. She laid on top of me again. We were both exhausted

"Would you have?" Nikki looked me in the eyes.

"Have what?" I wasn't clear on the question.

"Would you have licked my pussy with your cum in it?"

"Shouldn't I?" I asked. Nikki gave me a strange look.

"You know that many people would take that as you being gay!" Nikki offered.

"No they would think if I partook of another man's cum that would be gay." I replied as Nikki started laughing.

"Have you ever 'partook' of your own before?" She was thoroughly amused.

"If you are asking me if I drink my own cum the answer is no. Never. If you ask me if I have ever tasted it. Yes. In the course of sexual activities ..."

"Blow jobs Daniel!" Nikki smirked. She was teasing me like I teased her before.

"After the act of receiving a 'blowjob' I have had the feeling the woman involved found it quite arousing to kiss me shortly thereafter. Should I protest the essence of the very pleasure I received, seems to me a bit rude to say the least." I clarified. "Yes under those circumstances I have. Had you accepted my offer when the mood seemed right I may have granted your wish, though at this time I'll admit, it seems much less appealing."

Nikki kissed me again.

"What was that for?" I asked.

"Kat told me you were special. You would have. You would have done that to make me happy!"

"Of course. That's what making love is all about. It's the most intimate form of expression. The whole reason we do it other than to reproduce is to enjoy it!" I informed her.

"Dan let's take a nap I'm wore out." We cuddle just where we laid. I woke shortly after, Nikki was still sleeping. I had something on my mind.

I decided to call Kat and see where she and Eve were.

"Daniel! Happy birthday!" It was Eve on mom's phone.

"You didn't give me that kiss!" I teased.

"I hope you got my present instead?" Eve laughed.

"I did. Thank you!"

"Well we are waiting to hear. Did everything 'cum' out ok?" Eve was giggling.

"I believe her first word was 'touchdown'!" I was being coy.

"Touchdown?" Eve asked confused.

"Yeah. Kat can explain. Is she there?" I asked.

Nikki walked to the door way and leaned against the frame. She must have heard my explanation.

"Oh she is. She's tied up at the moment. Do you need her or can it wait for a bit we were in the middle of something?" Eve asked.

It sounded like slurping noises. She must have moved the phone to her pussy. Eve moaned. "Sorry your mother just can't keep her mouth closed!"

I looked over at Nikki, she was pinching her nipples.

"Well now that you ask. It seems I am needed back on the field also. Looks like we are going to run up the score!" I said happily.

"Kat says happy birthday! We will call you later. Maybe in a half hour?"

"Better make it an hour!" I replied eying Nikki.

"I think we can find something to keep us busy until then. Luv you son." Eve replied.

"I love you too mom!" I hung up the phone Nikki smiled. "Eve." I said pointing to the phone.

"What about Kat?"

"Couldn't come to the phone. Seems she is tied up at the moment." I winked. "They're going to call back later."

The thought of going back to bed was tempting but we had been at it for three hours. I suggested we grab a shower and then walk the beach. Nikki seemed ready for some time to relax. We showered separately just to avoid temptation. We both dressed in shorts and shirts. Nikki even wore a bra. We started down the beach.

"Do you want to know?" Nikki asked.

"I do. I really do. But if it's ok with you can it wait a couple of days. I just want to remember today as the first day of the rest of our...Can I say that?"

"Yes silly." She smiled.

"The rest of our lives. But I'll let you tell me one thing. The football?" We faced each other briefly before she started.

"When you said those were football analogies, and then said Sally, it reminded me of something. I called her to explain. I remembered the football. I remember when you gave it to Kyle. Then I remembered what he said that night at Sally's. Exactly what he said." Nikki explained.

She reached for me and stood before me.

"You told me Kyle said 'He hopes you will make the choice he didn't. Wilson will know.' is that correct?"

"Sounds about right?" I replied "Why? What does that mean?"

"Kyle always thought of you as his best friend Daniel. I never heard him say a bad word about you except that he was envious of some things you could do he couldn't. But never about you as a person. Kyle always wanted to be with the in crowd so he hung out with Carlton. They tried to get you to smoke weed one day. He told me how he wished he had left with you when you turned Carlton down." Nikki shared.

"He thought you were so brave to do that. Kyle was so afraid to be thought of as a loser. But you. You really don't care do you? For you it's doing the right thing for the right reason. Just like you would have licked my pussy with your cum in it. You would have done that just for me and could care less what others would think about it."

"But the football?" I asked still not clear.

"You gave him that football. Your football. The one you asked for as a gift just so you could help Kyle practice the game. For a sport you didn't play. You spent day after day catching balls so he could be a better quarterback. Hiked the ball so he could practice that. Took hand-offs so he could practice those too." Nikki explained. "You were his friend. But in the end he picked Carlton. He lost his life because of that."

Nikki lowered her head. "Daniel he picked wrong. He was telling me what I already knew. The reason I waited for you to be my first. He was telling me you are the one. Wilson was just the push I needed to remember the lesson he didn't learn. You are an incredible man." Nikki said.

She pulled me close we kissed. "I'm so sorry..."

"Do you still hate me?" I teased her to get her to smile.

"More than ever!"

"That's all I ever need to know! Let's go mom's may be calling soon" I said remembering earlier.

"Yeah we should. Danny, when do we get to talk about all your mothers?" Nikki teased.

"Not today Nik. Not today!"

The phone rang Nikki picked it up.

"Hello, this is Nikki!" with her hand over the receiver she let me know it was Eve. It was almost six o'clock and by now.

(pause)

"She's in the shower? You want me to do what? Eve you are so wicked!"

(pause)

"Yes we were just talking about dinner." Nikki said. We hadn't but I myself was hungry. I hadn't eaten since breakfast.

(pause)

"Ok. No I am sure he will understand. No I think I can keep him out of trouble until then."

(pause)

I'll make sure he is awake when you get here. Bye. Love you Eve." Nikki turned to me with a fake frown.

"Seems Eve and Kat went into the bar after you talked to them for one drink. Kat seems to have had one too many. She puked a while ago and now Eve has her in the shower trying to get her cleaned up. Eve thinks its best they come back in the morning." Nikki explained.

I wasn't really that upset. Kat had told me she was going to leave Nikki and me alone for the night if she came. I was bit disappointed because of my birthday but Nikki was more of a present than I expected.

"I hope she's alright? She isn't a big drinker you know?" I explained.

"Well Eve didn't seem to steady herself. She is going to have her call you later. You hungry?"

"Baby I am starving. Where would you like you go?" I asked as I pulled her to me.

"Kat always talks about this great seafood place with clams and shrimp." Nikki said.

"I know it. You want to go there?" I was pleased with her choice.

"Can we get carry out? I really don't want to get all made up. Besides we can eat on the patio and watch the ocean."

"Say no more. I think Eve keeps menus in here." I went into the kitchen and opened the drawer. "Here it is."

"Tell you what. You fly and I'll buy! Happy Birthday!" Nikki offered

"Well since you put it that way, deal." I called in the order and ten minutes later I left to go pick it up. When I showed up the order was delayed because of some mix up. Now with our order in my hand I returned to the condo. I went in and placed the food on the counter.

"Nikki!"

"In here baby." I heard her call out. I looked in the master bedroom and bath. She wasn't there.

"Nik? Where are you?"

I saw her standing in the new robe at the door of the spare bedroom. My cock started to get hard. Well if she thinks I am anywhere near done she is sorely mistaken. I thought!

"Here put this on. She threw my robe to me." I stripped and slipped on the robe.

"Come get it!" She stood well back of the opening

When I got closer I noticed her face was moist. Nikki ran to me and kissed me firmly on the lips. I could taste her! I knew that scent all too well. I picked her up and went into the room. Nikki stopped kissing me. She pulled herself up by my neck and whispered.

"Happy Birthday Daniel. I have never hated you. I have always loved you. Until today I didn't know how much. This is to show you how much I truly love you. This is my present to you for today and as long as you will have US. Now kiss me!"

I kissed Nikki. It was our most passionate to date. She pushed herself free.

"I'll be down the hall." Nikki pointed out the door.

Turning to where she pointed Eve was dressed the same way, standing at the door of her master suite. "You have until eight thirty and then you get another present."

Nikki left closing the door.

The closet door opened. Kat was standing in her robe the flaps open. I could see her pussy was dripping no doubt from the licking Nikki just shared with me.

"I hear the two of you had fun today." Mom asked.

"And you?"

"It was interesting. It seems the conference I was to attend was canceled?" Kat was impressed with the effort I had gone through. I smiled.

"Since you're free. Do you mind spending some time with me?" I teased.

"I thought you'd never ask! The question is did you save anything for me?" Kat asked smiling. I opened my robe showing her my raging hard on.

"Looks like you got started without me?" I replied. I looked back at her damp mound.

"Daniel will you please make love to me now?" Mom asked with tears in her eyes.

"Yes mom I will"

I went to her slipping my hands inside her robe as we kissed and kissed some more. We had waited this long another few minutes wasn't a problem. I reached up and slipped her robe off and kissed her nipple. She moaned then pulled me to the bed. I took my robe off and laid her back. We positioned ourselves near the center I moved between her legs. I supported myself arms straight my cock almost at her pussy. Mom grabbed my cock and rubbed her clit with it.

Kat's hips raised slightly she positioned it, her meaty flaps spread and we both watched as the mushroom head disappeared. She looked at me still holding the base of my cock then closed her eyes. Mom released me and then lowered her head.

"Now!" She whispered. It was a gentle request. She wanted to focus on just one thing. Me inside her.

I eased forward a happy smile started to form. I kept moving her wetness was allowing me to delve deeper in her satin lined pussy. The smile faded I could see concern as I reached the point Nikki could no longer take anymore.

I stopped but she reached out and gripped my hips. I had pulled out a couple inches she pulled me back urging me to go deeper. I started back in, the smile returned. Mom felt like heaven her pussy was so tight. I went a bit farther she released my hips I pulled out she gripped me and pulled me hard to her pussy. I went deeper still. Mom pushed my hips back then gripped them again and slammed my cock so hard I thought I would split her in half. I felt my balls slap her ass.

"That's where I want you!" She hissed. Kat looked at me. She looked at my cock buried in her pussy.

"Now I have you just where I want you!"

I started making love to my mother. Each time I pulled out Kat pulled me hard against her. I lowered myself to get a better angle and kiss her occasionally. I guess I never thought how doing the same thing with another person could be so different.

I quickly picked up on what mom wanted. It was easy since she was clear what her needs were. A touch here, a groan there. Nikki was verbal. Mom used her hands and body to get her point across. Starting slow I picked up the pace, she seemed to be ahead of me. I slowed and found a steady pace that was good for me.

I was supporting my upper body on my elbows her tits spread to each side of her chest, her nipples hard. I arched my back and took a nipple in my mouth sucking the tit up with me. Mom emitted a quiet whimper. I did it again with the other one. She rotated her pelvis my cock scraped along the top of her pussy wall. I knew of the G spot and figured this was the spot I was manipulating with my cock.

We had found her spot and I was ready to bring this long overdue lovemaking to a glorious climax for us both. I changed my angle slightly. The head of my cock massaged the roof of her cunt the base dragged across her perineum. Kat's eyes widened her breathing changed instantly. She picked up the pace I adjusted to stay with her.

"Stop!" I thought she said through clenched teeth. I could barely hear her over the sound our bodies were making

"Don't stop!" She repeated more forcefully.

Her second request much clearer. Her pelvis rose and paused. I had her right where she wanted me! Mom slammed her pussy up!

"DANIEL FUCK ME!" Kat demanded. I could sense this would happen. I adjusted again and buried my cock until her pubic bone dug in just above my cock. "Oh baby I love you! It feels so good!

I slammed in her again and again her pussy pulsated, my cock yearning to release the proof of my love.

"So good baby... oh Danny soo goooood"

"Mom I going to cum in you!" I announced.

I could feel her orgasm subside as mine started to build. She wrapped her legs around me and dug her heels into my ass pulling me deep in her pussy. The first spurt seared into her cunt.

"More Danny give me more!" Mom pleaded.

Her face was glowing with desire. I pumped two more wads of cum against her cervix. My need to impregnate her overrode the fact I knew she couldn't conceive. All I could think of is how I could fill her pussy with more of my cum.

The last spurts were probably phantom. I had come twice before but the feeling was there and her expression told me she felt my cock swell with each thrust.

I pulled out and found her lips we shared the afterglow of a long awaited coupling. I knew it wasn't my best, but it was a start, a very good start. This wasn't about perfection it was about wanting her to know that I wanted to do this.

"Do I even need to tell you how much I love you?" I asked as I softly kneaded her nipple.

"A girl never gets tired of being told she is appreciated!" Kat bubbled with happiness.

"Kathryn I love you. Not just as my mother. Not just as my lover. But also for the way you make me a better person. I know I can't make love to you every minute of every day but in my heart I can love you that often." Kat was tearing up. She rested her head on my chest.

"Danny can I tell you something I swore I never would?" She asked tears still running down her cheek.

"If you want. I hope you can tell me anything." I looked down.

"I loved your dad, at least when we were first married." She stated. Kat rose up and looked at me. I could see her damp eyes look into mine. "Daniel I have never loved any man like I love you. Even before tonight."

I rolled her to the side and faced her. I wiped her eyes dry. I wanted to savor this moment.

"You are such a good man. Funny. Kind. I could go on. It's just when I am with you I always feel special and loved. I don't know what the future holds but I know I always want to be near you. If we never make love again. I'll still love you as much as I do now!" Kat said.

What could I say that hasn't been said I thought?

We kissed I pulled her on top of me her tits mashed into my chest. I gripped her ass and pulled her against my hard cock. I was surprised too.

"Dan really?" Mom rubbed it with her pussy. "Can you really do it again?"

"I really don't know? It's not like I have been in this situation before you know!" I confessed.

Kat jumped up.

"You stay right here. I have a present for you!"

"Mom? What are you doing?"

"I am going to give you a gift no one else in the world can!" She grinned ear to ear.

"What are you talking about?" I asked as she stepped through the door.

"Daniel, we were going to wait, but now just feels right. She moved back in the door to say that.

"Mom..."

"Daniel, trust me the time has come for this to happen. Stay right there!" Kat suggested.

I waited and waited and just when I was ready to get up the door opened. She was there standing in the opening, naked. It was Eve. I wasn't sure what to do at first, but my instincts took over. I stood up and went to her.

"Do I get my birthday kiss yet?" I asked.

Those simple words were all she needed to hear. It not only let her know I had been waiting for her but I wanted her. Eve was so strong, so confident, but as she stood there I could see her vulnerability. I took her arm and wrapped it around my waist. I leaned down to kiss her I could taste Nikki on her lips.

"You have been a busy mother!" I teased.

She swooned when I called her that. A knowing smile replaced her apprehension.

"Daniel are you sure you want to do this?" There was desire but not confidence in her voice.

I took her hand and put it around my cock. A gasp escaped her lips. I kissed her again our tongues danced with each other.

"I have wanted you since the first time you slipped on the little orange bikini for me. You kept me hard the whole time I stayed here. The question is, do you want me to make love to you?" I asked just to make sure.

"I need to explain some things to you first. You have a right to know." Eve replied.

I led her to the bed. We sat on the edge. I slipped a hand over the very tit's she teased me with last summer.

"You want to talk now?" I asked.

We moved to the center of the bed we kissed like lovers. Real lovers. I laid back and pulled her slender body on top of me.

"Daniel I know now isn't the right time, but in a way it's fitting you know on this day, your birthday. You deserve to know the truth about your father and how this day came to be." Eve spoke softly.

I pulled a pillow to support my head her wet pussy nudged against my cock.

"Go on!"

"Duane was a good son for so much of his life. Spoiled for sure, but he wasn't a mean person. We noticed a change around the time he started playing college football. He was getting bigger and stronger. Charles and I were naïve, we just thought it was him working out all the time. By the time he was a sophomore in college he was so big. So strong. At times he was the same lovable young man we knew before. Then if something upset him it was like a switch went off."

Eve wiggled sliding down, I could feel my cock at the opening of her pussy. I tried to thrust but she made it clear she didn't want that.

"It was just after they loss a big game. Duane had a fight with his girlfriend, he actually hurt her. He came home for the weekend. Charles was at work. I was doing laundry. Duane came into the room and started to attack me. I don't remember ever leading him on. Not like I have done with you." Eve acknowledged what we both knew.

"I knew he tried to see me naked at times. I figured it was boys will be boys. We never kissed romantically. We had never touched inappropriately before that day. He didn't rape me but the desire was there. I laid naked on the floor with cum covering me. I was shocked and humiliated."

Eve wiggled again this time the tip just entered her pussy.

"When it was over, I didn't know what to do or say. Do I blame him? Myself? Duane went back to school that day. Charles knew that night something was wrong. It was days before I told him. Charles eventually confronted Duane. We learned he had been taking steroids! Charles made sure we got him help. Duane left the football team. He stopped taking the steroids and all seemed well."

Eve slid further down my hard cock. Very slightly, maybe an inch.

"He met your mother Kat his junior year. They got married in the fall after he graduated. A year later we were all so happy when they announced she was pregnant. Duane seemed so happy. He was married, had a great job with George, and now a baby on the way.

His dark days seemed to be over. When Kat miscarried no one took it harder than Duane, not even Kat it seemed. Duane treated her poorly after that. Especially when he found out she could no longer have children. That's when your mother and I took solace with one another for the first time."

"You and Kat? Together back then?" I asked.

She kissed me softly.

Eve wiggled her pussy sliding down another inch.

"We had some things in common. Duane and his abuse and we had both been with women before." Eve gave me another smile. I closed my eyes and shook my head. My cock swelled in her tight cunt.

"This is something we will discuss on another day!" I suggested. "Go on."

"One day many months later Duane came to the house. He was calling me all sorts of names, slut was one of them, you now know my distaste for that word. That was the day it happened. The day he raped me and impregnated me with you. There were no signs, no warnings, no real reason as far as I can tell. Maybe he was on drugs. Maybe he felt if she couldn't bear children I would for him." Eve stopped for a second.

"Years later I thought it was because Kat had turned to me. This was his way of punishing me and to prove he was a real man. Regardless. Charles knew the moment he came home. He had seen the look years before. He lit out after Duane. I called George. If George hadn't found Charles first I am sure Charles would have killed him. You know what happened then of course."

Eve slid down my cock almost completely in her.

"There was never any doubt about having you. Then one day I was feeling very bad. They rushed me into surgery. They induced labor to save me. It was weeks later when I woke. Decisions were made Daniel, decisions I wasn't involved in. It was a year before I started to feel almost normal. Duane

seemed to be content with Kat and now you his son. I wanted you but they seemed so happy." I could see Eve smiled as the memories came back.

"Reluctantly I agreed to let them raise you as their own. With Duane and Kat raising you we all thought the aggression was over. Then a couple of years later the dark days started to surface again. I knew he was treating Kat poorly. I felt powerless to stop him. After he raped me, Kat and I stopped spending any time together just so he wouldn't feel threatened. That was when people said we couldn't get along. It was a lie, we chose not to for Duane's sake. There were good days of course but the bad ones became more frequent. He had approached me on several occasions I was learning to defend myself and defuse his anger. Then there was the last attempt."

Eve wiggled again I was in her fully. Other than her painstakingly taking my cock we hadn't moved. She had my attention and was going to keep it focused.

"I still love him. He did give me you. But I can't forgive the way he treated me, your mom, or especially you. Maybe it was because he was an only child? Maybe we spoiled him too much. Sometimes I think he was trying to impress me with how much of a man he was. Funny the harder he tried the less I thought he was. Over the years I have come to forgive him. The reasons no longer important to me." Eve reached up and stroked my face.

"I wanted you to know the truth, to find peace with it all. Daniel I am so proud of you. You have become your own person. Your own man. Don't ever try to make sense of it. You have good instincts and a wonderful heart. Follow them and you will make so many people happy. That's why you are on this earth Danny. That is all I ever wanted you to accomplish." Eve smiled.

"Well maybe it's time I can make you happy? But can I ask you a question first?"

"Sure Danny." She replied happily.

"With all the drama in the past. Why me? Why now? If your first son brought you so much pain. Why seduce your other son?" That wicked smile reappeared.

"You won't believe me but it was Charles idea!" Eve explained.

I was shocked!

"Mom?" I asked in a questioned way.

Eve clenched her pussy tight on my cock. For the first time she moved up, just a little and then pushed down trying to get my cock deeper.

"I'm serious. He knows that when you are around I get all giddy. There's been an emptiness inside, like Duane had taken part of me. Since he passed I started having these episodes the ones Sally has had since she was a teenager. The same gift you are learning about. As you became older Sally and I knew you were drawn to me, as you are now to her!" Eve winked. I nodded hesitantly.

"I had similar feelings for you. The summer after you turned eighteen I started dressing bit more provocative, not just for you but for me. The way you looked at me made me feel sexy again. Kat and I hadn't spent time together for years. When I came to look after her when she broke her arm we became lovers again. We talked about how much we both wanted you. No, more like needed you. She told me about your promise to Nikki. We have both been waiting for you fulfill that promise. It was Nikki that insisted we both spend time with you. In the other room Kat tried to get me to come in but it was Nikki who convinced me that waiting was futile. Besides. She said it's your birthday!"

"I love you Eve. Somehow I have always known this day may come for us. I'm so happy it's now!"

Eve slipped up my chest my cock barley able to stay in her. We kissed as she worked my cock back in her pussy.

"Fuck me slow today Danny. I want to feel every stroke. I want you to know how all I ever wanted as your mother is for you to be happy. When I gave you up I never dreamed this would happen. Since you have become the man you are, I have dreamed of nothing else! Fuck me slow and then if those other greedy bitches left me anything, come in me!" Eve squealed.

"I have a feeling that will not be a problem!" I moaned.

"Good because next time I want it fast and hard. Just like a slut deserves!" My mind raced, my cock swelled. I was confused by her suggestion.

"Mom, I would never..."

"I know baby. But sometimes mommy wants to be naughty. She wants to be your slut just for fun!" My lessons in making love continued.

Being called a slut for fun, for effect was different than being degraded by being forced to be one. This was one lesson I planned on learning well.

I lay there letting her control the pace. Each stroke was painfully slow and deliberate. Occasionally she would slam down to get my whole cock, or contract her pussy to enhance the feeling. Her small tits dangled at times her long nipple tease my body. Eve's pussy was heavenly in a different sense. Not as tight as Kat or Nikki but just as desirable. Every so often she would pull off and let me feast on her tits and then kiss me.

My desire to be back in her was so great I would just grab her waist and pound back in her pussy. Eve was working me. She was teasing me. She knew what she was doing. I finally got so frustrated I rolled us over and pinned her

to the bed. Her legs spread wide I buried my cock until she groaned. My balls were getting that familiar feeling.

"Slowly Daniel. Hard and slow. Feel how much my pussy wants you in me!" Eve hissed.

I was up on my hands my cock slowly dragged in and out of her. Eve grabbed her tits and squeezed them pinching her nipples. Her legs went wider. She raised her cunt hungry for more. My balls were boiling.

"Get ready to fill me son!" Eve warned me.

She moaned in pleasure her head pressed back on the bed, her cunt pushed hard against me. Her eyes were closed but mine weren't. One hand left her tit and went to her pussy.

Eve rubbed her clit.

"Deeper Danny. Fuck me deeper!" I dropped to my elbows and thrust hard into her. I felt her fingers on her clit between us. "Cum for me son. Do it. Cum for me!

I wrapped my arms under her waist. I pulled her up. She squeezed her pussy.

"Now baby now!" Eve moaned.

I let the first spurt shoot deep in her pussy. She barely moved but I could feel her pussy milking me.

"I'm cumming mom!" I announced.

I was pulling her frail body hard onto my swollen cock.

"Yes Daniel, so am I! Oh god I am so happy right now!" She pulled her hand from between us and wrapped her arms around my neck. Her pussy continued to spasm, my cock quickly emptied.

"I love you mom!" Was all I could muster at the moment, I was gasping for air. My body rolled to the side no longer able to support myself. She moved up so we could kiss.

"Happy birthday Daniel!" With all that has happened on this one day it was!

Nikki and I ate while Eve and Kat used the bathrooms. Then Nikki and I took ours in separate showers since we were short on time. It was well past ten thirty when we left the condo.

I was going to take my truck but Eve insisted we take her car. I got in back with Nikki.

Eve drove us to a popular bar. I walked in with the three women all sexily dressed, it was almost eleven. Drinks had been flowing for some time so the crowd was pretty rowdy. Cat calls and taunts quickly died when two men and another woman approached.

Charles, George and Sally were standing before me. I saw Charles look at Eve then back to me. He knew, I could see it in his eyes. Fearing the worst he instead reached for my hand. We shook, he handed me a cold beer. In was only twenty but I knew Charles wasn't going to worry about that. This was one of his watering holes and they would surely look the other way for one night.

"Happy birthday Daniel"

"Thank you sir!" Now Charles is many things, grossly overweight, boisterous, and drinks too much. But he is no fool. You do not run a successful real estate company in the most competitive environment by being stupid. He saw the conflict in me the instant we locked eyes.

"Come here Danny give your old grandfather a hug!" Charles bellowed with a big grin. It was just like him. I wrapped my hand holding the beer around his girth he pulled my closer.

"The old gal still has it doesn't she?" he whispered.

I pulled back to see if he was serious. "Sir"

"Come now Danny it was bound to happen sooner or later. I see the way she looks at you." Charles winked. "Besides I spent all my cash on the truck. I had to give you something. What better gift for both of you?"

Charles pulled me I hugged him like a father. "We all love you son, always remember that."

He did something he had never done he kissed my cheek. We separated I looked around Kat and Nikki were greeting George and Sally. Eve was stepping in our direction.

Eve kissed Charles hello.

"Busy day?" He asked her.

"That it was, but rewarding just the same." Eve grinned as she looked at me. I couldn't believe they were having this conversation with me standing there.

"Do I need to be worried?" He laughed.

"Charles! You should be ashamed of yourself! Besides he isn't half the man you are!" She patted his big belly then winked at me.

"You sure know how to stroke a man's ego." Charles replied.

"Well when you're done chasing your girlfriends and that little white ball around the golf course and come home, there is something else I can stroke for you!" She teased.

"You always have." He laughed.

"And I always will!" Eve kissed him again.

"Guys you do know I am standing here. Right?" I asked embarrassed.

"Who is standing here?" George interrupted. He grabbed me around the neck and pulled it down to his side in a choke hold. He raked his knuckles on the crown of my head, I almost spilled my beer. George laughed as he let me go. He did this when I was kid every time we met. It's been years since he last did it.

"Look at you all grown up. Happy birthday Daniel! Surprised to see us?" George hugged me then let me go.

"Very surprised. You came down just for my birthday?" I asked. I was truly taken off guard.

"Well to be honest, I came for that, and to go play golf with Charles here for the next couple of days. Hear he needs to find someone that is worse than him so he can impress some clients!" He teased Charles.

"Only if I tie one hand behind your back!" Charles quipped. Sally came over and put her hand around George's waist.

"Sally on the other hand did come just for your birthday." George offered. I kissed her cheek as she kissed mine.

"Come on boys and girls lets go find a place to sit." Kat tugged us to a large round table. We danced when the DJ was up. He played mostly contemporary stuff. Margaretville, and stuff up tempo but dated, this was Florida and the clientele at this place was a bit older. When the DJ was on break they had Karaoke. We each took turns with other patrons. Only George refused. Charles and Nikki were by far the best.

Charles and George started to leave just after midnight since they had an hour drive and an eight o'clock tee time. I walked out to the car thanking them several times for making this day so special. I put Sally's bags in Eve's trunk. Charles got in the passenger side, he wasn't wasted but not in any shape to drive. George isn't a big drinker usually, he is more of a social drinker. I know he had a couple of beers earlier but was drinking coffee lately. I was standing at the driver's door. Before he opened it he looked at me.

"Daniel I trust our agreement is still valid?"

"Yes sir." I assured him.

"You promise?" We both knew what he was asking. He knew I wouldn't break a promise.

"I promise."

"You are a wonderful young man. I couldn't be prouder if you were my own son. Happy birthday. Danny!" He gave me a quick hug and drove off.

The women were having a great time. I just played bouncer for the table as drunken patrons hovered around. One even suggested to me it was polite to share. The bartender did come send him on the way. After that the word must have gotten out to leave us alone.

I danced with each of the women, since there were no real slow songs this was just having fun. Pretty happy by now they sang duets and even a trio during Karaoke time. Sally sat with me as Eve. Kat and Nikki took the stage.

Sally took my hand she held it between both of hers and closed her eyes. It was several moments before she opened her eyes I watched her as she did this. Sally smiled at me then turned and watched as the other three inebriated women made a spectacle on stage. I looked on in dismay as they finished to a round of drunken applause then kissed each other.

"Sally, it's time we leave before they start stripping!" I suggested. She heartily agreed. I paid the tab we walked the women to the car to a chorus of boos.

I piled the three lushes in the back, Sally was setting up front with me. It was my party but like George I only had two beers hours ago. After that I drank sodas knowing that someone needed to be responsible. Fortunately it was short ride back to the condo.

Sally opened the door I escorted each of my lovers into the master bedroom and plopped them on the bed. The first two were fast asleep by the time the last one was brought in. Sally and I stripped them to their panties and tucked them in. I went back and carried Sally's luggage in. We went into the living room and sat together on the couch.

"I suppose I should thank you for making this all happen?" I asked as she leaned against me.

"No, you need to take credit for this yourself. It's true that we helped, but Nikki based her decision on you alone. That's the way it should be. I see a long and happy future for the two of you, and Kat." Sally said.

I kissed the top of her head.

Sally went on to tell me about the flurry of activity that happened when I left Nikki at the house. Nikki stewed for a while then called Sally about the football. When Sally got the call from Kat that we weren't stopping so I could shower Nikki thought she had missed out. Nikki was distraught, Sally knew she needed to help. Sally picked up Nikki and they went to her parents since Nikki's dad knew where the football was.

Sally made Nikki tell both her parents what was happening. They knew Nikki was living with Kat and I met her for lunch. Her mom Mary knew how serious our relationship was.

What they didn't know was the significance of my birthday. When Nikki told her parents about what was happening Mary took her into a separate room where they had a serious discussion. Mary came out and explained that Nikki missed me at Sally's and she needed to get to Florida soon. Mark her dad jumped into action.

The first decision was to see if she could get an earlier flight. They called Sharon to see if arrangements could be made to change the flight to an earlier time. When that was done Nikki's mom helped her pack. Sally called Eve and told her of the new schedule. Eve was happy to pick her up at the airport.

Sally and Nikki went to pick up George at home, they had dinner, then met Nikki's parents and Sharon's family at the airport for a sendoff. I listened as

she told the story of events. So many people, so much effort for Nikki's and ultimately my happiness it was overwhelming.

"You all did that for us? How can we ever repay all of you?" I was still amazed by it all.

"You can repay us by loving her, protecting her, and according to her mom give them grandchildren!" Sally grinned.

"I plan on doing all three!"

"Promise?" Sally rolled to her side and kissed me passionately on the lips.

"Promise!" I returned the kiss.

"Good now take me to bed. I have been feeling left out!" She was teasing, but George's reminder was fresh in my mind.

"Sally. George made..."

"Yes son I know, you promised as well you should have. Don't worry. I'll not make you go back on your word. Tempt you to maybe, but not make you!" She teased. Sally stood up offering her hand.

"Mom you are a naughty woman!" I took her hand and followed her into the guest room.

The fact is we were both so tired the only thing we did do was I fondled her tits and we kissed a lot.

Saturday we all slept in before making lunch and heading down to the beach for some sun. Four women, eight tits spilling from their tops, four pussies straining to escape the bottoms.

Eve took me back to the condo early. This seemed to have been planned all along since the others didn't even offer to go with us. Once in the house Eve took me to her room. I slipped her out of that little orange bikini like I had dreamed about doing for years.

She stood on the bed letting me suckle her tits. They were so small they were just more than a mouthful but they looked so sexy on her petite frame. Eve whimpered each time I nibbled on her nipples. Standing she turned me around then guided me on my back.

Removing my swim trunks she took my cock and slipped it in her mouth. Then without any further fore play she positioned herself above me, gripped my cock and slipped it in her pussy. Oh goodness was she tight today. She brought my hands back to her small tits her nipples long and hard.

"Pinch my nipples!" Eve requested. I tugged on them her pace went much faster. "Again harder!"

I granted her wish as her hand went to her pussy. I looked down her clit was the biggest I had ever seen.

"Pinch them baby. Make them beg to let me cum!" I grabbed her tits as roughly as I dared then let the skin slip through my hand until I was pulling her nipples straight out. Her fingers were just a blur on her clit she rose up and slammed down on my cock.

"Oh your mommy is such a bad girl!" Eve moaned as she wiggled her ass. She pinched her clit and fell on me her whole body in convulsions. "Such a bad girl! Oh God Danny I am such a bad bad girl... give me more cock make me beg...Oh such a nasty girl!" Eve said over and over.

The sound of her juices and our bodies slapping were drowned out only by her continued degrading of herself. Eve rode me through a massive climax then went limp with my hard cock still deep in her pussy. Eve lifted her head, her smile told me she wasn't through yet.

"Fuck me from behind baby. Ram that cock up to my throat!" Eve demanded.

Eve rolled off and was on all fours. I lined up my cock, her snatch dripping and swollen. I slipped in her pussy she slammed back on me hard. Eve was patient last night, today she was needy.

Eve moaned her pleasure the longer we fucked. We had this rhythm going where she would just stretch out and let me enjoy making her happy. This went on for an extended time before Eve just couldn't wait any longer.

"Fuck me hard and make me..." Eve slammed back her cunt quivering around my cock.

"You want it rough do you?" I tried to be aggressive. Just the words sent shivers up my back. She responded like I hoped.

"Baby your cock feels so big in my pussy! You're going to make me cum again!" She pushed back harder.

"No mom you don't get to cum until I tell you too!" I replied.

I smacked her ass lightly Eve groaned as she ground her ass back again. She had just cum earlier I could feel her getting close again. I reached around and gripped her nubile tit.

"Mommy needs to cum baby!" Her voice was faint and desperate.

"Not yet! Not yet!" I protested.

My balls were boiling but I wasn't ready give in. I could tell she was ready to blast off. Thinking of only her happiness I reached around and found her clit. "Now mom! Cum for me. Coat my cock so you can clean it off!"

I flicked her clit. The little nub just waiting to send her to another orgasm. Eve rocked her ass hard against me her pussy milking my cock. Her body quivered again as her orgasm spread throughout her body she pulled off my cock and clamped her legs shut.

"Cum on me Danny!" She moved and took my cock in her mouth and sucked me deep. Licking her cum Eve worked my cock. I was ready to shoot.

"Mom I'm cumming!" I warned her.

Eve pulled my cock and aimed it at her mouth. The first shot hit her upper lip and dripped on her tongue. She lowered her aim the next hit her neck. Lower still she coated her chest, pools of cum started to run down between her tits.

She pushed me back and laid down on top of me smearing my cum between us. Eve kissed me but must have swallowed the first spurt. We laid that way for a few minutes.

"Danny that was incredible. We better get cleaned up before they get back. I carried her to the shower where we washed each other.

"Daniel you don't know how many times I fucked my pussy with a rubber cock dreaming it was you." Eve explained.

"You don't know how many times I wanted to suck on those nipples!" I responded.

"Baby you never had that chance with me when you were born. But these are all yours whenever we're alone." She kissed me and offered up a freshly washed tit to suck.

When I latched on, her hand caressed the back of my neck.

"You are such a good son."

Eventually Kat, Sally and Nikki came back to the condo. That night we all went to the restaurant that I had carryout the night before and ate cold. The five of us sat eating, I looked on as the four of them engaged in friendly talk throughout dinner.

I guess this was one of the first times I was able to reflect at what was really going on in my life. I studied each woman closely and reflected upon what it was that made them happy. It wasn't just sex that drew them to me, although that certainly was part of it, it was deeper.

They each had something missing in their life and in some small way I was able to fill that void. In short I made them happy. That night Nikki and I spent the night together alone for the first time as a couple. In doing so it made me happy.

Sunday Nikki and I drove to a theme park and spent the day. We even stayed for the light show that evening. When we arrived back at the condo Charles and George were there as well. Monday was a day to relax, it would be a long drive back Tuesday. Charles and I delivered George and Sally to the airport. On the drive back to the condo we had a great conversation.

Monday night Nikki, Kat and I all slept in one bed together for the night. Nikki wanted to watch me fuck Kat. Mom wasn't all that excited feeling we should wait until we got home. I laid down and pulled her on top of me. Nikki guided my cock in Kat's pussy, she whimpered in protest. When Nikki licked her asshole all objections were forgotten. I didn't take long for her to start getting excited. Nikki kneaded my balls, pulling my cock out and spanking mom's asshole with it.

"Nikki! Put him back in! Please baby I need to cum!" Mom begged as Nikki was being a tease. She put me back in mom's pussy then licked her asshole again. I could feel Kat starting to build up to her climax. Nikki moved up beside Kat's ear.

"Cum for him my love. Show him how much you love his cock in that tight pussy!" Then I felt it. Nikki was pushing a finger in mom's ass. "That's it my love, we know you crave it. Cum for us. Cum my love!"

Kat didn't know if she wanted my cock or Nikki's finger in her ass more. She took as much of both as she could. Kat's orgasm took hold just as I lost all control and started cumming myself feeling Nikki's finger alongside of my cock.

I thought we were done but Nikki pulled Kat into sixty nine. She licked my cum from mom's pussy and mom licked Nikki's. They both came before we finally went to sleep, one on each side of me.

Tuesday we were up early. I had a class I need to make if possible. We loaded the truck, Kat, Nikki and I headed home. It was a wonderful late summer drive, long but interesting as well. Kat and Nikki talked constantly and when they weren't talking they were sleeping. This was a new chapter for us all. Much of the talk was about the logistics of how we should proceed. I let them figure it out enjoying the give and take as they tried to think of every scenario.

When we arrived at the house I had a quick bite before heading to class. I called Sally to tell her we were back. She asked if I could come for the night.

I figured since all my stuff was there I could do that. I told Kat and Nikki, they seemed happy I would do it.

I headed off and after school went and had dinner with George and Sally. He teased me for helping her with the dishes, she kissed me behind his back. I expected a visit that night but she didn't come.

Wednesday morning I was up early packing some stuff to go home with. There was too much for one load so I decided to come back after dinner to get the rest of my stuff. At breakfast George had already left. Sally was especially quiet. We usually talked but this morning she seemed to have something on her mind. I took my dishes to the sink as she was cleaning the counter.

"You ok?" I asked.

"Sure. I was just thinking how much I'm going to miss you being around." I took her hand and kissed her cheek.

"I'm not leaving town. I'll still see you!" I reminded her. Sally smiled. I knew what she meant. Having me in the house gave her more purpose in life. "I still have some stuff. I'll stop by tonight and get it. Ok?"

"Come for dinner. I'll have your favorite... apple pie for desert." Sally offered.

"So which pie am I going to get? My favorite pie? Or the apple?" I teased. Sally looked at me totally confused.

"What are you talking about?" Sally questioned, still not picking up on my crude joke.

"Tell you what, you think about it. I'll call Kat and tell her I'll be eating here." I couldn't resist one more zinger. I kissed her. I slowly opened her robe and placed my hand over her panties. I rubbed her furry pussy gently, Sally responded by pushing back harder.

I winked then repositioned her robe. I kissed her lips then left to go to work and school. I went to Kat's and unloaded my truck then headed to work. When I arrived at the site George called me in the office.

"Dan. Sally tells me you're packing up and going home tonight?"

"Yes sir, the time has come for me to go home." I explained. "I have imposed on your hospitality long enough."

"I think Sally is going to miss having you around. I would like you to consider coming over for dinner occasionally. Maybe spend the night." He suggested.

I thought it odd, but if he wanted me to I knew Sally would appreciate it. Besides Kat and Nikki would have a night by themselves.

"I think I can do that. It would be my pleasure." I replied.

"Great! Sally said you would be coming tonight and she's making a pie for desert. I think that woman would do anything to please you!" He grinned just a bit.

"Well she does make a great apple pie." I reminded him.

On the way to school I called Kat and told her I wouldn't be home for dinner. I went to classes and headed back to Sally's. I walked into the kitchen there was a note on the counter. The smell of an apple pie baking filled the room. I read the note.

'Dan stepped out for a moment. Your favorite pie will be ready when you are done cleaning up.'

I turned the light on in the oven. The filling was just starting to bubble, the crust not yet brown. I went to my room and hopped in the shower. Feeling refreshed I opened the shower door and grabbed the towel, on the bathroom floor was a pair of lace panties. I picked them up, the crotch was damp. I dried myself knowing what was waiting for me in the bedroom. I left the panties where I found them. With the towel wrapped around my waist I walked into the room.

"You are a naughty boy teasing me like that." Sally scolded me.

I leaned against the frame to the bathroom door. Sally was lying back on my bed her pussy exposed, two fingers churning inside.

"The pie in the oven looks delicious!" I teased.

Sally slipped the fingers from her pussy, pulled a tit from her nighty and smeared her excitement on it.

"I thought you might want desert first." She offered. Sally lifted her tit and licked it off. Sally loved doing it. She knew it drove me crazy.

"What will George think if his dinner is late?" I teased.

"George isn't coming home for dinner. I thought you knew that?" She replied.

I walked to her and settled on my knees. I pulled her legs over the side of the mattress and buried my tongue deep in her pussy.

"Yes baby eat that pussy. Eat that fur pie!" She moaned.

I looked up at her. She smiled that naughty smile letting me know the joke was now on me. I worked her pussy as she encouraged me on. A mini orgasm got her going.

"Feed me son let me taste how fucking wet I am!" Sally moaned.

I stopped licking her and let her clean my face before we kissed. Sally grabbed my cock and stroked it. Afraid of what might happen next I broke away and went back to her pussy. I fed her twice more before I concentrated on her clit. It was hard and starting to extend from under the hood.

"Mom pull your lips apart let me at that big clit of yours!" I pleaded.

Sally spread her legs wider. She reached for her slippery pussy lips and pulled them open. Her clit looked vulnerable all sticking out proud. I slipped two fingers in her pussy. Sally moaned. I curled the fingers towards my palm, she moaned again, her clit raised further up. Sally watched as I extended my tongue and flicked her clit.

"You like teasing mommy's pussy don't you son?" I flicked her clit a couple of times she started to move her hips.

"I like watching mother cum for me. Will you do that mother? Will you cum for me?" I said as sexy as I could.

I flicked her clit a few times her hands let her pussy lips go she gripped my head.

"Fuck my pussy with your tongue. Feel me cum on it Danny!"

He breathing was erratic, her words desperate. Sally mashed my mouth over her pussy my tongue buried deep. Sally arched her back as she rocked her pelvis. When the first wave hit I went for her clit and she just went wild!

Sally bucked and bucked, her legs clamped my ears, and then it happened. A steady stream of womanly cum oozed from her cunt. I lapped it up, when Sally pulled me to her mouth I knew she wanted me to feed her again. I filled her mouth once and went back for all I could find. I found her mouth a second time we kissed until there was no more.

"I need you in my mouth. Hurry son!" Sally pleaded.

We changed positions and soon she was taking all the cock she could. I knew I wouldn't be able to last long but Sally seemed eager so after just five minutes or so I filled her mouth and stomach with my first cum for the day. We lay on the bed together my limp cock in her hand a tit in mine.

"Why no George?" I asked. He didn't say a thing to me earlier in the day.

"I asked him not to!" Sally replied.

Sally looked at me I knew there was something she wasn't telling me.

"And he agreed? Wasn't that a bit obvious?" I asked.

"Daniel, George is a very complex man. A man's man most of the time. But a ladies man too. There were times I stood by him. You understand?" She looked at me with a questioned reaction.

"I think I've got it!"

"I think George is trying to make that up to me in some small way. After Florida he knew what went on down there and what didn't. I think he was almost disappointed you and I..."

"He wants us to be together?" I blurted out. That was just something I couldn't believe.

"Let's just say he would rather not know the details. I promised him I'll not tell anyone, including Eve and Kat. He already trusts you." Sally looked at me to see if I understood what she was saying.

"Are you sure he meant that too?" I wanted to be clear.

"He does but he doesn't. Daniel I want to go slow, this will be tough on him. If George thinks we jumped at the first chance it would be devastating to him. So can you be patient for a bit longer?" Sally asked caressing my cheek.

"You know I will." I replied kissing the palm of her hand. Sally's face broke out in a happy smile.

"Besides you just won the Super Bowl, maybe you should take some time and enjoy the victory." She teased me now.

"I guess I do owe that much to Nikki and Kat, don't I?" I answered. Sally hugged me and then we kissed.

"So you will come stay a night each week even if you don't get desert every time?" Sally asked seriously.

"Will I still get to have apple pie?" I teased her.

"You can have all the apple pie you can eat!" Sally said happily. We kissed again and then took a shower together.

Dinner was great, but the smell of the apple pie on the counter reminded me to hold back. I cleared the table. It was odd not having George tease me. Sally was slicing the pie for desert. I scooped the ice cream and we went into the den to eat it. I finished my desert. I stood up, took her plate, and went to the kitchen where I rinsed them off and put them in the dishwasher.

I packed up the rest of my stuff and loaded the truck. I thought about what Sally said, I wondered how long we needed to wait. I was going to ask Sally but I knew the answer would be to follow my instincts.

"Mom, I'm off." I said then kissed her cheek.

Sally took my hand and held it between hers. Slowly a smile came to her face as she looked deep in my eyes. I had this wonderful feeling of happiness surge through me.

"You are a good man Daniel." Sally leaned back against the counter. "I promise one day it will happen."

"Even if it doesn't just know you would is enough for me." I replied.

Sally was touched by that. She giggled a bit and blushed. "Are you sure you won't stay for some more pie?"

"Thanks mom, but I really must be going!"

"I know. Thank you for coming for dinner. I enjoyed it." Sally then gave me a kiss on the cheek before I left.

Chapter 5

I arrived back at Kat's and my home once again. Kat and Nikki were out. Mom left me note telling me they would be back soon. I carried my stuff back up to my room and started putting it away. I was setting at my desk studying for school. I heard someone coming up the stairs. Nikki rounded the corner and jumped into my lap.

"I've missed you!" She put her arms around my neck and kissed me.

"I've missed you too!" I replied.

"No I mean I really, really miss you!" She looked to my lap and grabbed my cock.

"Oh, I see. Well we'll need to do something about that won't we?" I kissed her and carried her to the bed.

"So did the big boy keep his mother happy while he was away?" Nikki asked as she was undressing me.

"You'll have to ask her. A gentleman never kisses and tells!" I smiled.

"I'll have to remember that." Nikki replied with a frown. She was pulling at my clothes and I was removing hers. I had her stripped down to her panties.

"Nikki. I want to tell you how much I love you." I said emotionally. "I couldn't be happier right now!"

"Danny, thank you for not giving up on me. This last week has been so crazy. But in the end I found what I was looking for. The man I want to spend my life with. Is that too much too fast?" Nikki teased.

I pulled her into a kiss. I gripped her ass pulling her panties tight against my hard cock.

"I think I am a very lucky guy right now! I have you now and am never going to let you go!" I reassured her.

I slipped her panties off. Nikki spread her legs her pussy was dripping. I lined my cock to her opening and eased myself in. Nikki gasped as I started filling her tight pussy. With her arms over my shoulders she encouraged me to pick up the pace. Soon the sounds of our lovemaking filled the room. Nikki's breathing became measured her quiet moans started getting louder.

"Oh Danny. You feel so good in me!"

Encouraged I bucked even faster. Nikki responded by holding her breath and angling her hips. I looked down for just a second I could see how our juices coated my cock.

"MMMMMMMMMM...I..." She was starting to cum. "Dnnnnnyyy fffffuuuu...!"

She bucked back. My cock buried deeper than ever. A moan let me know her new limit. Her body convulsed as I arched my back so I could kiss her. Nikki let out one last whimper and pulled me tight.

"How do you do that? I'll never want you to stop doing that to me." She whispered.

Nikki pushed me back and we looked each other in the eye. "I love you Danny. My pussy loves you. One day I hope my ass loves you but right now you need to cum for me! I want you to cum on my tits!"

She pushed me off then took my cock in her mouth. Even coated with her excitement there was no hesitation. With her hand, mouth and verbal pleas it wasn't long before I was shooting strings of cum on her tits. Nikki spread the cum on her chest leaving it nice and shiny.

"Too bad Sally isn't here. I would make her feed me this time!" Nikki laughed.

"I have a feeling you are going to make that happen one day?" I teased.

"You would like that wouldn't you?" She teased back.

"A gentleman never kisses and tells!" I joked. She took my hand and pulled me into the shower. That night we slept together alone in my bed for the first time.

Kat was gone before we got up the next morning. Our first classes were later in the day. I don't work on Thursday since I have classes throughout the day. When I came home Kat was there but not Nikki.

"Hi mom!" I met her in the kitchen and gave her a big kiss. "Where's Nik?" I hadn't seen her since the morning.

"She went home to see her parents. She is staying the night." Kat gave me that knowing smile.

"That's great I should go over sometime and thank them for all their help." I suggested.

"I think she would like that." Kat replied. "I'll have dinner ready in twenty. Why don't you go get cleaned up?"

I went upstairs showered and changed. I came back down mom had dinner ready. I cleaned up and loaded the dishwasher. I still expected to hear George tease me about doing it even though I was no longer in his house. Kat and I sat on the couch.

"I missed you last night." She said.

"I know. It just didn't seem right to come see you after she came up." I stroked her hair as she lay against me. "Guess we will need to work out some sort of system."

"Whatever we do it needs to be focused on Nikki. She has been through so much lately I think leaving her alone would be unfair." Kat looked over her shoulder at me.

"I agree. But I don't think trading her back and forth is such a good idea. I think she should stay with you and visit when she feels like it." I suggested. Kat turned to face me.

"No Daniel she needs to stay with you. That's what she wants. I can tell. You turned her world upside down. We will talk with her you will see I am right." I kissed mom, she leaned back against me. "I am thinking maybe the two of you should get a place of your own for a while even."

"No!" I protested. "That isn't an option. I just moved back in. We will need to come up with a better plan than that!" I pinched her nipple letting her know I was serious.

"Ok, ok, we'll figure it out, but Danny she needs to be with you. I have a feeling she has plans to take this to the next level. Are you prepared for that?" Mom asked.

"You're right, and yes I am. Not immediately of course but in the next couple of years. Is that ok with you?" Kat tuned to face me. A glow radiated from her face.

"Oh Danny nothing would make me happier!"

Friday after work the three of us went to dinner and then a bar to hear a local band play. I was the designated drive since I had to work the next day. Saturday was a great fall day the weather was in the seventies. I came home from work mom and Nikki had gone shopping. After my shower I fired up the grill. I put some steak and shrimp on the grill, salad, fresh veggies rounded out the menu. We ate on the patio. Nikki cleared the table, mom loaded the dish washer. I cleaned up the grill and table.

When we were done we each grabbed a cold beer and sat on the patio relaxing.

"Nikki, Dan and I talked a bit last night but we wanted to wait until you were here before we went any further." Kat started. "The question is who sleeps with whom and when? What are your thoughts?" Nikki looked at me when mom was finished.

"Dan what do you think?" Nikki asked. I wasn't so much surprised she asked my opinion as honored. I had in fact been thinking this over for some time. First I needed to know one thing.

"Kat suggested maybe you and I get a place for now." I said.

Nikki looked at mom to see if that was true.

"Daniel, no! You can't let her do that. You just came back! I'll leave first!" Nikki protested. She was getting agitated.

"Whoa! No one is leaving, it was just a thought. I agree with you." I replied. I leaned over and kissed her. "We are intelligent adults we can work this out. We just need to come up with a starting point. Then we can learn from our experiences."

"Dan suggested you stay with me. I suggested you stay with him. We agreed that he and I shouldn't be the ones together. Three of us in one bed isn't practical for daily living. What do you think Nikki? You decide!" Kat suggested. Nikki looked at us both.

"I can't do that! It's just not fair!" I was going to say something but Kat looked me off and spoke first.

"Then as the owner of this house I'll decide. For now you will stay with Danny. That will be the starting point." Kat said with authority. "There is more room upstairs. We could even make a second room if we need to. Maybe build some closets for your clothes. Agreed?"

Nikki looked at me I could see she was happy if for no other reason she didn't have to decide.

"I think that is an excellent idea." I quickly agreed. "With some small changes we could make the storage area into a second room for the desk and a couch, then add some closets. The bathroom is big enough for two. This would be pretty easy actually." I explained. I looked to Nikki.

"The decision is yours?" Kat looked over to Nikki.

"I could come down and visit when I want?" Nikki looked at Kat.

"Of course love! My door is always open for either one of you. Even both of you!" Kat stood so she could hug Nikki. They embraced then taking her hand Kat led Nikki in the back door. Looking at me she asked. "Are you coming?"

"You two get started. I'll stay here and finish my beer. Slowly!" Kat winked and closed the door.

Things went quite smooth after that. Small adjustments were needed but there was a genuine effort to make it all work out.

After a couple of months we gutted the upstairs except for the bathroom which was located at one end over the laundry room.

The area was sixteen feet wide and the length of the house. With George's help we walled off a bedroom at the other end. Added two huge closets. I bought a new king size bed and two matching dressers.

We had a large open area in the center between the bathroom and the bedroom. We pushed my old queen size bed against the wall. Kat made a cover for it and some large pillows. This was to be our couch. The other wall we added a big screen TV and my stereo. There was room for my desk, a small table with chairs, and an overstuffed reclining chair. We started just before Thanksgiving and had it done before I went back to school after Christmas break. Nikki helped with the painting, she and Kat did the decorating.

Life was getting back to normal, work, school, and social schedules continued. I had been going with Nikki a few times to her parents' house. For Thanksgiving they invited both Kat and I to attend. Much of her family was there including Becky and Tina. We had a great time since there was no drama, thank goodness! There were many hushed whispers but Nikki handled the situation with grace. Nikki and Kat had never been big on public displays of affection, but that day I noticed Nikki would hold her hand and exchange quick kisses.

Nikki's dad Mark and I got along great. He was much more open minded than I would have thought. Mark never asked anything personal but he did mention on several occasions that he had never seen Nikki so happy. Nikki's mom Mary made a point to share the same sentiments with me and Kat.

Christmas was coming up George and Sally were hosting the family this year. Charles and Eve came to town. With my recent expenditures my finances were lower than expected so presents were scaled back from my usual levels. I did spend quite a bit on Nikki and Kat however. After Christmas Nikki's parents were setting up for their biggest New Year's Eve party ever. The new millennium, year 2000.

New Year's Eve 2000 we went To Mark and Mary's for their annual party. Becky didn't attend this year. Most people attending knew about the three of us so it wasn't an issue. We had agreed some time ago that if we were all in public together that Nikki and I would appear as a couple. It was she that I kissed as the ball dropped.

School started my classes were getting more intense. Nikki was still working on her degree. Kat was doing great at work and was taking care of us at home.

The rest of the year 2000 was for the most part uneventful. Kat, Nikki and I were learning about living together. I was spending a night at George a Sally's on a regular basis but there is nothing new to report there.

Kat loved working with Sharon her boss. Over the year we had visited their house several times each month. Nikki rarely came with Kat and me to these visits, I thought I knew why but kept that to myself. There was always this sexual tension in the air at Sharon's but again nothing of consequence took place. Mom and I never forgot what Sharon and Val did when we were apart.

Nikki and I were both in college full time and I was working. I really don't remember much about that year, maybe I was too focused on the women at home.

I did turn twenty one on my last birthday. Oddly enough the only celebration this year was with Nikki and Kat.

Nikki was offered an internship entering her final year of college. It didn't pay much but it's with a major company with much to offer in the way of support and advancement opportunities.

New Year's Eve 2001 was again spent at Nikki's parents Mark and Mary's house. It was not as big as last year but it was still a blast.

If the year 2000 was one of relative calm, 2001 would be anything but. Nikki and I lived upstairs in the small house I grew up in. Kat slept on the first floor. Once or twice a week Nikki would stay the night with Kat, usually the night I went to George's.

Most of the time if Kat and I made love one of us would then leave and sleep with Nikki. Only on the nights Nikki stayed at her parents, Kat would spend the night with me. Rarely did the three of us spend the nights together.

I had been working with George for over six years now. I liked construction but felt my calling was in sales. My grandfather Charles and I talked about my future. He had a friend Arthur that offered to bring me on as an agent in his real estate firm during the summer if I could get my license.

I had taken some courses preparing for it but not an actual class to get the license. Art set me up with a specific course. With George's blessing I cut back on work and focused on my grades. After some studying I took my exam and passed it just as I finished my second year of college.

At the same time classes ended for me Nikki was finishing up school for her degree. After four years Nikki graduated with full honors. On top of that Nikki had also been offered a full time job at the company she was an intern with.

Mary and Kat were busy planning Nikki's graduation party. Instead of having it at the house they reserved a private room at a nice restaurant and held it there. Friday night they decorated the room for the festivities. After the party Kat invited Mark and Mary back to the house. George and Sally came as did Sharon, Kat's boss, her husband Doug and his mom Val. It was a great night to be out, I lit a fire in the pit. We all sat around drinking beer and wine.

George and Sally left first. Mark and Mary some time later. I went into the house to clear some glasses and use the restroom. When I came back out Doug and Val were saying goodbye. I must have missed something. Sharon was standing with Kat as if she was staying.

I walked Doug and Val to their car and waited until they drove off. When I returned to the patio the gals were gone. I tended to the fire making sure it was out and picked up the remaining bottles and glasses. I went into the kitchen loaded the dishwasher and turned out the lights. The bedroom and bathroom doors were closed, our universal sign of do not disturb.

I climbed the steps disappointed a bit, but smiled just the same knowing she had earned this night. I took a shower as I do each night even though I took one before the party. School was over. I needed to work the next day so I decided to just hit the hay.

I heard the steps squeak, looking at the clock it was almost two. She slipped in front of me and wiggled back. This was mom's favorite thing to do but this wasn't mom. It was Nikki.

"Did you miss me?" She whispered.

"Only since I last saw you!" I reached around pulling her tight. "The party over?"

"Just that one. I have one more present I want!" Nikki turned to face me. I could smell pussy on her face. She grabbed my hardening cock then kissed me so I could taste it. "Sorry about earlier I just couldn't wait. When she said ..."

"It's ok. I'm glad she stayed." I kissed her again. "Was it was a surprise for you too?"

"Totally! You went in the house, next thing Doug and Val are leaving." Nikki kissed me one more time. "Danny thank you for not being mad. I just had to! I couldn't wait any longer!" She was bubbling over with excitement. "I want my present now!"

"What present is that?" I teased.

Nik took my hand and placed it on her ass. I hesitated then started to feel along her crack. Half way down there was an obvious obstruction. Nikki had a butt plug in her ass. I gripped the small knob and tweaked it in her ass. Nikki squealed in delight.

"Mom and Sharon were playing with the strap on. It was all I could do not to make them use it on me. I want you to be the first." Nikki hissed. "Mom prepped me and got me started and then put this in so I could take your cock." Nikki stroked my ridged shaft, it was now very hard.

"Are you sure?" I asked. "Tonight?"

Nikki shifted in the bed threw the covers off and handed me the bottle of lube. She turned letting me spoon her pushing the butt plug against me.

"Do me Danny. Do the nasty!" Nikki demanded.

Who was I to argue? I lubed my cock liberally and then coated around the plug. I took the plug by the base and worked it in and out of her asshole a few times. When I pulled it out I lined my cock up and placed it at slowly closing hole. The plug wasn't very big but it was a start. When I felt firm resistance I stopped.

"Danny it's so big!" Nikki whimpered. I heard her take a deep breath and let it out. Kat had given her pointers. Nikki pushed back and just when I thought it would hurt her, my cock head slipped in. "Oh yes! We did it!"

I waited for her to adjust then started to ease myself deeper. We went very slow stopping often so she could adjust.

"I hope that feels as good for you as it does for me?" She purred. Nikki grabbed my hand and placed it on her tit. I squeezed it firmly. "Yes baby. Do the nasty!"

She started pushing back and soon I was all the way in. I stopped and held it there before pulling it back out.

"Oh shit does that feel different? Put it back and do that again!"

I wasn't even half way out but did as she asked. As I withdrew the second time she started to shudder. Nikki had a mini orgasm. I pulled almost all of the way out and started back in.

"Do me Danny do me faster!"

I plunged back in then held her tight and rolled her on top of me. My cock was buried to my balls with her weight on top. Nikki repositioned her legs

and started fucking her ass with a vengeance. Every once in a while she would slam her ass down and grab my balls.

"Will you cum in me Danny? Will you fill my nasty ass up with your cum?"

Nikki was eager but her strength wasn't up to her desire.

"You want me to own your ass baby? You want me to make you beg to cum?" I taunted her.

"Yes you motherfucker. Make me beg! Make my ass yours!"

I rolled her off and positioned her on all fours I got behind her and slipped my cock back in her tight ass. I spanked her lightly which only made her hotter. I grabbed her tits. Once I even flicked her clit. Then I grabbed her hair firmly, bent her head back and slammed her ass hard.

"Cum on my cock bitch! Show me how bad you want it!" I growled.

It was like a switch went on as Nikki started to cum right then. She would rotate her hips until just the tip of my cock was in then slammed her ass back until my balls slapped her pussy. She would grind back and then like lightening rotate her hips again. She must have done this four times all the while cursing and squealing how she loved me in her ass. I let go of her hair her head dropped down.

I knew if we didn't finish soon she would be sore for a week. This was her first time and I wasn't going to string this out like I did with mom. She was just winding down from her orgasm when I pulled out. Her hole gaped open!

"No! Don't stop you didn't cum!" I let her ass close about half way then plunged my cock back inside. "Yes you fucker that's what I want. Fuck that nasty ass. Cum in it!"

"You want me to cum in your ass?" I grabbed her hair again. She groaned in delight.

"Yes you big dick fucker. Fill my ass remind me how much I love you!" Nikki was desperate now.

"Beg ass bitch. Beg me or I might just pull out now!" I pulled her hair just a little firmer, just for effect. I was ready regardless if she didn't. Any second I would be warming her inside.

"Don't you dare pull out fucker! Do it! Cum in me. Please baby I want to feel it inside me!" I heard please and started pumping a big load of cum deep in her ass. She had another mini orgasm as my balls unloaded deep in her ass. I pulled her up to me and continued to pump until my balls were drained.

"I love you Nikki! You are the sexiest woman alive!" We fell to the bed my cock slipped out and laid on my stomach. She moved to me and started kissing me.

"Danny I love you. That was almost as good as when you fuck my pussy!" Nikki panted. I kissed her.

"Was I too rough?" I asked. She looked at me with love in her eyes.

"No baby. Was I too vulgar?" She countered. I kissed her again.

"Not as long as we know we both want it. Ok?" I explained. She smothered me with kisses.

"I do love you Daniel Masters. You always make me happy." She looked back at her ass. "Maybe a bit sore tomorrow. But very happy!"

We went to the bathroom and cleaned up the settled back in bed for the night.

The next morning the house was quiet as I left for work. It was a hot spring day the cement truck was running late it was well past six when he pulled away and we finished for the day. I headed home hot, tired, and sore. All of that time in school and not working as much had caught up with me today. I came in the back door I took off my shoes and went to the kitchen.

I grabbed a water and saw a note on the counter. 'Thanks for last night. I hope we do that again soon! Remember what's good for the goose...' Love Nik.

I smiled remembering the rest of the saying. 'is good for the gander'. I headed up stairs to grab a shower, stopping to remove my dirty clothes at the laundry room. I bound upstairs with all the energy I had left and started the water. I had just started shampooing my hair when she opened the door.

"May I come in?" She closed the door not waiting for my answer. "The girls went shopping. We're to call them when we're done."

"I'm not so sure this is a good idea?" I replied. I moved to keep our distance as she moved under the water.

"What would Doug say?" I asked.

"Daniel. Doug is gay!" Sharon held out her hand. "But then you knew that didn't you?"

"I suspected, I figured maybe bi-sexual." I move just a bit closer. "He hides it well."

"When he wants to." Sharon moved closer to me. This time I stood my ground. "We haven't been truly intimate for years!"

Her revelation was a surprise but not a shock. I had always felt their relationship was unique.

"And me. What brings you here?" I asked. She seemed surprised at my question.

"They weren't kidding were they? You really are different!" Sharon replied.

I didn't know whether that was a good thing or bad. I looked her body over. I had seen most of it behind her robe but this time it was all out in the open. She noticed me making my assessment and stood waiting for my reaction.

"Not what it once was. Three kids and a full time job has taken its toll." Sharon tried to apologize.

Sharon actually was quite attractive. Her face and hair were great, her large C cup tits supported thick pierced nipples. Her stomach was normal for a woman that bore three kids but firm. Her hips, a bit wide framed a nicely shaven pussy. She was in anyone's book a MILF.

"Daniel this is a gift, but you don't seem to want to take it? I find that odd." Sharon stated. As she started to turn she wiggled her ass. "Am I that unattractive?"

"I find you very attractive. The first time I saw you I knew you were special." I said honestly.

I was studying her, this was my turf. I was no longer distracted by mom and Nikki. No, here I could be relaxed and focus. She was playing a game, she wanted something and I knew what it was. I continued to be patient for just awhile longer.

"And yet you stand there just like they said you would. Waiting for me to make the first move." Sharon said. She gave me a disappointed smile "They said my happiness would always be your first priority!"

"They were right. It's what I do. I try and make people happy. That's what makes me happy." I explained. Sharon seemed unconvinced. "Nikki and my mother mean everything to me. Everything! I won't do anything to jeopardize that. Not with you or any other person. Are we clear?"

"Daniel I would never do anything to come between the three of you!" Sharon looked me square in the eye. "Nikki and Kat sent me."

I knew we understood each other. She started to open the door. I grabbed her arm and swung her around. I kissed her pushing her against the wall. Her arms went around my neck. I cupped her ass picking her up. Sharon spread her legs I thrust my cock deep in her pussy.

"Just so we're clear. I find you very attractive, and smart and sexy. I have known many women like you. Always wanting the answers on a test but never wanting to be seen with the same guy in public. You live in your big house with fancy stuff, have a lover and a husband that can't satisfy you. What you really want is a big hard cock to fuck you? No strings, just pure passionate sex. Am I right?" I asked as she clung to me.

Sharon grunted as I fucked her hard. I pushed her against the wall and forced my tongue in her mouth.

"Yes. Oh god yes!" Sharon squealed. She kissed me back. I was fucking her against the shower wall.

"You see I have a woman that I adore and adores me. She is passionate but delicate. I have another that is the love of my life. She is passionate but doesn't know what she wants yet." I grunted as her pussy clenched my around my cock. "But you. You know what you want. You will take what you want if needed. I am right aren't I?"

"Yes Daniel! Yes!" Sharon groaned as I slammed her pussy hard again.

"So my little milf this is how it's going to be. Today you can only use your pussy to make me cum. No hands, no ass, and no mouth. I'm going to make your pussy mine today." I thrusted hard, her back slapped against the wall. "I am going to use you and let you use me. Then I'll give you a little task to perform and if you complete it I'll decide if you can have me in the future! Do you understand milf?"

"Yes Danny!" Sharon whimpered.

I fucked her over and over, as her pussy clamped down on my cock I could feel her first climax wash over her. Sharon pulled me into a kiss her hips bouncing in my hands. I kicked the door open to the shower and carried her to the bedroom. I didn't even turn the water off. I placed her on the bed and started fucking her all over again. I wanted to play with her tits so I rolled us over. Sharon was on top still dripping from the shower. I reached up with both hands, took a handful of tit and squeezed firmly.

"You have beautiful tits Sharon. I'm jealous of Sam!" I teased.

"Oh Danny he loved them. He sucked me dry every day. He will be a big tit man I bet." She hissed.

"Cum for me Sharon. Open your pussy, show me how juicy you are. Let me see how much I stretched you open." Sharon was taken off guard at first but then gave me a naughty grin.

Sharon took her pussy lips and spread them. She pulled off and we both looked at her swollen cunt gaping open. Her pussy pulsated I could see her eyes roll back in her head she plunged my cock back in and fucked it twice real hard then fell forward.

"I am cumming you bastard!" Sharon cried out. Her hips and pelvis forced her pussy over my cock I could feel her cum soaking my balls. "Oh damn you made me cum again. You fucking bastard." Sharon continued to frantically pump my cock in her pussy.

"Is it mine yet?" I asked. I caressed her back her tits mashed to my chest. Her breathing just starting to get back to normal.

"Yes you fucker. It's yours!" Sharon mumbled. She sounded like she wanted to sleep. I smacked her ass hard.

"Good now get on your knees milf!" She jumped when I smacked her then hesitated before I rolled her off. With her ass in the air I positioned my cock and slowly slipped in her. Sharon pushed back until I was balls deep.

"When I say cum you need to cum. Play with your clit if you need to but you will cum do you hear me?" I barked at her.

"Yes Danny!" Sharon panted.

I started fucking Sharon again. Her pussy was so red and swollen, it was gaping open. I pulled from her and spanked her ass with my cock she begged me to put it back in. I slammed her pussy several times then coated her asshole with her pussy juice.

"Yes fucker do my ass! Oh god you're going to make me cum again!" I spanked her asshole with my cock I could see it tighten and loosen hoping I would take it. But my focus was on her pussy and her pussy only.

"No my little milf you haven't earned that. Now get ready to cum!" I plunged back in her pussy with vigor Sharon moaned. I fucked her several times.

"Cum baby!" I demanded. She whimpered in frustration. I leaned over and whispered in her ear. "It's ok you can cum now." Sharon was rubbing her clit. She was getting desperate. "It's ok Sharon you can cum now!"

She slammed back against me. I pummeled her pussy filling it with hot molten lava.

"Fuck my pussy. Fuck your pussy. Daniel fuuccckkk yyooouuurrr pppuuussyyyy!" Sharon shrieked as she collapsed on the bed. Completely spent from the day and now this I laid down beside her. I turned Sharon to me and kissed her thoroughly. She was drained as much as I was.

"Daniel that was unfucking believable!" Sharon struggled to say. She looked completely satisfied.

"Does that mean you're happy?" I couldn't help but remind her of her earlier remarks.

"I'm very happy. And very jealous of Kat and Nikki." She admitted.

I picked her up and carried her back to the shower. The water was freezing cold she squealed when I pulled her in. A cold shower is what we probably needed to be honest. Not only refreshing but dampening our desires. I changed the bed as Sharon got ready. We called Kat and Nikki and

arranged to meet them for dinner. On the way Sharon was very quiet. I had a feeling I knew what she was thinking. I was thinking the same thing.

"Doug is a wonderful husband. He loves our kids, and he is a good father. I loved him once but loved Valery even more. Like Nikki and Kat." She looked at me. "Doug and I tried, we had kids but I always knew he had other needs. Needs I couldn't satisfy. The time came when we faced the truth. It was tough for a while. But I wanted a career and he agreed to stay. At least for now it works."

"Val and Doug. How does that work?" I asked. She looked to see if I was being glib.

"Doug is completely devoted to his mom. Nothing sexual but he dotes on her hand and foot in private. His other friends he is very protective of. I have only met one guy." I reached over and took her hand squeezing it lightly.

"What about your needs." I asked. She squeezed my hand.

"I've had my flings, but they were just that, flings. Val, the kids and my career are my life now. I never found anyone like you. Until today." Sharon looked over blushing.

We were almost at the restaurant, there was more she wanted to say. I pulled in a drive way a couple blocks away.

"Daniel I meant it when I said I would never do anything to come between the three of you. But I would like to be with you again. Can we do that?"

"Sharon that decision isn't mine to make. I hope one day to marry Nikki." Placing the truck in park I turned to her.

"You and Nikki to go to the restroom while at the restaurant. You give her the panties you're wearing. Tell her why you're giving them to her. If she gives them back you have your answer. If she puts them in her purse, she alone will decide when we can be together. If she hands them to me then I decide. Fair enough?"

"When did you become so smart?" Sharon kissed me sealing the deal.

"One more thing, before you and I can spend time together, you and Nikki are first." I explained.

I knew that's why Nikki rarely visited Sharon with Kat and me. It was a temptation she tried to avoid. Unlike Becky, I knew Sharon would never take advantage of Nikki.

"Deal! You sure drive a hard bargain!" Sharon squealed. We kissed again and headed to dinner. Sharon and I entered the restaurant. We found Kat and Nikki at the bar waiting. I ordered us some drinks as the girls greeted each other with hugs and kisses.

"Were you surprised?" Nikki pressed herself against me.

"Very!" I replied. She waited for me to tell her all about it.

"You aren't going to tell me are you?" She faked being disappointed.

"All I'm going to say is. You are very naughty girl! In a good way!" She kissed me then turned to Sharon.

"Well?" Sharon looked at her and Kat and then at me.

"Amazing. Utterly amazing!" Sharon was beaming. "He was in the shower, didn't even come in the bedroom ..."

"You do know I am standing right here?" I asked.

Just then the buzzer went off for our table. On the way I held Nikki back. I explained that she would be making a decision later. I told her that it was up to her to decide. I didn't tell her what but I think she had an idea. In the booth I sat next to mom. Sharon and then Nikki across from us.

Sharon was ready to take Nikki to the restroom the minute we sat down. She kept looking at me for permission. I wanted to see how long she would hold out. Dinner was lively, the topics focused on shopping, and office scandals. After salads Sharon looked at me again. I looked her off one more time. I sat back and watched amused they could find so much to talk about. After the staff cleared the table she looked at me desperate now.

"Excuse me I need to use the restroom!" Sharon announced.

"Let's order desert, then you can go!" I suggested. Sharon gave me an impatient look. I called the waitress over. We picked two items to share. Nikki slid out. Sharon grabbed her hand and led her away.

"What's that about?" Kat asked me.

"It's about trust. She is going to ask Nikki if she can be trusted." I explained.

"So I gather things went well?" Kat took my hand and leaned against me.

"Mom don't think for a moment I don't know this was all your idea." I replied.

"She needs you Danny!" Kat squeezed my hand. "We all do!"

"Mom I can't lose Nikki. I want to marry her. This could ruin everything!" I reminded her.

"I know and so does she, Nikki wanted this, she's the one that sent her up to your room." Kat squeezed my hand.

"Jealousy can be a very deadly cancer. Do you understand?" I asked. I was pleading for her to see what I feared most.

"I understand, you have a point. Daniel I promise that I will not do anything like this again without talking to you first." Kat pulled me in for a quick kiss. "Now let me out I need to pee."

I slid over and helped her out. Several minutes later Nikki came to the table she was visibly excited. I stood as she approached she wrapped her arms around my neck and kissed me on the lips in front of the whole restaurant.

"Thank you Danny! I love you!" She kissed me again then slid in on my side pulling me in with her.

The deserts were being served as I sat. Nikki opened her purse and showed me a soaked pair of red lace panties.

"Are you sure?" I asked her.

"I'm positive. Kat told us what you said. I promise I will not do it again either, but this just feels so right." Nikki purred.

"I love you Nikki. I would never do anything to jeopardize our future." I replied. She leaned against me.

"I know. That's why I love you so much." We shared a quick kiss. "Dan can you take mom home tonight. I would like to spend some time with Sharon?"

"If you're sure. I would love to!" I said excitedly.

I stood as Sharon and Kat returned to the table. It seems everyone was happy now. Sharon looked to Nikki and then me with a knowing smile.

I paid the bill Kat and I kissed them goodbye and headed home. I was beat by now and so was Kat. I left her down stairs to change and got ready for bed myself. She came up and we slipped into bed cuddling alone for the first time in days. We talked for a few minutes then heard Nikki and Sharon come in the house. I was surprised they were home so early but was happy to know they were safe.

Kat was straddling my mid-section giving me a much needed back rub. My sore and tired muscles finally getting some relief. I reciprocated and massaged her back paying particular attention to her shoulders and neck. When I finished I rolled on my back and pulled her on top. We kissed as I massaged her ass cheeks.

"Are you happy?" I asked her.

"Very!" She rested her head on my shoulder. "I was thinking we should take her back to Florida for a few days. Eve would like that."

"We could do that. What about you? What does Kat want?" I whispered. She lifted her head and smiled.

"I have everything I need in this house, tonight!" I knew what she meant. Sharon was here. "There is one thing you could give me someday."

"What would that be?" I asked as I squeezed her ass cheeks.

"Some grandchildren!" She grinned.

"I would like that but I'm thinking maybe down the road a couple of years, not tomorrow!"

"Promise?" I knew what she was doing, but that was my plan.

"I promise I'll try to make that happen. This is one promise I can't fulfill by myself." I teased. I slipped inside Kat as she slid down my body.

"I love you Daniel" Mom sighed as my cock filled her cunt.

There was a the distinct sound on the steps and then Nikki burst in our room naked wearing only a harness with a plastic dildo attached. The toy bounced, her tits jiggled as she moved to us.

"Sorry Mom, but can I borrow Danny?" She was definitely excited about something. Kat looked at her then me.

"Is everything ok?" Kat asked. Nikki pulled the sheet off covering us and grabbed my hand and started pulling me.

"Oh Yeah. Just need to teach that little woman who's in charge. I'll have him back in a little while." Nikki replied excitedly. I stumbled out of bed as Kat slipped off my cock. Nikki pulled me to the stairs. I saw Kat throw on her robe and head in our direction.

Sharon was on the bed in mom's room her hands tied with a scarf, her ass in the air. Nikki shuffled me around placing my hard dick in front of Sharon.

"Lick it slut. Taste his mother's pussy you cunt!"

I thought she was being a bit harsh but Sharon turned her head and obeyed. Sharon using only her tongue cleaned my cock. Nikki moved me behind Sharon.

"Ok, now I want you to cum on his cock, bitch! This is our pussy now my pet?"

"Yes Miss Nikki. My pussy is all yours!" Sharon squeaked.

Nikki smacked her ass. I could see it was pink, not red but still rosy. Nikki put her fingers in Sharon's pussy and pulled out the red panties I saw in her purse earlier.

"Now fuck our cunt but don't you dare cum in her!" Nikki demanded.

I stepped forward I saw Nikki stuffed the panties in Sharon's mouth. As I entered Sharon pushed back her pussy still soaking wet. When I was all the way in she moaned into the panties.

"That's right, open that hungry pussy. Let him all the way in. Feel him hit bottom. You want his cock! You need his cock!" Nikki ranted then smacked her ass again. Sharon moaned again and pushed back harder

"This plastic cock isn't enough for our pussy. We need the real thing a big hard hot cock! You need a man, you want my man don't you pet?" Sharon tried to answer but with the panties in her mouth we couldn't understand.

It really didn't make a difference what she said anyways. Nikki removed the harness. She pulled on Sharon's nipples playing with her piercings. Sharon was starting to buck back a bit. I could tell she was getting closer.

"That's it pet coat his cock. Cum on it! Show him how much you want it. Remember no mouth, no ass tonight, just pussy. Make it good. Make me proud of my pet!" Nikki commanded.

Sharon had obviously shared all the details of our earlier time together. I saw Kat from the corner of my eye. She had her hand at her pussy as she looked on.

"Are you ready pet I'm going to help you now. Open that pussy wide. Squirt for us. Show us how much of a needy milf you are!" Nikki smacked her ass and then I felt her reach down and finger her clit. Sharon screamed into the panties her pussy slammed back on my cock. "Coat it bitch. I want your cum dripping from his fat prick!"

Nikki strummed her clit again I could feel Sharon's cunt squeeze hard on my cock. She started to tremble. Nikki strummed her clit again and Sharon started to cum! Nikki pulled her ass cheeks wide open I quickened my pace and all of a sudden what seemed like a river of pussy juice coated my cock. Her pussy was dripping each time I thrust in. Sharon's head buried in the bed her moans muffled by the panties.

I was close. SMACK! I felt my ass sting.

"Don't you dare cum in her! This is OUR pussy. This time I tell her when she can cum and what she gets when she does!" Nikki pulled me from her.

Nikki walked me back to Sharon's face, Nikki took the panties from her mouth. "Look at that. Look what you did to his cock. You are such a slut aren't you?"

"Yes Miss Nikki!" Sharon moaned.

She was drained but not done. Nikki got on the bed in front of Sharon she untied the scarf securing her two hands together. Lick me while I make him cum!" Nikki commanded.

Sharon went between Nikki's pussy and started eating her. Nikki grabbed my cock and took all she could in her mouth. She gripped my balls and started to suck me off. I was anything but tired now. My girlfriend had turned into a dom with Sharon her willing subject. I looked at Kat her hand was frigging her clit she was ready to cum. I groaned as my balls tightened warning Nikki of my pending release. Nikki took my cock and pointed it at her tit and started stroking it.

"Cum on me Danny. Cover my tits so this milf can lick it off. Do it now baby. Do it for our pet. The first spurt hit her tit and streaked up to her neck the next one she aimed lower and it hit right on her nipple. Nikki aimed to the other tit, I groaned as I kept shooting wads all over her chest. Nikki milked the last from my cock and sucked me clean.

"You may go now. It's time for our pussy to clean me up!" Nikki barked.

I was dismissed as if I was just chattel but I knew she was just excited. Nikki pulled Sharon to her chest and had her lick it up. "Feed it to me baby. Let me taste him with you."

I went to Kat just as she had just finished her own climax. I slipped my arms around her from behind she leaned back against me. Nikki went from commanding to lover in just seconds. She was caressing Sharon as they shared my cum extending their kiss each time. Kat turned to me and indicated we should leave. We started down the hall back upstairs. I stopped mom when I heard Nikki talk.

"Was that good? Was I too mean to you?" Nikki asked concerned.

"Oh Nikki that was so hot! You were perfect baby!" We listened to them kiss again.

"It was pretty exhilarating wasn't it? Thank you Sharon for letting me do that. I can't wait until you do it to me!" Nikki said. They started kissing again.

Mom and I want back to bed upstairs. I must have passed out because when I woke Nikki and Sharon joined us in my bed. We were all naked. My cock was hard and I needed to piss. I rolled over Nikki and went to the bathroom. When I came back they were still sleeping together. I looked on in amazement. Three totally different women were in my bed for three totally different reasons. I was a lucky guy. I loved them each in different ways. What struck me more was they all loved me for the same thing. I make them happy.

Sunday night I drove Sharon home. Val was waiting for her at the door when we pulled in.

"Dan that was an amazing weekend. I would invite you in but I think it best if I don't." Sharon said looking at Val. "Besides you wouldn't come even if I did would you?" I shook my head. "I love that about you, you're honest, stay true to them both darling." She leaned over and kissed me lightly on the lips.

"Sharon I want to thank you for making them so happy! I love that about you!" She was affected by that, like she didn't think I noticed. She looked up and saw Val waiting for her.

"I have to go. I don't want her to think I have switched teams! As tempting as that may be with you!" We both laughed. "Seriously Dan, I would like you to feel free to come over if just to see the kids. No expectations. Doug would like that too. He likes you."

"Thank you and WE will." Sharon knew what I meant when I suggest I wouldn't be coming alone. I hopped out and opened her door. She walked to Val and laid a big kiss on her lips. I knew she did this to comfort Val, but also to show me she was back in charge.

The summer was a good for many reasons. I started selling homes in real estate. Working with Art I learned the real world, not from some text book. Selling houses is all about getting your name out finding buyers and sellers. Starting out isn't easy, but I had George helping me.

When people came to see his houses I would get to meet people that were in the market to buy and usually sell their old house. Even if they didn't buy one of George's I was keen enough to get their information and help them with a new home from another company or a used home. I completed ten deals by summers end. Nothing fabulous but a nice start in this business.

My class schedule was going to be grueling so I cut back one. Doing this allowed me time to study and still sell some properties. This fit my schedule perfectly since I had mornings and afternoons open on different days. The flexibility of scheduling appointments around classes was a definite advantage over a set schedule.

Nikki and Kat were doing fabulous in their work places. By the time the holidays came around we were all pretty comfortable in our respective rolls. The week before Christmas I had made special plans for one night.

Nikki and I attended a basketball game at our old high school. I had been gone for a couple of years now but still went to see some of the games each year. A couple of seniors played with me when I was on the team. Setting just behind the team we watched the first half of the game. At the break during half time they had cheerleaders and the band playing.

The teams came out to warm up. Then the principle was looking for a volunteer to make a basket for charity. She walked the floor looking for just

the right person. She selected Nikki. The principle asked Nikki to come to the top of the key. She was going to try and shoot a basket.

Nikki was of course embarrassed and protested but the crowd urged her on. Standing on the far end of the court from where we were sitting, the principle stood holding Nikki's shoulders facing her to the basket. She explained to Nikki that if she made the shot $500 would be donated to the local Boy's and Girl's club. Nikki again tried to explain she wasn't the person to be doing this. Just before she handed her the ball I moved in behind. Nikki took the shot. She was of course not even close.

Embarrassed she turned to the crowd and found me kneeling behind her. The principle held the microphone to me. I asked for Nikki's hand in marriage offering a small open box with my out stretched hand. The place went instantly quiet. Nikki looked at the ring and then me.

"Yes Daniel..." The roar of the crowd drowned out any remaining words she said. I stood slipped on the ring and gave her a gentle kiss before I hugged her. Knowing the game needed to get started we were asked to move from the court but not before I handed them a check for the $500.

I looked in the stands Kat, Sally, and George all stood with Nikki's parents as they looked on. Five happier people I never saw. I pointed them out to Nikki, she ran into the bleachers as the game started for the second half. I watched Kat look at the ring with Nikki. She had helped me pick it out. Then looked back down at me. I knew she was happy for Nikki and me, but was she happy for herself?

After the game Nikki and I were going to meet Kat, Sally, and George at the bar with her parents. As we left the high school Nikki kissed me once again.

"I Love you Daniel!" She looked at the ring. "It's so beautiful. Did you pick this out yourself?"

"Lucky for you no. Kat went with me. She said the two of you had looked at rings several times in the past. She knew what you wanted. The one I picked was... well let's just say these are much nicer!" I looked at her to see if she caught what I was trying to say.

"Kat helped you?" She looked sad for just a moment. I crooked my head and gave her that look letting her know there was more I wanted to say.

"We can always take it back for something else if you like?" She looked at the ring again.

"No. Danny it 'isn't that, it's just when we looked at these rings..." Nikki looked at the ring one more time. The ring was a brilliant diamond with a small ruby and sapphire on each side.

"You did say these rings right?" I asked. Nikki looked at me confused. "That's why I bought them both!"

"Daniel you did?" I reached in my pocket and gave her the other box. She opened it. Inside was an identical ring with a small emerald and sapphire on each side.

"You're going to give this to her?" She asked.

"I was actually thinking you should!" I explained. Nikki squealed in delight.

"Daniel really! Can I do it tonight?" She squealed.

"Sure. I think that would be a great idea!" I was glad to see she wanted to do it so soon.

The question was should she do it at the bar or in private. I didn't have long to wait to find out. Nikki's parents were at the bar when we walked in. Nikki immediately told her parents what she was going to do. Mary was very happy. Mark just looked at me, smiled and shrugged like he had no control anyway.

George followed Kat and Sally meeting us at the table. I saw Nikki whisper to Sally. She looked at me with a big smile and winked her approval. I shook Georges hand and said hello. Congratulations were freely given to Nikki and me from the small gathering.

Mom gave me a big hug and kissed my cheek.

"Congratulations. I am so happy for you!" She whispered. I knew this would be hard for her. I was glad Nikki decided not to wait.

A server came and took our drink order and some appetizers. Mary and Kat ordered a Bloody Mary. Nikki and Sally a Margarita. The three guys all had beers. I excused myself to use the facilities. I came back just as the waitress delivered the drinks. I sat beside Nikki who was beside Kat. Mark called for a toast we all clinked glasses and took a drink.

"I would like to make another toast but first I have something to ask someone." Nikki said. She turned to Kat and handed her a small box with the lid open.

"Kat would you marry us?" Nikki asked barely containing her excitement.

Realizing the question had two meanings she stuttered. "I don't mean marry us like a preacher. You know, would you marry me and Danny? Oh shit. I mean would you ..."

Mom pulled her into a kiss before she could dig herself in deeper. I looked around the table. Only George was confused, but he smiled just like everyone else did.

"Daniel you went back!" Mom looked at the ring Nikki still held. I reached around and took it out of the box. I held it for her to place on her finger. Kat slid her finger in the ring. A small chorus of cheers went out in the bar from those close to us. She met me in front of Nikki for my kiss.

"I propose a toast to the happy couples!" Mark raised his glass. George was still trying to figure it all out but raised his glass as we all clinked again.

You can imagine the conversation after that. Sally was very supportive. Mary seemed to be really happy. Kat rode home with Nikki and me, the two of them were in the back seat kissing and fondling each other. Nikki called Eve the moment we got home and sent a message to Becky.

That night the three of us met in our bed and enjoyed a randy night of sex. Tits, pussies and cock were treated to a royal romp. We fell fast asleep much too late for a work night. Sharon called me the next day congratulating me, she had already talked to Nikki. With Christmas just days away we had plenty of things to keep us busy.

The holidays were one of the best. George and Eve made it back for Christmas. I had been spending one night a week at Sally's for over a year. With the temptation of Eve being there I decided to stay home this week. I was committed to two women right now and as much as I wanted to enjoy the company of the others I decided to remain unavailable.

New Year's Eve 2002 found us at Nikki's parents for their annual party. Becky and Tina attended this year but something was wrong between them. If I felt something it was one thing but when Nikki mentioned it I knew it was noticeable. Nikki invited Sharon, Val, and Doug this year. I was sure Becky would make some moves on Sharon but she was well off her game.

I had been staying true to my commitment. It was difficult and I was finding my stance was creating some friction between myself and others. Still I felt it was only fair to Kat and especially Nikki to stay celibate outside our relationships.

The New Year was upon us, we set a date for the wedding in June. I was willing to wait longer but Nikki had her heart set on a late spring wedding. School was going good but I would need to take a couple of summer classes to keep on schedule. Work was doing great. Art was a great mentor and he was happy to have me on board. I was happy with how he gave me the flexibility to work and go to school.

Nikki got a small promotion and raise. Kat was happy working with Sharon. We had found a comfortable schedule at home as well as socially. I had made new friends at school and at work. Nikki joined the same gym Kat went to and learned some of her coworkers also attended. Soon we had a small social circle we would get together with on a regular basis. Most were married and several years older than us.

Family became more of a focus. I still spent one night over at George and Sally's. She wasn't happy I put a halt to our special time when I got engaged. George seemed no happier because of it. For Sally I could tell she still liked just to have me around.

We spent more time with Nikki's family as weeks passed by. We visited Doug, Val and Sharon often, usually to spend time with them and their kids. I had limited my visits to those occasions. This of course didn't make Sharon happy. Kat and Nikki visited more often for other reasons.

The wedding was coming up fast. It was going to be a small to medium affair. Less than one hundred people were invited. Only the closest of friends and family. The ceremony and reception was to be held at the country club George had played golf at. As the days drew closer the anxieties became more pronounced. Nikki was all but frazzled, her mom not far behind.

Drama with bridesmaids, flowers, dresses and such were all handled, but there was one thing that she wouldn't talk to me about. Kat helped out when needed but did her best to stay in the shadows. If you asked me she was the glue that kept it all together.

I asked Darius to be my best man. He was part of the construction crew I had worked with. Nikki's cousin and then Sam, Sharon's youngest stood up with me. Kat was the maid of honor, she protested but both Nikki and I insisted. A friend from school and a young niece rounded out the wedding party.

I was sent packing Saturday night before the wedding, back to Sally's. It was decided that I wouldn't see the bride to be until the wedding next Saturday. I moved back into my room not happy but knowing the time away would be worth it come next weekend. Besides Nikki had enough on her mind without me to pester her.

Charles and Eve arrive Sunday. They moved into the other spare room. I was thrilled to see them both since it has been almost six months. Charles welcomed me with open arms. Eve wouldn't even kiss me.

Monday night it was just Charles. George and myself for dinner. I offered to cook but they decided to go out instead. They had a couple of drinks during dinner, so I knew I was driving home. After sports, cars, and work the talk centered on women. That is when Charles let it slip.

"What in the hell can six women be talking about tonight?" Charles asked. George looked at me then back to Charles.

"Charles, let's not get into that now!" Charles looked at me embarrassed that George tried to shut him down.

"Why the hell not? He's the reason their meeting. Tell the boy! Sorry let me correct that, tell the man! God knows she was happier before than she is now!" Charles bellowed.

George laid his hand on Charles shoulder.

"Please. He's getting married in a few days. Surely this can wait?" George tried to calm him down.

"Nurse I need another drink!" Charles bellowed in his typical boisterous voice. The waitress didn't look happy but saw we were trying to keep him toned down. I looked at George.

"What exactly is he talking about?" I asked.

The waitress brought another round. (I was drinking ice tea) Charles picked his glass up to make a toast. George wanted to avoid it but as I held my glass up he followed.

"To Daniel may you never stop making people happy!" Charles winked at me and pushed my shoulder. I turned to George who was turning redder the longer Charles went on.

"George you didn't answer my question." I persisted. He looked around to see who may be listening.

"The women are at your moms. They're discussing you!" George looked embarrassed to say it.

"Ah shit man tell him!" Charles goaded him.

Charles was loud but not shouting. George glared at Charles. Charles leaned into the table so he could speak quietly.

"They are trying to find out why you quit fucking them?"

I was stunned by what he said. I looked to George I could see he wasn't going to argue the point.

"Six? I never..." I looked at them both. "Ok who are they?"

"Well you know Kat, Nikki, Sally, and Eve" Charles laughed. "Then there is Sharon and I believe Nikki's mom Mary."

"George I swear! I never!" George put his hand on my shoulder.

"Daniel it's ok. I know. She's just there. But you have been...? Let's just say you have been distant for several months!" George replied calmly. I had never seen him like this when it came to Sally.

"But I thought you..." He put his hand up to stop me. I looked to Charles. "And I have never even kissed her mom!" I was defending myself.

"Enough talking about this. You weren't even supposed to know. Whatever you have or haven't done is ok with us." George explained.

"Just wish you would get back to doing it, is all we want!" Charles added. Charles finished off the last of his drink. I looked back at George. He shrugged his shoulders.

"We better get him home before he orders another one." George paid the bill I helped him get Charles to his feet we loaded him in the back. I slid behind the wheel. We were about half way home. The silence was killing me.

"So what do you suggest I do?" I asked George. I couldn't even look him in the eye.

"Daniel. I don't have the answer for you. All I know is with you around our life is better. If Sally was here she would tell you to follow your instincts. It's worked pretty well before. So maybe you should go back to doing it again?" George suggested. He and I continued to look out the windshield.

"What about you? What about Sally?" I asked.

"All I know is she was happier before, and if I'm honest, so was I." Was all he said.

I drove the rest of the way to the house in silence. Sometimes life is so fucking hard! I agreed to not say a word even though I wasn't sure if they would or not.

Tuesday afternoon I made an appointment to meet with a potential client that would arrived in town the next day. I was to meet them in the lobby of major hotel in the city. Wednesday, I dressed professionally and was early to the appointment.

I waited for a while when a desk clerk asked if I was Daniel. I answered yes, they explained the client was detained and I should come up to the room. I grabbed my briefcase and headed up on the elevator. I was impressed that they were on the fifteenth floor. I was excited because that is the floor where the more expensive suits are. These people had money!

I knocked on the door I waited a minute and knocked on it again. I knew someone was there I could hear the faint sound of them talking. I was just about to knock again when the door opened.

"Nikki?" I asked stunned to see her. "What are you doing here?"

I looked in the room. I saw no one. Then it dawned on me she wanted to see me! I pulled her close and started kissing her. Nikki closed the door and kissed me again. "Oh how I have missed you!" I said.

"Oh Danny I have missed you too!" I was still in the hall leading to the room. It looked expensive. I wondered why she spent so much money to come here.

"Daniel! Please come in!" It was Kat!

She was dressed in a sheer teddy, one of my favorites, with the robe we all wear gaping open. I looked at her and then back to Nikki who looked like she just left the office. Why were they dressed so differently?

"Mom? What are you doing here?" I asked.

Kat approached me and gave me a quick peck on the cheek. I tried to pull her close but she avoided my attempt.

"Danny please come in and sit down." Nikki suggested. Confused I did as she asked. I went to the chair she led me to, she and Kat sat on the couch facing me.

"Is everything ok?" I asked. I was starting to get a weird feeling something bad was going to happen.

"Well that depends on you. Daniel." Nikki replied.

This must be serious. Nikki like Kat doesn't usually use my proper name unless it's something serious.

"If we are to get married Saturday there is one thing we need to get straight first?" Nikki said.

I was stunned. If we get married? What the fuck? What did I do now? What needs to get straightened?

"Nikki. I'm not sure what you're talking about?" I responded.

"Daniel. I fell in love with one person. That person was you!" Nikki started. Kat looked at Nikki with a frown. "Sorry. I should have said two people. One man! Ah shit you get the point."

Nikki got like this when she was nervous. But the stumbling let me know this wasn't as bad as I once feared.

"What I'm trying to tell you Danny is you've changed. I know you think it's for the better but it 'isn't. I want the old Danny back. The one I fell in love with!" Nikki said.

Now this is where my years of experience as a nerd in school paid off. I knew better than to start trying to explain my way out of something I wasn't what it was. I needed more facts, more clarity, such as what the hell she was talking about! I took a deep breath and looked at Kat maybe she could help me here.

"What Nikki is trying to say is that you've changed. Remember when you asked me to tell you if you ever got too full of yourself?" Kat asked.

Again I held my tongue. I nodded in response. "Well this is that time. Only you went the other way. We want you back!" I looked at Nikki more confused than before.

"Danny, you stopped making people happy." Nikki got up and moved to me sitting on my lap. "You stopped being the man you were meant to be. We want you just the way we fell in love with you!"

Kat came over she sat on the arm of the chair.

"You're telling me you WANT me to ...spend time with other women?" I looked at them, it was like a light bulb went off in my head. "I stopped because I thought you'd want me to!"

"We know and we love you for it, but what Nikki and I are telling you now is that we want you to be who you are. Why you're here, to make people happy." Kat leaned over and kissed me. "Will you do that for us?"

"You too?" I looked at my future wife. Nikki kissed me.

"Especially me. You see it was Kat who shared you with me! I love you Daniel Masters, but so do many other people. Will you do this for me?" Nikki asked.

Words couldn't express how I was feeling. I pulled her into a kiss. Nikki broke free then said. "Now just so we are clear. We have a deal, who I sleep with you can sleep with. Right?"

"That's the deal?" I asked still trying to sort it all out in my head. Nikki and Kat both nodded. This was a no brainer. I easily agreed. Kat got up and walked across the room.

"Promise?" Nikki pulled my face directly in front of hers. Smart woman this one.

"I promise!"

"Good! Then here are the women I give to you." Kat opened the door to the adjoining room. Sally, Eve, Sharon, and Nikki's mom Mary all walked into the room all of them wearing the matching outfit to Kat except Mary. Nikki went to Mary and took her hand.

"This one you can't have." Nikki took her mom's hand. She kissed her mom on the cheek. "At least not yet!" Mary smiled and then winked at me. Nikki and her mom? This was too much.

"You two get out of here. You have a wedding to get ready for!" Kat teased.

"Danny! I better get rave reviews or there will be hell to pay!" Nikki threatened. I lowered my head in mock humility.

"Yes dear." The whole room erupted. Mary led Nikki out the door. I was surrounded.

Kat moved to me planting a kiss on my lips.

"I have asked Sally to go with you first. We will come join you later. Eve, Sharon, and Kat stayed. Sally led me next door to the bedroom. I turned taking both her hands lightly in mine.

"I'm so sorry I'll never push you away again. Can you forgive me?" I said.

"Oh son, you need no forgiving, you did what you thought was right. I respect that." Sally replied.

I reached for her robe and lifted it off her shoulders. She stood before me in only the sheer lingerie.

"Will you let me make it up to you? I would like to make you happy!" I explained. Sally smiled.

"You always make me happy. Some days just more than others!" She pulled me in for a juicy kiss.

"Then let's make this one of those days!" I returned her kiss and took her large tit's in my hands.

Sally reached to my chest and removed my suit coat. I removed my tie as she unbuttoned my shirt. I lowered my head and slipped a tit from the lacy material sucking the nipple in my mouth. The nub grew hard, she was undoing my belt. I stopped her and stripped as fast as I could we stumbled to the bed her hand gripped my cock. I sat down pulling her on my lap. The thin damp material separated my cock from dripping pussy. God I wanted her.

"Not today son, but soon!" I looked at her she gave me a naughty smile. "Let's do it like before. You have guests waiting."

I rolled her over on her back and pulled her panties off. I licked her pussy then smeared my face with her wetness.

"They can wait just a bit longer!" I suggested. She pulled me in for a kiss then licked my face clean.

I repeated this until she had her first orgasm. I slipped up beside her she grabbed my cock and started stroking it. I dipped my fingers in her pussy and smeared cum on her nipples. Sally lifted the glistening orb and licked it clean. Her tit dangled as she sucked her nipple refusing to let it go. She slid over and took my cock in her mouth it had been several days. My balls were burning for release.

"Mom I am going to cum soon!" I warned her.

Sally pulled her mouth off and gripped my cock. She rolled on her back her massive tits dropped to each side of her chest. She spread her legs and still holding my cock, she guided me between them. I was hovering just above her when she placed my cock between the folds of her pussy the head resting just above her clit. She rolled her hips, the length of my cock was being caressed from below by her sopping cunt.

"Danny, cum on my tummy. Make my pussy happy!" Sally cooed.

I pressed down harder her pussy splayed open even more as my cock pushed the lips to either side. "You're going to make me cum baby. My clit loves the head rubbing it!" I looked down her little bud was in direct contact just under the head of my cock.

"Mom I can't hold out much longer. Your pussy is so juicy and hot!" I cried out.

Sally picked up the pace her hand making sure I didn't slip inside. This is as close to fucking as you could get and still not do it!

"Cum Danny. Be a good son cum on mommy's tummy!" Her breath went ragged she pushed my cock hard against her clit. Her hips stopped she moved my cock side to side to massage her clit.

"Cum Danny. I'm cumming Danny!" Sally stroked my cock then pressed it to her clit then stroked it again.

"I'm cumming mother. Oh god I'm cumming!" I announced.

Her hand was a blur as she milked my cock each spurt landed just above her clit and up to her stomach. I pushed myself back on my knees still between her legs. Sally scooped my cum and stuffed it in her pussy. She gathered each and every bit and kept pushing it in her swollen cunt.

"Daniel." She tried to get me to look up from her pussy. "Daniel!"

"Yes mom?" I asked. She brought her cum covered fingers to her mouth where she then licked them clean.

"The next time we get together, you get to put your cum in me yourself!" Sally proposed.

I was stunned by what she said but I wasn't going to ask questions.

"I love you Sally!" We locked into a very sensual kiss.

I could describe what went on after Sally and I spent some time together but I would rather not. Suffice to say it was more emotional than sexual, much more than I expected. I hope you forgive me for wanting to keep this private.

Friday Darius invited friends and family to a bachelor party. We went to a topless bar, George, Charles and Doug teased about how I saw more and better tits at home and with my harem. After a while we left and just went to a sports bar where we met Nikki's dad Mark there and just hung out. They teased and harassed me the whole time. Some of my friends got a chance to meet my family. The party broke up around midnight which was fine by me.

I'll not bore you with the actual wedding. I have included just the briefest of details to keep you informed. As I have done earlier and will continue to do later I have left out much of our close friends and family that have no bearing on the accounts pertaining to the focus of the story.

The wedding went off wonderfully I believe a good time was had by all.

I had the honeymoon planned months in advance. The question is where to go and what to do. A cruise was a thought, maybe a resort in Mexico. Hawaii was the one place that I always wanted to see. The flight would be a bitch but I found a time share owned by a friend of Charles that was half the price of a hotel and was right on a beach in Maui. The three of us headed off to spend a week of quiet relaxation.

We arrived and picked up our rental car and headed to the house. Set well back from the water there was a group of separate small homes that made up the complex. There was a community pool and clubhouse, as well as a private beach. Set deep in the palm trees and surrounding foliage there was plenty of shade and yet just steps from the soft sandy beach. I hauled the luggage in as the girls opened the place up and checked it out. The sizable master bedroom had a king size bed and a large attached bath. A glass sliding door led to a partially enclosed patio and the view of the ocean beyond.

Our first order of business was to change into our suits and head into the crystal clear water. We joined several others as we laid out our beach towels then hit the water running. The cool water was just the thing for three weary travelers. The girls headed back the beach while I swam and floated in the salty water. Looking out I could see a school of dolphins further out at sea. I wandered back to the girls, rinsed off and sat down putting on my sunglasses.

"Happy honeymoon darlings!" I received a kiss from each and laid down to catch some rays.

After about an hour I went into the house and got out the folder from the owner. He gave me a check list and I went down it doing things like turning the hot water heater on and setting the clocks. He supplied me with a list of restaurants and shops where the locals go.

Nikki and Kat came in about an hour after I did. We went to the master bathroom to take a shower. The warm water felt great but the hands and lips felt even better. We washed off the sun screen, sand and salt water then piled on the bed in one lump.

"This place is beautiful Danny!" Nikki kissed me.

"Nothing but the best for my two wives." I pulled Kat into a kiss. "Are the two of you as happy as I am right now?" I asked.

Kat looked to Nikki they both nodded then kissed each other.

"Time to make babies!" Nikki squealed. Kat and I both looked at each other.

"Really? Already?" I asked Nikki.

"Sure why not. I'm not getting any younger. I stopped taking the pill last month. The doctor said it might take another month or two to clear out of my system, but maybe not. I say let's give your mom what she wants. A grand-baby!"

"Count me in then!" I replied excitedly.

We drove to town and picked up supplies and found a quaint little restaurant that was on the list. After dinner we went back, stocked the refrigerator, and took a stroll on the beach. That night we worked on the baby project.

The next day we drove into the tourist area of town and looked at all sorts of galleries with paintings, sculptures, and other art pieces. Jewelry shops were everywhere as were kiosks offering all sorts of adventures and activities. We had the most fun in the tacky souvenir shops looking at all sorts of things that people bought just to prove they were here. So did I!

We picked up some brochures for some activities and then headed back to find another restaurant for dinner.

We sat on the patio drinking wine and just watching the waves lap the shore. It was simply beautiful. I lifted Nikki's hand but she ask for a pass suggesting mom was looking for some alone time with me. I kissed her and headed in to find Kat in the kitchen.

"Would you like to go for a walk?" I asked. She looked out at the patio where Nikki was sitting.

"Just you and me?" Kat whispered.

I nodded yes. Kat tried to hide her pleasure that it would be just us but I could tell.

"Let me get my wrap." The sun was going down but it was still warm out. It took a few minutes but she met me on the patio. She had the wrap over her shoulders holding it close in front of her. We each kissed Nikki and then headed down the beach.

"Thank you Danny!" Mom slipped under my arm as we walked along the water's edge.

"For what?" I had an idea but I think she needed to say it.

"For bringing me on your honeymoon. I'll try not to put too much of a damper on it."

"Mom, this is our honeymoon. The three of us. This is just as much yours and Nikki's as mine and hers." I explained. "You know it could have just as well been you taking those vows right?"

Mom looked up at me still tucked under my arm.

"You would have done that?" You would marry me?" Kat gushed. I pulled her to me, we kissed.

"In a heartbeat. It's just that with you being my mom..." Kat pulled me down to kiss me hard on the lips

"I love you Daniel Masters." She kissed me again before I could respond. "And I love your wife!"

She let the wrap fall off her shoulders she was wearing just her bikini top. The small one. Her tits were begging to be let loose. The sun was down, the beach was dark, just the soft glow from the crescent moon and the occasional homes dotting the shore. We walked a bit further where there was a secluded spot. Kat pulled me into the darkest area and laid down her wrap. She pulled at my shorts. I slipped them off with my briefs. Her moist mouth covered me in an instant. I released her top and fondled her full tit's.

"I need you in me!" Mom begged.

Kat slipped out of her shorts and panties while I pulled off my shirt. Kat laid back on her wrap I slipped between her legs filling her pussy in one slick stroke.

"I'll never get tired of that feeling when you first fill me up!" Mom sighed in pleasure.

"I'll never get tired of doing it!" I moaned.

I hunched my back so we could kiss. Her slick cunt begging me to fuck her faster. I slowed down instead, we were in no hurry. Under the wrap the sand conformed to her back, our moans drowned out by the steady surf. I wanted her on top but the beach was no place for rolling around. I lifted her legs pressing them near her chest. My cock pressed hard against the top of her love channel. I was massaging her G spot.

"Oh god Danny, don't stop!"

Unable to move, her back worked deeper in the sand under my weight and thrusting. I pummeled her pussy relentlessly. Kat groaned louder with each thrust. Her fit thighs started to push back. Her pussy clamped down on my cock. She was so wet and each thrust forced her oily arousal past my cock and bathed my balls.

"Cum for me baby. I need you to hurry!" Mom whimpered.

I could have held off but she was getting desperate. She loves when I am crude sometimes. I had a feeling tonight would be one of them.

"Open wide wifey. Spread that pussy. I want to get it all the way up your cunt!" I tormented her.

Kat reached around and pulled her pussy open from behind her thighs. With no light I couldn't see but I felt the wetness spread around my cock and balls.

"Now Danny. I need to cum now!" Kat moaned.

Even the ocean couldn't drown out her cries. I felt her pussy spasm. Her thighs pushed back until they were on the ground. I thrust deep in her pussy. Mom pushed her clit against me. I started to fill her pussy.

"Here it comes. Here it comes!" Was all I could articulate.

Our sexes met again and again. You could hear the slushy smacking even over the turf. Kat weakly wrapped her legs around me I pulled from her and drifted down so we could kiss. Once we had caught our breath we locked lips. I didn't want to move but knew she needed me off of her.

"Dan I am so happy at this moment. I love you. Will you marry me?" She teased.

"Sure. I could always use another woman in my life!" I teased back. She punched me then rolled over on top kissing me again. "You do know that I think of us as married. You are part of me now!" I explained.

"Oh Danny you know I feel the same way!" Kat lunged for another kiss.

I held her tight as we looked out over the glistening ocean.

"We better get back. Nikki may think we abandon her on her honeymoon." Kat suggested.

We picked up the wrap our clothes were full of sand. We slipped on just our shorts after shaking them out. I gave mom my shirt to wear. We walked back to the house. Nikki was still laying in a chaise outside the bedroom reading. She looked at both of us knowing what we had been up to.

Kat started to walk into the bedroom when Nikki reached for her hand. Without a word she pulled Kat to her. Mom bent down and gave her a kiss. Nikki slipped her hand along her thigh and inside the leg of her shorts. A playful smile crossed her face.

Nikki released the clasp on Kat's shorts and pulled them from her womanly hips. I could see in the available light the sheen from my cum leaking from her still swollen cunt. Nikki positioned mom so she was straddling her as she lay on the chaise. Mom's pussy gaped open. Nikki placed her mouth near the opening and licked along her slit. Her tongue was coated with my fresh spend. She swallowed and went back for more.

Kat thrust her head back and gripped her tits over my shirt.

"Eat me baby. Eat our husbands cum!" Kat growled.

Nikki lapped at her pussy. I could see her jamb her tongue deep. She pulled away. Reaching up she gripped Kat's shoulder guiding her down. She pulled her head and locked unto her mouth no doubt filling it with our combined excitement.

Reaching down with her right hand Nikki trust three fingers in mom's cunt rubbing her clit with her thumb. With her left hand she gripped Kat's hair behind her head.

"Cum for me now my wife! Cum for your husband!" Nikki hissed as she pulled her head back. Kat was humping Nikki's hand. "Do it now! You know you want to!"

Nikki slipped a fourth finger in her. More juice was flowing down her legs. Kat whimpered as she started down the path of no return.

"Cum for me mother and I'll let your husband fuck your ass!" Nikki offered.

Kat lost it right then. She fucked Nikki's hand cumming again just minutes after she did on the beach. Kat bucked against Nikki's hand, her thumb continued to strum mom's clit.

"No more!" Kat pleaded. Her pussy continued to thrust on Nikki's finger fist. "No more baby!"

"Keep cumming Kat. That's it you can do it. Cum again and I'll let your son fill your ass with my baby maker's" Kat stopped for just a moment.

Nikki strummed her clit again mom started to rotate her pelvis searching for more stimulation. With her other hand Nikki let go of her hair and gripped mom's tit and squeezed hard. Kat groaned in pleasure and pain as her nipple stretched down.

"Kiss me mom. Show me how much you love me!" Kat moved her hands from her knees where she was supporting herself to Nikki's shoulder.

Pulling her into a kiss Kat latched onto Nikki's mouth and then another orgasm rocked through her. Her legs started to give way. Nikki pulled her lathered hand from mom's cunt and fed it to her. Kat slumped down to the chair leaning against Nikki.

"We love you Kat. Will you marry me?" Nikki was serious and teasing at the same time. The joke had come full circle.

"Oh yes! Nikki I love you. I love you both!" Kat sighed. I reached over and picked Kat up taking her in the bedroom and laying her on the bed.

"Did you do your prep?" Nikki asked as she started to undress. Mom looked at her and nodded. "On your knees. You are such and ass slut aren't you?"

"Only for the two of you. That's my promise!" Mom assumed the position. Nikki moved behind her and slapped her ass firmly.

"I know what you want. You want the real thing slut. Don't you?" Nikki smacked her again this time lighter.

"Yes Miss Nikki!" Mom was using Sharon's submissive pet name.

Nikki thrust her fingers deep in mom's pussy. Pulling it back out I could see just how abused her cunt truly was. Dripping in fluids it stayed gaping open. Nikki used her slick fingers and rubbed them on mom's asshole. Kat let out a moan.

"You want it don't you wifey? You can't wait for him to stretch that tight ass of yours can you?" Nikki prodded Kat.

I pulled the lube from the nightstand ready to coat my dripping cock.

"Please Miss Nikki. Please make him fuck my ass!" Kat was begging and we hadn't even started.

"Suck his cock get him ready first!" Nikki demanded.

She guided me to Kat's mouth where mom took as much as she could with her first plunge. Frantically she sucked me as Nikki worked a greasy finger in her ass. Kat's hips bucked back, she was on fire. Kat pulled off my cock.

"Please Miss Nikki!" Mom pleaded. "I need him inside me!"

"Play with your clit. I want to watch you cum when he stretches your hole" Nikki said. Mom hesitated we all knew her clit was too sensitive. SMACK!

"I said play with your clit!" Nikki spanked her firmly this time. Kat responded by reaching up and rubbing her red swollen knob.

"Miss Nikki. It hurts!" SMACK! SMACK! SMACK!

"I said do it!" Kat continued as her ass started pumping on Nikki's finger. Nikki pulled me over I lubed my cock. She pulled her finger from mom's ass and lined me up.

When I tell you. I want you to cum!" Nikki was barking orders. She rubbed my cock around Kat's puckered hole teasing the opening several times. Kat was trying to impale herself on it. Nikki smacked her now pink ass cheeks.

"Get ready slut. Cum when I tell you!" Nikki easily slipped two fingers into mom's ass. Kat lunged back her body started to tremble. Nikki aimed my cock at the entrance to her bowels. She nodded to me I pushed. "Cum slut cum!"

"With all her might she slammed her ass over my cock. I thought it would rip her asshole open. She let out a fevered scream and started her fourth orgasm in less than an hour.

"Oh my god fuck me. Please Danny fuck me hard!" Kat pleaded. I slammed into her as her body convulsed. I think she was too weak to do much herself.

Nikki motioned for me slow my pace. Kat's head drifted to the bed her ass still high enough for me to fuck.

"See you can do it!" Nikki slipped in front of mom she spread her pussy open. "Eat me!"

She grabbed the hair on the back of Kat's head and lifted it. "Be a good wife and eat my pussy!" Nikki slid her cunt to Kat's mouth.

Kat nuzzled her nose in the folds then licked along Nikki's slit. Nikki responded with a gentle mew as Kat started getting her excited. I had slowed my pace to a lazy gentle stroke in mom's ass. Her body was just calming down from her last climax.

Nikki was starting to get aroused as mom was doing a masterful job.

"You like my pussy don't you wifey?" Mom pulled back long enough to respond.

"Yes Miss Nikki!" Kat started to lick Nikki's pussy again but Nikki pulled her head higher.

"You want me to have our children. Don't you?"

"Yes! Oh yes I truly do!" Mom purred. Nikki stroked her hair.

"I'll give you three. One for each of us. You would like that wouldn't you mom?"

"Oh darling you know I would!" Kat was starting to get emotional.

"Will you nurse them with me?" Nikki looked at me as she said it.

"What? Are you kidding?" I blurted out. I was shocked by even the suggestion.

"You never told him did you mom?" Nikki stroked Kat's hair and pulled mom to her own tit.

"Tell me what?" I stopped fucking for just a moment.

"Kat will you nurse them with me?" Nikki waited for an answer. Kat released her tit to answer.

"Yes. You know I will!" Kat answered. Nikki smiled. "Will you nurse from me when my tits are full? Like you did your own?" Kat sucked harder on Nikki's tit. Kat released her tit and thrust back on my cock.

"Yes. I'll suckle you if you let me!" Kat hissed. I started fucking mom's ass. My cock swelling with lust.

"Suck my tit like you did your own. We will get started as soon as we know." Nikki pulled mom to her tit and as we watched her suck on it.

"She never told you how when you were born she wanted to nurse you? How she took shots and hooked herself up on a machine to train her breasts to give milk." Nikki Told me. "Oh yes it can be done. Look it up. You trick the body over weeks, sometimes months and it will produce milk. She never told you that after she brought you home you were so weak you couldn't suckle. She would suck her own tit then feed it to you?" Nikki looked at me letting me know that it was true.

I was pounding her ass, my balls were starting to boil. Kat could hardly keep attached to Nikki's tit.

"Cum for me Mrs. Masters. Cum for me one last time because when he fills your ass that is the last cum you get this week. The rest goes in my pussy for our baby!" Nikki cried out.

Kat pulled loose from Nikki. My cock was starting to lose control.

"I can't please don't make me cum again!" Kat groaned. Nikki reached under and pulled on mom's nipples. She pulled so hard mom objected with a groan.

"You can and you will! As my wife, as my partner and as my love. You will do this for me. Mrs. Masters cum!

Kat reached back and rubbed her clit her ass clamped hard I started to paint the walls of her ass with cum.

"I'm cumming!" I yelled. My cock was a blur in her ass.

"No. no...oh.oh... yyyyeeessss!" Kat hissed through clenched teeth. Her body convulsed she pulled off my cock and curled up in a fetal position. Cum seeped from her ass. Nikki grabbed a towel and wiped it before it reached the sheets.

Nikki moved to comforted her as Kat was still wracked with tremors.

"Never again!" Kat whispered. "There have been years I haven't come that many times!"

She was making jokes as she rolled on top of the towel, they embraced and shared a kiss.

"I love you Nikki. I love you both. You both make me a very happy wife! Very sore but very happy!"

I laid on the bed and let Nikki fuck my face until she came. We all took a shower and then curled up in bed together.

Nikki was mostly right. I fucked them both. Usually Nikki first, then Kat. When she had her orgasm I would pull out and fill Nikki's pussy with cum. Only once did I fill Kat's ass again and that was because Nikki's pussy was too tender to fuck one day.

We enjoyed our week in Hawaii. We went to a luau and took a short cruise to Oahu to visit Pearl Harbor and Waikiki Beach. We saw whales, dolphins and, Nikki claims a shark but I have my doubts. But most of the time we just relaxed and enjoyed the peace and quiet.

The plane ride home was tedious seeming to take twice as long. We touched down and headed home ready to get a good night's sleep. After a week of lounging around, going back to work was a bit difficult. My funds were at an all-time low. Weddings even small ones and honeymoons aren't cheap. Add in the rings, well let's just say I am glad Nikki and Kat both work so they can support me!

Real estate was selling well even for me. I decided not to take summer classes but still helped George when we could work it out. Wednesday was the night I spent at George and Sally's but we changed it to Friday when we got back from our honeymoon. George would usually have dinner with Sally and me then shortly after pack up and leave.

He and three buddies had a standing tee time every Saturday morning at an award winning course a couple of hours away. Some nights he would just leave from work. On those nights I would take Sally out. In real estate every day is a potential work day so many Saturday mornings I would be off to work. The others I may spend part of the day with her or take her home to be with Kat and Nikki.

Friday night worked out for Kat and Nikki as well. They went out with friends after work for drinks and unwind. They had the house to themselves and could sleep in the next day. It was working out for everyone.

I had spent the night twice when George and I were heading to a job site. George seemed to be preoccupied. He had been acting differently since I got married. I thought maybe he regretted his decision to change the farmers and the salesman agreement.

"I want you to know I appreciate you staying at the house, it means so much to Sally." George said. "Well and me too." I figured he wouldn't want to talk about it so I was surprised when he brought it up.

"I enjoy spending time with you both. You really have been the father I never had." I replied.

We exchanged glances. He cleared his throat. I could tell he wanted to say something. He was having a hard time. He cleared his throat again. He looked over I could see and almost sense the fear of what he was about to ask. At that moment I could almost read his mind.

"No. not yet!" I answered the question he never asked. He glanced my way again to judge my sincerity. "She told me but it just hasn't felt right." We exchange glances once again. "Not sure it ever will..."

"Daniel you must. It's important!" George insisted.

"Then promise you won't ask. I couldn't handle that situation!" I confessed.

I looked down at my hands they were fidgeting. George looked at me. He put his big hand on my shoulder.

"I promise. Just know that you need to do this for me." I looked up to him. He noticed my anxiety. "I'm so proud of you son! I see it now. Why you're so special. I know you love Sally. But thank you for loving me!"

I had never heard my uncle talk like that. He was a man of few words and fewer outward emotions. He squeezed my shoulder. We didn't talk about it any longer that day. In fact we would rarely talk about it again. But in the future there would be signs, subtle at times, obvious at others.

The week moved on I closed a couple of deals. Art was becoming a true mentor mostly because he was easy to work with. Even when I screwed up he always turned it into a learning experience.

Friday I arrived at Sally's, somehow I knew George would be gone. She was in the kitchen but she wasn't cooking.

"Can I take you out tonight?" I winked at her, letting her know it was alright.

"You can sweetheart!" Sally was in a special mood I could tell. I walked to her and without hesitation kissed her firmly on the lips.

"Where to fair lady?" I held her close her big tits pressed against me. I kissed her again.

"I have an idea if you're game!"

"Shoot!" I quipped.

"I would like to go dancing! There is a great Italian restaurant just on the other side of town. They have a dance floor and on Friday's a small band that plays music. The food is excellent!"

"I can't dance but if you lead I'll follow!" I kissed her again this time she slipped me her tongue.

"I'll be ready in an hour. You don't need a tie but a jacket would be nice." Sally slipped from my arms and headed to their bedroom.

I went to my room, took a shower and changed into a fresh suit, and yes a tie. I waited patiently as time clicked by. An hour was past ten minutes ago. I heard her heals click across the floor I looked up from the couch. She was stunning. Sally was wearing a sequined black dress. Sexy may be a stretch but attractive may be too unappealing.

Her hair was simple but stylish. Her makeup appropriate for a woman in her fifties, except maybe the bright red lipstick she wore. The dress was elegant, her large breasts on display but well supported. The dress hugged her stomach then flared over her hips before only slightly hugging her sexy legs. The dress stopped well short of her knees but not too short. Her stockings accented the three inch heels she had on. I stood up her eyes brightened as she saw my reaction.

"Wow! What did you do with my aunt?" I teased. Sally blushed as I walked around her. I let my hand slide across the silky material covering her ass.

"Can you zip me up?" Sally blushed.

The last few inches was undone on her back, there was a small clasp. I finished zipping her and hooked the clasp

"Hello. Beautiful!" I teased.

"Daniel. I could wear something more revealing if you want?" She cooed. I wasn't sure where she was going with that.

"If you revealed any more we wouldn't leave the house! Besides I may need to hire a body guard as it's." Sally seemed to be happy with my reply. Nervously she approached me.

"Are you sure. I know young men like their women to be ... you know ... more sluttish!" Sally giggled. I couldn't believe my ears. Sally wanted to know if I wanted her to dress like a whore.

"Mother! What kind of son would I be if I was to be seen in public with that type of woman? I would never dishonor you like that." I said. She hugged me, no doubt not kissing me and run the risk of smudging her lipstick. "Mom you look absolutely perfect for dinner and dancing!"

"Thank you Daniel. We should go. I have made us late." I drove her car the truck not really suited to a woman dressed this nice.

Dinner was great. There were three guys in the band, they were very good, and the singer had a great voice. They played some big band, some fifties and then some modern contemporary stuff. This wasn't a bar or club but a place for people that just wanted to enjoy a great dinner and take a few turns on the dance floor.

Sally and I danced several times. We got a few looks but nothing more than that. There was no public display of affection. This was a good size town but still making a scene in front of the wrong person could be devastating. The whole night while we were out we didn't so much as kiss. My hands never wandered once.

Back in the car was a different story.

"Daniel that was so much fun! I thought you said you couldn't dance?" Sally gushed.

"Well if you call that dancing then I guess I can!" I teased her. "You looked beautiful out there tonight. It was all I could do not to ravish you right there on the dance floor!"

Sally pulled her dress up, took my one hand and slipped it between her legs. The car was too dark to see but I felt the wetness as she guided it to her panty covered pussy.

"Oh baby! I was thinking how much I wanted you to do that!" I gasped.

I stroked her pussy as I drove. She spread her legs allowing me to gain better access. I pulled into the garage and closed the door as my hand left her pussy. We sat for just a moment letting the night sink in. There was something that we needed to clear up for me before we went into the house. The automatic headlights turned off. The opener light shortly after. Still we sat in the car in total darkness.

"Sally. Why does George want me to fuck you?" I blurted out.

I had a feeling she knew this would come up. She had a way of knowing things like this.

"I shouldn't tell you this but I will, I trust you. Besides I think you have a right to know." Sally reached over and took my hand holding it between hers. "George is feeling guilty. George had a lover sometime in the past. They broke it off years ago."

"So this, if we do it. It will be payback?" I asked.

"Yes and no. You see in return for giving me the freedom to have you like I want. I have agreed to let him ..." Sally couldn't bear to say it. She pulled my hand to her face she kissed the back of it.

"So? My guess he isn't playing golf?" I could feel the tears on her cheeks.

"Actually he does play golf. It's just tonight he will not be alone." I stroked her cheek in the darkness. "I actually met the woman while you were on your honeymoon. She said he makes her happy."

"So since we haven't done it. George is ..."

"He thinks I'm punishing him. That's why he stays for dinner. He feels maybe I'll stop him from going."

"Why don't you. You know stop him?" I slipped my hand over her breast around her neck. I gently pulled her to me. "Tell me mom. Why don't you stop him?"

I could feel her breath on my face. I could smell her perfume. Her hand went to my lap.

"I don't stop him because I want you Daniel. I know it doesn't make sense, but I do. Not the sex mind you. I would still let him go just to be alone with you sex or not." She found my dick it was getting hard. Sally stroked me outside my slacks. "But I do so want you that way too. We both do. We both know it Daniel, I want you to fuck me!"

"Sally I would never fuck you. Not for him." I said pissed he would cheat on her. "But if you let me I'll make love to you any way you want. But just for you!" I pulled her into a kiss she gripped my cock and squeezed.

"Come my son. Your mother needs you tonight." I opened the door the car lit up I could see the desire she had. I walked around and opened her door and held my hand out. Sally took my hand, I helped her up she filled my arms. We kissed, the door closed, she held me tight.

"Fuck me Danny. Fuck me now!" Sally pleaded. In the dim light I could see she was serious.

"Here? Now?"

She pulled at my belt then she lowered my slacks. I raised the hem of her dress, she released my cock.

"Daniel just put it in me!" Her voice dripping in desperation.

I lifted her onto the front fender the light in the car went out just as I pulled her panties to one side and started feeding her my cock!

"Thank you Kathryn! Thank you Nikki! Thank you Daniel!" Sally moaned.

Sally thrust her head forward she kissed me as my cock slipped deeper and deeper.

"Oh my goodness they are right. You are special!" Sally was starting to wiggle on the cars fender.

I was still dressed, my pants on the floor. Sally still had her dress on her panties scraped the side of my cock. I could almost feel her eyes being closed. Her legs splayed she wrapped them around my thighs. Her calves pulled me into her pussy with purpose. Sally's arms wrapped around my neck she pulled me into a bear hug her tits mashed into my chest. Her legs pulled harder. I could hear the slapping of our bodies. Her cunt was sopping the distinct sound of fluid being churned filled the air.

"Yes. Oh god yes. Feel me darling. Feel my pussy love you!" She gasped for air as she thrust her hips. One last plunge and her cunt gripped my cock milking it. It started like a shiver, subtle at first, she convulsed and then it built into a tremble.

"So good darling. So good. Your cock feels so good in my shameless pussy! God Danny. I do love it. I love you!" She pulled against my neck and slammed down on my cock.

Her ass slapped the fender I could feel the car give below her. Then it was over. Sally just held me then found my mouth for a kiss. I was still hard, still balls deep in her pussy. I was excited but she came so quickly I hardly had a chance to.

"I'm sorry honey did I cum too soon?" Sally asked. I pulled my cock from her, she sighed in disappointment.

"No way. That was awesome!" I reached down and pulled my pants up.

"Where are you going?" She asked.

"I want to see the other dress. The one you took off when you changed." Sally slipped off the car I could hear the metal pop.

"You do, do you?" She squealed.

"And I want to watch you put it on. So I can watch you take it off!" I teased her.

"Come with me big boy!"

I hit the car remote the headlights came on we found the door to the house and walked in. Her dress was disheveled my clothes looked Like I had worn them for a week. Sally slipped her panties off and dropped them just inside the door from the garage.

"Don't you dare move them!" She warned me.

I smiled as I walked past knowing she would leave them until he came home. Sally led me down the hall. She made me strip then passed by my room. Naked she led me to their bedroom on a chair I saw a red dress draped over the arm. Sally turned her back to me pointing to the clasp. I unhooked it and lowered the zipper. The dress opened. I wrapped my arms through it and gripped her luscious tits.

"Now, now, son. Let's not start that just yet." She giggled. Sally pushed back into my arms I kissed the back of her neck and the top of her shoulders.

Sally whimpered as I did this. I slipped the dress over her hips and the straps of her garter. The dress pooled on the floor. Her bare ass framed in the straps pushed back against my growing boner. I raised my hands back under her tits feeling the weight before slipping in front to her nipples. I pinched them lightly and rolled them in my fingers. Sally sighed again.

"Danny!" Her head fell back against my shoulder exposing her neck and the slope of her chest.

"Yes Aunt Sally?" I kissed the nape of her neck. She pushed her ass harder against my cock. I pinched one nipple then slipped my other hand over her stomach to her groin. I felt her the beginning of her bush and raked my fingers through it.

"DANIEL!" Sally squealed as I cupped her pussy.

"Yes my sexy Aunt?" I whispered.

I found her clit and stroked it her hips rotated hoping I would find the spot that needed itching. I knew the spot. I just wasn't ready to let her know it. That would be for later much later.

"You're going to make me cum again!" She thought she was warning me but really she was begging me.

"I hope so! Spread your legs Sally, spread them and open yourself up for my cock." I whispered.

Sally opened her legs. Her pussy lips spread as her hips continued to rotate. She was too low to enter I needed to find something for her to stand on. I scanned the room quickly. The chair with the dress! I led her to it. I guided her into a kneeling position on top of the dress draped over the padded seat. Her hand gripped the straight back her ass faced me her heavy tits hung the nipples full and hard.

"Sally your ass is so beautiful. Can I fuck it?" I asked tempting her.

I heard her gasp as I asked the question. I slipped a finger in her pussy and rubbed her juice on her asshole. She sighed as my finger slipped in her pussy then whimpered when I stroked her puckered hole again.

"Daniel I have never done that! Not with a man!" She replied moaning, I was shocked.

This wanton vixen that smeared pussy juice on her nipples and licked them clean has never done anal? Wait. She said with a man? I moved behind her and slipped my cock in her pussy. She was dripping wet and my balls were telling me it was soon time.

"Well you're going to do it and soon! Tonight I just want your pussy Sally. I want it red and swollen. I want it begging for me to fill it. I want your pussy so happy that you can't sleep tonight!" I hissed.

Sally was responding to my cock. It was deep but not balls deep. She held onto the chair. I could see her tits sway in the mirror.

"Fuck me Danny. Make my pussy happy. Fill it Danny. Hurry fill me up." She was a quick cummer, but this time I was ready for her. I picked up the pace plunging deep in her pussy.

The chair gave her little room to adjust, her tits were slapping her chest. My balls boiled, her breath came quickly. I looked in the mirror her eyes were closed.

"Sally. Open your eyes! Watch me fill your pussy!" She eyes opened we locked on each other in the mirror. I groaned and the first blast shot deep in her cunt. She was off just a bit but when my second wad erupted she clamped down on my cock. Her eyes rolled back in her head for just a moment.

"Yes Danny. Yes. Fill your Aunt Sally's greedy pussy. Make me your lover! Make me beg for your cock. Make me drink your cum. Fuck my ass if you want. Whatever you do keep making me happy like you're doing right now!" Sally rambled on.

I filled her pussy. She almost fell of the chair with her orgasm. I pulled out, we went to the bed. I threw back the covers and started kissing her. Sally's pussy was dripping my cum on the sheets. She looked at the amount and started to smile.

"So much cum. Too bad I didn't show you the dress." She seemed disappointed.

"Mom. I'm your son. There's at least two more where that came from."

"Tonight?" She teased

"Tonight."

"Promise?"

"Oh I definitely promise." I grinned as she stroked my dick gently.

"How about a shower son?"

"Sure mom!" Sally smiled as I scooped her up and carried her into the bathroom.

We washed each other. I watched as she expelled my cum from her pussy. Then a stream of faint yellow piss drained from her bladder. I slipped two fingers in her cunt and felt it wash over my hand. It was warm and just the thought of it seemed so titillating.

Sensing Sally was living out some of her fantasies. I held my semi hard cock and started to pee on her pussy. Sally swooned and grabbed my cock. When the flow started to subside she ducked back under the shower head

"I have always wanted to do that!" Sally gushed. She was flush with desire. She looked up to see how I would react. Disclosing long hidden desires, especially taboo ones requires a certain level of trust. I was honored she would reveal this to me.

"We can do it again later if you want. We can do anything that makes you happy. You can trust me!" I offered.

She stroked my cock with impatience. Empty of piss it started to respond. I fondled her tits, the warm water bounced off her upper slopes. We washed again then dried off. I dried my hair she wrapped hers in a towel when I was done we dried hers. Back in the bedroom I held up the red dress.

"Now I want to see what I missed." I moved to the chair she was bent over earlier. It was near her vanity across from the closet and dresser.

Sally gave me a coy smile and went to her dresser drawer. She pulled out a red garter and secured it in place, next was the sheer red stockings. After she secured them to the garters she pulled out a pair of red crotch less panties. Slowly she bent showing me her ass and back of her pussy.

Sally pulled the panties up covering for now the treasures below and went back to the drawer. She pulled out a red matching bra and put it in place, her nipples quite visible. Her tits overflowed the garment pushing the excess to the center to narrow her cleavage.

Sally held up the dress and slipped it on. This one was sexy. Her bra was barely covered you could still see her nipples if you looked close enough, and I was. The hem ended about four inches below her ass and clung tight to her wonderful thighs. Sally walked to the closet and came back with a pair of matching red high heels. She was stunning. Even without makeup and jewelry she was smoking hot.

"Do you like?" She knew I did. My cock was straining to grow bigger. She turned slowly and showed me her ass.

"Mom, you look breathtaking! I can assure you we would have never made it out the door if you would have worn that earlier."

"Danny are you just saying that?" Sally seemed truly interested in my answer.

"Aunt Sally that is one of the sexiest outfits I have ever seen any woman wear!" I motioned for her to come closer she took my extended hand I pulled her next to the chair.

I slipped my hand under the dress and caressed her ample ass. My fingers slipped forward her pussy was dripping, the slit in the panties parted so I touch her wetness. Sally mewed as I touched her meaty pussy lips. I pulled back and spanked her ass lightly she bent forward to give me better access.

"You want to be naughty when you wear this. Don't you?" I teased. Sally bent over and licked my cock.

"Yes baby I do!" She engulfed my cock and started to suck me off. I reached around and fingered her pussy.

I squeezed a hanging tit and pinched her nipple she was getting ready to cum! God was she excited. I never met a woman that could cum so easily. I pulled her off my cock.

"Fuck me mom. I want your pussy all night!" Sally swung her legs over mine and slipped my cock through the opening in her panties and deep in her cunt!

"Son, you feel so good inside me!"

"It feels so good being inside you!" We kissed and kissed some more.

"Danny, can I tell you something?" Sally whispered as I thrust in her.

"Sure mom, what?" Her breath was shallow. Her chest heaved. Her nipples strained inside the dress.

"I want to wear this for you!" Sally moaned. I picked her up fucking her pussy so hard.

"You are. You look stunning!"

"No. I want to wear it for you in public. I want everyone to see what piece of ass I am. I want them to know you're fucking me!" Sally slammed down on my cock. She bit the top of my shoulder. I could feel the pain as she clamped down. "I have always wanted to be that woman! Just once I want to be a dirty little whore!"

It was like a dam had burst. Sally was telling me all of her darkest secrets. Her most intimate desires.

"Cum for me whore!" I gasped.

I filled her until she groaned, then she started to tremble. "Danny's mom is a whore and I get to show her off! Cum bitch! Show me you have what it takes!" I growled.

Sally fell forward on me. I lifted her ass and drove her pussy down on my cock. She was babbling something about how she was my whore and needed to be used like one. She shuddered as her climax subsided. My cock and balls drenched in her cum. I lifted her off me and carried her to the bed. We left a stain on the chair. I think she was happy about that.

On the bed I slowly started to undress her.

"We will need to go where no one knows us, you know?" I explained. Sally looked at me in disbelief. "It will have to be where kids aren't allowed. A bar or something."

"Danny you are serious?" She asked. I grinned at her.

"Only if you are. Only if it will make you happy?"

Sally sunk back in the bed I continued to remove her clothes. She helped remove her dress, her bra was quite sexy. I slipped my fingers in the waist of her panties. She wiggled out, I traced back up her leg to her pussy. I dipped two fingers in and then fed them to her. She eagerly cleaned my fingers. I returned to her snatch and dipped again this time I pulled her tit from the bra and coated her nipple.

Sally pulled her tit and willingly cleaned it off.

"I never get tired of watching you do that!" I grinned.

"I never get tired of doing it for you. You love my tits don't you?" She purred.

"I do. Mostly because they are attached to you!" I teased. "I love how uninhibited you are letting me watch you enjoy them."

"Danny I do that just for you. Only you. You are the only one I feel comfortable telling these thing to. I trust you. I know you only want to make me happy. I have so many fantasies I want to try. I want you to be the one I do them with!" Sally looked at me hoping she could trust me.

I rolled Sally on top of me she impaled herself on my boner the first chance she got. I reached behind and released her bra. Her tit's spilled out from the cups. I reached for one and lowered it to my mouth. I sucked the nipple Sally exhaled as I drew it deep in my mouth.

"I don't know what feels better you sucking my nipple or your cock stretching my pussy!" Sally teased.

She was rubbing her clit on my pelvis. Pushing back until her cunt could take no more. She rose up until my cock almost slipped out and slammed down on her clit before doing it all over again. All I could think of is her list of fantasies and how I was going to be part of them.

I looked on as her pussy splayed open. Her course pussy hair matted with our excitement. I could feel the start of something special deep inside my balls. This wonderful woman, ordinary in so many ways, so extraordinary in so many others, was a sexual dynamo. Our coupling delayed for so long was no mistake. We were meant to be here. Like Kat, Nikki, and, Eve there was a force that just seemed to bring us together.

"Danny!" Her body was again flush her eyes focused on mine. "I need to cum honey. tell me..." Sally ground her clit one more time. "Tell me ..."

"You can cum!" I told her.

"No baby. Tell me..." I was ready to shoot with her.

"Mom. It's ok. I am going to cum too!"

"NO darling. Tell me..." She was desperate. She looked deep in my soul our gaze unbroken.

"Sally! I love you!"

"YES!" Her pussy was a blur on my cock. There was no warning, no tremor, no grinding just hard fast fucking. I was pushing my hips up spewing my molten cum deep in her pussy.

"Yes. Yes. Yes!" Sally hissed in time with the slap of our sexes.

Her arms gave way she melted on top of me. We were both completely spent. I could feel her heart beat as she lay motionless on top of me. I stroked her hair and kissed her head. She found her strength and moved to kiss me.

"I can't remember a night I'll cherish more than tonight. I love you Daniel Masters. You have made an old woman very happy."

"A sexy woman!" I corrected her.

"A sexy old woman?" She corrected me.

"A very naughty. Very spontaneous. Very immodest. Very wanton. Very sexual. Woman! That I love deeply!" I rolled her off and slipped next to her.

"What are you doing?" Sally asked as I tried to spread her legs.

"Taking one more item off your list!" I plunged two fingers in her oozing cunt and coated them with our cum I smeared them on her tit. Sally laughed at my offer as she sucked her tit clean. We both scooped from her pussy all we could gather and coated her tits until she begged me to stop. I covered us up and we slept just like that.

In the morning she woke me with my cock in her mouth. I explained I needed to pee. Sally followed me into the bathroom insisting she hold my penis while I pissed. It was a challenge giving up control but she was thrilled to be doing it. I promised she could do it again in the future. We headed back to bed and lay naked caressing each other.

Something had bothered me for some time. There never seemed a right time to ask. But if she trusted me I needed to trust her.

"Sally. Was Duane really able to influence me like that? I asked.

Sally was shocked by my question. We all had thought Duane was put to bed by now.

"What do you think?" She asked.

"I'm wondering if I made him up." I replied. "You know. A way to cope with feelings I was conflicted with. Feelings I have for mom and Nikki."

"I'm not sure I can answer that. It could have been real, but then you always were a very smart young man. You could have made it up." She replied.

"But you felt him too? And Eve!" I tried to explain.

"But we only felt what you projected. What you felt. Even if it came from the other side it was what you projected to them." She took my hand between hers. She closed her eyes and held me still.

"So I could have made it all up in my mind?" I questioned. "Kind of like a dream I controlled?"

"I'm not sure I could explain it better." Sally said. "It could have been a way you found to protect yourself emotionally. A way to overcome Duane's abuse of you and Kat."

"What about Kyle?" I asked. "Even Nikki felt him!"

"Did she? Or did she feel the part of Kyle you wanted her to remember?" Sally questioned. The good part."

"But the football. How would I remember that as a clue but not remember that after?" It was all getting jumbled now.

"Could it be you didn't want to promote yourself?" She made me consider. "Maybe your plan all along was to make her want to find out?"

What do you think?" I asked Sally.

"I think only you will ever know." She said. "Trust your instincts Danny. They have guided you well."

"Will they come back?" I questioned her.

"I guess that depends on if you need them to?" Sally kissed me. "Daniel you have matured so much in a short period of time. My guess is you will see very little of them in the future!" Sally kissed me again.

"I hope you are right." I offered. "It would be nice if I knew for sure."

Sally kissed my hand a warm feeling passed through me. She knew and now so did I.

Chapter 6

It was odd waking up in another mans bed, especially with his woman. The fact that he was with another woman didn't make much difference to me. This was my uncle and I didn't want to embarrass him in the slightest.

"Do you need help changing the sheets?" I asked.

"No. it can wait until tomorrow." Sally said without hesitation.

"Do you think that wise?" I asked bluntly. Sally seemed offended by my questioning.

"What do you suggest? Write him a note telling him you fucked his wife? Maybe we should have taken pictures?" Sally snapped back.

I don't know if she was feeling guilty or just mad because he was with another woman. I knew this wasn't like her though, she loved the man. I walked over to her she turned her back as if to shun me. I put my arms around her and pulled her tight.

"Do you want to win the battle but lose the war?" I turned her she could see I was on her side. "He's my uncle. This isn't easy for him either. He'll know without me rubbing his nose in it."

"But how?" Sally was tearing up. "He needs to know how it feels!"

"Trust me, he will know. He knew how it felt the minute he gave us permission. Sometimes not knowing is worse." I kissed her passionately. "Trust me. If he is happy you will be happier because of it."

We stripped the bed and started the laundry. We showered together but didn't do anything more than just grope. Sally wore just the robe Sharon got us all with nothing underneath. Just the robe. I knew she felt liberated. More than once I slipped my hands through the folds and gripped her ass as we kissed.

I stayed until after lunch. I thought we might fuck again but she said her pussy was too sore, and she didn't want to move down the list too fast. I kissed her tits and then her goodbye. I stopped at the back door and picked up the panties from last night.

"Daniel!" Sally scolded.

"Just a souvenir." I slipped them in my pocket. I knew she meant to leave them for George to see. "Trust me. This way will be much better."

I arrived home Kat and Nikki were glad to see me, and I them. Nikki ran to me and kissed me then searched my pocket.

"You finally did it! Tell us all about it!" Nikki squealed. Sally had obviously called them and filled them in. How else would they know about the panties?

"She was happy when I left." I looked at mom. She laughed at Nikki's attempt to trick me into saying something juicy.

"Aw. Danny that we already know!" Nikki protested.

"Then she can tell you the rest. A gentleman never..."

"Kisses and tells!" Nikki finished the sentence. I sat by Kat and kissed her hello.

"I think we know enough for now." Mom replied. Nikki sat on my lap pouting.

"You're just no fun!" Nikki teased.

"Is that what she told you?" I teased back.

"You're mean I hate you!" I kissed her and held her tight.

"I know. That is why I love you both so much!"

That week I got a letter in the mail from George. I opened it and inside were two tickets to a play at the local theater. This was small scale stuff, but reviews were good. I read the card. 'If I remember right she likes plays as much as dancing.' Behind the tickets was a gift card for a local seafood restaurant with the time of our reservation.

If there was any doubt if he knew that removed it. I called Sally when I knew George was working and told her about our upcoming date. That Friday she didn't wear the red dress, even back at the house. There was just no time to fit it in our active night. I would even go so far to say she might like the theater even more than dancing!

In early August I came home from work to find Nikki, Kat and Nikki's mom Mary at the kitchen counter. I said hello sat my briefcase down and loosened my tie. I walked to Mary giving her a quick kiss on the cheek and then Kat one on the lips. I went to Nikki. She kissed me then held my hand.

"So what brings you all together at this time of day?" I looked at my watch. "Going someplace?"

"More like coming from some place!" Mary said. They all looked at each other and giggled.

"Oh really. Was there a big sale down at the mall or something?" I teased.

"More like the doctors." Kat smiled. Nikki squeezed my hand.

"Oh? Is everything all right? I looked at each of them concerned something was wrong. They both looked at Nikki.

"Everything is perfect! Danny, I'm pregnant!" Nikki jumped into my arms and kissed me several times.

"Really!" I looked at Kat and Marry.

They were nodding and smiling. I know it's dumb. Why would Nikki lie about such a thing? But I am still a guy and news like this, even though I should be expecting it's still profound. Life changing in fact.

"Really!" She squealed. Nikki was so happy. It was so great to see how much she wanted this.

"Well, this is cause for a celebration!" I responded.

And celebrate we did. That night and many more. Thanksgiving came and went. Christmas, and even New Year's Eve 2003. The only thing of note was Becky came alone this year. Tina stayed behind in Dallas. I never knew why but I had my suspicions.

February and March were a months of patience and celebration. Nikki's hormones were working overtime. She was starving one minute then crying the next. It was an emotional roller coaster. Kat and Mary kept watch making sure she followed doctors' orders. Nikki was doing great, her belly swollen

with our child. Her areola's became darker her nipples thicker. Her breast size grew the weight pulling them down as they filled with milk.

Kat's breasts were filling out too. She and Nikki used a pump on her breasts since the first of the year. Her milk had come in, not enough to sustain a baby but the doctor told her that would change in time.

Sex with them both was interesting. Nikki wanted it more. I think it made her still feel sexy. Nikki liked it most when she was on top. Her big belly and massive tits a treat to look at. Kat refused me her ass. She allowed me to only fuck her pussy. I was only too willing to oblige, not sure why the change of heart. I do know this. They spent more nights together than before. I am not complaining. I had my share of sex. But sleeping alone was for the birds!

About this time I had a client that was interested in a house, a big sale. Bigger than any I had sold to date. I showed them several options. They seemed interested in a house I wasn't happy showing them. I knew houses. I knew what to look for and what they should sell for.

If a house was properly maintained and the new owners wanted to pay a premium for it, I knew they were getting a good deal especially for the person who doesn't have the time or experience to do it themselves. Conversely if a buyer was trying to save some money now and was able to put in sweat equity later they might get more of a home than they could normally afford. Great by me.

These clients wanted to buy a home that was in a great location but this home was never maintained. They had an inspection done and it came back confirming my suspicions. I tried to steer the owners from the house. It was at the upper end of their budget, they weren't the type of people that could do the work themselves, and the house was way overpriced.

I talked to Art and told him my concerns.

"Art I just can't in good conscience let them buy that house. Not at the price that they want to pay! The seller refuses to even offer a warranty!"

"Daniel look at the commission you'll make!" Art started to pressure me a bit.

"Art what do I tell them three months from now when the house falls down around them? I got my money?" I looked at him, he seemed disappointed at my argument.

"Dan if they want the house. Let them buy it. It's their decision." He argued.

"Art I'm supposed to be representing THEIR best interests. Not mine." He seemed unconvinced.

"Daniel let your instincts be your guide." It was words from my past that I didn't expect from him.

"You'll support me either way?" I looked at him.

"I will." Art replied.

The next day I informed the clients I couldn't in good conscience help them buy the house they so desperately wanted at the price they were willing to pay. I again pointed out the inspectors comments, explained there would be no warranty and explained the price was too high. They still wanted the home.

I released them of all obligation to me and thanked them for allowing me to be of service. They did buy the house through another agency. Art wasn't happy with me, but he was a man of his word and supported me.

Soon the word was out about the fool kid realtor that gave away commissions. I slept comfortably knowing I did the right thing. Several months later Art put a newspaper article on my desk about a couple that was suing a real estate company and their salesperson for deceptive practices.

'Thanks' was written above it in red marker. It was the same house. I figured I might get called into testify on it but the real estate company settled out of court. One day the same couple shows up at my office wanting to see me. They had money to spend and needed a person they could trust to find them a home.

Art was proud I stood up even to him. I don't know if it was the reason my sales picked up, but it sure helped with a growing family to support.

Sally and I still spent almost every Friday night together, mostly at her house. We didn't have sex every week but there was still plenty of hugging and kissing. Some weeks she would come see Kat and Nikki on Saturday. There were a couple of times she came to our house Friday night. We would make love and then she would sleep with me, or go downstairs with Kat. Nikki would come sleep with me. I never quite got a handle on her and mom. I knew they were close, but never knew how that started.

Over the last couple of years I did spend some time with moms boss Sharon. The early months is was very infrequent maybe once or twice every three months or so. She always came to our home so she could spend time with Nikki and Kat as well.

Sharon was the only one I wasn't directly related to, and I was her only male companion. I am not sure what she got from me other than a stiff dick, hopefully something. I learned so much from her about confidence, timing and most of all enjoying the moment.

With her there wasn't a tomorrow unless we wanted there to be one. We had no commitment other than to enjoy our time together. That would prove crucial

in the future. I noticed lately she has been coming around more often and only spending time with me.

Eve and I enjoyed each other's company only occasionally. With her in Florida it was just not convenient. When we did see each other it was usually with the whole family around so private times were few and far between.

Still we were able to steal away some time on occasion and pleasured each other in very memorable ways. Our bond was based on more than sex but Eve seemed to need that connection and I was more than eager to keep her happy.

The middle of March the wonder of life came into our lives. Kyle Charles Masters was born. We named him after her brother Kyle and my grandfather Charles. It was also my middle name but I seldom used it. With everyone healthy we were all happy.

We were going to need a bigger house, not because of the baby but from all the visitors. We changed the sleeping arrangements. I moved downstairs the women shared the upstairs bedroom. The baby was in the main room.

With two milk producing mothers the kid had his choice of tits to suckle. He wasn't alone. I myself indulged when the need arose, as did almost weekly. The biggest surprise was how Kat and Nikki would latch onto each other's tit and suckle at the same time!

Nikki was able to work from home for a couple of days each week. Kat went on four days, and Sally came for the other two.

I of course had my obligations and was involved in no small way.

After almost two months of no intercourse Nikki was more than ready to spend a night curled up with me. Mom was upstairs with Kyle no doubt the little man

was taking advantage of her engorged tits. Nikki was a bit self-conscience as she stripped down to her panties.

"I hope you don't think I'm too gross." She offered.

"Honey, you just gave birth to our baby! You look great!" I pulled her to me as I sat on the bed her full tit's at the same level as my mouth. "Besides with tits like these I may never get to the rest of you." I teased.

"You think I'll be all stretched out?" She looked at her pussy.

"I think you think too much. You're my wife and I love you." I spanked her ass cheek lightly.

"Will you shave me first? I always feel sexier when I can feel your cock against my skin!"

"My pleasure." I went and got a towel and the supplies and before long her pussy was once again hairless.

I washed her clean and then while I was there started to lick her pussy. With mom as her lover we seldom did this. Seems men just don't do it as well. But this seemed like a good way to get her going. I must have been doing something right as it didn't take long for her first mini orgasm to wash through her body.

"Put it in me!" Nikki hissed. I moved between her legs and lined my cock to her entrance. Nikki was good and wet so I started to push in slowly. I was barely in when she cried out. "Danny stop!"

I froze she looked up at me.

"You ok?" I asked. She smiled oddly.

"I don't think we need to worry about me being stretched out." She looked down just the head was in. "Can I be on top?"

I pulled from her pussy, we switched positions, Nikki stroked my cock then lined it up with her pussy. We both watched as she started and then stopped. She waited several seconds and then started again. I was almost half way in when she wiggled her hips and slipped all the way down to my balls.

"Oh Daniel that feels so good! It was like when you fuck my ass. The first little bit's so tight and then it just feels like you can't get enough!" Nikki was beaming.

Her pussy was easily as tight as before but now she could take my whole length on the first stroke. Nikki looked down and saw I was buried in her pussy. She wiggled her hips my balls caressed her ass cheeks.

"I did. I finally did it!" She squealed. "Oh my god that feels so wicked."

Nikki pumped her pussy on my cock then pulled off until just the tip was touching her lips. She did a quick measure with her hand and wrist and then slipped down over my cock until I was fully embedded in her pussy. She measured again on her stomach and pointed to where she thought the tip of my cock was. She looked at me her eyes grew large and laughed.

"Danny that is so not right!" I grinned as she stroked my cock with her pussy. Her stomach was a bit soft and jelly like, her tits started to leak. Just the thought of what Nikki went through weeks ago only made her more desirable.

Tonight this was about getting Nikki comfortable with her body for now. I wanted her to know she was still sexy. Nikki picked up the pace I could tell

she was warming up and her massive milk filled tits was doing it for me. I latched onto one and sucked some milk in my mouth.

Nikki moaned her pussy contracted I could feel my cum starting to build. I was going to let loose of her tit but she put a hand around the back of my head and held me firm. I suckled some more she ground her pussy on me. I raised to meet her. I sucked harder, her milk was letting down. My mouth filled with the sweet fluid.

"Yes baby. Milk me. Fuck me and fill me with your cum!" Her voice was deep and hoarse. I was starting to cum. I wanted to tell her but she wouldn't let me go from her tit. I sucked again as my pelvis slammed into hers. My cock started spewing deep in her pussy.

"I feel it baby. Cum in me. Momma's going to cum soon!" She mashed my face into her tit more firmly I sucked again and then she went wild. She started to fuck my cock faster and faster.

"Momma's cumming. Momma's cumming...momma's cumming!" She ground down on my cock her clit pressed hard into me and then she fell on top of me. I could feel our cum leak out of her pussy. Her tit's leaked all over my chest.

"I love you Nikki!"

"Oh Danny that was so good. I love you!" Nikki sighed then kissed me as her tit's kept leaking. "I think you need to empty these or we may need a boat." She teased.

I didn't need to be asked twice. In what would become a rare occurrence I relieved Nikki's swollen tits of their precious nectar. We frolicked and teased each other, caressing and kissing for almost an hour. Only when I felt confident Nikki was satisfied about not only her place in my heart but our bed did we go to sleep.

The next night Kat knocked on my door. I was looking at some listings for the next day.

"Door's open" I looked up she was wearing just the robe and an impish smile. In her hand she had a bottle of lube and some towels.

"I need a place to sleep. Do you have room?" She grinned.

I could see small wet spot starting to form at her nipples, her pussy flush and damp. Kat was excited and dripping from both ends. I collected my paperwork and placed it in my briefcase. I stowed it away and went to her wearing just some boxers. By the time I reached her I was hard.

"I have room but I'm not sleepy yet!" I replied.

I slipped my arms inside the robe and around her back. We kissed like lovers wet and long. "I've missed you!"

"I've been here all along!" She teased.

"Not all of you." I squeezed her ass.

"Well I think we can fix that now that we're all back on the same page." I looked at her oddly. "Nikki couldn't have intercourse because of the baby so I gave up what I love too. If we are to both be moms, we both needed to have sacrifices."

"But you and I engaged in intercourse?" I couldn't see the logic.

"Well we had to keep you from finding another woman to keep you happy." Mom teased me. "Now throw me on the bed and fuck my ass until you fill it full!"

We kissed and then stripped. She was on her hands and knees and was lubed up and ready to go. I started to spread her asshole as she pushed back.

"Here comes the best part!" Mom leaned back, the head of my cock expanded her sphincter and it closed tight behind the glands. "Oh god I love that feeling!"

We didn't stop there. I fucked her slow, fast and even reached around and milked her tit's while I fucked her ass. She squealed, moaned and begged me to pound her harder. When I finally was ready to fill her bottom I found her clit and strummed it gently.

"Oh baby, that's it, make momma cum. So good... fill my ass..." Kat was now squeezing her own tit. Milk was spraying all over the bed.

"Here it comes mom. Oh god your ass is so fucking sexy!" I groaned.

I pumped her ass full of cum as she climaxed with me.

"I love you Danny. I love the way you make me feel as part of your family!"

I pulled out of her, we cleaned up quickly with the towels. She faced me and we kissed for several minutes.

"You are my family. You are just as much a part of this to me as if you had given birth. Never forget that." I explained.

I moved down and suckled on one tit until it filled my mouth. I then switched to the other tit until it started to flow. I switched back and forth quickly.

Kat started giggling then pushed me away playfully

"You do that just like you did when you nursed from us when you were a baby!"

I looked up at her. The playfulness stopped.

"What did you just say?" I moved to look into her eyes.

"Nothing. It wasn't anything."

"You said 'us' Kathryn! We have no secrets!" I chided her.

She looked off in the distance then back at me. I felt her apprehension. "Mom, tell me please."

"It was your Aunt Sally's idea for me to nurse you. We read some articles and talked to the doctor. He explained it was very common but the nursing without birth may not produce enough milk. Sally decided that if we both did it we would have plenty for you." Kat looked at me to see how I was taking this.

"Go on."

"Well George wasn't so keen on the whole thing back then, so each day while he and Duane were at work we would take turns pumping our breasts until our milk came in. Sally would come over each morning and feed you throughout the day. I would feed you at night."

"Did George ever find out?"

"If he did Sally never told me. So you see when she calls you her son, she is as much your mother as I am!"

"So is that when the two of you started as lovers?" I asked. Kat looked surprised I would ask the question.

"We kissed some. Sally would sometimes have little orgasms when you suckled her. I did finish her off a couple times when she was close and you fell asleep."

"And you stopped why?" I pressed on.

"Sally isn't really drawn to other women. It was more of a way to help me cope with Duane. When he passed we got together occasionally. One day you caught us naked together. After that we just kind of stopped."

"I don't even remember that!"

"Well it was a long time ago." She caressed my cheek.

"You missed her didn't you?"

"I did. But you have brought us all back together." Kat replied.

We took showers and went up to sleep with Nikki. She had Kyle with her. It was the first time we all slept together since the baby was born.

As we all know things come in threes. I got married, was involved with Eve, Sally, and Sharon. I started a family with Nikki and had a healthy child. I am

more than blessed, I know that, and I appreciate every minute. I try my best to live a good life and treat people fairly and with respect.

I had my associate's degree and continued to take classes when I could to get my bachelor's degree. Houses were selling fine. I wasn't the top producer but held my own. Art was still happy with me. He and I even talked about future options.

Spring was great. We didn't go to Florida this year with Kyle being so young, that and with all the time off we decided to wait until a later date. I had just started taking a few classes and getting my schedule worked out. I came home just before lunch I saw Mary's car in the drive. I knew Nikki was home today so I thought nothing of it. I walked in the door with my usual pleasant greeting as I saw them sitting on the couch.

"Hello beautiful ladies!" I announced.

Nikki looked up at me, she had been crying. Mary looked up she was completely distraught.

"Dan. Becky was found dead last night in a hotel!" Nikki sobbed. She walked to me and pulled me close. I kissed her and followed her to Mary. I sat and put my arm around her mom.

"I'm sorry to hear that. Is there anything I can do?" Mary looked up at me shaking her head. "Kyle?" I asked.

"He's in the room sleeping." Nikki answered.

"Your dad?"

"Mark is on the way to Dallas to identify her." Mary explained.

"Should I call mom?" I looked at Nikki.

"I would appreciate it." I put my other arm around Nikki and held them both for a few minutes.

I called Kat and told her the news. She said she would be home shortly. When mom arrived I left the three of them comforted each other since I had an appointment that I really couldn't miss. Before I left I called Sally, she said she would be right over. I changed and looked after Kyle for a few minutes then handed him off to Sally as I left.

I came home right after my meeting. Sally was alone with Kyle.

"Kat drove Mary home. She was in no condition to drive. Nikki is going to spend the night with her, Kat will be back later." Sally said bringing me up to date.

I took Kyle from her and held him. He looked tired his little eyes just barley open. "I just fed him. Nikki left some bottles before she left. I'll make you some dinner."

I carried Kyle until he was asleep then put him in the crib in my room. I left the door open a crack then sat at the counter as Sally prepared dinner for us.

"What about George?" I looked at the two plates she set out.

"He is going to pick something up on the way home." Sally explained as she moved about.

"I wonder why Mark went without Mary. Shouldn't next of kin do that?" I asked. Sally looked at me like I had lost my mind.

"Daniel. Mark is her next of kin, Becky is his younger sister! Well was." You could have knocked me off the chair with a feather.

"Really? I mean I always assumed she was Mary's sister. They look so similar. And they were always so close when they were together!" I reasoned.

By now I was searching my brain. Mr. I'm so observant missed something as important as that? In my defense I had only met her maybe a dozen times and really hadn't spent any real time with her. Still I was embarrassed with myself.

I guess it had just never came up. Nikki and I rarely talked about Becky. I guess I never asked how she was related. That was so unlike me I thought. Sally smiled at my confusion.

"Danny. Becky was the one that introduced Mary to her brother Mark!" Sally raised her eyebrows like there was more to the story. "You might say Kathryn took Mary's place!"

"You mean Mary and Becky were lovers?" I stammered. No wonder it was never discussed. How could I have missed that too?

"Mary graduated college. Becky if I had my guess wanted to keep her close. So she hooked her up with Mark. He's a bit older than Mary but obviously that wasn't a problem." Sally grinned as she started to fill our plates. "There was even talk about Mark and his sister. No proof mind you, just talk."

"So Mark and Mary. Mark and maybe Becky. Mary and Becky. Becky and Kathryn. Kathryn and Nikki. And now Nikki and me?" My head was spinning. Now I had all of these questions I needed answers to.

"Daniel that is just their family. Let's not even get started on yours!" Sally laughed. She was right. We are one fucked up bunch of people.

"Does Nikki know all of this?" I asked as Sally sat beside me.

"Son I have said too much all ready. You need to talk to Nikki and your mom if you want all the answers." My mom? Why her? Did she have something else she was involved in that I didn't know? This night was starting to remind me of the one that started all of this with Kat and her date years ago. God help me now.

Kat came home I was just getting finished changing Kyles diaper. Sally left about an hour ago. I spent the time alone wondering just what else I didn't know. Mom came to me and we embraced. She asked if I would watch Kyle while she showered.

He and I played, he is such a happy kid. But when all you do is eat and poop how unhappy can you be? Kat came out in her robe. Kyle's eyes lit up as she took him from me. I went and took a shower while I had some time. I returned dressed in my robe too. Kat really didn't know much more. Mark had gotten there and was going to call in the morning.

"Kathryn can I ask you a few questions?" I said. It probably wasn't the right time but it was eating at me.

"Sure Daniel. What is it you want to know?" Kat knew me too well to think this was just chit chat. Besides I called her Kathryn and she called me Daniel.

"I always thought Becky was Mary's sister. I don't know why but I did. Sally says she is Mark's younger sister. She also told me that Mary and Becky were an item at one time." I could see she was getting uncomfortable with where this was going.

"What else did she tell you?" Kat was getting defensive.

"She told me if I wanted to know anything else I should ask you and Nikki." Kat relaxed a bit but was still on edge.

"So now you're asking?" Mom replied.

I had never seen her so defensive. Maybe Becky meant more to her than I thought.

"If you want to tell me I would like to know. If not I can live with that too!" I said. Kat sat there Kyle was getting a little restless. I waited an appropriate time. She didn't offer. "We've had a rough day, I say we get some sleep."

I offered Kat my hand she took it and we headed upstairs. Kyle was hungry. He could probably smell the milk in her tits as she carried him to the bedroom.

"Danny come lay with me!" Mom suggested.

Kat took Kyle and laid him on one side of the bed on a thick towel. Kat stripped and offered him a nipple. She looked at me and indicated I should spoon behind her.

"I need you in me." She whispered.

I had no problem with that. I moved closer. Her free hand gripped my cock and stroked it. As I grew hard she urged me to move closer. I shifted directly behind her she lifted her leg slightly, my cock was searching for the entrance to her pussy. Deftly I found what we both wanted as I started to slip deeper in her. Kyle was suckling making cooing noises as he fed on her tit.

"Mom it's ok. I'm here for you and Nikki. Just relax and let me make you happy!" I whispered.

As I moved deeper her pussy started to respond to my steady strokes. Before long her hips rotated, the cheeks of her ass pushed back into me hard. I could hear Kyle suckling and Kat starting to pant. I knew I couldn't slam into her like I wanted, not with Kyle still feeding. I maintained my steady thrusting then reached around and stroked her clit.

"Yes!" She whispered so as not to startle the baby. "Yes baby. That's what I need!"

I didn't change a thing, her pussy was starting to flow. The sounds of my cock plunging in her gushing twat added to Kyles soft cooing sounds.

"Cum in me Danny. Fill me with your love." Kat started to wiggle her ass, my fingers danced around her clit. I hadn't even thought of cumming but now it was all I could think of. "Hurry baby. I need it. Oh god how I need it soon"

I picked up the pace but was still trying to be gentle.

"Mom. I'm going to cum!" It hit like a bolt of lightning. Kat slammed back her ass smacked against me.

"Do it Danny. Do me!" I could tell she was joining me as her body jerked on my cock.

Cum spilled from her pussy. Her moans muted for Kyle's sake. I pumped and pumped her hand tore mine from her clit. She gripped my hand hard as her orgasm raced through her body. Out of breath and completely spent I felt her body go limp. Suddenly all was quiet, the only sound was the three of us breathing.

I looked over Kat's shoulder. Kyle was fast asleep. His belly full of fresh milk was as satisfied as we were. I moved around and picked him up. With a cloth on my shoulder I burped him before placing him in the crib. Kat had gone to clean up and washed my cock with a warm cloth. Leading me back to bed we resumed her favorite position. My spooning her back.

"I knew Becky was Mark's sister. We were lovers as you know. Mary was her lover before me. I don't know much about how Mark and Mary ended up together." Mom began. "Mary and I had met before of course. Becky made sure of that as you can imagine. I guess we were both a bit envious of each other back then." Kat pushed back deep against me.

"So you never?" I stopped sort of being rude.

"With Mary? No not then. With Mark..." She took my hand and held it firmly.

"Your dad had passed. I was lonely. He told me they had an open marriage. I knew if he was anything like Becky it was probably true. He took me out a couple of times. The second time we ended up in bed." Kat was crying now I could tell.

She wiped her eyes. "Mary confronted me one day. Accused me of being a home wrecker. I explained the situation, funny thing, she believed me. I told her I had broken it off weeks before."

"Was he good?" I wanted to take the words back as soon as I said them. Kat turned to me.

"Daniel!"

"I'm sorry. It just kind of came out!" Kat looked at me knowing she might as well tell me.

"He was much like his sister. Rough, demanding, good to a point. You've been with several women are we all the same?"

"No!" I said a bit too quickly.

"Who's better? Who's the best?" Kat was teasing me now. I refused to answer. "So you do understand each person is different. Not necessarily better or worse. You get something different from each one."

"I guess you're right? But still?" I was just digging a deeper hole.

"So what you really want to know is how you stack up? Am I right?" Kat was turning the screws. "The answer is simple. Whose bed am I in right now?" Mom leaned over and kissed me. Our tongues found each other, I wanted that kiss to last forever.

"You stack up much better in other ways too I might add!" Kat whispered as she found my hard cock and stroked it. "Danny you will never need to worry about another man taking your place in my bed as long as you want to be there. Never. I promise!"

We kissed again but I still had questions.

"Mark and Becky. Were they?" I asked.

"I never saw them, Becky never said, I have my suspicions." Mom answered her voice trailing off.

"Becky and Mary? They ever kiss and make up?"

"I can almost guarantee you no. Mary and I became friends. Not close friends, not that way, just friends. You kids were a big part of that. Mary and Mark had some trying times. Mary never came out and said why but I often felt she knew Becky was involved one way or another."

"You said earlier. You and Mary, not then?" I pried. Kat smiled broadly.

"You are as sharp as ever. Have we made love? Not yet. Have we been more than close friends? In a way!" Mom looked at me to see my reaction. I didn't need to answer as my cock grew harder. "I guess I don't need to ask if you are ok with that?"

Kat squeezed my cock then stroked it.

"You know I wouldn't stop that!" I kissed her. She moved on top of me. Her damp pussy slipped over my cock.

"I think my son likes his mommy having so many girlfriends!"

"What about Nikki?" I asked wondering how she would feel if her mom and mine got together.

"What about Nikki as in, would she be ok with Mary and me? Or what about Nikki as in she and Mary being lovers?" My cock swelled deep in mom's pussy! I almost came at the thought of it! "That my son, you need to ask your wife."

"Mom!" I protested.

"Don't get your hopes up just yet. This is a very difficult time for her family. You are a very inquisitive man. This is something you need to have patience

with." Kat bent over offering me a kiss. "Now this time I want you to pound my pussy until I beg you to stop. And it better be full of love!

I did and she was. I was so drained I didn't even hear Kyle cry before she fed him her other tit.

Mark called the next day explaining that the cause of death was asphyxiation. Becky was with some other people engaged in sex acts experimenting with oxygen deprivation when it got out of hand. Becky and another woman were together, police think they both lost conciseness about the same time. The other woman is still in the hospital and they aren't sure if she will recover fully. Mark was planning to fly back in a couple days with her body.

It was almost a week before he came back. I'm not quite sure why there was that much of a delay. Tina was with him she looked much different since I last saw her. She seemed edgier. Her tattoos and piercings that were much bigger and she dressed like a much younger woman than she was.

The funeral was a solemn affair. The service attended by few outside the family. Mary was especially emotional. Somehow I got the feeling it wasn't all about Becky's passing. It was a feeling I couldn't shake. Based on lessons from my youth something wasn't right. I filed this away for another day.

One night shortly after the funeral Mary had left our house after spending time with Nikki, Kat, and Kyle. After putting Kyle to bed upstairs. We sat in the living room talking about Becky over a glass of wine. I listened as Nikki talked about Tina and how she had changed.

Tina was still at her parents' house and it seemed to be a sore subject with Mary. Nikki talked about how fortunate she felt that she didn't fall under Becky's influence. There was a moment of silence as we all thought about the night at the hotel when we 'rescued' Nikki from Becky.

"I love you two. That could have been me in that room!" Nikki reflected. It was a sobering thought. Kat pulled Nikki to her and gave her quick kiss.

"Nikki, your mom and I would have never let that happen and Becky knew it!"

"Mary? She knew about me and Becky?" Nikki was as shocked as I was.

"Nikki your mom is no dummy, of course she knew. She knew that and a lot more." Kat confided in her younger lover.

"She knew about us?" Nikki asked with a puzzled look.

"Becky was playing with you for leverage against your mother. Becky told her all she knew about you and me as well as your college friends!" Kat explained.

"How do you know this?" Nikki was feeling betrayed.

"Mary told me the day I asked permission for us to spend our first night together!" Nikki and I were both speechless. Nikki looked at me.

"Did you know about this?" She asked accusingly. I was as shocked as she was.

"First I've heard about it." I replied. Which might explain my stupid grin.

"You asked my mother for her permission to be my lover?" Nikki was either pissed or thrilled I couldn't tell which. "And Mary gave you her blessing?" Nikki was taken aback.

The room was silent as she pondered the question she herself had asked. A tear rolled down her cheek. Nikki looked first at me then back to Kat.

"What would you have done if she said no?" Nikki and Kat were both crying now. I rose and went to the counter. I handed each of them a tissue, then set the box between them.

"I don't know honey. I can't even bare to think about it right now." Mom was sobbing. She pulled Nikki into a kiss.

That is the way I left them. Together, crying, kissing, and hugging. I went upstairs, checked in on Kyle and the flopped on the bed. I heard him fuss briefly but he was gone by the time I rolled out of bed to check on him. Hearing footsteps descending the stairs I knew he was in good hands. I went back to bed alone sleeping until morning.

Tina did leave several days later. It came just in time as far as I could tell. The tension in that house was starting to affect Nikki when she visited. Thinking that would be the end of it we went back to our lives, picking up the pieces as we went.

Nikki's parents were still struggling with Becky's passing according to Nikki but my gut told me there was more to that story. Mark left for a several days to settle Becky's affairs. It was over a week later before he returned. Things were getting worse not better.

Finally a month or so later the drama seemed behind us. Fall was looking up for me financially. My sales weren't record breaking, but for me they were steady. Art and I talked often about the business end of the agency. School was doing well, Kat and Nikki were great. Kyle was becoming his own little person as changes were taking place daily now. God how he brought happiness into our lives and of those around us.

I still spent almost every Friday night at Sally's. It became almost normal if you could call it that. Since we didn't go to Florida. Eve visited staying with us. Over the next two weeks she didn't have a night alone.

The day after she left, our world was rocked again. This time Sharon's lover and mother-in-law Val had fallen. She had a broken wrist and was knocked out in the fall. Kat, Nikki, and I went to the hospital after dropping Kyle off at Sally's. Sharon was visibly upset. Doug was inconsolable. The girls went to Sharon as I tried to calm Doug down.

"This can't be happening!" he kept repeating. He looked at me "Daniel you can't let her die!"

I knew nothing about how serious she was. I knew there wasn't anything I could do except try and get him to at least calm down before he made matters worse.

"Doug. I'm sure they are doing everything they can." I hugged him holding him still for just a moment. "Why don't you and I go get a cup of coffee? We'll come right back, I promise!"

I released him from my grasp. I took his hand and led him down the hall. We went to the cafeteria where I got him a coffee and a water for me. "Doug, are you going to be ok?"

"She can't die Danny. She can't! "Oh what will happen to me without her?" He was rambling on like he was ten.

"Doug, think of Sharon and the kids. They need you right now. You need to be strong!" I tried to impress upon him.

"We have got to get back there! She needs me. Oh god don't let her die!" He was getting dramatic again.

"If you take her, take me with you!" He was yelling in the cafeteria.

People were looking and started getting nervous. I got up taking his hand like he was a kid. We left to go back to the waiting room. Kat and Nikki sat quietly with Sharon where the mood was somber but not negative. I offered to stay but Mom stayed instead. Val was in an induced coma. Her brain was swelling and they were trying to get it under control.

"If there is anything we can do please call." I told Sharon with Nikki beside me.

"The kids are with my sister. They should be ok for a day or two if needed." Sharon explained.

"We'll stop by tomorrow and check in on the two of you." I said. We all looked in the direction of Doug.

"Thanks for leaving Kat. I think she may be the most help." Sharon replied giving me a weak smile.

I kissed her cheek, Nikki leaned in and kissed her on the lips. She slipped her tongue between Sharon's lips, Sharon hesitated then did the same to Nikki. Nikki held her after they parted and caressed her cheek.

"If you need Danny, now or anytime to get you through this, he's yours. Kat and I insist!" Nikki looked over at Doug before she offered. We all looked over at Kat. She nodded knowing what was said. Sharon started to tear up.

"You are the best friends!" She pulled Nikki back for another kiss this one longer and juicier. "I love you all! Thank you Nikki. Don't be surprised if I take you up on the offer."

Nikki and I left, Sharon went and embraced Kat before we left the room.

"I am proud of you. That was a nice offer!" I said to Nikki as we started for the parking lot.

"Thank you. I was proud of myself too! I'm sure the fact you get to fuck her hasn't anything to do with the smile on your face?" Nikki teased.

Days past with no positive news. Doug did calm down a bit possibly from sheer exhaustion. His male friends even visited on a regular basis. It was odd seeing him with them, he became a whole other person. Sharon was holding up well, it seemed she was more realistic about the probable outcome as days passed.

After four days the news wasn't good at all. I hate to say it, I really do, but on the sixth day Val mercifully passed one night. Doug and Sharon were both there. Kat and I were in the waiting room when it happened as well. Doug left to be with some male friends later that night. I dropped Kat and Sharon off at her house so she wouldn't be alone. We attended the second funeral for the summer. This was a big affair. Hundreds attended the service, the motorcade stretched for many blocks.

Just like after Becky's funeral things began to change. In my youth this was a particularly new experience for me to scrutinize. I observed everyone and everything during these events no detail seemed too small for my obsession. The dynamics between Sharon and Doug changed after that. It became clear Val was the common denominator in their relationship. With her gone they seemed almost strangers.

Kat called me one day just after I closed on a house. Mom wondered if I would be available that night and would I could come straight home after work. I explained I had some paperwork that I was going to do but it could wait. Kat thanked me, she seemed determined, so I told her I would be home on time or before. When I arrived home Kat and Nikki were in the living room

talking. Beside the hall closet was a suitcase and a couple of my suits hanging on a hook.

Nikki and Kat met me at the door.

"Dan we need you to do something for us!" Nikki started.

"So I'm going?" They seemed surprised I had figured it out so soon. Kat glanced over to Nikki.

"I told you he would know the minute he saw his stuff." Kat grinned. Nikki stuck her tongue out at Kat in retaliation.

"We need you to go see Sharon for a couple of days." Nikki explained.

"You sure about this?" I challenged them.

"She needs you Daniel." Kat said clearly, Nikki nodded in agreement. I knew I had no say in this the moment she called me Daniel.

"Ok. Can I kiss Kyle goodbye?" I asked.

Nikki seemed shocked that I accepted so easily. They pointed to my room. He was sleeping in his crib. I kissed him and headed back to the door where Kat handed me my clothes.

"Just so you know. Doug hasn't been home for days!" Kat kissed me. I kissed Nikki goodbye.

I pulled into the drive at Sharon's house. She was standing at the door when I stepped onto the porch.

"Mister Danny!" Sam came running to the door. I had just seen him weeks earlier at the funeral but he always seemed to light up every time he saw me.

"Hi buddy!" I grinned. He pushed the door open and ran into my waiting arms. "My how you're growing!"

Sharon and I locked on each other's eyes for just a moment. I could see the suffering she was going through.

"Hi Danny!" She kissed my cheek lightly as she put her hand on Sam's back. "Thanks for coming."

She looked weary. If Sam wasn't there I'm sure the welcome would have been much different. "We were just getting ready to have dinner. I hope you like hot dogs and tater tots?" Sharon said apologetically. I placed Sam back on his feet where he proceeded to pull me to the kitchen.

"Wow! That's one of my favorite meals!" I overstated. Sam was happy to hear that.

"Mine too! See mom I told you he would like it!" Sam said with pride. He pulled a chair out for me so I could sit next to him.

I can't remember seeing anyone have so much fun eating. It was just the three of us. The other kids were at her sisters. Sam insisted on staying when he heard I was coming. After dinner Sam and I played. He took his bath and I played a video game with him until bed time.

"Mr. Danny are you staying tonight?" He asked.

I looked to Sharon not knowing what to say.

"Yes honey Danny is staying." Sharon explained.

"Can he sleep with me?" Even Sharon was taken aback by the question.

"No Sam. He has work tomorrow and you have school. If he stays with you the two of you will play all night and not get any sleep." Sharon let him down gently.

"Aw, ok! Will he be here in the morning?" Sam had a new angle now.

"Yes honey he will. I promise." Sharon looked at me with a slight smile. "The two of you can have breakfast before school. How would that be?"

"Cool. Goodnight Mr. Danny." Sam headed up to bed Sharon following him.

Shortly after Sharon came back down I stood as she reached the bottom of the steps. Looking back over her shoulder she made sure Sam wasn't following her.

"Thank you for that. He thinks the world of you." She stood at the steps. I stayed across the room at the couch. "I do too. You know that don't you?" She added. I nodded.

We just gazed at each other for a few minutes. I knew why I was there. I knew she was waiting for me to make the first move. But I couldn't. That isn't who I am. I wanted, no, I needed her to make the first move. I opened my arms waist high palms facing her inviting her to come join me. Sharon cocked her head and grinned knowing my dilemma. She sauntered over standing just out of reach.

"You will stay the night won't you?" Sharon whispered.

"I have a suitcase and suits for a week. I'm here for as long as you need I've been told." I replied.

She was touched by the generosity of the ladies who sent me here. Sharon closed the distance between us pulling me down for a kiss. I reached behind her and pulled her tight. I could feel her body melt into mine.

"Bless those women of yours!" Sharon whispered in my ear as her arms still held me around my neck.

"Our women. Sharon. They are yours too!" She tilted her head back and looked into my eyes once again.

"You mean that don't you?" She asked knowing the answer. I just grinned in agreement. "Daniel you really are that special aren't you?" She kissed me again before I could answer.

"You go get your clothes. I'm going to get a glass of wine. Would you like a beer?" She turned and shook her ass as she headed to the kitchen.

"Wine would be fine, if you have enough."

"Oh I have enough. Now hurry, I have waited all night to get you alone!" Sharon laughed.

I went and moved my clothes upstairs to Val's old room. It looked the same but all of her personal stuff was gone. When I came back down Sharon was sitting on the couch she was wearing just the robe we all have. I sat nearest her she leaned back against me.

"I hope you don't mind if I changed into something more comfortable?" She teased. We both took a drink of wine. I took my hands and started to massage her shoulders.

"Are you really going to stay as long as I need you?" She seem intrigued.

"Friday night's I spend at Sally's otherwise I think I can fit you in." I lowered the robe so I could massaged her skin around her neck.

"Does she need you too?" Sharon turned to gauge my reaction. I wasn't sure if she was teasing or was serious.

"I think we need each other. There is something between us I just can't explain." I replied. Sharon could see I was serious.

"And me? Is there something between us...?" Sharon caressed my cheek. "... something you just can't explain?"

"In a way! But with you it's much clearer for me. I find you desirable, strong, confident, but a vulnerability hidden behind confidence. You could easily send me on my way tonight knowing you could handle everything without me. But you didn't, because deep down you know I love you, and although that scares you it makes you happy." I kissed the side of her neck before continuing.

"So we will go upstairs you will have your way with me. Letting me think the whole time I was in charge. I'll do all I can to make you happy, and then when we're done, we will kiss." I surprised her with details. "You will go to your room and I'll stay in mine. We will do that because we are afraid of what will happen if we don't. And I'll love you even more knowing that you did that for me." I finished.

Sharon sat silently for a very long time, her hand on my cheek.

"So you have it all figured out do you?" She smiled.

"No. You are too complex to figure it all out. I was trying to explain what I could." I teased.

"You forgot one very important thing Daniel!" Sharon leaned closer, she kissed me, her tongue slipped past mine. Then she move smoothly onto my lap.

"What's that?" I asked as we broke the kiss.

"Just that I love you too!" She kissed me quickly then stood offering me her hand. "Will you take me upstairs? I want to have my way with you!"

Sharon and I went to the Val's old room she helped me off with my clothes. I lifted the robe off of her. I guided her to the bed and eased her on her back.

Instinctively she spread her legs I slowly worked my way past her tit's and to her waiting sex. I knew she need some relief now so I went right to work. No teasing, no drawing it out, just nice steady cunt licking.

Sharon's juices were flowing, her hands alternated between squeezing her tit's and stroking my hair. Her hips started to push back, my nose rubbed her clit, she was whimpering as she encouraged me on. Her pussy lips were engorged. My face coated with our efforts.

"Deeper Danny. Lick me deeper!" My tired tongue delved in her as far as I could. "There lover right there!" She squealed.

I could feel her pussy rapidly contract on my tongue. Her legs clamped closed. My face and neck took a ride with her pelvis.

"I'm cumming you wonderful man! Damn you are so good at that!" Her hips rolled to one side it was like we were wrestling with my head still clamped between her legs. When Sharon finally let me go she pulled me in for a kiss with desperation.

"In me. Put it in me!" Sharon demanded.

I guided my raging hard-on into her heated pussy. I was about half way in when she groaned loudly.

"God I love your cock! Fuck me Daniel! Fuck me hard!" This was an easy command to follow. Sharon pushed up with her pelvis I slammed down with mine. The sound of too much wetness filled the air. I groaned, she moaned, between us was pure lust. This must have lasted a good ten minutes before she broke the silence.

"Cum in me love. Let me feel it. I need to feel like a woman again. Fuck me Daniel Master's!" Sharon pleaded. I could hold out no longer. Sharon was just too damn desirable.

"Soon baby, cum with me! Squeeze my cock. Milk it baby. Show me how much you want it!" I hissed.

Sharon's pussy clutched my cock. I drilled her cunt then she would clamp down as I drew it out.

"Now Danny. I need it NOW!" Sharon insisted.

Her pelvis lifted up but my cock and hips drove her deep in the bed. Sharon cried out in desire.

"Yes! Oh mercy yes! I feel it love. I feel it cumming in me!" I was shooting silver bullets against her cervix. My moans were drowned out only by hers.

I arched my back and finished with a shiver. Sharon's climax was slowly dissipating as I finished. We were covered in sweat. The room smelled like sex. I rolled to the side she kissed me. We lay like that for almost an hour.

"Is it ok if I say I love you?" Sharon whispered. She was happy but at the same time we both knew she needed to go.

"As long as this is as far as it goes." I replied. Sharon stood up, slipping on her robe she even tied it hiding her charms from me.

"You might want to put something on. I wouldn't be surprised if Sam was here in the morning!"

"I will after I take a shower."

I thought she might stay and join me but we both knew it was best if she didn't. I woke with Sam snuggled up beside me. He had brought his own blanket. I got up and got ready for work before I woke him for breakfast. He was thrilled I stayed and ate with him before I left for work.

I went home after classes to see Nikki and Kyle. I spent a few hours before going back to Sharon's. Kat had seen Sharon at work that day of course and even though they didn't get a chance to talk she told Nikki she could see the difference already.

Doug Jr and Elizabeth joined us for dinner that night. Jr was sixteen. Lizzy was fourteen, and Sam was eight. Sam was thrilled to see me again, the older kids were polite but aloof. I understood. I myself had just turned twenty four not too many weeks ago. I can still remember my youth and all the complications that come with it.

Bedtime was later of course for the older children. Around the time I put Sam to bed I went to my room and took a shower. I could hear the others head off to bed, even Sharon closed her door. It was around eleven when I heard a light knock at my door. I thought it might be Sam. but it was Sharon dressed only in her robe again.

"Can I come in?" She asked. I opened the door inviting her in.

"Of course, this is your house." I reminded her.

Sharon clearly came to see me. This time I was going to be more assertive. I pulled her in for a kiss. She pulled me tight I could feel her desire as she held me.

"I thought about what you said last night. You were right. But tonight I need you to be in charge." Sharon suggested.

I kissed her hard on the lips. I now knew what I wanted. I threw a pillow at her feet, put my hands on her shoulders and gently pushed down. Sharon gave me a knowing smile then dropped to her knees.

Her hands went to my pants and started to unbutton them. Soon they were around my feet so I could step out of them. She gripped my cock and had her lips working the head before I could get my shirt off.

She gave excellent head but tonight was my turn to control things. I let Sharon get me good and primed before I pulled her up and removed her robe. I laid back on the bed and positioned her in a sixty nine.

Sharon was so excited I had her cumming in minutes. Sharon had two small orgasms before she got me off filling her mouth. I pulled her around, we swapped pussy and cock cum as we kissed.

"Put it in you!" I commanded. Sharon sat up and plunged her pussy over my revived hard on. I pulled her back to me her tits mashed into my chest. "Now don't move!"

I could feel her pussy quiver around my cock but I didn't move just yet. We locked eyes not saying a word. I thrusted up into her she grunted quietly. I held my pelvis hard against hers, my cock buried to the hilt. I didn't move just kept looking in her eyes. Her pussy quivered again.

I waited and when she wasn't expecting it I thrusted again. Never really pulling back just easing the pressure against her pussy. Her juices were flowing. I repeated this over and over. Soon her quivers became contractions. The thrusts put pressure on her clit. Sharon was grinding into me.

Sharon's contractions soon became faster and greedier. She tried to grind her clit against me. I stopped her at first. She whimpered as her desire to cum continued to build. Each thrust now caused her eyes to close and a deep hiss through clenched teeth. Finally she spoke.

"Please Danny! No more! Let me cum!" She pleaded. Sharon tried to grind once again. I denied her but thrusted. Her pussy gushed more excitement from inside her.

"Your wet! If I let you cum will you squirt for me?"

"I don't know if I can?" She hissed.

"Show me baby. You can do it! You want to do it. Let go and it will happen!" I pulled my cock back for the first time. Her pussy was so wet I could feel it run down my balls. But I knew there was more.

"Cum!"

Was all I said, then I thrusted deep in her cunt. My hands went to her ass, I pushed her clit hard against me. Sharon cried out!

"OH GOD! I'M CUMMING!" Her pussy slammed and then pistoned on me. Each upward thrust I felt a stream hit my upper thighs. I started to cum. Sharon's tits were flopping as she positioned herself to get more leverage. Again and again she slammed against me, I could almost feel the jolts that pulsed through her as she shuddered on top of me.

Sharon collapsed on top of me my cock still pulsing in her pussy. I caressed her back her face resting on my chest she was passed out or sleeping I wasn't sure which. We laid that way for almost half an hour before she lifted her head.

"I think we should get cleaned up!" Sharon whispered obviously happy.

Longing to spend more time in each other's arms it was all we could do to move from the bed. We took a quick shower and headed back to the bedroom. We looked at the bed it was completely soaked. Sharon took my hand.

"Come with me." Sharon led me to her bedroom. She pulled me in the bed and snuggled up against me. "I'm sorry Danny, but I love you even more now." She admitted.

"I know."

Lizzy was in the hall as I left Sharon's room to get ready for work. I wasn't sure what to say. She looked at me and then at her mom's room.

"Sam was looking for you." She whispered. I nodded in acknowledgment. She looked at her mom's room again.

"Is she happier now?" Lizzy questioned me.

I looked back at the room. Turning back to face her I expected her to be mad. Instead she looked concerned.

"She misses Val and your dad. But to answer your question, yes I think so." I started to walk past her. She grabbed the sleeve to the robe I was wearing.

"Daniel. Thank you for staying with her." She let go of my robe and turned to go back in her room. I went to mine Sam wasn't there. I went to his room and slid in beside him. He opened his eyes and smiled.

"I missed you." He said.

"I missed you too buddy."

I went to work that day feeling good about the time Sharon and I had spent together. I had lunch with Kat. She gushed when I met her in the parking lot. She told me all about how Sharon was getting back to her old self.

She said Nikki was going to Mary's for dinner. There was more drama and she thought she should spend some time with her mother. We kissed goodbye I told her I would at least take them out for dinner the next night.

After work I went to Sharon's. Sam was waiting for me. Dinner was almost ready. He showed me his school project. Lizzy was much more friendly than the night before but Jr still kept his distance.

Dinner was pleasant enough. Sam talked almost the whole time. When we were done Sharon suggested Sam go take his shower and finish his homework and promised I would come play with him until bed time. He lit out like a scalded dog.

"You're not his dad you know!" Jr spat out.

"Douglas!" Sharon snapped back.

"Sharon please. It's ok really. I understand how he feels. He's right, I'm not his father." I spoke softly. I looked at Jr. "And, I never will be. But I can be his friend can't I?"

"What do you know about how I feel? You still live with your mother and probably are..."

"That is enough Doug. He is a guest in this house!" Sharon yelled.

"Sharon really, it's ok! Doug, the reason I know how you feel is because Kathryn isn't my real mother. She's just the person who raised me." I explained calmly.

He looked shocked at my honesty.

"It's a long story. Sharon can tell you if you really want to know. I'll just say this. I may not know exactly how you feel right now, but I do know what it's like to be hurt and confused."

"Are you gay like our father?" Lizzy asked!

Sharon was more shocked than I was. She was going to stop this but I put my hand up to let it continue.

"Your dad is technically bi sexual. Let's say he is the hall light there. At one end of the hall is a switch that turns on the light, let's call that the male switch.

At the other end of the hall is another switch, let's call it the female switch. Your dad can be turned on by either switch." I explained.

Jr and Lizzy started to laugh. Sharon looked at me in disbelief.

"To answer your question. No, I am not." I answered calmly. "I'm a one switch guy!" I added much to their amusement.

"But you do sleep with several women? Do you love any of them?" Lizzy blurted out. She wasn't being mean. She seemed to really want to know.

"I love all of them. Maybe not equally, but very close?" I explained.

"How can that be?" Lizzy followed up.

"You see the chandelier. There are six lights on that one fixture. If you turn the switch on all of the lights glow just as brightly. That's how I feel about each person I have chosen to be intimate with." The three of them smiled as I finished my explanation.

"Yeah and that fixture has two switches also!" Jr quipped. We all looked to Sharon she turned beet red.

"Guilty!" She laughed with us.

"Just remember your dad has lost someone very close to him. We all handle these things differently, just as we are all different people. Don't forget that he still loves you. Right now he may need you more than you need him." I said.

Just then Sam came running back in to get me for play time. I got up to follow him. As I headed to leave I stopped for a moment.

"Jr just so you know, I do understand how you feel about some things. I am nothing like my father. But he was still my father and I loved him." I paused to leave. Turning back I added. "I just didn't always understand some things about him. That's ok though, it made him special. Who you become depends on you. Not him!"

Sam and I had a riot playing. Sharon even let him stay up and extra half hour. After Sam was in bed Sharon and I were on opposite ends of the couch talking about work. I stood as Lizzy and Jr came into the room.

"Mom we're heading up to bed. I just wanted to say goodnight." Jr said.

I stood while Jr bent over and kissed his mom's cheek. He shook my hand.

"I'm glad you came." He looked at his mom. "All we want is for her to be happy. Thanks." We bumped shoulders as he passed.

"Night mom." Lizzy kissed her lightly on the lips, which I found quite odd. She came to me she pulled me down and kissed my cheek. She took my hand and pulled me next to her mother. "I think you will be more comfortable here!" Lizzy let go of my hand and followed Jr upstairs.

"You've had quite an impact on those two tonight." Sharon shifted so she could lean against me.

"Sometimes teenagers need an explanation that cuts through the crap. They're good kids. They have a lot on their plate just being kids." I kissed behind her ear.

"Still I appreciate it. I think Lizzy has a crush on you!" Sharon turned to kiss me over her shoulder. "She wants to kiss you!"

"I'm not sure that's wise. Do you?" Sharon shifted a bit more. She kissed me fully with passion.

"Maybe just a little peck on the lips if she approaches you." I checked to see if she was serious. "She has been practicing on me!" Sharon chuckled, knowing I saw them kiss just moments before.

"You're sure?" I asked. I wasn't happy about this.

"I trust your judgment. I'll leave it up to you. Now let's get ready for bed." Sharon suggested.

I showered and was finishing brushing my teeth when Sharon stood in the doorway. She had on a pair of nice pajamas fashionable but not sexy. Without a word I pulled on some boxers and a tee shirt. I met her at the door.

"If it's ok I would like your last night here to just be you holding me. I am still a little sore from last night!" She laughed as she rubbed her pussy. I kissed her and led her to the freshly made bed.

"I think we can do that!" I agreed.

We laid down I pulled the covers over us Sharon settled back into me pulling my hand over her waist and up to her breast.

"I'm going to miss you. Do you think you could come back again?" Sharon whispered. It was clear I wasn't coming back to stay another night soon.

"I'm sure that can be arranged."

Holding her close I couldn't help but feel her loneliness. I knew she loved me but she loved Val also. I was determined to find a way to fill her life with happiness again. We talked pillow talk and kissed for more than an hour before she drifted off.

In the morning Sam was sleeping between us. I woke and packed my suitcase. I set my stuff by the door and headed into the kitchen for breakfast.

All the kids were there just about to leave for school. The bus pulled up for Sam. He insisted I walk with him to the end of the drive. I just finished waving goodbye and headed back to the door when it opened.

"Bye mom see you later." Jr said looking back at Sharon. She replied back.

"Mr. Daniel thank you for coming. I hope to see you soon." Jr thanked me. He seemed truly sincere.

"I think the two of you are old enough to call me Danny. All of my friend's do."

"Thanks Danny!" He shook my hand and passed by me.

Lizzy stood just inside the door now. She was a step higher, because of that we were closer to the same height. I could see she was gathering her courage to kiss me. I was going to step back and make it clear now wasn't the time. I glanced at Sharon over her shoulder. She nodded that it was ok.

"Danny thank you for staying here. Mom is back to being mom!" Lizzy looked back at Sharon with a nervous movement.

Lizzy put her arms out to hug me. Something about the situation just felt right. My instincts told me to go ahead. I pulled her in she headed to my lips.

Her kiss was soft and gentle. It lasted just long enough to be appropriate. I responded in kind. I watched but her eyes were closed savoring the moment. She let me go I released her as well. Her eyes sparkled in happiness. Her hand gripped mine.

"Good bye Lizzy. Thank you, that was special!" I smiled happily.

"It was just a kiss Danny. Don't get all weird on me now!" Lizzy stepped past me her hand left mine at the last moment.

"Are you happy now that he kissed you?" Jr teased her as he waited for her to join him for the walk to the bus stop.

"You have no idea!" She giggled. Lizzy punched his arm as she looked back at Sharon as she joined me at the door. "You have no idea at all!" She muttered.

I went into the house Sharon kissed me goodbye.

"I know how she feels. Thank you for that. We talked earlier and I explained that she shouldn't expect it every time she sees you. She knows that ..."

"I know. We're good she and I." I looked into Sharon's eyes it was a different look than when I came, but she still has needs. "How about you and I? Are we good?" I asked.

"Danny we are better than good. Now go home and thank those beautiful women the proper way for me." She gushed.

"Maybe you should do that yourself?" I suggested.

"Oh I plan to, and soon. Thanks again." We kissed one last time. "I love you Danny!"

It was great to be home again. It seemed I held Kyle most of the night. Kat told Nikki everything Sharon told her which wasn't as much as I might have thought. I of course offered nothing save the times I spent with Sam.

If there were concerns about the time I was away it was quickly dispelled as they invited me upstairs that night. We rarely make love together. I prefer the one on one approach. I feel more focused that way. Tonight was a welcome exception. If absence makes the heart grow fonder. Three nights away turned them into a craving.

In the morning I offered to stay home from Sally's but Kat said that wouldn't be necessary. They had invited Sharon to spend the night.

Saturday I brought Sally home with me and picked Sam up from his aunts. The four girls stopped and picked Mary up and all went shopping. Kyle and I hung out with Sam, he grew bored with Kyle but was thrilled when I offered to pay him to cut the grass. Kyle was sleeping which allowed me to keep an eye on Sam. After the lawn was done Sam and I spent time alone playing.

Sharon thanked me for watching Sam. Mary came home with the girls. Sally was going to watch Kyle so I could take Kat, Nikki, and Mary out for dinner. I suggested Sally come but when she was adamant that she not go, I knew there was a reason for her stubbornness.

Nikki picked a quiet restaurant that featured the lighter fair that women like these days. It didn't take long for me to figure out that the drama in Mary's life wasn't getting any better. The conversation was pleasant but forced as an elephant seemed to be lurking in the room and no one dared mention it.

We dropped Mary off at her home. Nikki spent a long time at the door saying goodbye. More surprisingly she kissed Mary goodnight on the lips. This was no simple peck this was a real kiss. Kat didn't seemed surprised at this so it must be something that has occurred before. I dropped the girls off at home and waited in the car for Sally to take her home. We drove in silence for a few miles.

"Did they tell you Mark has been visiting Dallas lately?" Sally looked in my direction.

"No. I could tell there are problems but no one has shared them with me." I explained. Sally huffed at the news.

"The one person they should be talking to. Women! Sometimes we just don't get it!" Sally sighed. She told me how Mark has been treating Mary poorly since Becky passed. Becoming more demanding, and almost cruel at times.

He has been in contact with Tina in Dallas. Mary thinks they are having an affair. He gets better the longer he's home but he goes on these trips to Dallas for days, one time for a week. When he comes back it's like he's a different man.

"Has he been physically abusive?" I was reluctant to ask.

"He wants her to do things against her will. She has held him off so far but he has been getting more insistent." She looked over at me so I knew what she was saying.

"And Nikki?" I asked. Sally hesitated.

"She's been trying to help but Daniel we both know she isn't strong enough for this." Sally took my hand. The instant she did I could feel her fear.

"She kissed Mary on the lips tonight?" I looked over at Sally.

"She is doing the best she knows how. It's helped, but Daniel this is a cancer that must be cut out!" She squeezed my hand. "What are you going to do about it?"

"Are we to that point?" I asked.

"If not now soon." We drove in silence I dropped her off and watched her go in the house. I turned out of the driveway onto the main road when my phone rang.

"Daniel its George!" Sally Shrieked. I turned around immediately. Bursting in the door I called out.

"SALLY! GEORGE!" Her response was immediate.

"Danny in here!" I walked about ten feet just around the corner from the door George was laying on the floor. He looked delirious and almost paralyzed.

"Did you call 911?"

"Yes, they're on the way!" She assured me.

Sally was extremely distraught as she tried to comfort George on the floor. The paramedics showed up shortly after. Their initial diagnosis was a stroke. Sally rode with them to the hospital. I called Kat and Nikki. I then called Eve and Charles in Florida and several other family members.

It's been about a month and George is coming along fine. He's in physical therapy, they have him walking with just a cane. His speech has improve

dramatically, his memory is still a bit spotty. It was fortunate it happened when and where it did.

The quick work of the medical people probably reduced the severity of the stroke. The long term outlook is positive but there is still much work to be done. George seems most affected emotionally. Always a big strong man this is a humbling experience. This is one time brute force cannot overcome the problem.

He's been home for over a week, a therapist comes daily. I stay three nights a week now to be with him and Sally. I have been sleeping alone while I'm here. Just doesn't seem right, not while he's struggling.

Things have been getting worse in other areas however. Sharon's husband Doug has moved out of the house. Since then Sharon has been slipping backwards. On top of that I went to Nikki's parents' house with her one night last week. Mark is starting to lose it if you ask me. I tried to talk to him. He started arguing about how it was none of my business how he treated HIS wife. We almost came to blows.

Thanksgiving came. It was a welcome holiday I had much to be thankful for. Kyle, Kat, Nikki. We were all doing well. Others we knew were not so fortunate. George and Sally had their struggles with his health. Sharon and Doug with their loss of Val. Mark and Mary losing his sister Becky. It was a tough year for many and they touched our lives in every way. My heart went out to them and I vowed to try and help where I could.

It was the Friday after Thanksgiving. Sally came and sat on the patio of their house with me as I worked on some proposals. George was watching TV like he did after every meal. I miss him teasing me for doing women's work as I cleared the table.

"You ok?" She kissed me on the cheek. I missed her and I knew she missed me.

"It seems my whole world is falling around me all at the same time! It's like I am a juggler and they keep adding balls. Sooner or later one of them will drop." I complained.

"You have a point." Sally took my hand between hers.

Sally held it for a minute closing her eyes. She slowly opened them. "Daniel trust your instincts. You will come out of this stronger." Sally professed. "Now why don't you get some work done and we can talk later."

Sally went back in the house. I was in my room I had just taken my shower. I came out there was a pair of panties on the floor Sally was in my bed under the covers.

"Mom I'm not sure this is a good idea?" I stood just inside the room.

"George and I talked. He's worried about you, he insists! You can go ask him if you want." She pulled back the covers showing me the teddy she wore the first time.

Her hairy pussy spread open for me to see. Her clit was poking from under the hood, she had obviously started without me. Sally dipped two fingers into her twat and pulled the glistening digits out for me to see. Pulling her nighty down a big tit spilled out she covered her nipple with her pussy juice. She took both hands and squeezed her tit until the nipple was fully engorged.

"Lick it off for me son!" I fell beside her and sucked the swollen nub into my mouth. Sally cried out in pleasure. I spread her legs and attacked her pussy sucking on her clit straight off.

"You little bastard!" She yelped. "You're going to make me cum!" Her pussy was ready even before I got there. I was just finishing what she started. Her hands pulled my face tight to her cunt, her excitement leaked from her gash.

"Bite it baby make me cum for you!" I knew I couldn't really bite her clit, but I raked my upper teeth over it. "Fuck! I'm cumming!" She squealed.

Sally gripped my hair and pulled up and pushed down on my head, my lips and nose stroked her pussy from top to bottom. Her lips flared and painted my mouth and cheeks. I could feel her pussy contract on my tongue. When she finished she gently pulled my faced to hers. She kissed me over and over. I rolled her over and put her on all fours. Lining up my cock I plunged in her pussy in one stroke.

"Oh baby I missed you so!" She moaned.

It had been so long since we were together it almost felt like the first time. Her ass jiggled, her back arched I could see her tits no longer in her nighty swing in the mirror. Her heavy breasts swollen as they hung down.

"Mom you feel so good. I'm going to cum soon!" I cried out.

"On my tits baby. I want to watch you cum for me!" We fucked for another ten minutes. I stopped each time I was ready to cum. Sally was building up for another orgasm. I looked down at her rosebud. I sucked my right thumb getting it wet and placed it at her asshole.

"Don't you dare go there mister!" She hissed. I stroked her anus back and forth the hole opened slightly. I pushed in slightly the taut skin started to give way.

"Daniel!"

Her words said no her ass said yes. I pushed just deep enough my finger nail was covered. Sally was going crazy pushing back. My cock started to swell.

"I'm cumming baby. Oh you nasty boy!" I wiggled my finger without going deeper she bucked against me. "Yes fuck me...Yes baby...Yeeeeeesssssss...!

I pulled from her and rolled her over in a sitting position I grabbed my cock as it slipped from her gaping cunt. She cried out in protest. Stroking my cock I aimed at her precious globes and coated them in thick hot cum.

Sally licked them both clean and then took my cock in her mouth doing the same.

We fell together on the bed her big titties mashed against my chest. Our lips never parted for over ten minutes. Sally took a shower with me. We each came one more time while we were in there. Sally stopped at the door she looked at me.

"Charles and Eve will be here tomorrow for a week or so. I think you should juggle the other balls for now. We will handle this one the best we can." Sally kissed me then turned and headed out the door.

I was at the breakfast table when George came out. He looked at me. I could see emotionally he was a shell of the man he used to be. We ate in silence. I got up to leave he gripped my arm. His desire may be failing but his grip was still strong.

"When you come next time I want to talk to you!" He squeezed my arm firmly.

"Yes sir." I replied.

"Thank you Daniel. Thank you for everything." He let me go but not before he squeezed one more time.

With all of this drama going on at least my work was going well. Holidays were coming up soon and this seemed like people were in a happy mood. Well except for friends and family that is.

I was on my way home from work when I got a call from Lizzy, Sharon's daughter.

She asked if I could stop by and see her and Jr. I called Kat for a heads up but all she could tell me was Sharon had left work early. She had asked me to call her later if there was a problem. I met Jr at the door he let me in Lizzy was waiting for me in the hall.

"She's upstairs in her room." Lizzy explained.

"Is there a problem?" I asked. Lizzy looked at JR and then back to me but didn't reply. "Why did you call me?"

"She needs you!" Lizzy looked back at Jr. he nodded. "We want you to spend the night!"

I was both honored to be called upon and hurt to think I was some gigolo to be beckoned for.

"I would love to help but ..." Lizzy started getting agitated when she heard "but". "I love your mother but I can't just show up unannounced and force myself on her. That isn't the way it works." I explained.

"I know. You need her to make the first move. Mom taught me that." Lizzy replied. I was stunned when she revealed my ways. "When we kissed! She told me I would have to kiss you first!"

"Please Danny. Will you just go talk to her while you're here?" Jr asked. I looked at them and could see they were sincere in their reasons.

"I would be happy to say hi." I offered.

Lizzy took my hand and led me up the stairs. Jr followed.

"Mom someone is here to see you." Lizzy explained. Sharon was sitting on the bed a paper in one hand a picture in the other.

"Tell them to go away. I don't want to see anyone." Sharon didn't even look up.

"Mom it isn't anyone its Danny! And he is right here. He came to you!" Lizzy lied.

Sharon looked up at Lizzy, Jr, and then me. She stood slowly. I felt Lizzy push my back. If Sharon didn't want this Lizzy did and that was close enough for me. I closed the distance to her mom and wrapped my arms around her, she kissed me, tears running down her cheek.

"Daniel, I need you! Darling please don't leave me tonight!" She started kissing me again. I turned with her in my arms. Lizzy was pushing Jr out the door she smiled at me as she closed it behind her.

It was a good twenty minutes before she settled down enough to talk to me without sobbing. Sharon received a certified letter at work, it was divorce papers from Doug. Coming home to deal with it she found a picture with her and Val on their first trip together as lovers. She showed it to me. They were both stunning ladies.

I thought she would just want to be held but she started to undress me. I was learning quickly that this was no ordinary time for us. She needed to be loved and she need me to be aggressive in showing her I was here for her. I all but

ripped her blouse from in front of her. I pushed her bra up not even trying to unhook it. I pushed her against the wall my mouth sucking her tit hard.

Sharon had loosened my belt and unhooked my slacks. She was trying to push my briefs down as I clawed at her skirt. I pulled it up and found her panty hose. Forgetting all niceties I ripped the front exposing her delicate panties. She had lowered my briefs enough to get my cock free. Her pussy was damp but we neither one cared. I lifted her ass she guided me to her entrance pushing the panties to one side.

"Love me Daniel please love me!" I thrust in her she groaned as I scraped her semi dry walls. I pulled out and plunged again. "Do it! Just do it!" She panted.

It took several thrusts before she was lubricated enough for me to fill her desperate cunt. When I finally did she screamed with desire.

"Tell me you love me. I need to hear it!"

"I." thrusting up in her.

"Love!" Again a thrust.

"You!" I pinned her to the wall I thrusted so hard

"Oh Danny I do love you. Fill me up make my pussy happy!" I fucked her until she came and then filled her pussy as her ass slapped the wall. I lowered her on the bed almost tripping in my pants.

We lay there in a tangle of clothes neither one of us capable of moving easily.

"Danny that was amazing!" Sharon confessed.

We kissed and cuddled slowly removing a garment as we did. We were naked her pussy was dripping cum she went to the bathroom to clean up. She had on her robe, a bra and panties when she came out. I needed a shower. When I came out she handed me the spare robe I kept there.

"Are you hungry?"

"I could eat you!" I offered.

"Later. We should go check on the kids." I wasn't sure the two of us in robes was appropriate but she insisted. I slipped on my briefs under the robe and followed her downstairs.

Jr had taken Sam to the movies. He was hoping Sam wouldn't know I was here just yet. Lizzy made us some sandwiches and poured some wine. She was obviously happy to see a smile on her mom's face.

"Thank you Lizzy for calling Danny." Sharon said. Lizzy beamed with pride.

"I called your mom and told her you would probably not be home tonight I hope that's ok?" Lizzy explained.

"Thank you. I should call Nikki later." I replied.

"I'll leave you two alone. Mom I'm going to a friends I should back before nine." Lizzy got up to leave. I don't know why but I reached out for her. Lizzy stopped. I pulled her close then kissed her lightly on the lips.

Sharon smiled. Lizzy blushed.

"It was just a kiss. Don't go getting weird on me now!" I teased.

"I won't you're not my type!" She teased back.

"Fair enough." I laughed.

"Oh and Sammy knows you're here he saw your truck. So you may want to get dressed before he gets home. You know he'll want to play!"

We did go get dressed. I played with Sam until bed time, and then Sharon tucked him in. Jr met me in the kitchen.

"Mom told you about dad?" He asked.

"Just a bit. I am sorry. That's unfair."

"How did you deal with it?" He asked. Jr looked at me, I felt he was searching for an answer.

"Doug there is no magic wand. There is no one answer for anyone. What I did is look at the situation and decided if I was going to let it control me or I was going to do what I could to control it. There's a lot to be said about making lemonade from lemons." I tried to be truthful.

"Did you have help?" At first I was surprised he asked such a question.

"I did and still do. Find out who you want to be and then you will know who you can trust to help get you there. We all have motives, and we can use them or abuse them to get what we want. Or to get others to do what we want them to do." I tried to explain.

"So who do you trust?" Jr continued to probe.

"Yourself first." I said. Sharon walked in as I spoke. "Your mother is someone I've trusted. She would be a good start."

"Can I trust you?" Jr asked me point blank. I was taken aback by the question. Jr and I were cordial but I wouldn't have considered us friends.

"I would like to think so. On some things at least." I replied.

"Doug, you can trust Daniel with your life. I can think of no one I would rather you talk to than him." Sharon added.

"Including dad?" Jr was being blunt.

"That one you need to figure out for yourself." Sharon said as she glared at Jr. Sharon was hurt and that may have been a bit harsh.

"Good night son I love you. Daniel I'll wait for you in my room. You two talk as long as you need." Sharon replied.

"Thanks mom but I better go finish some homework." Jr shook my hand.
"Thanks for coming. Goodnight Danny"

"Goodnight Jr."

Lizzy showed up just as Jr left. She too was heading up to her room. We said goodnight but that was all. Sharon locked the doors and turned off the lights.

"Thank you for saying that to Doug, but I'm not sure I am the one he should be talking to." I suggested.

"Who knows more about what he is going through than you? And if they did would he listen to them?" Sharon asked.

I followed her into her room. She pulled me into a kiss. "I meant what I said. I trust you with my life!" Sharon said giving me a serious look. I acknowledged her point with a nod. She smiled.

"Now make long slow love to me. I have a feeling this could be a special night. You're going to do something that will make me happy for a long time. I can feel it." Sharon whispered.

We did just that. We started with her on top, after a mini orgasm we moved to me on top. Sharon was on fire as she came again. I was starting to believe her. When I positioned her on all fours and fucked her from behind she babbled constantly.

"Do it Danny. Do it. Fuck me. Make me cum. I can feel it!" My balls tightened my cock swelled.

Her pussy was like a hot velvet glove. Then I had a feeling like I went over a water fall. My balls exploded and I was reaching in the air as her pussy milked me dry. I was so drained I couldn't get up.

"What just happened? That was incredible!" I asked. Sharon had cum too. I was so lost I didn't even know it.

"I told you I felt it! Danny it's you. I don't know what it's but you are the key." Sharon exclaimed.

We didn't even get up until morning. I showered and had breakfast with them all. I walked Sam to the bus. I shook Jr's hand as he left. And Lizzy kissed me goodbye on the lips. But only after I made her come to me. It was beginning to become a game. One Lizzy liked.

"It's just a kiss. Now don't get weird on me!" She said as she walked away.

Sharon just laughed as she kissed me goodbye.

"Daniel have a great day!"

I went home it was Mom's day to watch Kyle. I spent some time with him then went to class. I had a showing that afternoon and came home just before dinner. Nikki arrived home and flung herself in my arms.

"Did you miss me?" She squealed.

"You know I did!" It was times like this that filled my heart seeing Nikki happy knowing I made love to Sharon. Not many guys can say that.

"I heard you were special last night?" We both looked at Kat.

"What? I'm allowed to ask aren't I?" Mom snickered.

We sat down for dinner. It was a good day but nothing special. I was working on a proposal when Nikki came to me.

"Daniel I'm worried. I can't get Mary on the phone." Nikki said. I knew she was concerned because she called me Daniel. With all the drama going on at her parents' house there was cause to be worried.

"Come on. Let's go over and check up on her!" I suggested

"Really? You think that's necessary?" She looked at me I could see she was scared. I took her hand, I didn't like how it felt.

"We need to leave now. Get your jacket." I reached for mine and grabbed the keys.

We took my truck and headed straight to her parents' house. It was across town a bit. We pulled onto the street the house looked dark. I parked in the drive

"Do you have a key?" I asked.

"I do, but shouldn't we knock?" Nikki searched her purse then handed me the key.

"Get your phone out, get ready to dial 911. Don't make a sound." I whispered.

"Danny you're scaring me!" Nikki complained.

"Baby I hope I'm wrong!"

I unlocked the door and slowly closed it. I waited so our eyes could adjust to the darkness. We walked slowly. Then I heard it. Turning down the hall I stopped Nikki just to make sure what was happening.

SMACK.

"Take that you filthy slut! Tonight you will obey me!" Mark's voice thundered down the hall.

"Oh Master. Her ass is almost ready! You're making me so hot!" It was Tina's voice, but how did she get here? "Make her pay for disobeying you Master!"

SMACK. SMACK. SMACK. I could hear the straps swish through the air. Nikki wanted to rush in but we had nothing conclusive yet.

"Prepare the camera on your phone" I whispered in her ear. She nodded.

"So you disobey your Master? Well slut I have tried to be patient, but no more." Mark's voice very clear now. "You will submit to me and your new Mistress! If you behave yourself we might even let you have a slave of your own!"

We could hear Mary straining to talk. She was gagged I surmised.

"Do it Master! Take her virgin ass. I only wish I was with you to see it first-hand." It was Tina's voice but she said she wasn't here? "I can't wait for you to bring her to me Master!"

"Soon my pet. I just have to move some more money so she has nothing if she refuses." I could hear Mary mumbling again.

"Don't worry slut. Where you are headed you won't need much money. I bet we could get a pretty price if we just rent you out!" Mark boasted.

"Yes master. She is a MILF if I have ever seen one. She will bring top dollars. Especially when we break her!" Tina squealed.

I had heard enough. I indicated to Nikki she should get ready with the camera. She nodded. I slipped in just as he was ready to whip her ass again. He pulled back I grabbed the whip from his hand. I kicked the back of his knee bringing him down hard!

"Mother!" Nikki screamed.

"What the fuck! Get out of my house you asshole!" Mark yelled. I punched him hard to the cheek his head hit the floor.

"You fucking move and I'll beat you to death!" I yelled back.

Mark was dressed in black leather from the neck to his feet. His head wasn't covered, his hands were free. There was a pouch that attached to his groin that was on the floor. Mark's cock was out, his balls in some sort of strap wrapped around the base of his dick. Mary was tied naked to the back of a chair her ass red and covered in welts. She had clamps on her nipples with weights attached pulling them towards the floor. A ball gag was in her mouth.

Nikki had taken a video of our entrance. She composed herself enough now to start taking pictures. After she had several I had her send them to me and Kat. I held Mark on the floor as Nikki released her mother.

Tina was on a laptop computer watching. She was bitching about something I closed the lid just to shut her up.

"You fucking bastard!" Mary was so mad she struggled to speak. "Who do you think you are you sick fuck!"

Mary had found her voice. She kicked Mark squarely in the balls he doubled over screaming in pain. She stood over him cursing and threatening to kill him then sue him. I let her have her say but no more kicking.

"Nikki get her out of here. Grab some clothes she is coming with us!" I yelled over Marks objections.

Nikki handed me her phone I took at least a dozen more pictures. Mark tried to struggle but the kick in the balls was quite effective. When he couldn't fight his way out he tried to talk his way out.

"Mark. Let's face it. Unless Mary decides to come back on her own, you're done around here." I rebuffed his pleas to forget it all. "You will be lucky if she only divorces you!"

Nikki indicated she was ready to go. I sent them on ahead.

"Now I am going to take Mary to some place safe. She will not be at my house or George's. If you come to my house and make my kid cry, pictures will start to show up. If you so much as step foot on my uncles property, pictures will start to show up. Are we clear?"

"Fuck you!" Mark spat back.

"Mark you brought this on yourself. Did you even see how bad you whipped her ass? She was almost bleeding? Mark that is serious prison time. Are we clear?" I threatened him.

"We are clear asshole!" Mark spat back in defiance.

"Good. Now I am going to leave. You aren't going to contact my wife or yours tonight. I'll put them up in a hotel tonight and longer if I need to. If you want to talk you can call me. My lawyer will be in touch soon otherwise." I explained.

I walked out. He was pissed but not stupid. At least not now. I made a phone call on the way to the truck.

"I need a favor. Can you help?" I quickly explained the situation. "Thanks. See you soon.

I drove several ways just to make sure we weren't followed. But he would have had to leave almost when I did. And Mark wasn't dressed for success. We pulled up at the house. Sharon was waiting at the door.

"I don't know how to thank you?" I said.

"Bring her up to my room. I sent the kids to get ice cream. Jr is waiting for a call to come home. Oh and here's a spare phone she can use while she's here. You better turn hers off." Sharon said quickly.

I agreed. Better yet I took Nikki's and Mary's phones. Mary was hurting. I picked her up and carried her up the steps, I laid her on Sharon's bed.

"We should go." I suggested. "The longer we're here the more chances we take something could go wrong."

"I should stay" Nikki protested.

"I can't let you do that." I argued. "It's important you come with me."

Nikki wanted to argue but when she looked at me she saw it would do no good. Nikki looked at Sharon and saw how she was already tending to her mother. Sharon nodded letting her know she had this.

Nikki kissed her mom then Sharon. I kissed Sharon on the cheek.

"Daniel you slept with her last night! The least you could do is give her a proper kiss." Nikki scolded me.

I kissed Sharon with the passion we normally share.

"Much better. Men, do they think we're stupid?" Nikki asked. Nikki and I left checking to make sure we were still not being followed.

Nikki and I started home. It didn't take long for Mark to start making noise. First he called Mary's phone.

"Hello Mark. What can I do for you?" I asked as I answered Mary's phone.

"I want to talk to my wife!" he demanded.

"Mark she doesn't want to talk to you, at least not now. I'm on my way home. I have her phone. She is safe and you aren't going to talk to her tonight."

"Fuck you Daniel!" Mark hung up. Nikki's phone rang.

"Hello Mark. What can I do for you?" I asked as I now answered her phone.

"I want to talk to Nikki!" Mark was losing it.

"Nikki isn't going to talk to you tonight Mark. She's too upset after she saw what you did to Mary." I looked over at Nikki.

"I can explain that!" Mark started to weigh his options.

"Fine. I'll meet you at The Main Street Diner for breakfast. Let's say nine?"

"You bring Mary. Daniel!" He started to lose it again.

"No. I'll be alone. If you're civil in the morning we'll go from there." I explained.

"Nine o'clock Daniel!" He hung up.

"You ok?" I asked Nikki.

"Danny what would have happened if we hadn't showed up when we did?" She was shaking as she reached over and took my hand.

"It wouldn't have been good from what I can see." I answered truthfully.

We pulled into the drive at home, Kat was waiting for us. Sharon had called to tell her we were on the way.

I made some calls as Nikki filled mom on what had happened. She had seen the pictures on her phone but didn't seem as shocked as Nikki. I finished my calls and joined them in the living room.

"Daniel what are you going to do?" Nikki asked.

"First, do we know that this wasn't just them having a kinky time? Has this kind of stuff gone on before?" I asked.

"I don't know? I don't think so?" Nikki answered. I looked at Kat.

"Well. I don't know if it ever went this far. But I do know your mom did do some... Let's just say she pushed the envelope at times." Kat added. Nikki was shocked when she heard this.

"But she was tied down. He was beating her. You heard what Tina said they wanted to break her. To sell her as a whore!" Nikki said excitedly. Kat started to get a clearer picture.

"No your mom would have never stood for that! The reason she left Becky was because like me she just wouldn't step over certain lines." Kat explained. She pulled Nikki close to console her. I hesitate to ask but we needed to know.

"Do you know what lines she would cross?" Nikki was shocked I would ask.

"Danny!" Nikki protested.

"Nik I need to know how to shut him down if he claims he was getting a little carried away." I explained. She understood my reason but was still not happy.

"The nipple clamps were something she indulged in. She liked to be spanked!" Kat explained. Nikki was visibly shaken by the news. "Tying her up was a no no though. She was terrified of being restrained. Loose bindings she could slip for affect might be ok. But she was more of a self-control restraint person."

"Tina and Mark threaten anal. Do you know where she stood on that?" Nikki asked. Kat smiled. Nikki waited for the answer.

"Mary had a very bad experience with Becky just before she left her. I know she's never had a man there before." Kat hesitated at that point. She looked at Nikki.

"Go ahead, tell him, it will probably come out sooner or later." Nikki replied. She had a grin as she addressed mom.

"Tell me what?" I asked.

"Nikki and I know this because when we went shopping last weekend the subject came up. She is terrified of the thought but we told her all she needed was an experienced partner and she would have a whole new perspective." Kat looked at Nikki.

"And?" I knew there was more.

"I offered for you to be her first!" Nikki replied spilling the beans. I lost my train of thought for the moment as I wrapped my head around that one.

"How does a subject like that even come up?" I asked looking at both of them.

"She wanted to know what you do to make us so happy?" Nikki replied.

"And THAT is the one thing you came up with?" I was so confused.

"No. It was just one of the many things on the list Sally, Sharon, Kat and I came up with!" Nikki grinned.

"Guy's. Let's back on track here. Mary?" Kat reminded us.

"So restraints and anal are a definite no. The welts on her ass suggest he may have crossed another line." They both seemed to agree. "Well the way she kicked him in the nuts suggest she wasn't a willing partner at some point. Still he could claim she was just playing too."

"What are you going to do?" Nikki asked again.

I have a meeting with him in the morning. I have a plan but I need to talk to Mary. For now I suggest we get some rest. The next couple of days could get crazy.

(Sharon)

Danny just left with Nikki. They dropped her mother Mary at the house for the night. I don't know all the facts but she is very shaken up. She is up on the bed sobbing. Danny carried her she was in so much pain she was barely able to walk in the house. I've met her on many occasions, we just went shopping this past weekend. Still we aren't what you would call friends, more like acquaintances.

I knew what Kat and Nikki have told me and what I've observed. I know she just lost her sister in-law Becky earlier in the year. I met Becky a couple of times, I didn't much like her. Mary always struck me as a very attractive woman that had a fairly upper middle class life. I know she had an interesting past in college. Most of the rest is just conjecture and based on the conversation we had about Danny this past weekend.

I called Jr and told him they could head home. I explained we had a guest and they should respect her privacy. I checked in as I waited for the kids to arrive. With her eyes closed I caressed her hair as she lay there. Mary opened her eyes gave me a sad grin before closing them again.

"You just rest honey. I'll get the kid's settled and be back soon." I whispered.

I was in the kitchen when the door opened. Sam ran in thrilled to be up so late.

"Mom I got a double and ate the whole thing!" He was so excited to tell me.

"That's great baby. Now let's get you cleaned up and in bed. You have school in the morning." I put Sam to bed then went to the kitchen.

I filled Lizzy and Jr in on a PG rated version of the night's events. I asked them to understand she had been though a very traumatic night and to be supportive in the morning. They agreed and kissed me goodnight as I left to go check on our guest.

Mary was where I left her. I paused to take her in. Mary is an older version of her daughter Nikki. Even laying on the bed in her frazzled state she is a beautiful woman.

"Mary? Honey let's get you cleaned up." I woke her from her slumber. She woke with a startle. I brushed her long hair with my hand. "It's ok darling. You're safe, come with me we'll get you cleaned up."

Mary sat up rubbing her eyes she just looked at me.

"Why am I here?" She asked still a bit angry.

"Danny brought you here with Nikki." I tried to explain.

"Why didn't he take me home with him?" Mary protested.

She was looking around my room. It was a good question. He told me that Mark wouldn't dare go to his house.

"I don't know Mary. He must have his reasons, maybe it's for your protection?" I lifted her up by her arms. "We can ask him in the morning, but as far as I know, no one knows you're here but them."

"For now you need a shower." I suggested.

I walked her in the bathroom she was still unsteady on her feet. She had bruises and scrapes on her arms and legs from the ropes. Her ass was red and swollen, welts covered her back side from the top of her ass to the middle of her thighs. Her breasts were bruised. Her nipples looked swollen. I was appalled at the treatment she received by this animal. I stripped her down then removed my clothes as well.

I turned on the water, checking the temperature I guided her inside the glass walls. Mary winced as the hot water hit the tender skin around her ass. I shampooed her hair then worked lower. The further I went the more I realized just how beautiful she is.

We are about the same height. Her breasts a bit fuller her tummy a bit tighter. Her hips had a sexy flare, her legs long and slender for her build. We could probably share clothes if my tops weren't too tight at her bust. Gingerly I washed her ass. Remnants of some lube clung to her red skin. I washed her vagina as she steadied herself on my shoulders.

When she was thoroughly rinsed I started to dry her off with a large soft towel. Only then did she respond to my efforts.

"Thank you Sharon, this is much too kind." Mary said softly.

I was done above and needed to work lower.

"Hold that thought, this may sting." I replied.

I patted her ass and surrounding area so as not to cause her any additional pain. She winced a few times but never complained. When I bent to dry her legs her pussy was directly in front of me. My own betrayed me as I held

back the thoughts of how beautiful it was. When I stood she looked me in the eye. Reading me she knew my thoughts, I could feel it.

Mary pulled me close for a gentle kiss on the lips. She was tentative. I was willing but she had been through so much I pushed such thoughts aside. Separating from her I returned an honest smile. Her hands slipped from my shoulders across my wet tits to my sides. She seemed intrigued by the piercings in my nipples.

"Let's set you down while I get dry." I led her to the softness of my bed then walked back and dried myself off. I returned with some lotion.

"Lay on your stomach and let me put this on. It should help with the pain." I explained softly.

Mary rolled over and I started to coat the areas on her backside starting at the top of her ass. She gasped as the cold lotion made contact with the tortured skin. I was about half way down her ass cheeks when I heard the first faint murmur escaped her lips. I added more lotion and continued lower. Mary opened her legs just slightly.

Both globes shined as the lotion soaked in. I was at the crease between her ass cheeks and her thigh. Mary spread her legs even further. I could see the folds of her pussy start to spread. I pushed the thoughts of what I wanted to do back again as wetness formed on her swollen pussy lips. She whimpered as I worked her left thigh.

My slick hand went between where the redness was just visible. The straps from the whip wrapping around her toned leg. Mary opened her legs further then raised her ass off the bed. Not much but enough to send a message. The woman had been beaten and now she wanted me to make love to her?

I couldn't bring myself to do it. She must be sending me the wrong signals. I worked her right thigh she rose her ass even higher. I could smell her scent, it was intoxicating. I brushed against her dripping lips by accident.

"Spank me!" Mary hissed. "Spank me like the whore I am!" She hissed louder.

This felt wrong. I have years of experience with playing this game, and this was wrong.

"You're no whore, and I'm not going to spank you."

"But he wants me to be a whore. He wants me to submit to him!"

"Mary you are no whore. You aren't going to submit to anyone." I professed.

I don't know why but I added more lotion and slid my hand over the center of her ass. I rubbed it between her ass cheeks and continued until my fingers slipped between the fold of her waiting cunt. Mary rose her ass against my hand as high as she could. Her hand came between her legs and gripped mine. She guided mine to rub her sex.

"Please?" She begged.

Had she lost all self-respect? Should I allow her to use my hand for her own gratification? Or was this something she needed me to do?

"Yes. Oh Sharon yes. Please Sharon, please don't stop!" Mary pleaded.

She let go only for a moment to make sure I complied with her wishes. She didn't need to worry. I was so excited she couldn't stop me if she wanted. I

slipped two fingers in her pussy from behind. Her juices were flowing, there was no resistance.

Before long she was humping my fingers I moved my head below her pussy my fingers still probing her inner walls. Mary waited until I moved my tongue from her lips to her clit before she mashed her pussy against my face.

"Oh...OH...OOOOOOOOHHHHHHHHH!"

Mary raked her cunt along my face my fingers delved deeper into her pussy. She clamped my head between her legs and continued to cry out as her body shuddered above me. Mary rolled off her hands desperate to bring me up to kiss her. My lips found hers, her tongue searched for mine. She moaned as we found what we were looking for.

She wouldn't let go and I was happy to stay connected. Her hand searched between my legs. I opened them she found me wet and willing. Mary was experienced at this, she rubbed my clit just right then moved lower. She found an oily pussy lip and tugged it before it slipped between her fingers.

"Mary you don't have to do this!" I explained.

"I have wanted to do this since the day Nikki told me she made love to you. Please don't stop me!" Her eyes burned into mine. She had wanted me?

How could this possibly happen? I was starting to think about it when she brushed my clit one more time. I needed more. I pulled myself up positioning Mary above me I placed my leg between hers. She slid down until my pussy was hard against her thigh. Her pussy pressed to mine.

It didn't take long for two experienced lesbians to find the position and rhythm for maximum arousal. I reached up and caressed her tits which made

us both only more excited. She took mine and studied my piercings before rubbing them with the palm of her hand.

She pressed her thigh against my pussy it was slick with my excitement. My clit throbbed with desire against the slick skin

"Mary you beautiful woman. You are going to make me cum!" I panted.

"Do it for me. Please do it!" I pushed up and she bore down I could feel her cunt press hard into my thigh. I was beyond the point of no return. The fire in my pussy started to spread throughout my body.

It didn't take long for her to achieve orgasm, albeit minutes after mine. When she finished rocking her cunt against me. I pulled her on top. Her massive tit's mashed against mine. We kissed again and again for the next twenty minutes. I was in love.

Mary started to weep she buried her head against my chest. I caressed her gently.

"Are you ok?" I asked concerned.

"It's been so long since I felt this way. I just don't know what to do?" She cried.

"Enjoy it. I know I did!" I lifted her face and kissed her again.

"But I ... I mean Mark..." Reality came back and smacked me in the face.

"Don't worry about him. Danny will take care of him." I assured her.

Then it hit me! Danny! That son of a bitch set me up! He knew if he brought Mary here this would happen! That wonderful, wonderful man! Oh you just wait until I see him. I turned back to Mary who was still dealing with her fate.

"But I don't have any money, and I can't go back there!" She continued to sob.

"Mary don't worry about any of that. You have a place here for as long as you need." I kissed her again. "Danny has taken care of it."

"But I don't understand?" She looked back at me for reassurance.

"You will soon enough. Now get some sleep. I need to make a phone call." I held her until she nodded off. I looked at the picture of Val on the nightstand. She was smiling at me. As much as I still missed her. I knew she would approve.

(Daniel)

My phone rang I looked over at the name, it was Sharon. Fearing the worst I answered it.

"I love you!" She said.

"Sharon?"

"I don't know how but I'm going to pay you back! Do you hear me Daniel Masters? I love you with all my heart!" She was almost yelling in the phone.

"I love you too! You can pay me back by taking care and love her. She's another mother of mine you know?" I teased.

"God how can I be so lucky as to even know you?"

"Sharon I'll be coming by in the morning around eight. Can you be there? I need to talk to Mary." I asked seriously.

"We'll be ready. Daniel you don't know how much this means to me!" Sharon was getting emotional.

"Sharon. I do. That's why she's there!" I replied.

"Good night my love."

"Good night Sharon and give Mary my love." I said happily.

"I did but there is more waiting for you!" Sharon teased me.

"Is everything ok?" Nikki asked?

"I'm pretty sure it's." I smiled.

"Good. Now get back to fucking me and no more phone calls!" She teased.

Chapter 7

I was a bit early Sam answered the door. I walked him to the bus as usual. Jr greeted me as he left Lizzy stood in the hall waiting for me to come in.

"You only get a kiss if you come here!" I teased her.

Like always I stood just outside the door a step down. She hesitated but knew I wouldn't budge. I held one hand out as always. She took it in hers. Lizzy kissed me lightly on the lips as always then passed by letting go of my hand at the last second.

"It's just a kiss. Now don't get weird on me!" She said as she walked away.

"You're getting taller." I yelled after her.

"How do you know that?" She looked back at me.

"Don't worry how. I just know." She stuck her tongue out in reply.

"Danny please come in." Mary, my mother-in-law, was at the door. She put her arms around my neck and kissed me on the cheek.

"Mary. That is no way to treat our guest. Now do it again the right way!" Sharon walked up behind her. "Let me show you."

Sharon pulled me down we kissed like long lost lovers. She finally pushed away and turned me to Mary.

"Daniel. Do it right! House rules." I pulled Mary into a kiss just like Sharon. She started slow but caught on quick enough. We parted. She looked at Sharon. Sharon nodded. Not a word was spoken.

"If you girls are done seducing me I have a meeting with Mark in an hour. I need to ask some questions."

Sharon looked out the door making sure her kids were all on the way to school then ushered us in the kitchen.

I explained what I had learned from Kat and Nikki. Mary was still very upset with Mark, but gave me more ammunition. She also warned me about some pitfalls. Sharon was shocked at some of the things Mary admitted but held her hand through the whole session.

We then talked about money, Mary never really handled it but she learned from others the pitfall of being completely ignorant. She knew what Mark was doing. She had already been to a lawyer. When Mark found out he went berserk, that's why she thinks he assaulted her when he did.

He had been acting strange since even before Becky passed. When she died Mark started getting worse. Mary found out Mark was having an affair with Tina, he promised to end it, instead he fell deeper into the world of S&M.

Mary had tolerated some of the culture even enjoyed some kinky things but like Kat explained she had her limits. She had threatened to leave him if he didn't stop. Last night was the last straw. With Sharon at her side Mary confessed that she was going to divorce Mark.

Mary gave me a proper kiss goodbye based on house rules. This time there was no hesitation. Her tongue found mine they danced with each other before she pulled away.

"I get to do that every time I see him?" Mary asked. Sharon smiled.

"I do!" Sharon replied. She led me by the hand to the front hall. "I meant what I said. I owe you!"

"And I meant what I said. It's time you both get to be happy." Sharon stepped closer.

"Danny she is more than I could have hoped for after Val. She is up there smiling right now." Sharon suggested.

"I'm sure we'll talk later I need to get going." Sharon kissed me firmly but not like before.

"You get the rest when you get back!" She explained. I chuckled.

"You and your daughter are such teases." I replied.

"That's because we know what we want!" Sharon winked.

I was at the diner when Mark showed up. I was sitting in a row of booths separated by a short wall topped with a small pane of tinted glass. Another row of booths was on the other side. I could see the top of the heads of two men on the other side of the glass but not their faces. Mark walked in, his business suit in stark contrast to the outfit he wore the night before. I stood waiting for him to reach the booth we sat down at the same time.

"So where's my wife?" He asked tersely.

"She's safe from you. Right now I believe she's on her way out of town. I'm not sure for how long." I explained.

This was true. Sharon took her to her sisters for the day. It's only the next town over less than twenty miles, but I was telling him the truth. As for when she was coming back I knew it was tonight but just not what exact time that would be!

"I need to talk to her!" Mark's voice getting louder.

"Mark she doesn't want to talk to you. At least not right now." I explained calmly.

"You can't hold her!" He threatened.

"I'm not holding her. She is with friends. My entire family, including your daughter I might add, have no participation in her whereabouts at this time." Again true. Only Sharon and her sister are involved.

"Daniel I need to talk to her. This is all a misunderstanding!" He was bluffing and we both knew it.

"Mark please. You think that because your wife likes a little kinky sex, you know, spanking, obedience, and maybe some nipple clamps justifies what you did? You're suggesting what took place last night was a misunderstanding?" I acknowledged all her fetishes to remove the argument for later.

"So I got a bit carried away. I didn't mean to actually hurt her!" I assumed this would be his angle.

I pulled out my phone and showed him the picture of her ankles and wrists. "Mark you knew she was terrified of being restrained. Do you see the scrapes and bruises?"

"If she would have just done what I asked her too..." He stumbled.

"Did she ask you to do this?" I confronted him head on. "Well?"

"No of course not!" He replied flustered.

"But you did it just the same." I showed him the welts across her back and ass. "What about these?" He looked at the pictures I showed him. I swear he was getting aroused.

"That bitch deserved those!" He said just a little too loud.

"Deserved it? She's your wife. The mother of my wife. This isn't playful spanking Mark, these are welts up and down half of her back side. She could hardly walk, and forget sitting!" I replied getting animated.

"She was talking crazy. She's confused!" He was searching for anything to make an excuse.

"Mark you had Tina on the computer watching you beat your wife. Telling you how you were her Master. You had Mary tied to a chair and was whipping her, as your mistress talked about selling her as a whore! Mark I was there!"

"So what. You heard it. But she is my wife and she can't testify against me, and you know Tina won't. So I did it. All you can prove is what you have pictures of. My lawyer will handle those. Oh and if you are recording this I'll have it thrown out because I didn't consent."

"Mark you are such a fool lately. I have not recorded any of this. So you can relax about that. I did one better. The two guys in the next booth are friends of mine." I said. Bill and Roger stood up. Mark looked worried for a moment then bluffed.

"Great so they heard. My lawyer will just say they are your friends and no one will listen to what they have to say." He was shifting in his seat.

"I thought you might think that. But you have not been properly introduced. This is Lieutenant Bill Smith and Sergeant Roger Jones. Bill is local but Roger works for the county." I said introducing them. They offered to shake his hand but he refused their offer. "Guys I appreciate your time. But I think you've heard enough about Mark and his love life. Thanks guys!"

"Anytime Dan. glad we could help. Too bad you didn't get the video that could be fun to watch!" They teased. Sometimes cops can be so crude.

"Well they have her computer. She hasn't given them the password yet so it may take some time to get it. Oh and that's my mother-in-law. So no you can't see it." I pointed to them both.

"Not even the part where she kicks him in the nuts?" Roger asked.

"Well maybe I can have them copy that just for you two?" I teased. They laughed as they walked out.

"Now are you ready to negotiate or do I need to explain more? Your wife can't be forced to testify against you but she can WILLINGLY do it. Besides I doubt she will still be married to you when the court date is scheduled." I explained.

"What do you want?" Mark was fucked and we both knew it.

"Very simple. First you are going to leave town for at least a week, to where I don't care. Dallas if you want. Second Mary gets the house free and clear. That is one asset you can't hide. Third she gets one half of all assets other than the house, including your pension. You can have everything she doesn't take while you're gone."

"Are you insane? Half and the house?" Mark was shifting in his seat.

"Mark. I have talked to her lawyer. He thinks he can do better. Sure the house is a valuable asset but you have earning power. Mary hasn't worked in years! We aren't asking for any alimony, other than the pension when you retire. Oh by the way you will have to pay for an insurance policy that pays her if you die." I offered.

"No alimony?" Mark asked stunned. "Anything else?"

"Nope. You can go live in Dallas with Tina, you're out a few bucks, but you have no drain on your paycheck. Couple of years you will be flush with cash and no obligations!"

"When do you need an answer?" He asked defeated, at least for the moment.

"You have an hour to get to this address and sign off on the deal. If you aren't there. Bill will be on duty and may need you downtown for some questioning."

"And if I do sign what about those questions then?" Mark fumed.

"Well it wouldn't be in Mary's interest to have you brought up on charges would it? It may reduce the assets available if you both need to hire lawyers for a criminal and civil suit. You see Mark she isn't trying to punish you, just divorce you!"

"I'll see you in less than an hour." He replied pissed.

The meeting went as planned. With his lawyer present Mark signed off. Mary knew where most of the money was. He was sloppy trying to hide the rest. He left the next day to Dallas as I expected.

Mary with the help of friends took what she wanted. In the end it wasn't that much. Mostly items of value and things passed down through her family. Nikki and Kat helped her often. Sharon was at her side every moment she wasn't working.

Mark came back he took what he wanted. It was almost six months before the final paperwork was signed. He moved to Dallas as I suspected he would. Mary sold or donated what was left of the furnishings. I then listed the house. It sold quick enough at a fair price. I of course returned my commission back to Mary.

But I'm getting ahead of myself.

Mary, Nikki and I met at the lawyers. Mark showed up with his. Mine, well in this case Mary's had all the documents ready to sign. It wasn't the divorce which would still take months to process. It was a binding agreement to split the assets. For now Mary had a home, some money, and future security. Mark wasn't happy but even his lawyer thought it was fair when we showed him a few pictures.

After I left the lawyers I stopped by work to take care of some proposals, then I went up to Sally's. Charles and Eve had arrived. George was in a much better mood. All the drama with Mary had taken its toll on me. I felt such a relief when it was over and I was back with the ones I loved.

Charles greeted me first it felt good to have him around. He was loud and over dramatic as we embraced but I would have felt something was wrong if he hadn't. Eve kissed me lightly on the lips her hand wandered down and squeezed my cock so no one could see. She gave me that naughty grin letting me know I was part of the agenda.

We talked about the drama with Mary, at least the cliff notes. George and Charles both seemed to be impressed with the settlement.

"Why did you go with the house and not alimony?" Charles asked at one point.

"Mark has been on a downward spiral since Becky passed away. I have a feeling his earning potential will be affected by this addiction if you want to call it that. The house is a known asset. His future isn't under these conditions. He chose Tina over his wife almost without a fight. I don't see this coming out with a good ending anytime soon. My guess is he could go broke before he straightens up if he ever does."

"What about supporting herself?" George asked.

"Mary has little need for money right now. She has half of the cash and I would guess another $300.000 coming when the house sells. Besides she still gets half of the pension so her future is at least secured."

Charles looked at George they both seemed impressed at my logic.

"You did this is in one night?" George asked just to clarify it.

"Yes sir." I beamed.

"Impressive young man, very impressive." Charles stated.

I headed home to be with my family for the night. Sally was going to have everyone over Saturday and asked me to bring Sharon and her kids, and of course Mary.

Nikki burst into my arms the moment I cleared the door.

"I am so proud of you!" She kissed me and hugged me for almost five minutes. Kat came over and welcomed me as well with almost as much enthusiasm. We had a quiet dinner as I explained all the sordid details of my meeting with Mark.

I played with Kyle for hours he seemed to have grown a couple inches in just the last few days. Tomorrow he was going in for his nine month checkup. I was curious to see if I was right.

I watched as Nikki feed him then put him to bed. She invited me up to their room. It wasn't often the three of us made love but this was another occasion where I think we all needed to be together.

I was on my back suckling mom's engorged tits draining first one then the other as she hovered above me. The swollen breasts hanging down had her nipples fat and dripping. The warm nectar was sweet as it passed through my mouth. Nikki was sucking my dick and then impaled herself just as I finished draining all mom had to offer.

I positioned mom so I could lick her pussy, but soon she shifted to where she was truly desperate. I rimmed her asshole as Nikki pounded my cock. I couldn't see but I could feel milk spraying on my chest I assumed Kat was milking what Nikki hadn't fed Kyle.

It had been days since I last came. That wasn't normally a problem for me but with all that had taken place the need to cum was now upon me. I pulled back from mom's ass just long enough to sound the warning. Kat ground her ass back so my tongue would probe deeper in her loosening hole. I could feel her rubbing her clit she rocked slightly now so I was fucking her ass with my tongue.

"Cum with me! I'm ready!" Nikki alerted us both.

She ground her clit onto the base of my cock. Kat moved back so I could suck her clit. My first blast of cum filled Nikki just as the first sign of mom's nectar started to flow from her pussy. Nikki was pounding me. Mom was raking her pussy over my mouth and tongue. I was emptying my balls deep inside Nikki.

The moans and groans filled the room the bed shook as all three of us convulsed through our respective orgasms. I can't remember a time when we all came together with as much desire and passion. Kat pulled off me, Nikki fell forward kissing me and cleaning my face. My cock slipped from her pussy a warm mouth took her place. I went soft for just a moment. Mom's mouth was just too magical and I rose to the occasion.

"I want him in my ass!" Kat hissed. Kat swapped positions with me moving to the edge of the bed. Nikki straddled her face.

Holding herself up so her pussy was just out of reach we watched as my cum dripped into Kat's mouth. Grabbing Kat's ankles Nikki pulled them to her chest. Mom's rose bud was staring at my cock. I held her ankles Nikki leaned forward and slipped her fingers in mom's soggy pussy.

"Ass, I want him in my ass!" Kat pleaded. Nikki removed the two fingers from mom's pussy slid them over her perineum and dipped them in Kat's asshole. "Oh baby that feels so good!"

Nikki lowered her pussy just enough so mom could lick her dangling pussy lips. She teased mom's ass fucking her with her fingers then withdrawing them and spanking her rose bud.

"Enough!" Kat cried out. "Put him in me!" She demanded.

Nikki reached over stroked me several times and lined me up with Kat's puckered asshole. I pushed, you could hear mom take a deep breath. My cock burrowed deeper she exhaled, I hit bottom she shuddered for a second.

"I can never get enough of that! I even came a bit!" Kat moaned. Nikki lowered her pussy I started fucking mom's ass steadily.

Nikki grabbed Kat's ankles, that left my hands free to roam. I milked Nikki's tits coating mom's pussy and stomach. Nikki came first she gushed all over mom's face. I was reaching my limit as Nikki rolled off Kat. I took her legs drove myself deep.

Kat's eyes were closed a big smile plastered across her face. Nikki reached in and started fingering mom's pussy I could feel her thrusts across the top of my dick. Just as I was ready to cum she started strumming Kat's clit. I emptied my balls as mom climbed the walls lost in her own orgasm!

We slept together that night.

The next day was Friday. At breakfast I suggested that I stay home instead of going to Sally's. Mom and Nikki both refused to hear of it.

"Your mom is in town and I know for a fact she is expecting some alone time" Kat explained.

I arrived at Sally's in time for dinner. I was surprised to find Charles and George not there. Eve met me at the door she was wearing a red see through lace bra, red garters with stockings, red high heels and her robe obviously open. With no panties her pussy looked freshly shaven her perfume met me three feet before her lips did. Without a word Eve pulled me into a deep kiss. I wrapped my arms inside her robe and grabbed both ass cheeks.

"What's the occasion?" I asked.

"You are. Come with me." My mother grinned.

She slipped loose and took me to my room. She was at my pants her mouth on my cock before I removed my tie. I was still almost fully clothed. My slacks puddled around my ankles, my shoes and socks still on. Sufficiently hard I slipped my shoes off and stepped out of my slacks when she stood.

"Fuck me son!" Eve demanded. She dropped her robe jumped into my arms, hers wrapped around the back of my neck. I gripped her ass cheeks again and guided her over my cock. "I love you inside of me!"

"I love being inside of you! In fact I love you!" We kissed as I lifted her boney little ass so I could fuck her pussy.

I moved to the bed and sat down as she pushed me back. I slid further on so she could support herself then watched as Eve fucked me. Her small tits wiggled on her chest inside the bra. Her nipples long and hard pushed the material as it formed a second skin.

I reached up and squeezed one comparing it to the milk filled tits of Nikki and Kat. Mom was getting ready to cum she looked between her slender legs. My cock seemed almost as thick.

I reached around. Lubricated my finger with her juices and pressed it to her asshole.

"Not yet!" She hissed. She fucked me faster I smeared more pussy juice around her pucker. "Not yet!"

She was starting to perspire. I pulled her bra down, one tit flopped out the bra supporting the weight. I pinched the nipped as I tease her asshole.

"Danny... soon Danny..." Eve bucked I stayed with her. "NNNN...NOW!" I slipped my finger in her ass. Eve slammed her pussy down hard as I squeezed her nipple

"SALLY! COME NOW!" Eve screamed.

Eve was dancing on my cock she was babbling as her orgasm ripped through her. "Come Sally. Come Sally." It was all but a whisper by now. Eve fell forward I slipped my finger from her ass she wiggled a thank you.

I looked up and Sally was at the door, she was stunning, made up just like Eve only in white. She wasn't wearing a robe but had on panties. I could see they were soaked.

"Get on him now baby! I have him ready." Eve commanded.

Sally slipped the panties off, the hair around her pussy wet and matted. She straddled me. Eve gripped my cock and guide it into Sally's pussy.

The difference in two sister's pussy's still intrigues me. Sally is built much different. Her full womanly shape and massive tit's are built for comfort. Her thicker waist and curvy hips, in stark contrast to Eve's slim athletic body. But her pussy was like another planet. Fuller, softer, but still tight. Her hairy pussy was different. I prefer shaven but this seemed more basic. More outdoors vs city. I loved them both.

Sally settled over me I thrusted up to seat my cock in her she responded by thrusting forward.

"Do it to her. Do it the same way!" Eve encouraged.

Sally and I fucked, or should I say she fucked me? Her titties stretched her bra. It did little to restrain the sway of her big boobs. It wasn't long before she too was near the brink. As before I reached around and wet my finger, the same one in fact.

I spread her wetness on her anus she gave me a knowing smile. I teased her pucker getting it wetter and wetter. Sally responded by fucking me faster. Like Eve I reached up and slipped one cup under her tit the weight of it overpowered her bra. It dangle her, small nipple still hard. I pinched it she groaned.

"You're going to make me cum!" Sally protested. She was almost there. I teased her asshole she pushed back.

"Can I cum in you!" I asked. Her eyes widened. "Tell me you want it! Tell me you need me to cum in you!"

"Oh you know I do. Fill me up Danny, fill my pussy with your love!" Sally was gasping for air. I slipped my finger in her ass and pinched her nipple.

"Eve I'm cumming. Oh god sister you're right!" Sally pulled off me to the tip then slammed down.

Her extra weight pushed me deep in the mattress. I thrusted up lifting her up my finger slipped deeper. She rocked on my cock her juices dripped from her cunt over my balls. I orgasmed and filled her pussy. Sally collapsed on top of me Eve pulled her into a kiss. They caressed each other.

"Feel better now?" Eve asked.

"I always do!" Sally whispered. They both kissed me. We took a shower then in robes only ate dinner.

Charles had taken George golfing. Charles insisted even if George only rode in the cart. It was still early after we cleaned up the dishes. It was hard concentrating as Sally's big tits swayed beneath her robe and Eve kept flashing her pussy.

We sat in the living room drinking wine and talking. Eve had her legs over my lap her pussy just out of sight. Sally was on the other side of me leaning against me her tits straining to stay inside the robe. Eve had questions about George and his struggles.

Physically he was making great progress but Sally and I thought mentally he was finding it hard to cope. The conversation then turned to Mary and what went on with her. The deal had been signed off but it would be months before the divorce was final and anything could happen in that time.

Sally asked about the night Nikki and I found her tied to the chair. I explained how she had the nipple clamps on. How she was getting whipped and Mark threatened to fuck her ass. Eve reached between her legs and started to rub her pussy exposing it to me. Sally watched Eve then fondled her tit. She looked at me I could tell she wanted something.

"What?" I asked Sally.

"I want you to fuck my ass tonight!" There was yearning in her eyes like I hadn't seen often. "You promised months ago. I want to do it now. I want Eve to watch!" Sally stood up and extended her hand to Eve. "You go to your room while we go get ready to cross off another item on the list"

I went to my room got out some extra towels. A couple of wet wash cloths and the lube. They returned to my room the three of us lay on the bed building our desires. Eve and I focused on Sally. Eve rubbed her pussy as I fingered her asshole to lube and loosen her up. Sally moved to her knees.

"Now my son, I want you in me now!" Sally hissed.

Eve applied a liberal amount of lube to my hard cock and added more to Sally's.

"Please baby don't hurt me!" Sally turned and gave me a wicked smile. She wanted me to know she was just playing.

"Wench I'm going to take your ass and you're going to love it. Do you hear me?"

"Yes son."

I smacked her ass cheeks playfully. Eve had two small fingers in her puckered hole. Sally was pushing back she was desperately wanting to get started. Eve grabbed my slick cock and guided it to my aunt's anus. The opening left from her fingers wasn't anything compared to the flare of my cock head.

I leaned in, Sally pushed back. I stopped, letting her control the depth. Eve and I watched as her asshole resisted the intruder. The lube squeezed from around my cock head as Eve caressed and spread her ass cheeks. Sally was moaning in pain or pleasure it was hard to say which.

"Oh Danny it's so big! Oh my god this is so ...intense...so ..." I leaned forward she pushed back my cock head disappeared inside her asshole. "EVE! You have to do this! Oh my god!"

I held for a moment letting her adjust, Sally held still then pushed back slowly. Eve was watching, her hand went to her pussy stroking it. She leaned down to Sally.

"Baby sister he's in your ass! My son. Our son is in your ass. How does it feel?"

"Oh Eve you have no idea! It's like nothing I've ever felt before. It hurts just a bit but a good hurt. Then there is this glorious feeling of being filled. I can feel every inch as he goes deeper. So many feelings all at the same time. I can see why Kathryn loves this. Too bad George would never do it!" They kissed as I started to get a rhythm Sally rocked back and forth on my cock.

She and Eve kissed then Eve would come watch as her sisters ass started to loosen around my cock. Eve spanked her playfully she squeezed Sally's tits. The whole time Sally continued to voice her pleasure. I was surprised she hadn't cum since she normally was a fast cummer. Maybe this didn't do it for her maybe she was holding back. Eve leaned into me.

"Pull it out I want to see inside." She whispered. It was a bizarre suggestion but I knew Sally liked it a bit kinky.

I pulled out. Sally's asshole was distended we could see the pink and red deep inside.

"Oh Danny put it back!" Sally begged I slipped it back in as her hole started to close. The head opened her up and I was half way in. "Do it again! Hurry baby do it again!"

Eve spanked her ass cheeks. "Say please wench!"

"Please Eve make your son do that again!" Eve smiled at me I pulled free. Sally's ass gaped open again. I spanked her gaping hole with my cock.

"Uhhg!" She responded. When it closed I plunged back into her ass.

"Please Eve again!" Sally pleaded. Eve spanked her cheeks. Sally responded by thrusting back.

"You're an ass whore aren't you?" Eve hissed.

"Yes sister I'm your ass whore just make him do it again!"

Sally was so desperate. I could tell she was close to cumming. Eve nodded to me. I pulled out. Eve spanked her gaping hole you could see her quiver as she tried to keep it distended. I held myself back. Sally was expecting me to plunge back in but Eve held me off.

"Hurry put him back in!" Sally begged. Eve coated two fingers and rimmed Sally's asshole as it started to close. Sally was panting she pushed back against Eve's fingers. Eve slipped them deep in Sally's ass. She moaned in frustration.

"Will you cum for me if I let him back in your ass?" Eve taunted her. She was fucking Sally's ass with her fingers. Sally reached behind and pulled her ass cheeks wide.

"Yes, I promise, just please put him back in I need to be filled with that wonderful cock of his!" Sally whimpered.

Eve guided me back she held the base of my cock and placed it at the opening of Sally puffy asshole. I pushed forward. Sally wiggled back.

"Yes. Oh my son yes. Fill my whore ass with your cock!" She started to shudder still holding her ass cheeks apart. Eve moved down to kiss her.

"I'm CUMMING!" Sally announced.

She thrust her ass back I drove in deep then started to pound her, my balls slapping her pussy. I could hear them whispering as Sally enjoyed her

orgasm. She pulled herself off me and lay flat on the bed. I watched as her sphincter slowly closed.

Eve looked at her sister and then at my raging hard-on. I knew what she wanted before she said it.

"I'm next!" Eve volunteered. Sally was spent but quickly moved to the side. Eve moved to me and kissed me as she stroked my cock. "Mommy wants it hard!"

I kissed her back she squeezed my cock until it hurt just enough to wince. "Mommy wants it hard and nasty!"

Eve turned, Sally catching her second wind, hurriedly lubed my cock and her asshole. She started to finger Eve's ass.

"No! I want to feel it all!" Eve hissed.

I initiated contact Eve pushed back hard. My cock was straining and starting to bend. Eve eased up a bit then leaned back again. Sally gripped her ass cheeks and spread them wide the tip of my cock almost breached the hole. Eve eased again.

"Oh god that feels so powerful! Here I come!" She pushed back hard the tip slipped in but she continued pushing until my cock was buried in her ass! "YESSSSSSSSS! Mother fuck that feels good!"

Eve wasted no time. She started fucking my cock. I held still not wanting to hurt her.

"Fuck your slut!" Eve demanded.

I knew what this meant, she was possessed and she wanted no mercy. I started to fuck her. Sally caressed her ass and then gripped her small pointy tit's.

"Harder. Fuck me harder. Pinch my nipple harder!" Eve was barking orders her body shook as mini orgasms wreaked havoc on her.

Sally left the room as I pounded Eve returning shortly with spring loaded wooden clothes pins.

"Here slut just for you!" Sally clipped two on each tit Eve squealed in delight.

I had her tight ass quite loose now. She was responding to all the stimulation by babbling about how good it felt. I could watch in the mirror as Sally kissed her and stroked her tit's pulling on the clothes pins.

"Take it out. I want to feel it go back in!" Eve hissed.

"You want your slut ass fucked fresh?" I asked

"Yes baby watch it close then split me open! Train my ass to take your cock!" Eve begged. I pulled out and watched as her asshole close.

"Ok slut here it comes!" I plunged in she squealed in delight.

I did this several times she murmured her satisfaction each time. I pulled out and bent over and rimmed her gaping hole.

"Oh Danny I'm such a slut for you! Don't stop!" Sally sat up and watched as her sphincter closed around my tongue.

"Let your whore do that!" Sally begged.

I shoved my cock in Eve's pussy I was so fucking excited I was almost ready to cum. I pulled out, Sally held Eve's ass cheeks wide and rimmed her gaping anus.

"I need to cum!" Eve announced.

"Not yet slut!" I commanded.

"Please son mommy needs to cum!"

"Not yet I said!" I pulled Sally's head by her hair she protested my interruption.

"I'm not done!" Sally complained.

I thrusted back in Eve's marvelous ass. She cried out in pleasure.

"You motherfucker I need to cum!" Mom cursed. I smacked her ass firmly.

"Not yet SLUT!" I yelled. I pulled out and pushed Sally's face back to Eve's ass. She rimmed the gaping hole Eve sighed in frustration. I pumped my cock twice. Pulling back Sally's head I shot the first wad right in her mouth. I plunged my cock in Eve's ass.

"Now slut! Cum now!" I coated her rectum with several shots then reached around and ripped the clothespins from her nipples. Eve screamed as she started to cum her hand now rubbing her clit. She wailed beneath me slamming her ass back hard on my shrinking cock. Her moans silenced by Sally's lips as her orgasm reverberated within.

We lay there for almost fifteen minutes kissing and caressing. It was amazing to see the two together with me.

"That was a first in so many ways." Sally beamed. "The first time in my ass. The first time licking an ass..."

"Our first threesome together!" Eve chuckled "The first time for nipple clamps!"

"The first time I have ever wanted to share my lover." Sally admitted. They both looked at me. I stayed silent.

"He doesn't kiss and tell." Sally looked at Eve.

"Smart son we have. Eh sister?"

"I love you both." Sally replied we all kissed.

"I'm up for a shower. Anyone else?" I offered.

"Golden?" Sally squealed. She gave me that naughty smile, we both knew what she meant.

"We could do that first!" I teased her.

"Are you... what I think you mean?" Eve looked shocked.

"Come with us. It will be fun. It should be still on your list I'm guessing!" Sally asked. She stood and pulled Eve with her.

We headed to the shower Sally emptied her bladder all over my legs and Eves. Eve was so excited she asked to go next. Sally kneeled. Eve pissed on Sally's chest and pussy. Sally reached up and pulled Eve down beside her. Sally grabbed my cock and guided my stream over both of their tits and pussy's. She sucked the last from my cock as Eve looked on in awe.

We took a shower together. I sent them off together knowing they had things to share. I was pooped and headed straight to bed. It was about two when I woke with a greasy hand on my cock. It was Sally.

"I couldn't sleep thinking about it!" She whispered. She was stroking my cock it was getting hard fast.

"Thinking about what?" I asked now fully awake.

"How it feels when you came in her ass. I need to know!" I pulled her down and kissed her fully.

"Mom you never cease to amaze me. You are so fucking sexy when you're so honest." I kissed her again.

She was on her knees.

"Mom this may take a while here lie in front of me." We spooned. I took the lube from her and coated my cock and then her pucker. It was still spongy from our earlier encounter. Still Sally was eager for more as I teased her asshole.

"Danny please put him in. Your whore needs it!"

"No mom. This time the whore is gone. I just want my mom to enjoy it." I eased against her she took a deep breath, relaxed, and took my cock in her ass.

"I love you Danny. Fuck anyone else you want but don't ever leave me."

"I won't mom."

"Promise?" She asked. I hesitated just a second.

"I promise!" She nuzzled back against me. I knew we were connected for life. Of all the women in my life she is the one that knew me best. I couldn't be happier.

"Mom I love you. I'll always be there for you no matter what." I whispered, Sally wiggled her ass allowing me to push deeper.

"I love you Daniel. I'll always be here for you. Body..." She pushed back further and giggled. "And soul."

She grabbed my hand and brought it to her full breast. I caressed and squeezed it.

"Now take your time and fill me up. The list is getting longer!"

It was almost an hour before I filled her ass she had three orgasms before I unloaded. I promised her we could do this again but wanted her pussy the next time. She told me her pussy was mine for the taking any time I wanted.

Eve was in the bed with us come morning. They started getting frisky. I ended up fucking them both in the pussy until I filled each one.

That day Sally had a big party. George and Charles were back. George seemed like he was in a much better place mentally. I figured with Charles that would happen. I helped Eve and Sally until Kat and Nikki arrived with Kyle. Sharon arrived with Jr., Lizzy, and Sam and Nikki's mom Mary. Lizzy took Kyle from me so Sam and I could play.

I took him downstairs it was cavernous place, as big as the house upstairs including a walkout basement. It wasn't completely finished, George and Sally had more than enough room on the first level. We played until they called us to eat. The conversations went everywhere. I found a spot and just took it all in. After all the drama this week if for just a few hours all was well in my life.

Nothing of interest took place until Kyle started getting restless. Nikki took him to another room to feed him. She normally didn't but with so many people he tends to get distracted easily and takes forever to feed.

I noticed Lizzy tag along which I found noteworthy for some reason. My curiosity got the best of me, I started to follow minutes later. Sharon saw me leave and joined along.

We found them in my room setting on the bed Lizzy holding Kyle to Nikki's breast. I leaned against the open door frame. Sharon joined me leaning into my chest. I wrapped my arms around her waist. Nikki and Lizzy were deep in discussion about what was taking place. Kyle's slurping and cooing was in the background.

"Your boobs are so big." Lizzy said looking down at hers.

"Well they aren't normally this big but they're full of milk. They'll get smaller when I stop breast feeding."

"Does it hurt?"

"Once in a while he gets a little rough. If they get too full they start to get uncomfortable so then it feels great." Nikki looked up and saw Sharon and me standing there. Lizzy looked over past her mom at me. She locked in on my eyes, there was a moment of hesitation, then she smiled.

"I'm just helping feed him. Don't get all weird on me now?" Lizzy said quickly, she was trying to hide her embarrassment from me.

"Ask her how she relieves the pressure when Kyle isn't around!" I teased.

Sharon knew what I meant. She put her hand to her mouth and bit on her finger so as not to laugh.

"Well?" Lizzy asked turning to Nikki.

"Danny is teasing you." Nikki was trying not to laugh herself.

"Nikki tell me!" Lizzy pleaded. Nikki looked at Sharon for guidance.

"You may as well tell her she won't stop until she gets the answers. Besides I think she is mature enough to know." Sharon replied. Lizzy looked back at Nikki.

"Well I have a pump I use to put it in a bottle for later. We keep the milk in the fridge." Lizzy knew there was something else. We all could tell Nikki was being coy.

"Nikkiiiiii." I prodded her. "Tell her the truth!" Lizzy looked back at me and then Nikki.

"Danny sucks the milk from my breast!" They all squealed startling Kyle. "There, are you happy now perv?" Nikki looked at me with fake scorn.

"EEEWWW! That's disgusting!" Lizzy responded. She looked at me oddly, Lizzy hesitated, that is when I saw it, the tell-tale sign, and then she glared at me.

"Hey it's just milk. You're not going get all weird on me now are you?" I winked at her letting her know I got the last laugh. "It's really quite good. You should try it!"

She looked at her mom and then Nikki to see if I was pulling her leg again.

"Tell you what, I'm going to leave. But no kidding you should try it. You did it when you were a baby so why not now?" I reminded her.

I slipped from behind Sharon, she stepped in the room. They came out much later leaving Kyle to sleep. I wanted to ask but thought better of it. Nikki came into the room where all were gathered. She motioned to me to come stand beside her.

"I have an announcement for you all." She looked at me taking my hand I knew it the moment we touched. "Danny and I are having another baby!" Nikki proudly announced.

The whole room filled with applause. Everyone came to congratulate us starting with Mary. After her week this was welcome news. The congratulations continued, Kat came to me we embraced.

"You knew?" I asked.

"She found out yesterday at the doctors when she had Kyle in for his checkup."

"Are you happy?" I asked.

"Oh Danny you know I am." Kat smiled.

"Good then so am I." I kissed her nose.

"Daniel can I have a word with you?" George asked. I let go of Kat and headed to him.

"Sure what can I do for you?"

"I would like you to join Charles and me, we have business to discuss." George said gruffly.

I headed to his office with Charles close behind. George sat at his desk glad to be sitting. After closing the door Charles pulled up chair as I did mine.

"Daniel I would like you to come work for me. I want you to start running the business." George proclaimed. I looked to Charles he sat silent.

"Sir, I'm not sure what you mean. I can come help you if you want?" I watched him closely. He was a tough old coot. This wasn't the way he did things.

"No Daniel I want you to come run the business while I'm still around to teach you!" He was getting agitated. I looked back at Charles. He was waiting to see what I would say.

"Sir with all due respect I'll pass. I'm not cut out for construction. I like real estate. I'm good at it. If you want someone to teach I can recommend someone that will do much better job than me." I said.

"Confound it I am offering you my business!" George bellowed.

"Uncle George is this because of your stroke?" I asked.

His eyes glared back at me in rage. "You had a setback. There isn't anything to be ashamed of. Get yourself healthy. Maybe cut back on your hours and you will do fine." I replied politely.

"There I told you he was a sharp kid! I told you to stop being so negative. Listen to Daniel. What is the name of the man you want to recommend?" Charles looked at me.

"Darius. He was the best man at my wedding." I explained. I looked to George.

"The black guy?" George gave me an odd look.

"Well ok. Yes he's black. But he is very sharp at what he does. Darius is married, has young kids, a real smart wife. He has worked for you almost six years now. He is liked by all the crews and has some great fresh ideas on how to build houses. I know if you let him work with you he will impress you without a doubt!" I said excitedly. George was silent.

"George I think you have found your man!" Charles had painted him in a corner.

If he said no then we could claim it was because he was depressed. If he said yes he would have to give Darius a shot.

"Fine. I'll try him out." George finally replied. He didn't seem happy but I knew looking at Charles, he and I were.

"You won't regret this sir!" I said firmly.

"Great! Now the second thing I want to say. And this time there will be no argument." He glared at Charles and back at me. "I want you to take this house!"

"WHAT?" I looked at Charles even he was stunned. "George I ..."

"I told you there would be no argument my mind is made up." He dared me to cross him.

"Where will you live?"

"In your mom's house. Even swap. You need more room, I need less, simple as that. It's still my favorite house, with the changes you've made it will be perfect." He looked at both of us.

"But this house is worth ten times what that house is worth maybe more!" I protested.

"Great! So you're getting a good deal. Fine by me. What do I care I have everything I need and more." He again glared at Charles and me daring us to protest.

We said nothing. "It's agreed then. I would like to keep this between ourselves until January. The holidays are stressful enough." George grunted. We all agreed.

After we shook hands I hugged them both and returned to the party. It was getting late. Sharon and the kids were getting ready to go. Mary kissed everyone goodbye then stopped to see me and Nikki. She kissed her daughter lightly on the lips. Mary stood in front of me a tear rolled down her cheek.

"I don't know how to thank you enough for what you did for me." She looked back at Sharon and the kids. "I'm so happy!" She kissed me firmly on the lips not letting go for several wonderful seconds.

"I think you still owe me one of those." Sharon teased. Mary blushed. Nikki laughed.

"Well tonight he better have a few left for me!" Nikki offered. Sharon winked at me.

"Later." I replied.

Sharon kissed my cheek. Jr shook my hand. Sam jumped up for a hug and then shook my hand. Lizzy gave me an uncertain look. With my hands behind my back I leaned in to kiss her thinking she would present her cheek. Lizzy surprised everyone when she kissed me on the lips lightly.

"So you did like it!" I teased. Nikki slapped my shoulder.

"You don't have to answer him!" Nikki told Lizzy

"It was just milk Danny. Don't get all weird on me now! And you're still disgusting!" Lizzy boldly replied.

The whole room laughed as Lizzy joined her mom and brothers.

"You know she likes you, right?" Nikki looked at me.

"She's a cute kid. Soon she will have boys her age drooling all over her. Then she won't give me another thought." I kissed Nikki. "We better get going."

I followed Nikki, Kat and Kyle rode with me. I told Kat about the business proposition but not the house.

"You think he's still depressed?" Kat asked.

"Well it's hard to know for sure. Charles is here and the holidays are coming. We should know better come the first of the year. We should stay close it might be wise if you visited Sally more often."

"Ok, I can do that. She loves when I bring Kyle over, it always perks George up." Kat explained.

Nikki and I celebrated the news of our second child with a night long love making session. Sunday night Kat and I did the same.

Monday was a new week, I looked forward to getting back on track. Kat said Sharon was her old self at work. Everyone commented on how happy she was. Nikki was in high spirits considering her dad was in Dallas, but she knew her mom was safe and in loving hands. Sally still had Eve and Charles until the weekend so George had some company.

Charles met me for lunch with Art. Charles knew Art's dad Maxwell when he ran the business. Max was semi-retired. Arthur was maybe forty, the son of Max's second wife. Charles always liked the fact Art gave me a chance. They hit it off famously. Charles and Art talked shop while I sat and soaked it all up like a sponge. They talked about the workings of the business, compared markets, talked overhead, and credit availability.

Charles commented on how loose credit was getting. Art explained that he and his father had that exact same discussion. Art paid for lunch kidding Charles that with me out there selling he would make it up on my next commission. Charles and I left after they exchanged cards.

"Daniel you pay attention to that young man. He knows his stuff." Charles insisted. We looked at few properties I had listed to see if they were presentable then headed back to the office.

"Are you coming over this week?" Charles asked shyly.

"Normally just Friday's." He didn't react.

That night Mary stopped by after dinner. We talked in the living room. Mary was jittery the whole time. She asked to talk to Nikki in private. Nikki took Kyle and headed upstairs. Kat looked after them a knowing smile crossed her face. I thought I knew but now I was sure.

I moved to Kat. "Are they going to do what I think?" Kat tried to hide it but I knew her all too well.

"They are getting closer now that Mark is out of the picture. I think they have held back so he couldn't use it against her if he found out. I know there is desire on both sides but as you know that is a big step to take."

"What about you and Sharon?" I asked.

"We've dallied." Mom grinned.

"Dallied?" I repeated.

"She has a new toy thanks to you!" Kat replied then kissed me. "But soon I'm sure. I have you and Nikki for now. That's enough."

"And Sally?" I probed further.

"I come home for lunch when she watches the baby occasionally. But she much prefers you."

"Eve?" I just had to ask.

"Your mother is insatiable! God she can't get enough of us!" Kat kissed me again. "It's a good thing she lives in Florida!"

I kissed Kat then tugged at her slacks. She gave me a cautious look.

"I want to eat your pussy!"

"Now?" She asked. I slipped off her panties and spread her legs driving my tongue in her pussy.

That should be her answer I thought. With one leg on the back of the couch and one on the floor her cunt was open for business. I spent my time working her up and then set my sights to bringing her off.

Kat loved to fuck and even more when I take her ass, but she taught me how to eat her pussy first and I never forget a lesson. She was grasping at the cushions as her orgasm cascaded through her. She pulled me up and kissed me her sodden pussy still on display. Mom licked her excitement from my face.

"Nah. that would be too much." I mumbled. "I better go clean up." I laughed.

Kat slipped her panties on as I started to go clean up.

"Daniel were you going to...?" Kat teased as she was putting on her slacks. "Danny wait until she leaves. I have a feeling you were right. She might enjoy this." Kat gave me a knowing grin. "Come here."

Kat lowered my pants pulled out my cock and sucked me in. She stroke me a few times with her mouth then replaced it with her hand.

"You need to hurry they may come down soon!" Her plan was becoming more devious. Taking her cue I wasted no time getting ready to fill her mouth. I heard them move around upstairs. I was filling mom's mouth when the first stair creaked.

Kat zipped me up just as they rounded the corner. We both knew Mary would want to leave quickly. Mary looked guilty as sin as she headed across the room.

"Good bye Danny. Good by Kathryn." Mary quickly stated as she moved to the door.

"Mary please come here!" Kat said. Mary looked at Nikki. You could see the fear in her eyes. "Give me a kiss!" Kat requested.

"I have a cold maybe another time." Mary lied. Mom was hearing none of that. "Mary I want my kiss!"

Mary stood fixed as mom locked lips with her. Mary's eyes sprang open as Kat shared my cum with her. I moved beside her and as she left moms arms I

took her in mine. I could taste Nikki on her lips and smelled her scent in her hair.

Mary tasted Kat. Her tongue searched my mouth looking for more to fuel her desire. This was one hot sexy woman. We parted she stood pressed against me. My semi-hard cock creased her stomach. I kissed her again but more gently.

"You know. If you're going to seduce my wife, you could at least spend the night!" I explained. Nikki was laughing.

"Mom I told you they would know!" Nikki squealed. Mary turned beet red she was so embarrassed. I pulled her close.

"Mom. It's ok. We love you. If you and Nikki want to make love together or with someone else? Well as long as it's your decision..." Mary pulled me in for another kiss this time with more passion.

"You really are just that special. Did you just eat your mother and cum in her mouth for me?" Mary questioned. Now Nikki was surprised.

"Well no and yes. It wasn't like we didn't want to do it anyways. But yes we wanted to surprise you!" I explained.

She moved to Kat and kissed her again searching for more cum.

"I have got to go before I do stay the night." Mary confessed. She walked over to Nikki. She kissed her passionately.

"I love you baby. Thank you for..." Mary looked at Kat and me. "For everything!"

Nikki explained how Mary told her how close she had become with Sharon. She wanted Nikki's blessing. One thing led to another they confessed their feelings for each other, and well, sometimes good things just happen.

The New Year's Eve party 2004 was held Wednesday night at Sharon's. She insisted reminding Mary that it was something she had done for years. Lizzy and Sam stayed with Kyle while Kat, Nikki, and I went to the party. Jr stayed with a friend whose parents attended. Sally brought George but he insisted on leaving early. Nikki allowed herself one glass of champagne so Kat and I followed suit.

Friday night I spent at Sally's. I talked to George and he hadn't changed his mind. That Saturday the gang came over for the big announcement.

Everyone gathered around. George must have told Sally because when he announced his decision she didn't react except to look at me with a slight grin. He explained that he and I had talked and the decision was final.

Once the trade was made the house would be ours to do with as we pleased. We could stay or sell it. Nikki and Kat were floored by the news and both hugged and kissed George until he was red with embarrassment.

It was the happiest I had seen him in weeks. He was the man again even if for just a brief moment in time. The weeks to follow were filled with moving trucks. Trips to charities and a yard sale in our sub. By the first of February we were both finally in our respective new homes.

The new house is massive by comparison. Three thousand square feet on just the main floor. The master suite was on one side and three large bedrooms on the other side. Each bedroom had its own bath complete with tubs or showers and plenty of counter space. I kept my room. Nikki and Kat shared the next. Kyle's was the last room on that side of the house.

At my insistence the master suite was to be left unoccupied. Sally came over at least once a week to watch Kyle, sometimes more. I wanted her to have a place of her own to spend time if she wanted.

Nikki and Kat never questioned my decision. They even went shopping with her and purchased a new king size bed and bedroom set.

The first Friday I went to George and Sally's like I always did, only now they were in my old house. It just didn't feel right. I slept upstairs alone. Sally and George slept in the only bedroom downstairs. The second week he sent Sally up to sleep with me. We didn't do anything but talk. By the end of the month he was being unbearable to be around.

Darius said business was booming. He had helped George start moving into new markets like sustainable and renewable materials. The new home buyers were willing to pay for the extra cost and they were the only local builders that were doing it in every home. I know from my sales perspective he was right.

Early in March I stopped coming on Friday nights. Sally stayed at our house now on that night. We still didn't do anything but talk. The second Friday she came we sat up and had a frank talk about what was going on at home.

George had fallen deeper in depression. He lounged around in his pajamas sometimes for days. He was starting to smell refusing to take showers for days at times. George was missing work blaming Darius. George said because the new kid was so much smarter than he was. Sally now slept upstairs alone.

Saturday I went to see him. George was combative but still sharp as a tack. He refused to acknowledge he needed help. I tried to talk business with him but he was a stubborn old cuss. When I left he was sitting in his recliner wallowing in self-pity.

Physically he was almost 100 percent. He was cleared to drive and could even play golf if he wanted. He still had a slight gimp but only he seemed to notice. I had an idea but needed help. I called in Sally and with Kat and Nikki I explained my plan.

It was bold but simple. Risky but needed. It required Sally to be prepared to do something that would hurt her deeply. Maybe even end her marriage.

I left Kat and Nikki to talk with her, then told her to let me know at a later date. It was only days later when she called telling me she loved George but had enough. She wanted the old George back regardless how it would affect her.

Thursday morning I took a drive. I didn't even know if she would see me, but I had a feeling she would. When Margaret opened the door she wasn't what I expected. Short, maybe five four, and she was what you would call a thick woman. Her jet black hair had just touches of gray. Her almond complexion belied her Italian heritage.

After I explained why I was here and what we wanted to accomplish she seemed willing to help. She hadn't seen George since his stroke and he stopped answering her calls. As we talked further I took her hand.

Maggie, as she insisted I call her told me how she met George. Before her husband died they were in construction too. They had met George on several occasions' years before on business junkets. She and George had a fling years ago. Margret ended it when she thought her husband suspected something.

To her knowledge he never knew. George stopped by after her husband passed. He had been coming for years maybe once every other month then monthly. George started coming weekly about the time he started the golf outings. They had always been intimate until his stroke. I could tell she was sincere but more than that she was in love with him.

The time had come to explain my plan. Maggie was intrigued by it. When I got to the actual details she was shocked to say the least. When I explained my reasons why, she didn't hesitate. She offered to drive over but I insisted on picking her up.

That night I called Sally explaining what I needed her to do. I could tell she was nervous but excited at the same time. I talked to Nikki and Kat explaining what was going to take place. The next day I started the ball rolling. George stayed home from work Friday as expected.

I picked Maggie up around six. It was uncommonly cold for the season, even in March. With nothing but her purse and the clothes she wore we started back to town. The conversation was surprisingly ordinary considering the circumstances. I found her truly bright and witty. I liked her.

Even as we neared our destination she remained calm and focused. George was one lucky bastard I thought to myself. I called Sally, her responsibilities were completed, and she would meet us at the back door ready to go. Now I only hoped they could contain their emotions to put the plan in action.

"We turn back now or we do this. It's up to you." I explained. I glanced at Maggie. She opened her coat flashing me her answer. I pulled deep in the drive so we could go in the back. Sally met us at the door.

"Sally who's here?" George bellowed.

"Danny is here!" Sally yelled back.

"What's he doing here? I hope it's important, my show is on." He muttered with no answer required.

If Maggie thought I was kidding before, she knew I was serious when she saw Sally in her red dress. They sized each other up for a brief second. Maggie opened her coat wide for Sally to see she too was here to play her part. She jumped when Sally moved to her but quickly realized she wasn't a threat. Just the opposite. Sally hugged her.

"Thank you for coming. I know this is as hard for you as it is for me!" Sally whispered.

"Are you sure you want me here? This may not work." Maggie whispered back.

"Just knowing you would do this for him is enough. I can live without him, but I can't live with him like this." Sally kissed Maggie on the lips. Maggie melted in her arms their combined massive tits mashed together.

"I want to see him become that man he was. If he chooses you, and you're both are happy, I can live with that!" Sally said.

"Ok ladies. We need to sell this. Remember whatever is said out there is to get him out of that seat and back to be the man we love. Anything said is for effect. Don't take anything personally. Don't go to him, and whatever you do, do not stop him from hitting me!" They both took exception to the last statement but agreed.

"Sally are you two done making out?" George bellowed. We all laughed knowing he had no idea who his wife was kissing.

"Coming dear!" We all took a deep breath.

Maggie closed her coat. Sally strutted in front dressed as slutty as she could. Her hair was up her face painted. Her red lips only added to the red dress, stockings, and shoes. I put my arm around her. Maggie followed stopping at

the corner so she couldn't be seen just yet. We turned the corner George was watching his show.

"What were you two doing?" He asked not looking up.

"George, turn the TV off we need to talk!" Sally said firmly. George looked at her.

"Christ woman! What are you wearing that for?" He was shocked to say the least.

"I'm here to settle this once and for all. Now turn the fucking TV off!" Sally cursed. Appalled by her language. George did as she suggested.

"Now why are you wearing that? You look like a whore!" George registered his insult.

"Well I figured you liked whores since you're seeing one yourself!" Sally accused him.

"Oh and you and Danny are just holding hands? Tell me? When was the last time he fucked you?" George responded in defense. "The other night in our own house?"

"It's none of your fucking business, but I'll tell you this, he is more of a man than you are lately!"

"Why because he has a bigger cock? Because he can get it up!" George yelled. He was getting agitated.

"You think all a woman wants is a cock? Daniel has all but refused to make love to me since we moved!" George looked at me to see if it was true. I nodded.

"Besides you can get it up. You just choose to not use it when you do! Well now is your chance. Take me in that room and fuck me. You do that and quit seeing that woman and I promise Danny will never touch this pussy again!"

"Or what? You wanted him you can have him!" George bellowed.

"I never said I wanted him. I am your wife I wanted you!" Sally spat back.

"Wanted until you seduced him!" George volleyed.

"Did you ever tell him it was you that sent me the first night?" Sally screamed.

George gave her the evil eye.

"I didn't think so. You played your game so you could go back to the slut and feel good about it. Well now it's time to choose. Maggie!" Sally yelled.

Margaret walked around the corner and stood beside me.

"Gigi!" Maggie cried out.

"Maggie has he laid a hand on you?" George bellowed.

"No Gigi. He has been a gentleman." Maggie looked at me and stroked my arm.

George stood but didn't move. Like all animals protecting their territory he wanted to show me how big and tough he was.

"How did she get here?" George yelled.

He was getting very emotional now. His cock started to show a slight tent.

"I picked her up and brought her here." I explained.

"Why? What do you want?" George growled.

"I want you to choose!" Sally cut in. "You take me to that bed and fuck me. Danny takes her home and...and does whatever he wants to the slut..."

"Or what?" George balled his fists. I took Maggie's coat from her. George stopped dead in his tracks.

Maggie was wearing a see through black lace bra. The straps dug deep in her shoulders trying to support the massive GGG tits protruding from her chest. Her aureole's must be three inches her nipples fat and stiff. She had on a black garter belt her soft belly bulged above and below it.

Her black sheer stockings and high heels made her taller and sexier. The sheer black panties didn't do anything to hide her thick black pussy hair. George was instantly hard. His pajamas straining to hold him in. This was but half of the plan the other was more important, but also more risky.

"Or you take this trollop in the bedroom and fuck her like you have over the years? You decide!" Sally yelled.

That was my cue. I slipped my hand around Maggie's waist and squeezed her ass.

"Get your hand off her ass you ungrateful bastard! I should have never trusted you!" George threatened me.

"Sally or Maggie!" I sneered at him. "Either way. I win! Sally is sexy. Oh and she is great in bed, but Maggie? Look at those tits. I have never ..."

"Don't you dare touch her..." George yelled.

I had him. It was her tits. Oh he had the hot's for her that was clear but her tit's were the key. This was going to make or break our plan.

"Or what you old man? You going to stop me? Why you can't even get out of a fucking chair!" I reminded him. I reached down and slipped my finger under one bra strap, then slowly bent to kiss her nipple.

George was on me in a flash. The first punch knocked me a bit silly. I struck back purposely grazing his cheek. He punched me hard in the stomach. That one did hurt, gasping for breath he hit me one last time putting me on the floor.

"Gigi NO!" Maggie screamed. She flung herself at him pushing George back. Her massive tits swayed in the thin material. "I go. Please no more, I go!"

"NO Maggie!" Sally yelled. Danny and I are going. It's clear who he's willing to fight for!"

I wasn't sure if she was performing or was really that mad. Either way he got the message. Sally reached down and picked me up from the floor. I acted dazed so he could gloat at kicking my ass.

George pulled Maggie behind him protecting her from us.

"Let's go and get you cleaned up. Then we're leaving." Sally glared at George.

We headed for the hall. Turning back to George she stopped.

"I'll be home Sunday you need to take your whore home before I get here. We'll talk then. I hope you are proud of yourself beating up your nephew!"

"Daniel if you ever touch Maggie I'll fucking cut your balls off. This time the fucking farmer is serious!" George yelled at us as we headed up the stairs.

Sally took me into the bathroom. I hugged her and started kissing her like we hadn't kissed in months. She doted over me but I was fine. My gut hurt a bit, I'll probably have a shiner for a few days but we had accomplished our goal.

"Danny I want you to do something for me."

"Anything!"

"I want you to shave my pussy and then cum in me!"

"Now? Here?" This woman never stops surprising me.

"Right now. Right here!" Sally pulled me in for another kiss I could tell she was desperately waiting for this moment.

Up on the counter. Sally squealed in delight as she slipped her panties off. Lifting the too short hem of her dress she presented her dripping pussy. Sally had everything prepared. I trimmed her thick bush with scissors, then took a small trimmer and got everything uniform.

Her cunt was dripping. I bent over and sucked her clit sending her into a frenzy. She grabbed my head and thrust her cunt hard against my mouth. I slipped my tongue in her oozing cavern. She was bucking against me in minutes then shuddered to her first orgasm by me in weeks.

"Now sit still and quit dripping or we will never get out of here!" I teased. I kissed her so she could taste herself.

"You better hurry I make no promises!" I washed her pussy clean, dried it then applied the shaving cream. Slowly I scraped her course hairs leaving just a trim triangle above her slit. I had barely wiped her clean and finished touching up a few spots when she lifted my chin.

"Put him in me now!" Her voice was hoarse and urgent.

I lowered my slacks, my cock was oozing precum and was ready for action. I slowly entered her, Sally watched me inching in. Her pussy expanded to take it all. Her excitement bubbling around my cock the deeper I went.

"OH FUCK DANNY YOU ARE SO BIG!" Sally yelled loud enough for the neighbors to hear.

"Cum in me son. Fill my pussy then take me out and show me off. I want everyone to see I'm now your slut" Sally whispered. She was on fire. I fucked her pussy, I was already desperate to cum.

"Mom you are no slut." I corrected her.

"I'm tonight Daniel, and from now on any other night you want. Now fill your mom's pussy!"

Already past the stopping point I obeyed her and deposit my first full load deep in her cunt. Sally kissed me quickly then jumped down. She slipped on the pair of sheer red panties.

There was a small silk patch covering her opening but the upper half of her shaved pussy was clearly visible. She bent over sucked my cock clean and stuffed it back in my pants.

Sally then opened a drawer pulling out some lube and a medium butt plug.

"Lube me up and put that in me!" She bent over pulling the strip of cloth along her ass cheeks to one side. I lubed her ass and the plug and started slipping it in.

"More lube I want him to see my ass glistening when we go downstairs!" Sally moaned.

I slathered her ass cheeks and asshole then slowly slipped the plug in her ass. There was a red jewel that sparkled in the light between her ass cheeks. Sally was going to make him pay.

We walked quietly down the stairs and back into the living room. George and Maggie must have been making out. Maybe he thought we were staying upstairs, or that we left. He seemed disheveled she looked flustered.

"Sally can we talk?" George stood, a wet spot was on his pajama bottoms.

"George I already explained that we would talk next week." Sally changed positions her sexy legs spread. I could see my cum running down the inside of her leg.

"Look, I'll cook for you, clean your house I'll even wash your nasty underwear... Danny my panties are soaked through. You bad boy!" Sally giggled.

She lifted her dress you could see the dark spot on her panties and the streaks on her inner thigh.

"You shaved your pussy!" George cried out clearly infuriated. "Is that his now too?"

"The pussy is mine and I decide who gets to use it!" She pulled her panty to the side. A big glop of cum went spat on the floor. "The cum is his!"

"You had sex already? You fucking whore!" George yelled.

"Like I said it's my pussy. And George you will never get close enough to even smell it from now on!"

Sally started to slip her panties off showing George and Maggie the plug in her ass. Her cheeks glistened the fake ruby sparkled. Sally dropped the panties on the cum spot and wiped it up. She left the panties on the floor

"Holy Shit. What the fuck is that?" George asked. I was worried he was going to have another stroke.

I had been watching Maggie through all of this, she was shocked at first but then she started to understand Sally was getting her revenge. Maggie's panties were damp she moved a hand to stroke her pussy.

"Danny is taking me to the bottoms up club. I am going to see if I can find some action. Maybe someone will help me take it out?" She glared at George. "Danny we're going. George I changed my mind. The slut can stay. You may want to give her a hand."

George swirled to see Maggie rubbing her pussy. Sally looked to her as well.

"Maggie if he hasn't fucked you by Sunday night when we get back. I'll loan you Danny. If he can still walk. If not I might just take you for myself!" Sally snarled at George.

Sally walked over to Maggie. She bent over and kissed her gently on the lips. Her ass was bare. Streams of cum now coated her thighs.

"It was a pleasure seeing you again!" Sally said. She turned, took my hand we walked out the back hall. Sally picked up several towels handing me a small suitcase. Spreading a towel on my truck seat she pulled me in for another kiss. "Hurry let's leave before I fuck you in the driveway!"

We drove for over an hour. Sally cleaned up all my cum with her fingers and licked them clean. We talked about George only briefly.

"He's made his bed let him lie in it." Was the most memorable quote. "Do you think it worked?" She asked a bit later.

"Maggie is supposed to call me one way or the other." I took her hand she held mine in hers. "You ok with this? I hope you didn't leave him over me."

"Daniel I'm not leaving him, not yet anyways. But my heart has. He did that not you. He promised me years ago he would never do this to me again. He lied. Something you have never done to any of us."

Sally squeezed my hand. "You have been honest and faithful even to him. I knew the first night he let me go be with you he was up to no good. But I wanted to come even if he didn't send me. You have opened up my life. I have done more with you in a year than thirty years with him."

"And if Maggie really does stay?" I dared to ask.

"Then one day I may leave him. If I do it will be over you, and Kat and Nikki, and Kyle. But mostly I'll leave him for myself. I lied to him Daniel, my pussy does belong to you as long as you will have it and use it. I need that son. I need you to use my pussy, my ass, and my mouth for whatever you want. I'm too old to find another lover and I know he will be nothing like you. Son you make me happy!"

"I love you mom!"

"I love you son! Now let's go get nasty!"

On our first stop I took her to a strip club but only after she put a fresh pair of panties on. We sat drinking. When the strippers came to our table Sally made sure to tell them she was my slut. To keep them happy we bought them drinks. One even let Sally finger her pussy under the table for fifty bucks.

There was a row of chairs for lap dances. A drunk guy hearing she was my slut offered Sally money for a lap dance. My guess is it was for strippers only but Sally agreed. He sat down she ground her ass against him the plug still in her ass. I stood by keeping a watchful eye. He asked to touch her tits she gladly agreed. I was going to say something but security was on it.

They were going to make her stop, this was a profit center, and free lap dances could get out of control. I gave the security guy another fifty if she could finish the song. He agreed but explained she couldn't do it again.

We went back to the runway. Sally slipped some singles in garters and even a five to the one gal she thought was hot. She must have gotten horny because she grabbed my hand to leave. Cat calls followed us. The security

guy even walked us to the truck. I pulled out into town and headed to the hotel.

The desk clerk even asked me who the woman was. Only then did it hit me he thought she was a prostitute.

"This is my mother Sally. We have a room reserved." I replied smugly.

"Your room only has one king in it." He couldn't keep from looking at her tits through the thin layers of her dress and bra.

"That's what I reserved!" I answered.

He finally looked at me like I was some pervert. I held his gaze.

"Is there a problem?" I stared him down.

"No Mr. Masters." He handed me the electronic keys.

"Thank you." I released him from my scorn.

"Is there a bar within walking distance?"

"Yes sir, half a block down to your right." He explained

We parked the truck. I carried the suitcases up to the room. As we entered the room Sally flung her arms around me.

"Fuck me Danny!" Her lips were so hot it was all I could do to resist.

"If you can hold off for an hour or so I think you will get a kick out of this."

I told her my plan she loved it. We cleaned up a bit Sally made the changes I requested and we headed back through the lobby.

The desk clerk watched us leave. Sally had a wrap around her shoulders draped over her chest to the top of her ass. We walked down the street to have a drink. It was a nice bar but not too nice. Filled mostly with men this looked like a shot and a beer kind of place. Sally got the once over by almost every man, twice by many. I made her keep the wrap on at first not wanting to fight my way out.

After the first drink she became a bit bolder. Soon after the second drink arrived the wrap started to proceed lower and lower. Her tits clearly on display through the two layers of thin almost transparent material. Even in the dim light her areolas were easily seen.

We finished our second drink and as I paid the bill Sally headed to the bathroom. On the way out I knew the inevitable was going to happen. I stood close to the dim hallway.

"Hey baby. Looking for some love?" He asked.

I looked down the hall he was a big guy but he looked nervous. His belly took up almost half the hallway.

"You making an offer I asked?" He turned to me startled as I closed in.

"Just talkin" He stammered as he backed up.

"Show him the goods mom!"

I winked at her as he looked back at Sally. Sally lowered her wrap. Now with no bra her tits swelled the top of her dress. They sagged a bit but god they were beautiful.

"Your mother?" He questioned. I nodded. "How much?"

"If you have to ask you can't afford her!" I replied. "Come on slut this place is a dump! Besides I'm getting a bit horny myself!"

Sally walked by him brushing her tit across his arm. Covering her chest she handed me her panties and bra. As she walked through the bar you could hear the murmurs as she passed by. We walked quickly from the bar I watched to make sure we weren't being followed. We ducked in a doorway I pulled her in for a deep kiss.

"Danny I almost came when I brushed against him." She threw herself at me again. "My pussy juice is running down my legs!" She whispered.

Sally grabbed my wrists and force my hand under her dress. I pulled it out dripping she licked it off before I could. I could have fucked her right there but spending the night in jail wasn't in my plans. As we entered the hotel she handed me the wrap. Acting tipsy she sauntered through the lobby. Only the desk clerk was in sight. He got an eye full of her almost naked tits and her bare pussy. As we waited for the elevator Sally couldn't help herself.

"Baby, mommy needs a good fucking before she goes to sleep!" The doors opened we stepped in no doubt he saw the plug in her ass.

Streams of juice flowed from her pussy. By the time we reached the room she had me half unbuttoned. I closed the door she pulled me into the bathroom. Sally pushed my slacks to the floor with one hand as she stroked me with the other.

"In...my...assss...nnnooooowwwwww!" Sally rose one leg up on the counter I lubed my cock. Slowly I pulled the plug from her ass dropping it in the sink.

"Oh I miss it already!" She mewed. I placed my cock at the entrance. "Fuck your slut's ass!"

I eased it in she moaned in delight when I was balls deep. Sally let out a deep sigh. She looked at me in the mirror.

"I have never felt so cheap in my life! That was so intense. I loved every minute of it!" Sally was consumed with lust. I was stroking in her ass, she was talking like nothing was going on.

"When I gave him that lap dance I could feel his cock push the plug in my ass. All I could think of was this moment. Then in the bar everyone saw my pussy. I started dripping. If you would have asked I would have laid on the floor and let you fuck me right there!" Sally was getting close. The longer she talked the closer I was to joining her.

"Then the clerk in the lobby. I felt just like the whore he thinks I am. Showing him my tits. He could see my naked... dripping... pussy...!" Sally reached down and stroked her clit. Then like she switched on a light she started to cum.

"Fuck my ass. Fuck my ass. Fuck my ass faster!" Sally demanded.

I jack hammered her ass. She was bending over on the counter now her massive tits jiggled inside her dress. It was all too much. Watching Sally in the mirror deep in the throes of an orgasm and her clenching asshole put me over the edge.

"Mom I'm cumming!" I warned her.

I lined her ass with my second load as we watched each other. Sally collapsed on the counter I pulled out. Her asshole stayed open the pink flesh inside coated with my cum. Some even oozed out as her asshole slowly closed.

I remove the rest of my clothes Sally's brown star was puffy and still oozing cum. I dipped my finger in her ass she looked in the mirror she saw how focused I was. She shifted slightly pulling a tit from her dress.

"Let me taste it" I was stunned she said it. Looking in the mirror I knew she really wanted too. "It's ok I cleaned it really good." She hissed.

I smeared my ass cum on her tit she licked it off.

"Two fingers this time!" I placed two fingers at her opening they slid in with little resistance. She responded with a whimper. "Play with it Danny. It feels like nothing I have felt before. Make me squirm!"

I pulled two cum coated fingers out and smeared her tit and watched as she licked it clean again. Back at her ass I bent over and rimmed it tasting us both. Sally squealed in pure delight. I rubbed a finger over in and around her anus watching every detail. Sally loved it I could see her pussy twitch. I reached for the butt plug in the sink I slipped it back in she was so loose now I wasn't sure it would stay.

"Danny. I want to do something really nasty. Are you game?"

"Anything with you." I replied getting caught up in her passion. Leaving the plug in her ass she slipped off the counter and stood up.

I helped her off with the dress. She took me to the shower. It was just a tub with a shower head. She had me sit legs flat at one end. Facing away she squatted over my legs. She pulled the plug from her ass. I watched as my cum slowly dripped from her ass over my cock and thighs.

Sally tensed her muscles her asshole expanded a cum filled fart shot a load across my lap. Sally held her cheeks open, her anus continued to drip and sputter cum over my cock and balls. Just when the last dribble plopped on me she stood and turned.

Sally let go a stream of hot pee to wash it away with. Soaked in ass cum and piss she had me stand and swapped places.

"Pee on me Danny!" I was finding it hard to relax. My cock started to grow hard. She turned on the water the cold spray had an instant affect. My cock went limp from the cold my need to pee increased with the water.

"Ready? I warned her. Sally just smiled and nodded.

I was holding my cock it was what was natural but as soon as it started to flow she took over. I was shocked as she aimed it straight at her chest. It splashed everywhere even her chin and lips. She was basking in the depraved fetish we were engaged in. I wondered just how long she had hidden these fantasies away.

I wondered how many more we would try? When I was drained she stood with me kissing me. To be honest I wasn't looking forward to this. Rimming her cum filled ass was something I never dreamed of doing but sharing piss somehow seemed even more decadent. Honestly though it wasn't any worse than cum or pussy. It didn't turn me on as much but if she asked me to do it again I might. Just not tomorrow.

We did take a shower and then believe it or not just went to bed, but not before I checked my phone. There was a voice mail from Maggie. I had forgot all about them! I was going to listen to the message but then I saw a text had come through too. It was a picture of cum dripping from her pussy. I looked at the time it was while we were in the bar. I decide to only tell Sally if she asked and not show her the picture.

It had been a long and emotional day for us both. I figured I better save my strength for the next two days. Saturday we slept until check out. I wore jeans and a nice dress shirt. Sally wore a long skirt with thigh high stockings and g string and tight sweater with no bra. Sally had big tits but small nipples, still they made a protrusion in her tight sweater. We checked out much to her surprise. It was a cold March so jackets were appropriate. I drove closer to the biggest town near us.

We talked about the experiences we shared. Sally agreed that as fun as some of it sounded to her before we started the reality was less erotic than she thought it would be. We agreed that cum farts were out.

I suggested we try different variations of other things to see if we could make them better. Sally then explained how she cleaned her ass before we left her house and again later. That explained how there was really no nasty taste at all. I knew that I would be much more willing to continue pleasing her ass in the future.

Sally explained how Kat had taught her and the other girls the pleasures of anal sex and proper preparation. Sally promised I would have plenty of opportunities to service her ass but she still preferred my cock in her pussy! Somehow I felt comfortable talking about sex and taboo subjects with her. In many ways she reminded me of Kat and how we could talk about anything.

I checked in to a luxury hotel in a beautiful suite while Sally was sent to the spa for two hours of whatever they do in spas. . When she came back I sent her shopping down the street but not before she tried to thank me. Her hair was done, her face glowed, her fingers and toenails made up in shining red.

I had brought up our luggage and a hanging bag that was hidden in the bed of my truck. Hiding in the closet was a black dress Kat and Nikki picked out for her. They also sent matching under garments. I took a shower and dressed in the tux I rented. I called home to check up on everyone, and of course said nothing of what we had done. I heard the door open and said my goodbyes.

I moved quickly standing in the center of the room holding flowers with a card.

Sally looked at the flowers and my tux and knew something was up. She dropped the bag in her hand and ran to me. I made her stop then handed her the flowers. She smelled them then opened the card.

'For my love with love. Your son' She moved to kiss me.

"Later! You need to change we haven't much time." I explained.

"Where are we going I don't have clothes to wear to go out with you dressed like that!" I went to the closet and pulled the dress from the clothes bag.

"You do now!" Sally squealed in delight. I handed her the dress and told her she had just thirty minutes. She used everyone and then some but when she came out she was stunning.

They did great. The thin straps over her shoulders barley held her large tits. The tops spilled out, her large areolas almost visible. The gauze material outer had a silk inner panel to hide her breasts. The dress then went sheer below them for a couple inches then was lined to several inches below her ass. Another band then lining to the hem a good four inches from her knee. The back was plunging but not too far. The dress brought out the best of her ass. Black stockings with a black garter (she showed me) and a black thong.

She slipped on high heels. Grabbed a beautiful black and gold wrap and we headed down the elevator. It was all we could do to not turn back to the room. I had spent a small fortune for tonight so that wasn't an option at this hour. A cab ride to dinner at posh restaurant, then another cab ride to the real treat. The latest Broadway show. It was impossible to get tickets but a client of mine worked for the production company at one time. Not cheap but they were good if not great seats. Sally beamed through the entire show. She held my hand and hugged me several times.

She tried to get frisky but I held her off telling her she needed to act like the lady she looked like. After several curtain calls she headed to the restroom before we left. I waited with a group of other men after stopping myself.

When she emerged a hush that fell over the room us men were milling about. It was impossible not to look. Sally had removed the lining covering her tits. Her nipples were now on full display. The band covering her pussy looked cut in half the garter straps and thong clearly visible. A murmur soon started.

"Charles. Where are you?" Sally called out. I panicked for a minute before remembering she was calling me by my middle name.

"Here Evelyn!" I stepped from the back of the short line of men. I walked to her. We kissed long and lovingly.

"Take me home darling. I need to thank you properly for such a lovely evening!" Sally positioned the shawl over her shoulders covering her tits but her ass must have been some sight.

The cab ride back to the hotel was much too long. The elevator ride even longer. We might have started there but the sign said they were monitored with cameras. Once inside the room I unzipped my pants pulled out my hard cock. I threw her on the bed, pulled the thong aside and fucked her.

"Yessss Danny!" Was all she said before the first orgasm gripped her pussy.

I didn't even slow down. I fucked her pussy hard and relentlessly. Sally's cum mixed with my pre-cum was churning in her cunt. Her tits wobbled with each thrust. She moaned, squealed, and begged me the whole time I fucked her. She came again as I filled her cunt, then I collapsed on top of her. When we caught our breaths we both started laughing.

"I would like to hear the conversations the other men had with their wives on the way home." I teased.

"I bet it will be nothing like the one they will have at the office Monday morning!" Sally laughed.

I insisted on undressing her. When Sally was in just the stockings and garters. I removed my clothes and hung them over the chair. I went back and we slowly made love one last time.

We left just before checkout Sally filled her belly with a load of hot cum for breakfast. She couldn't stop talking about the last two nights until we got closer to home. It had been a smashing success her and I. We both knew tomorrow it would all change.

We drove in silence for a few miles. I wanted to pull over and fuck her again. I knew she would have let me. Then the reality of what was ahead slowly sunk in for us both. Did she have a husband? And did I have an uncle?

Sunday night I walked Sally to the front door she kissed me goodbye for almost ten minutes.

"I love you son! But it's time to face the future. Thank you for such a wonderful weekend."

"When will I see you again?" I searched her eyes for clues.

"Soon I promise, but you have been away from the girl's way too long already." She smiled hiding her pain.

"I'm walking you in." I insisted. Sally looked worried. "Just to make sure he doesn't ..."

Sally put a hand on my chest. "He would never. But you are welcome to come in just the same."

We walked in the door George and Maggie were on the couch. I stepped in with Sally looking down, a second pair of panties were with Sally's. This was a clear message Maggie was planning to stand by George.

"Hello lovers!" Sally greeted them as she picked up both panties smelling Maggie's.

"Daniel you aren't welcome in this house." George was calm but firm.

"Yes sir I understand." Sally was going to respond but I stopped her first. "I need to go. Good to see you Maggie. Mom I'll call you later."

Maggie was shocked to hear me call her that. I was determined not to let this opportunity go by without saying what was on my mind.

"George good to see you back. I missed that man!" I said clearly to all. I turned and closed the door behind me. George was moved by what I said.

Kat and Nikki were waiting up for me Sally had told them all about the weekend while I was driving home.

Nikki jumped on me when I walked in the door. She kissed me then moved so I could greet Kat. After kissing me mom pulled me to the kitchen.

"So I know you will not tell us about the weekend with Sally but you MUST tell us what happened with George." Kat insisted.

It took almost an hour to retell what took place in maybe fifteen minutes. They interrupted, asked questions and commented on each detail. I sat and smiled knowing I would rather not be anywhere else at that exact moment. I had just spent a whole weekend with another woman and the two loves of my life aren't only comfortable with it but thrilled about how it all came about.

Sally showed up Tuesday. She had dinner on the table for all of us. She stayed the night in her room insisting she sleep alone. Wednesday she watched Kyle but was gone when I arrived home. Friday she was with Kyle waiting with dinner for me. The girls were out with their friends a weekly tradition. We entertained Kyle as we ate or should I say he entertained us. I helped her clean up.

"I miss George teasing me about doing women's work." I glanced over to gauge her reaction. Sally responded with a knowing smile.

We finally put Kyle to bed and made our way back to the living room setting together on the couch. I was against the arm she was leaning back her head on my shoulder.

"I won't divorce him you know?" She pulled my arms around her. I squeezed gently.

"Ok." I kissed the hair on the back of her head.

"I mean it son. I will not divorce him. I won't give him that satisfaction!" Sally stated.

She was getting emotional and I was just along for the ride.

"Mom its ok. I understand. I love you. You know that right?" Sally turned and stretched up to kiss me.

"Oh baby I do. You are what keeps me going!" She sat silently. I knew she was brooding over something but I didn't want to pry.

"She is still there you know?" Sally sighed. Ah. Here was the thorn in her saddle. George was doing all he could to punish Sally as she did to him.

"I'm sorry. I didn't know that." I pulled her tighter. "You can always move back here. Your room is here just for you.

"I wouldn't give him that satisfaction. He will just have to deal with both of us."

"Mom, if you think punishing him will make you happy. I can tell you from experience it will be a bitter victory." Sally turned to me looking offended. Sally removed my arms and stood up and walked to her room.

"I'll see you in the morning!"

"Mom ...!"

"I'm his fucking wife. You should know that better than anyone!" She was yelling at the top of her lungs. "Especially since you have been doing all the fucking!"

She shot me through the heart. I was hurt beyond words. Still she needed to know.

"Well don't think for one minute I could EVER forget you are his wife and not mine. That's ok! I love you so much I'll take you any way I can. I have respected him and you equally! I have never taken what wasn't offered. But if you think I am going to change who I am. The person you say you love to stand by and watch you try and make his life more miserable ..." I choked up. "He's my uncle...I love him too...haven't I done enough to hurt him?"

Sally said nothing just went to her room and slammed the door. I waited for over an hour. I went to my room and showered getting ready for bed. I sat at my desk for a long time. She was wrong and I knew it. I could feel it. Sally hurt me. She really hurt me. Then I remembered how Eve and Kat would tell me we tend to hurt the ones we love the most.

I wanted her to apologize to me. The longer I sat there the more I realized I was doing to her what I just told her she shouldn't do to George. Getting older doesn't make you smarter, just more stubborn. If was going to be the man I wanted to be and not the one I was it was time to step up and apologize.

I knocked on her door.

"Go away!"

"Mom. I'm sorry, I want to apologize. I was wrong to say what I did. You're upset and I just made it worse. Please come out. I just want to see you!"

"Go away I don't want to see you right now!"

I went back to my room and worked waiting for the girls to come home. It was about eleven when Nikki led Kat past my room and they weren't being quiet. I stopped by to check on them as Nikki plopped Kat on the bed.

"She looks happy?" I said to Nikki.

"Yeah. We'll have to go get her car in the morning." Nikki grinned. "I guess it's good if one of us is pregnant?"

Her bump was showing just a bit. I looked in the room Kat had her blouse unbuttoned and skirt off. She was struggling with her panty hose.

"Nikki come and get it!" Kat purred. "OH hi Danny!" She squealed. "This isn't for you tonight baby!" Her pussy was glistening her panty hose down just enough to uncover it."

"Goodnight you two. Don't wake the baby!" I said still upset. Nikki grabbed my arm.

"You ok? Where is Sally?" She kissed me gently.

"I'm fine. She went to bed." I kissed her back.

"Funny her light is still on. I can see it under the door. Maybe you should go check on her." Nikki looked concerned. "I could do it for you?"

"Nikki mommy's waiting!" Kat called out. I could see she was still struggling with the panty hose.

"You take care of that one, I'll take care of the other." I explained. I turned Nikki back into the room. She gave me a concerned look. "I promise!"

Nikki closed the door I could hear mom moan even through the closed door. I smiled knowing she was in good hands.

I walked back to Sally's door Nikki was right the light was still on in her room. I knocked on the door.

"Danny?" She called out.

"Mom I'm going to bed now. Please at least let me see you. I am sorry. I truly am. I want us to ..."

"Daniel go to bed. I'm not coming out."

"Mom please!"

"Son I said NO!" Clearly she was getting more upset not less.

"I'm going now" I stood for a moment." I love you. And mom I still want you but not as much as I need you!"

I went back to my room I worked for another hour knowing I couldn't sleep. I checked in on Kyle. Smiling as he slept oblivious to the drama around him. I thought back to what was happening in my life when I was that young I knew nothing either. I went back to my room leaving the door ajar so I could hear him if he fussed. I knew the girls had the monitor but knowing them it could be drowned out by other sounds.

It was about two. I know because as I suspected sleep wasn't going to come easy this night. She slipped in beside me without making a noise. I turned to spoon her inside of me. I could feel her warm skin against me. She snuggled in deeper.

"I'm sorry..." Sally whispered.

"Sshh!" I cut her off.

She was weeping her shoulders jerked slightly as all her emotions poured out. As strong as she was this was something that was going to take time to come to terms with. As she cried herself to sleep I finally closed my eyes and followed her.

Waking from my slumber I felt Sally shift in the bed. She easily rolled me on my back. A swoosh of cold air brought me to my senses as the covers quickly disappeared. Tugging at my boxers she had me naked before I could start to help. Straddling me she rubbed her naked pussy over my now hardening cock.

She leaned down her breasts warming my chest. She scooted farther desperate to kiss me. With all her weight pressing me deep in the mattress our tongues started our apologies. She rubbed her clit on my lower stomach. She wanted me in her but was unwilling to release my lips. Finally the need of her cunt could wait no more.

"I need you in me Daniel!"

"I need to be in you mom!"

"Daniel, if we do this we can no longer be mother and son. If you can't be my husband you can be my lover. My man. You have become so much more to me than any son can be." Sally rocked her dripping cunt over the head of my cock.

"I need to be in you!" I repeated. I tried to slip past her pussy lips but she pulled away.

"Daniel, from now on you will take what you desire and I'll freely give it to you." She kept her pussy at a distance frustrating me. "Do you understand? You are a man now! You will take from me what you want! I need you to be the aggressor...to...to..."

It started to sink in. She wanted from me what she wanted me to do for Nikki! I rolled us over. With me on top she was now at my mercy. Using my weight I plunged my cock deep in her cunt she cried out in pleasure.

"To dominate you? Is that what you want my love?" I asked as I fucked her hard.

"Yes! Oh Daniel yes." Sally grunted as her orgasm started. "Take me Daniel take all of me and please don't ever let go!"

"Whose pussy is this?" I growled.

"Yours sir!" Sally thrusted up helping me drive deeper.

"Sir I like that. Controlling but not submissive." I replied slamming deep in her needy cunt. "You will call me Sir or Daniel. I will no longer be Dan or Danny to you my pet. Is that clear pet?" Sally groaned in desire.

"Yes sir. I understand that I am your pet. Your slut!" Sally spread her legs wider than ever before the sound of our juices and the slapping of her bald pussy filled the room.

"As my pet you will do as I ask. A slut does what she is told whether she likes it or not. You will always have that choice. Do you understand pet?"

Sally couldn't answer she was lost in a world of orgasmic bliss. I just found a new way to make her happy.

When Sally recovered we switched to a sixty nine position with her on top. She worked my cock as I ate her pussy. She came twice before I started cumming. Sally tried to jamb my cock down her throat but she just gagged. Never letting go I filled her mouth and throat. Cum dripped from her nose and the corners of her mouth. My pet still refused to disengage. Only when she had cleaned me completely and my cock went flaccid did she relinquish my cock.

"Kiss me pet!" I commanded.

"But sir I just ..." I smacked her ass hard.

"I said kiss me!" Sally saw me grinning as I repeated my command.

"Yes sir!" She was so filled with passion Sally planted her mouth on mine we shared our fluids.

"I'll do better next time sir." Sally was disappointed in her attempt to deep throat me.

"I know you will my pet. I know we will do many things on your list better! We just need to practice."

"I love you Daniel. Thank you for making me so happy!"

Chapter 8

We pulled the covers up and went to sleep without cleaning up. It was well past ten before we got out of bed. I took a shower alone. Sally was filling in Nikki and mom on last night's drama. As the water cascaded over me I had a chance to reflect.

It occurred to me more and more people were beginning to depend on me. This was something new and exciting but also sobering. With George my mentor no longer in the picture I wasn't sure I was up to the task. I needed to talk to Kat.

Sally stayed Saturday night but I was with Nikki. Sunday night she went home and Nikki took Kyle to Sharon's to spend the night with her and her mom

Mary. Kat and I went out for some ribs. On the way home I explained what was going on and how I was feeling.

Kat listened patiently reassure me that I would be fine. Mom praised me for being such a responsible adult and reminded me with or without George I was not alone. Kat then asked me if I could take Thursday and Friday off. When I said I could she said we were going to go see Charles and Eve.

With the house to ourselves mom and I spent a leisurely night of sex. I drained both of her tits of their milk as I fucked her pussy. Then before we went to bed I ravage her ass as she begged me to fill it with my cum. Monday morning she had me take her ass again telling me she wanted to remember me through the day. I drained her tits again as she stuffed them back in her bra before driving off.

I talked to Art about the days off. He was fine with it offering to help if anything came up. I had an exceptional day at work. Talking with Kat always seems to help.

Kat and I told Nikki we would be gone Thursday to Sunday. Nikki was happy to hear it. She told us she had a surprise for me when I returned. That night she slept with me, she was insatiable. There seemed to be something about the surprise that excited her as well. The thing that got me excited was her growing baby bump.

Sally came back Tuesday night. She spent the night with mom while Nikki and I slept together again. The night produced only one orgasm for us each but hers was a big one. Wednesday night Sally went back home to George. Mary was coming to stay with Nikki Thursday and Friday night. Then she and Sharon had a date for Saturday. Sally would be with Nikki Saturday and would wait for us to come home Sunday.

Thursday we were on a plane to Orlando. Charles and Eve met us at the airport. We arrived back at the condo in time for lunch. After we ate Charles invited me to spend the remainder of the day with him. We went to his office

where I met his general manager Ivan. Ivan introduced me to the staff and a couple of the sales people that happened to stop by. Ivan was maybe sixty. Tall and fit he seemed professional, but not a salesman type of guy.

Charles finished dealing with some business. I thanked Ivan, and then Charles and I left. We went to check on some condos he was going to list. Charles had quite a reputation and still did much of his own selling.

The first stop was his favorite watering hole. After everyone in the place greeted him we took a seat outside in the shade looking at the water.

"So what brings you here young man?" He knew all about Becky, Val, and of course George. He sat patiently and silently as I explained all but Sally being my pet.

"That's about it. But there is one thing I would like to talk about later." I said as I wrapped it up.

"Daniel sometimes you're the pigeon and sometimes you'are the statue!" Charles joked. We both laughed. "You my son have had a bad run of luck." I felt a renewed kinship as he called me son.

"Bad luck." I reminded him.

"Mark and Becky you married into. No fault of yours. But you stepped up like few real men would and handled the situations admirably. I know many that would have walked away or taken advantage of it." Charles rested his hand on my shoulder.

"Take advantage of it. You mean with Mary?" I asked.

"Not that, but I wouldn't be surprised if she doesn't join the flock at some time on her own volition!" He laughed loudly. "I know you would never do that. I meant blackmail. You had Mark by the short hairs with those pictures and that video."

"Charles I could never do that!" I replied stunned anyone would have.

"My point exactly. You did the right thing, at least as I see it." He nudged my shoulder. "Then the thing with Val and Doug. Again not your problem. But what do you do? Step in handle the situation without throwing the father under the bus. Then with a brilliant chess move you fix the original problem for two people and leave the door open for Doug to return without losing face." Charles laughed.

"What about George?" I asked. I looked over. Charles started to become more serious. "He and Sally are all but finished." I suggested.

Charles sat silently for a moment.

"Daniel there is blame enough to go around for that one. No doubt you had a hand in it..." My head sunk to my chest.

"Son look at me!" Charles said. I raise my head looking him in the eyes.

"You may have had a hand in it, but you aren't to blame. Not even slightly. You did what we all knew you would do. You were a child playing and adult's game. George and I knew what was going to happen when we sent our wives into the lion's den. I'm man enough to admit I wanted you to fuck Eve. She has never been happier, and she makes sure I stay happy! She never let me touch her ass until you stretched it out for me!" George grinned.

I couldn't believe he was talking like this to me. He could see my discomfort. Grabbing my shoulder again. He continued.

"Were men here Daniel! Look at me 300 plus pounds, high blood pressure, cholesterol off the charts, and full of hot air. I'm surprised the woman has stuck it out this long. I owe you more than you can ever fathom. You have brought so much happiness to the both of us we could never repay you!" Charles boasted.

I was touched by his compliments but still wanted answers.

"But what about George he's still my uncle? I don't want to lose him!" I argued. Charles laughed loudly.

"I'll give you this Daniel you are loyal to the end. George is a good man as you know, but he is too prideful to see past his nose. From what I know you brought him out of his depression, set him up with the woman he has been lusting after for years. And taken his wife off of his hands." Charles chuckled.

"The guy should be sucking your dick right now!" Charles was on a roll. "Daniel, man up. You stop by and see him first, give him some time and he'll come around. He's bull headed but not stupid. Given time he will come to his senses. My guess is things will be different in some ways but in others you might find he becomes closer than before."

"Thanks Dad, you've been a lot of help." I nudged him now.

"Well some of those genes you have are mine. You know Duane was my son, right?" It had been years since his name had been brought up.

"Yeah. Good thing too. I need all the help I can get!" I teased him again.

"Ok, what's the other question we need to take are of?" I blushed not sure how to approach the subject.

"Well spit it out. I don't have all day." Charles scolded me.

"Sally wants to be my pet...my slut!" I blurted out. I thought he would be shocked but instead he just grinned and folded his arms across his big belly stroking his chin.

"I always thought she was more like Eve than she let on. Still waters do run deep." He said cryptically.

It took me a minute to comprehend what the meaning of that was. Then it dawn on me what he was saying is the meek and quiet ones may be hiding their true feelings where no one can see them.

"So Daniel, what's your concern?"

"Dad, I am not the dominate type of guy. I can be that guy for a night. But that isn't me. I don't know what she expects. I don't know how far..." Charles turned very serious as he listened.

"How far what?" The way he looked at me gave me confidence to spit it out.

"I don't want to be like Mark! Charles, I can't go there!" I confessed. He hugged me for just a second.

"Daniel, first just because Sally wants to spice up her life doesn't mean she wants to be tortured. And if she does then you need to send her packing. Daniel you're a smart young man. You have come so far in such a short time." Charles reminded me.

"Taking control can be very significant for most women. Why is a whole other discussion. Let's just say she may like the feeling of submitting to a man she

feels safe and protected by. They find comfort in having a strong man determine their fate so to speak. Each woman is different. Just like each man is."

"So what you are saying is she may want me to take more of an active role in her life?" I asked.

"My guess is with Sally she wants you to tell her what you want and she will try and satisfy your needs. It's the same thing you do just to a different degree. You wait for them to come to you then you take over based on their desires." Charles tried to explain.

"Sally is trying to tell you she needs you to just take over. She needs or wants you to be her protector now. To handle the world and all of its complications. Daniel she wants you to be her world. Small, safe, and from what I have heard sexually exciting." He made it all so clear. It was as if he knew exactly what I needed to hear.

"I think I understand. I'll need to work on that." I replied. "About the other. You know sexually?"

"I think you could teach me more about that than I could you!" He teased me again lightening the mood. "But with what you want to know let me say this. Anticipation is sometimes more erotic than the actual act. For instance if you tell her you're going to spank her. Just the thought of you doing that will get her mind racing. How hard, where, how long? Well you get the point! The actual spank may or may not be more of a turn on." He suggested.

I thought back to the cum farts knowing what he meant.

"It's like going to a movie that you are dying to see. Sometimes we anticipate it so much that the movie itself is a disappointment and then, sometimes it's even better that we dreamed. Sex can be the same way. Learn how to build up anticipation and then give her a movie she never dreamed of."

Charles punched me lightly. "If it's a flop experiment to see if you can make the movie better. I can make Eve cum just by playing with her tits. By teasing her days or even hours before. She is so ready in her mind that just brief contact will bring her off!"

"Did you really need to tell me that? I'll be thinking of that all day now!" I teased him.

"Paybacks are hell buddy!" Charles teased.

"Daniel, Sally deserves happy endings too. If it gets to the point where she is just servicing you then I would worry. Change things up. Be spontaneous." Charles offered. "We all have our favorite movies that we can watch again and again, but sometimes you need to see the latest flick to see if should be added to that list. You keep doing what you're doing. Keep learning. Keep growing, and you will be fine." He looked back at me. "We good?"

"Better than good. Thank you Charles." I replied thrilled we talked. He finished his drink

"Come on I have some properties to inspect. Tomorrow before I leave you and I are going to set down with Ivan and talk some business." We headed to the car.

"You're going somewhere?" I asked stupidly.

"Of course I am. Eve wants to watch a movie with you! I believe it's a double feature." He joked.

I wasn't sure if he meant for two nights or with Kat and me, but I wasn't about to ask. The next day Charles and I sat down with Ivan. It was clear he was the financial brains behind the business. He had been with Charles from the

beginning. Oh, I'm sure Charles knew what was going on, that much was clear, but Ivan was a walking calculator.

I had learned much of this with Art. But these were real numbers. George's actual business profit and loss. Properties he owned. Companies that he controlled. He was worth millions, at least on paper. After we went over everything. Charles asked me my opinion on several things. I made some suggestions. He looked at Ivan and smiled.

"I told you he was sharp!" Charles gloated. Ivan in his own emotionless way seemed to agree. "Daniel I have been talking with Art and his dad. Starting next month I want you to come down here and spend a couple of days every other week working with me and Ivan."

"Really?" I asked. They both nodded.

"I want you to learn this business inside and out. I have made Ivan a very lucrative offer to stay and manage the business. He will get one percent of the business each year he stays. If he stays to seventy, the age he picked I might add, he gets a sizable bonus. The bonus is already in escrow.

"I am looking forward to working with you." Ivan offered his hand.

"I don't know what to say!" I blushed.

"When I'm no longer here you will be taking over with Art. In exchange you will have an equity position in the business at home. Ivan will be keeping their books as well and audited by their accountant. Right now it's set up on a five year transition." Charles continued to explain.

"Oh and just so you know you will have to pull your own weight, this is no handout. The companies will pay for your actual business expenses, but any

salary will have to be earned. Ivan has a vested interest in keeping costs under control so don't go all rock star on us." George said seriously.

"George you know I would never do that!" I protested emphatically.

"Yeah? Well money like sex can be very addicting!" Charles replied. He reminded me in a not so subtle way referencing Mark.

"Thank you Charles!" I stood as he did and shook his hand. I shook Ivan's hand as well, he welcomed me aboard.

"Gentlemen I have a little white ball calling my name. Daniel I'll see you Sunday before you leave. Ivan get with Daniel and pick up the cost of the flight for him and his mom and put it down as a business meeting expense." Ivan looked at me and smiled.

"Well there goes this year's bonus!" Ivan said. I knew he was kidding I just saw what he made last year. He was good and we all knew it. Charles left but I stayed and talked to Ivan for another two hours.

I arrived back at the condo Kat and Eve were on the patio tanning in the nude. Eve was slick with oil. Her small tit's reminded me of Charles discussion from yesterday. They sat high and sagged just slightly, the nipples long and stiff. Kat had on sunscreen I guessed. Her milk filled tits drifted to her sides, they looked like they had just been drained. Looking lower both of their pussies were red and puffy. Kat's lips glistened in the sun. My guess is they had just come out.

"What would you like for dinner honey?" Eve teased. "I just had an appetizer!" She looked over at Kat's boobs.

"You mean other that what I am looking at?" I teased back.

"Well you know you're going to get that. Besides after talking to Sally I have plans for you tonight. Both of you!?" She winked at Kat. "So you better eat. You'll need the nourishment."

"I'm thinking to go then. Any ideas?" I asked.

"Mexican. Just up the road they make great fish tacos." Eve winked.

"Mom fish taco's ok for you too?" I teased. She looked at Eve's pussy.

"Well I guess I could eat another one!" We were all laughing now.

By the time I got back they had showered and slipped on some shorts and thin tank tops. I brought back some cold Coronas with the tacos and Mexican rice. After dinner we took a leisurely stroll on the beach. Charles must have told Eve some of our conversation from yesterday but not all.

"Danny. Charles told me you have been feeling a bit overwhelmed lately. Is there anything I can help with?" Eve asked as she squeezed my hand. "Has your dad been back to see you?"

Charles brought him up yesterday and now Eve today.

"Sally and I talked about that months ago. I am pretty sure I made that all up as a way to cope." I explained.

"Or was it to get us adults to bring to light all the dirty little secrets we kept from you? The ones you knew of but were too polite to ask about?" Eve suggested. It was something to contemplate. "Danny you were so much smarter than any of us realized. Well except your mother. She knew." I looked at Kat, she smiled.

Kat looked to Eve but said nothing. Turning to me Eve asked.

"But you still have the ability to sense things before they happen. Read people or situations?"

"Yeah a bit. I don't know if I do it less or it's just so natural I just don't even think about it anymore." She squeezed my hand again. "Why do you ask?"

"I don't know? I just thought I should. So you're good?" Eve checked again. She and Kat they both looked at me.

"Yeah I am. Charles helped a lot, just having the two of you here with me now ..."

"Feels right?" Eve asked.

"You feel it too?" I asked a bit surprised. I knew she did I could feel it bind us together.

"I do Daniel I always have and always will!" She pulled me in for a long loving kiss. "You and your Mom are the most important people in my world along with Charles and Sally. She kissed Kat as we turned back to the condo. "I need you both tonight. Let's go back. My pussy has been wet ever since yesterday when Charles told me you were going to fuck my ass tonight" The bastard was making a point and wasn't even here to get the reward.

Back at the condo. Kat and Sally went in the master bath as I freshened up in the main one. When I came out they were waiting for me on the bed. Eve reached out and took my cock as I stood by the side of the bed. Precum was forming on the head of my cock she bent over on all fours and took it in her mouth. Kat started rimming Eve's asshole as she moaned over my cock.

Eve sucked me for a few minutes then pulled off and had me lay on the bed. Kat straddled my cock easing it in her pussy. Eve straddled my face then kissed each other as we all started to find a rhythm. Kat was getting very excited. Eve sensing this ground her pussy hard against my lips. Eve must have been squeezing Kat's tits I felt her milk spray on my chest.

"Deeper baby. I am almost there!" Kat hissed as more milk coated my chest. Eve shifted, her clit now over my mouth. I could her the slurps of them kissing their ragged breaths grasping for air at the same time. Kat grunted as she impaled herself on me. Eve's clit danced on my tongue. Before I knew it they were both getting off, one on each end of me.

My face was coated with Eve's slippery cum, my balls drenched with Kat's. I was just starting to get that feeling when it all stopped. Thankfully I didn't have to wait long for it to start again. Kat moved off my pulsing cock and Eve quickly took her place. Her tightness almost had me going but Kat distracted me by lowering her rosebud to my tongue. Eve jack hammered me sending pangs through my cock. Kat continued to grind her asshole on my tongue. The brown star parted easily the tight ring now trained to accept intruders.

The muffled sounds of my lovers I couldn't understand but I read their body language. I could take no more. A gentle push and Kat lifted her ass. I saw Eve's tits flapping like little bat wings. I reached up and gripped them pulling her down hard against my cock as I thrusted up. That was it.

"Mom I'm cumming!" I held her tit's tight she pounded my cock, a froth oozed from her pussy as load after load spewed into her tight opening. My hands slipped to her nipples and she screamed in delight.

"I'm cumming baby. Oh god you fill me up!" Her breathing was erratic, she stutter fucked me her pussy impaled itself, hesitated then slammed back again. "So deep. So big. So fucking good!"

Eve pulled off she took my cock in her mouth to clean me. At the same time Kat slipped under her to clean her cunt. With my emotions in overdrive, her

warm mouth and the scene of Kat lapping at Eve's gaping pussy, my cock was hard in no time.

"Kathryn he's ready for you!" Eve announced.

Mom looked at my cock with the look I knew all too well. She assumed the position and I gladly assumed mine. Without a word and with only the natural fluids deposited on each other I pressed against her anus.

"Kat I'm going to fuck your ass!" I announced. I didn't even wait for her to push back.

"Oh Danny yes! Oh how I love that feeling! Fuck me baby. Fuck my nasty ass!" She was panting in no time. I felt Eve's hand on my back.

"May I cut in?" She had a harness on and a good sized rubber cock dangling from it. Not as long and as big as me but on her it looked massive. I pulled out Eve lined the well lubed cock into Kat's pussy. "In my ass slut I want it in my ass!" Kat whimpered.

"Slut you're in for treat!" Eve pulled the cock out she slipped through Kat's legs facing her. She nibbled on Kat's hanging tits sucking milk from them. "Fuck us you milk slut!"

Eve grabbed the rubber cock and plunged it in Kat's pussy. I lubed up my cock knowing this was something new. With my cock at her puffy asshole I pushed forward.

"AH!" Kat yelped. "AAHHaaaahhhhh...Oh yesssssssss!" My cock filled her ass the cock in her pussy increased the pressure for us both. Eve moved first, the feeling of the rubber cock along mine made me groan. Kat sighed I could feel her trying to adjust to us both.

"Now Danny. Fuck my ass now!" Kat yelled. Clearly she was ready. I pulled out while Eve pushed in slowly we had a slight rhythm going. "So good Eve. Fuck me slut!" Kat was lost in her desires.

"Take it Kat take both of our cocks!" Eve whispered as she kissed her lips. "Cum for us Kat show us how much you love us. My boy in your ass. Your son in your ass. He's ready, he wants to fill that ass. Show us Kat. Please baby open your pussy and take me while our son fills you with love!"

The whole time Eve whispered Kat's body was responding. She was close, I was closer. Holding off I was waiting for her. Then Eve pulled out I held my position then I whispered

"Moms. I love you. I love you both! I could feel Eve start to move back in I joined her.

"Kat I'm cumming!" I warned her. Her pelvis rolled back then forward!

"Me too Danny! Fuck me! Both of you fuck me deep!" Her pelvis fucked us both it was all I could do to stay inside.

"I'm cumming. Don't stop Kat! I...mmm...ccuuummmmmmiiinnggggg!" Eve wailed from below. She shuddered under Kat I could feel the vibration on top. Her cock slipped out I could feel the pressure release on my cock in Kat's ass. I slipped out Kat moaned in protest.

We rested and but when Kat took me in her mouth and Eve showed me the butt plug she slipped in her ass when she strapped on the harness. I was up and ready again. I used plenty of lubed on both of us. Taking my time and with her ass slightly loose from the plug Eve finally had me deep inside.

Kat lay by her face kissing her and telling her how hot she looked skewered by my cock. We went slow and gentle. I let her set the pace.

"Would you like the dildo in your pussy?" Kat teased.

"If you put another thing in me I'll need stitches! God Danny you're so big!" Eve moaned. The craving for my cock in her ass was taking over. She was looser now and was starting a quicker pace.

"Oh Kat. There it is, mmmm, that feeling of how did he ever get that thing in there, to hoping he never takes it out!" Eve hissed. Kat reached up and stroked her ass cheeks.

"I am going to have him take it out and let you feel that all over again." Kat said. She sat up and nodded for me to pull out. I did. Eve begged me to put it back in. Kat rimmed her gaping hole with her finger.

"Soon baby. Just a little tighter!" She kept Eve's asshole stretched with her fingers. Eve now pushing back looking for my cock.

"Please Kat I need him in me!" Eve hissed as she begged. Kat rimmed her hole with her finger I could see it was starting to close. Kat nodded for me to fill her again.

"Oh thank you Kat! Deeper Danny stretch me out! Charles loves fucking my ass now. Open it up for him! Oh god why did I wait so long? Do it Danny leave it well fucked like the last time!"

"I want you to cum for him Evelyn! I want you to cum while he fills YOUR ass with his love!"

"Yes baby fill my ass!" Eve started fucking my swelling cock. "Let me feel that hot semen coat my walls."

I looked at Kat. That wasn't going to happen soon. I had cum twice already. I could do it again but I wasn't even close right now. She knew what I was thinking but she only smiled and moved to my ear.

"You will cum in her when I tell you to!"

"But..." I tried to protest. Kat stopped me.

"You will. Trust me!" I wasn't going to argue. Eve was back fucking me babbling on about Charles and ...

Kat had her hand under Eve she was rubbing her clit. Eve was panting my cock now easily slipped in her. Suddenly I felt the cool sensation of lube running down the crack of my ass. My cock jumped, I looked at Kat and shook my head as her finger rimmed my asshole now. She gave me a wicked grin and nodded.

"Get ready" she mouthed to me. I wanted to pull out and run she knew it.

"I love you. Please for me?" Kat whispered. I didn't respond, she took that as a yes.

"Eve get ready Danny is going to fill your ass. With one hand under Eve strumming her clit the other teasing my asshole. Eve and I started to fuck harder.

"Now Baby. NOW!" I felt Eve stiffen Kat slipped a finger deep in my ass my cock jumped and from nowhere I started filling Eve's ass.

"OH SHIT!" I yelled!

"Yes Danny I feel it!"

Eve's whole body seemed to clamp down on my cock. I continued to empty my balls. She just froze as my cock pumped in her ass. When I pulled out she clamped her legs closed. Her hand between her legs she toppled over her eyes were closed. Kat pulled her finger from my ass and licked it clean.

Somehow I knew I had to do it. Sally would be proud I thought. I pulled Kat to me and kissed her my tongue searched her mouth as she searched mine. I felt her melt into my arms. She knew I wasn't mad.

Surprised maybe but not mad. I wouldn't let her go. Kat clung to me. We shared something that night in my mother's bed that had been missing of late. I need her and she needed me. Only when we separated did she whisper in my ear.

"I'll tell no one Danny. I promise."

"I love you Kat, and thank you. She thought I was talking about our secret. She would soon find out it was something else.

We left Eve right there sleeping. Mom slipped the plug back in her ass so it didn't leak all night. She didn't even budge. We cleaned up a bit then joined her Kat insisting I spoon Eve.

The next morning I was up early. When the girls woke up we all took a shower together. I spent the day relaxing and catching up with some calls. The girls went shopping.

We had dinner and then that night we fucked and sucked until we were sore. No asses that night. We had a plane to catch Sunday and Kat doesn't like to take chances like that in public.

Kat met in the kitchen early Sunday morning. She was going for a walk on the beach and wouldn't be back soon. I took the hint.

Eve purred as I slipped in behind her. She nuzzled her naked body against mine welcoming me back to bed.

"Danny..." Eve whispered her voice trailing off.

"It's ok mom, I understand." I replied back.

"Do you Daniel?"

Eve rolled over to face me, her eyes searched mine for to make sure. I pulled her on top of me and guided her pussy over my cock. Eve giggled as she worked my cock into her depths. Satisfied she had all of me she could take Eve rested her head on my chest.

"There, now what did you want to ask me?" I looked down to see her eyes closed and a happy smile on her face.

"I think you just answered my question." She chuckled.

"Mom, tell me this doesn't feel right?" I challenged her. "I don't care what other people think."

"Oh Danny you do understand!" Eve gushed. "Sally is right, you are ..."

"SSSHHH! No more talking, let me tell you my way." I chuckled.

Eve and I made love like we did that first night on my birthday. Painfully slow, but happily satisfied. We connected that day in a way words can't describe. Somehow I knew I was meant to be there making love to my mother. That morning with Eve is one I will never forget.

Charles was home in time to take us to lunch and drop us off at the airport. Kat and I had a long time to talk about the past three days. With Charles and Eve's help I told her I had made a decision. On the way home from the airport we made a stop.

We pulled down the familiar street. A trip I had made many times before. With Kat behind me I knocked at the door. Sally came to the screen door, she was happy to see us then looked to the living room. George and Maggie stood as she opened the door.

"I told you. You aren't welcome here!" George explained. Mom moved around me so he could see her. "Kat, I'm sorry I didn't see you. You are welcome here!" He tried to stare me down.

"I'll be brief. I came for something that I think is mine, and to ask if you and I can find a time we can talk." I said.

"We have nothing to discuss you and I! George started towards me Maggie grabbed his arm.

"Gigi! No! He just want to talk!" George stared me down not risking pissing her off too.

"George my son loves you, he respects you, he idolized you. If it weren't for him you would be wallowing in that chair and Maggie would be at home where she belongs. If my son isn't welcome here than no one in my family is welcome here!" Kat declared.

Maggie looked at George, but Charles was right, his pride wouldn't let him see past his nose.

"Get what you came for and leave. We are done here." He blustered.

"I will but before we go I want you to know I apologize for any wrongs I have committed. I know we can't go back to how it was before but we are still family. For their sake and ours I hope we can at least be civil if not friends. Maggie was in tears. Sally was impressed. Kat, well Kat was still fuming. I took Charles advice and twice let him save face, but that was the limit. It was his decision now.

"Get what you came for and leave!" He growled.

"In that case I will." I stared him down now. "Sally let's go you are living with me now!" I said firmly.

You could have heard a pin drop.

"Sally you walk out that door..."

"Kat! Sally! We are leaving!" I cut him off. "She will be back to get her things when you are gone."

Kat took Sally's hand, Sally hesitated looking in my eyes to see if I meant it. I had done it, in front of George no less. At that moment I knew her heart and soul belonged to me. Sally gave us a faint smile and approached me still holding Kat's hand.

"And if I don't let her take anything?" George yelled. He stepped closer Maggie still clung to him.

"Then I'll sell everything I own to replace what you intend to take from her if I need to!" I stepped in his direction I felt a hand pull me back.

"Daniel there isn't anything here I want as long as I have you in my life!" Sally kissed me in front of them both. "Come sir. Your pet has so much she needs to tell you!"

"Good night Maggie. Maybe I'll see more of you one day?" I held up my phone and winked. "When we aren't yelling at each other."

"I would like that!" She replied. "Maybe sometime soon? She winked at me." She looked at George clearly not happy with him.

We drove off Sally and Kat sitting in front with me.

"What was that all about" Sally asked. She knew something was up. I showed them both the picture Maggie sent me of her pussy full of Georges cum. They both squealed in delight.

"Does he know you have that?" Kat asked.

"I doubt it, and she knows I would never tell him." I explained. The fun died down and we started talking about the weekend.

"So did you two have any fun with Eve I don't know about?" I looked at Kat she tried not to smile but she promised. Sally looked at us both.

"What is it?" She looked back at Kat.

"I can't say I promised!" Kat explained. Sally looked at me.

"Sir please tell me." Sally pleaded. Kat looked at me letting me know it was up to me.

"If I tell. You both have to promise not to tell anyone else." I wavered.

"As you wish sir. I promise." Sally replied. I looked to Kat.

"I already promised but ok I still promise!" Kat replied. Sally looked at me anxiously waiting.

"Mom slipped a finger in my ass so I would cum in Eve's ass!" Shrieking filled the truck cab. My ears hurt from the two of them carrying on. They teased and made gay jokes. Then Sally turned to me.

"Daniel did you like it?" This was no joke she was serious. They both looked at me.

"I don't know. It was very erotic when she just rimmed my ass. Then it happened so fast I came. I forgot all about it until she pulled it out and licked it off." Sally turned to Kat.

"You licked it off. What did it taste like? No, wait don't tell me. Sir can I put it on the list?"

"Sure I guess. Why not?"

"Oh damn. I have to know. Kat. What did it taste like?"

"I'm not sure since Danny kissed me right after I did it!? Sally looked back to me.

"Oh that is definitely going on the list!" She teased.

We arrived home just before dinner. Emotions were high as Nikki and Kyle greeted us at the door. Sally was in the kitchen whipping up dinner while we sat at the table recounting the past four days with Charles and Eve. It was then I told them about what Charles, Ivan, and I had talked about.

Financially we were very comfortable. The three of us all made good money. Not great except for me at times but commission jobs can be feast or famine. We lived off of my income. Kat's and Nikki's were invested or spent on special items or trips if needed. We each had our own investment accounts run by different managers.

The business Charles offered had potential to provide additional security for the future. He made it very clear that this wasn't a silver spoon and Ivan confirmed it by showing me the many restrictions. Basically I need to work my ass off to get any real benefit.

After dinner I asked Sally to meet me in her room.

"Pet from now on you live here in this house. You aren't going back. This will be your room. What happens in here stays in here unless we both agree. Understood?"

"Yes sir."

"You are expected to get permission to have an orgasm when I'm not present. Understood?" Sally looked surprised and excited at the same time.

"Yes sir!"

"Your pussy is mine. Your ass is mine. Your mouth is mine. Are we clear?"

"Yes sir."

"You will dress as I decide when outside this room, and also when I'm in it."

Yes sir." Sally started rubbing her legs together.

"Sally you are my pet and my pet only. In this house you have equal standing with Kat and Nikki. You aren't to submit to them in any way without my permission. You aren't a servant to be bossed around." I explained.

"Things have worked well in the past. Nothing has changed in that regard." I added.

Sally smiled comforted in knowing she was still held in high regard. "In light of that I believe calling me sir in the presence of friends and family will send the wrong message. You will use it only in this room or when we are alone. Agreed?"

"Yes Daniel I understand."

"Lastly, for now anyway. I want to say this. I am doing this for you, well ok, us. You will be my pet and although I may use words like slut or slave for effect, they are for effect only. You are one of the true loves of my life and because of that there are limits to what I am willing to do. If I feel this is becoming too depraved we will stop or you will leave." I explained.

She seemed touched that I was so clear about our roles.

"I mean that Sally!" She had a tear rolling down her cheek.

"Your pleasure isn't to be withheld, delayed maybe?" I winked at her. A grin crossed her face. "You will enjoy as many orgasms as I do if you submit to me." The grin broadened to a full blown smile. "Lastly I'm new to this I understand the concept but have no experience. You may need to teach me. I may make mistakes. Just know that I do it out of love. With your help we will take this journey together."

"May I kiss you sir?" She whispered.

"You may always kiss me Sally!" I explained.

"Sir with all due respect when you are in this room I am your pet and need permission to enjoy any pleasure you deem worthy!" Sally glanced up at me. She was teaching me my first lesson.

"Kiss me my pet!" I smiled.

We met together she melted into me. Sally kissed me with all the passion she could muster. I broke loose holding her arm's length away.

"Cum!"

"Sir?" She looked confused for just a second.

"I said cum for me!" Sally understood what was expected. She slipped a hand down her slacks and inside her panties. She was already so excited I didn't expect this to last long.

"May I strip sir?" Her eyes started getting that glassy look as her need to orgasm started to build.

"You may not." She looked at me in a daze. "I need to be with my wife Nikki and if you disrobe I may be tempted to stay. You will stay dressed until you cum."

Hearing that was all she needed. Pet widened her stance and proceeded to bring herself off while I watched. Pet started to collapse on the floor as her orgasm subsided. I stood silently as she composed herself. Slipping the hand from her pussy to her mouth.

"Thank you sir!" She beamed.

"You will not cum again until we spend Tuesday night together. I expect you to be dressed to impress."

"Yes sir!" She replied then her face turned beet red. "Sir I have no money."

She was right I didn't know if she even brought her purse.

"Kat and Nikki will go shopping with you and buy what you want. Later this week I'll set you up with your own bank account and credit card. I think two thousand should last you awhile. You will be paid for your services to this household. If George will not let you take your car we will buy you a new one. A minivan may be handy around here. Looks like we will need it soon enough!"

"Good night sir. Give Nikki my love!" Sally rose and started to remove her top and bra. I left before it was too late.

Nikki and I spent the next two night's together making up for being gone. The girls took Sally shopping while I watched Kyle. Sally was dressed to kill Tuesday night. She was so excited in anticipation of our night together she came the minute I entered her pussy. The next morning she gulped her breakfast from the end of my cock.

Art, his dad Max, and I, had a meeting Thursday about the business plan I discussed with Charles and Ivan. Basically they wanted access to the Florida market. They would work out of Charles office. I would continue to work out of theirs here.

There were incentives built in for all. Production meant additional commissions. Slackers were going to lose in the long run. The key was it was all in our best interest to be productive and profitable. One big perk was Max has other businesses including charter jets. We could use any empty seats for free most times and at a huge discount at others. Going to and from home to Orlando would take hours instead of a solid day of driving.

Back at the home front we were all settling down into the routine we enjoyed before all the drama started. With Sally running the house Kat went back to work full time. Nikki also picked up a few more hours.

Mary was now a permanent part of Sharon's and the kids' lives. Mary was wrapping up her deal with Mark. Her emotions settling down now that the house was sold. Sharon's house was less than a mile as the crow flies to the base of the mountain. It was a good ten minute descent on the winding road. Being so close Sam and Lizzy would visit often.

Sam would come to visit with me, I often went and watched him play sports. Lizzy was a regular visitor as well mostly to see Kat, Nikki, Sally, and Kyle.

Lizzy was almost fifteen and was growing taller and smarter. Nikki and I would hire her to watch Kyle Friday and Saturday nights so we could get out of the house and she could make some money. She bonded with Kyle from the start. Many nights she would stay over just to play with him in the morning.

Six months pregnant Nikki was starting to show seriously. Lizzy became enamored with the transformation. Lizzy and Nikki talked for hours on all sorts of topics. I didn't see her often, my schedule being so erratic. Whenever Lizzy and I did see each other we continued our game of teasing then acting like it

was no big deal. Nikki says she could tell Lizzy was disappointed when she didn't get to see me.

I still spent time with Sharon but only when the kids weren't home. Nikki however was spending more time with her mom and Sharon now that we lived so close. She didn't think I knew how often but I could tell, and so could Kat.

As in my past I found no benefit to share my knowledge. If she was happy I was happy for her. We had known for months they were intimate. I don't think that was the problem, but the frequency was becoming noticeable and Kat seemed to be affected by it. I guess we both hoped it was just an infatuation and would pass with time. I began to lavish more attention on Kat hoping to dull the ache.

Sally of course knew it also. I forbade her from discussing it with anyone but me. When we weren't being intimate, Sally and I reflected on many subjects. Dynamics of the women in my life was but just one.

April was now upon us the weather becoming much better finally. Business is good, Kyle is growing like a weed, and soon will have another sibling. Doug Jr now had his driver's license but no car. He was a good baseball player and loved airplanes. I called my friend Darius that worked for George and asked if he could use some part time help. He asked me to send Jr over. I called Sharon.

I knew that since her husband left she was treading water financially. A mortgage, three kids and Mary with no job was a lot to put on one income these days. I met with her and Jr and explained that Darius would like to have Jr stop by. I offered to buy Jr a car so he could go to work and play summer ball. As with any transaction like this it was based on his grades and behavior.

Sharon said he could take Lizzy to school and drive Sam to soccer practices. Jr was thrilled, he seemed just as interested in the job as the car. I gave him the phone number for Darius.

Sharon and I talked about Lizzy for a bit. I asked how she was doing in school. Sharon was proud that through all of this she was still a straight A student. Sam on the other hand wasn't but he was a good kid if not a good student. Sharon explained how much she appreciated all the help the four of us provided.

As it turned out I didn't need to buy Jr a car. George allowed Sally to keep hers. I gave it to Nikki and her old car we gave to Jr. The plan was to buy a new minivan to haul the kids around in.

As for George he and Maggie were living together permanently now. He allowed Sally to take what she wanted but there was little she ended up taking. He offered to send her money but she refused and even returned his credit cards.

One day I noticed she was no longer wearing her wedding ring replacing it with a ring Kat bought for her with a beautiful amber stone in the center a small ruby and emerald on either side.

Nikki asked if I could spend some private time with her one Sunday afternoon. I had a showing. I don't normally work on Sunday but the clients were from out of town and the weekend was the only time they could spare. Most open houses are on Sunday we hit a few but I wanted to show them a house that we were going to list on Monday.

I was running late getting home the clients loved the house I showed them. They signed an offer sheet I explained that I would call them in the morning with the answer. I knew it was sold as the objections were few and minor and the price close to asking. I pulled in the garage. Kat's car was gone. As soon as I walked in the door I felt it. Something was different.

I looked for Sally but she was gone. I called out for Nikki she emerged from her room naked, her face covered in pussy juice I assumed. Her cunt lips swollen and red.

"You're late!" She smiled.

"Your right. I was closing a deal..." She pulled me down and kissed me. The taste was different than any I had tasted before. She kissed me long and hard I knew before she told me why.

"We need you!" Nikki whispered hoarsely.

"Are you sure this is wise?" I asked before she told me.

"You know?" She asked. I nodded. "How do you do that?"

The question was rhetorical. I stood letting her make sure she thought this through.

"Do you want to?" Nikki asked with a smile. Again rhetorical. I looked down she could see my cock start to harden.

"But I'll only do this if you insist!" I explained. She gave me a knowing grin.

"We insist. She asked for you herself!" Nikki led me to the room.

"Mom Danny says yes!" Nikki squealed.

Mary laid on her back. Her legs splayed. Her bald pussy deep red and thoroughly soaked. Her massive tits bigger than Nikki's milked filled tits

settled to each side. I noticed she had pierced her nipples to match Sharon's, they were hard and plump much like Nikki's. She looked at me almost like she was drunk she smiled but didn't move.

"You might want to give her a second. We tried to wait...well anyway she just came when she heard you come through the door. I think she hoped you would find us together." Nikki explained.

I helped Nikki undress me and was soon sporting a hard cock. I looked at Mary and didn't know where to start. Nikki broke the ice she walked me over to Mary and stroked my cock. Precum started to collect on the tip. Nikki took her finger and wiped it off offering it to Mary. She closed her lips around her daughter's finger her lust fill eyes started to brighten. Nikki sucked my cock her mom quickly took notice. Offering my cock to Mary the older woman shifted in the bed quickly wrapping her lips around it.

"Yes mommy suck your baby's husband. Be nice and I'll let him fill your pussy! Would you like that?" Mary groaned around my cock as Nikki slipped two fingers in her mom's twat. Mary was sucking me hard and fast, wasting no time for our first encounter. Nikki's fingers were working their magic I could hear sloshing in Mary's cunt. Nikki pulled me from Mary's mouth.

"Baby don't take him away!" Mary protested.

"Spread your legs mommy, Danny's going to give you what you wanted. A nice big hard cock! After he fills you, you can have him back!" Nikki hissed.

I moved between Mary's legs. I was on my knees her ass rested on my thighs. Nikki grabbed my dick and spanked her mom's pussy. Mary purred with each slap. She raised her pussy begging for it harder and faster. I looked to Nikki we both knew what we were thinking. Mary liked it. Her pussy was oozing. She liked it a lot!

"In me Danny I need you in me!" Her cries filled the room as I moved into position and mounted her. There was nothing loving about it. I flat jammed my cock in mounting her like a mare in heat. She wanted animal sex she was going to get it. I fucked her fast and hard my balls slowly built up to that wonderful ache. Her pussy was as tight as Nikki's was our first time.

"Danny you're so big! Give me more!" Mary sighed. Pulling out the stops I buried all I had as deep as I could go. Mary muttered over and over not to stop. Nikki was pinching Mary's nipples lightly and tugging at her jewelry.

"Cum for him mama. Show him what a good mother you can be!" Nikki urged her on. I was ready to shoot any second.

"Cum Mary, I love you. Let's show your baby how much we love her!" I said. Mary wrapped her legs behind mine and pulled me tight her pussy slammed into my groin. I blasted the first load deep in her pussy.

"Oh god I felt that! Do it again. Fuck me deep!" The second shot hit her cervix. Mary was too gone to speak but her body spoke for her. She couldn't get me deep enough to maintain her orgasm.

Before I grew soft I pulled out and moved so Mary could suck me. Even with her eyes closed she had no problem taking me in her mouth. Nikki moved between her mother's legs lapping cum and pussy juice as it spilled out. Mary refused to release my cock until I was hard enough to fuck her again. It didn't take long. I rolled on my back she mounted me and started to jack hammer me but I stopped her quickly.

"This time we take it slow. I want to feel your body on me. I want to feel your tit's mashed against my chest, your breath on my neck. I want to feel every inch of your pussy being filled by my cock, stretching it as we go deeper." I whispered. "I want to feel the skip of your heart beat when your cervix is pushed deeper in your body as my cock searches for more room."

Sally settled down, I gently pushed up trying to make my words ring true. I don't know if Mary had ever had someone fuck her slow before. Each word. Each movement made her coo in ecstasy.

"When you lift up I want you to feel your pussy pull along the veins of my cock!" I explained. Sally started up very slowly my description painting images in her brain. "That's it feel the head of my cock hoping you won't let go. Now roll your pelvis letting your clit paint the top of my cock with your wetness. Feel the skin caress your little nub."

Mary was mesmerized as I let her take over. My hands on her ass stopped her from breaking our rhythm as her desires grew. With my narration over. Nikki offered me a dripping tit to suckle. I relieved the pressure in one then the other leaving Kyle enough for dinner tonight.

Nikki lowered her pussy next. I licked her pussy until she came. Pulling off I could see Mary's eyes get that glassy look. I don't know how many climaxes she had today but this one would be different than any she has had in the past.

"Cum Mary. Nice and slow let it wash through you." She fought to pick up the pace but I knew if she came like this it would be bliss. "That's it slowly. Feel it. Feel my cock. Make it happy. Spread your pussy open." Like a magic wand she moved her legs flattening her pussy. Her clit red and extended begging for contact.

"Now rub your clit on it!"

"Oh Danny!"

"Slowly Mary. Feel it build?" She rubbed her clit again. "That's it, right there, you want to cum but you don't want that feeling to stop do you?"

"Yessss. I mean noooo!" My fingers dug into her ass.

"Now Mary. Let go ...let it ..."

"OOHH FFUUCCKK NIKKI. I'M CUMMMMMIINNGG!"

"Yes mom. Feel him in you. Feel how he makes you want it. Cum for us Mary!" Nikki pulled her mother into a kiss. Mary's body fucked me long and slow as her orgasm settled throughout her body. She would shiver then hesitate, plant her cervix against my cock and shiver again. Her climax seemed to take minutes not seconds. She rested on me still kissing Nikki.

When she could move my hard cock was still buried in her pussy. She pulled off and made me stand. Getting on her knees she sucked me off. When I started to cum she sprayed her face and chest.

"Mark me Danny. Make me one of yours. Oh god they were right. You make me so happy!

We all took a nap. I fucked Nikki filling her gaping cunt. Mary willingly sucked her clean. After we showered. Nikki called Kat and told her we would be coming to Sharon's for dinner.

Mary raved about the slow fucking. Making me promise we would do it often. She also said she wanted me to take her anal cherry. I did weeks later. She tried it several times but it didn't do anything for her. Slow fucking was something we never stopped doing.

When we reached Sharon's everyone but Sam knew what we spent the afternoon doing. Lizzy seemed miffed but she did give me a kiss goodbye. Sharon called me the next day thanking me. Like her it seemed a hard cock was something Mary definitely needed on a regular basis.

That year Nikki and I welcomed our second child into the world. It was a girl named Kenzi. Nikki and Kat continued to breast feed both children now.

In 2005 Nikki, Kat and I added one more child to the brood. A son named Hunter. Nikki had fulfilled her promise and delivered three beautiful and health children into our lives.

The next few years were filled with the daily lives we all lead. It wasn't until the year 2009 that events take place the ultimately changed our lives significantly.

The year is 2009. Like every family we had just been living our lives one day at a time. We had settled in to our daily routines until one day, one small event coupled with previous longings changed our lives dramatically. The last four years I have commuted between Florida and home every other week selling houses and learning from Charles and Art.

I usually go alone. But occasionally Sally comes to keep me company and be my assistant as well as my lover. We have checked off many items on her list but not as many as we had hoped. Instead we have worked on perfecting others.

While I am at work she spends time with her sister Eve. Eve and I have been able to spend time together but no more than before. As I promised Charles. I was here to work.

Like any other day I came home from work expecting to see the women in my house Nikki, Kat and Sally along with our kids Kyle, Kenzi, and Hunter. Nikki and Kat were at the table when I arrived. I could tell the moment I walked in there was a somber feel to the room.

Kat shared some news about Sharon that was upsetting her. Sharon was being offered a position with the company in Colorado. The office there was

struggling and she was asked if she would consider moving there to run that office.

Kat explained that Sharon was struggling with the decision. Her home and family were here but it was an opportunity to move up in the company. The company had asked her to go for a month then she could decide at that time. They wanted her to leave next week.

Kat was asked to run the local office during her absence. Working daily with Sharon, Kat knew what was going on better that anyone. I knew Kat was capable but I also knew she wasn't cut out to be the boss. I could see the amount of stress just this one situation put her in. I couldn't imagine how she could handle a whole office full of decisions put on her shoulders. For now I would support her in any way I could.

The next week Sharon and Mary headed to Colorado for the trial period.

Jr was now working at the local airport and had become a pilot. Attending the local community college he was left in charge of the house.

Lizzy now twenty was attending the same college. Sam now in middle school, along with Lizzy went and stayed with Sharon's sister. It was in the beginning of the second week when things started to unravel at home.

Like the proverbial ball of yarn it was just a small strand flapping in the wind. But I noticed. I could see it start to unravel and knew it wasn't good. Kat was on the phone constantly with Sharon or myself putting out fires here at the office. Kat had become very stressed out at work and now at home.

Nikki had been on a roller coaster of emotions for the last year or so. I'm no expert but I felt I knew what the problem was. With Sharon and her mother Mary gone, and Kat overwhelmed at work Nikki was feeling boxed in.

Each day Nikki was feeling the strain as mom was wound tight and on edge all the time. Sally and I, with Lizzy help took care of the kids to reduce some of the stress around the house. There was only so much comfort I could provide Nikki. She needed a woman. And the only woman close enough to her heart, Kat was drifting away.

By the middle of the second week Nikki was starting to reject my offers. With Sharon and Mary gone and the rejection she felt from Kat, Nikki was struggling. She had been restless recently but this was becoming unbearable for her. I found myself in the position I was in years earlier with mom. I needed to send Nikki away.

I wanted to talk to Kat but she was too stressed out as it was. With no choice I turned to the two persons I could rely on. Eve and Sally. I called Eve but there was no answer. With Sally at home I came during the day to see her and the kids. She looked happy to see me but I could tell she wasn't herself either.

At first I thought she knew something about Kat and Nikki, but as I explained my dilemma I could tell this was not the case. We talked for almost an hour. Several times before left I sensed she wanted to say something but if she did she held her tongue.

I had made my decision. Sally half heartily agreed once again telling me to trust my instincts. I made the arrangements as soon as I could. Friday morning I called Kat and explained the kids would be staying with Sally for the weekend at Sharon's house. She was so flustered I'm not even sure she heard me when I explained I would see her later.

With her bags packed I was waiting at the door for Nikki. She protested at first but when she met me in the foyer I could see she too accepted my decision. I loaded her in the truck, and after breakfast, I saw her off as she went through security. Moments earlier I kissed her for the last time not knowing if she would be back or not.

I looked at the wedding ring I took from my pocket. I remembered the joy I felt the day she accepted it on that basketball court so many years ago. Now I was sending her off as a free woman to find what it was in the world she really wanted. I sent her off be with Sharon and Mary but just like Kat, when I sent her to visit Becky, I knew there was no guarantee she would return.

There were tears of course. Nikki protested again she should stay. The kids, her work, and of course Kat and me. But she finally admitted this was something she needed to do. Nikki knew she could come back whenever she wanted. I explained those things would still be waiting for her. I knew her better than she knew herself. Deep down Nikki wasn't happy.

Nikki was wondering if she had missed out on something in life. She wanted to see if the grass was greener on the other side of the fence. I knew, as much as she loved our children, Nikki had them as much for Kat and me. Like her mom Nikki had a wild side, a side that has been dormant of late.

I knew this meant she may look to other men for companionship. It wasn't brought up specifically but I knew it was a possibility. I held her wedding ring tightly in my hand as Nikki looked back one last time.

I could see her hesitation but there was a spring in her step as she turned. I hoped I wouldn't regret my decision. Little did I know back at home another storm was just starting to swirl. Soon history would repeat itself.

Sally embraced me when I got back home. She could sense my trepidation. It was a bad sign when she didn't offer words of encouragement. I helped her pack up the kids and watched as they drove away. I had just opened my second beer when Kat walked in the door.

"Daniel Masters what have you done?" Kathryn screamed when she saw me.

"Mom I can explain!" I tried to reply.

"No! No you can't! There isn't anything you can say to explain this away! Do you know where your wife is?" The tone she used led me to believe I didn't.

"I know where she is supposed to be." I explained trying to lower the volume just a bit as I spoke.

"Well she is stuck in Atlanta for the night. The second plane had problems. And I had to hear this from my boss thousands of miles away!" Kat screamed. The volume was now back at ear splitting levels.

"I'm sure she'll be alright. They'll get her on another flight." I tried to reassure her but now I was the one getting worried.

"Where are Sally and my kids?" Kathryn interrogated me. She was now beyond talking to, Kat was hysterical.

"The kids are with Sally. They went over to Sharon's house to keep an eye on it. I was hoping the two of us could spend a quiet night alone.

"Congratulations Daniel. That's exactly what YOU'RE going to do. Spend the night ALONE. I'm going to spend it with Sally and the kid's!"

"Mom..."

"Don't you mom me! Or Kat me or even Kathryn me! I want her back her now! DO YOU UNDERSTAND ME?"

I thought of answering but I knew better. Kat left without taking anything with her or saying another word.

I stewed awhile but knew as much as it looked like the wrong thing to do, in my heart, regardless of the outcome, it was right. I tried to call Nikki but she didn't answer. I left a message doubting she would call back. A sinking feeling passed through me as I hung up. Don't ask me how but I knew.

I called Eve next. I had been trying off and on for days but haven't been able to reach her. Charles answered the phone, which in itself wasn't a problem except he never answers the home phone. Never.

"Charles you answered the phone!" I teased.

"I saw it was you..." I could hear him sigh. "Daniel I have been meaning to call you."

"Yeah well I've been pretty busy myself." I joked.

"I've heard a bit. I hate to add to your troubles but I felt it would better if it came from me." My grandfather said reluctantly.

My gut wretched as he spoke. This was bad. Really bad. I have known Charles my whole life he could make the worst news sound like good news to a client but starting like this was ominous.

"This is about Eve. Isn't it? Where is she?" He could hear the fear in my voice. "Is she ok?"

"Daniel she's here at home sleeping. Danny... Eve has cancer." Charles said calmly.

Mentally I was not prepared for the news. I almost collapsed. Charles didn't even stop talking to let me process it. "We just got the newest results today. I was building up the courage to call you when the phone rang. Sally has

known for a few days. I asked her not to tell you until we knew something more concrete."

"How long?" I asked. He didn't have to say anything else.

"Maybe three months." We both just waited for the other one to respond.

"I'll be down Monday. I would like to come see her!" I said trying not to cry.

"She would like that, but not right now maybe in a week or two. She has more tests next week and it takes a toll on her." Charles was weeping.

"You will call me as soon as I can visit?"

"I promise." He barely got out.

"Would you like me to call Sally?" I hesitated as he composed himself.

"I would appreciate it if you would..."

"Charles, thank you for telling me." He hung up without saying anymore.

I sat for some time alone in the house. It was all I could do to call her but, it was getting late and I knew she would be heading to bed soon. I dialed the phone.

"Danny, are you ok?" Sally asked on the other end.

I wasn't sure which situation she was asking about. She knew that with all that was going on calling me Danny was best.

"I've had better days." I joked weakly.

"Danny, Kat's upset. She is stressed and tired. She's sleeping now. Tomorrow she will be in a better mood." Sally was trying to cheer me up.

"Sally this time I think I really fucked up. Nikki isn't answering her phone." I waited for her to respond.

"You don't know anything for sure!" She waited for me now.

"I can feel it Sally. I do know." There was a long pause.

"What do you intend to do about it if you're right?" She waited for me to answer.

"I knew it could happen. You told me it might... it's just so ...soon!" I swallowed hard. "Deal with it I suppose."

"Daniel I'm so proud of you!" Sally tried to sound supportive.

"I talked to Charles a few hours ago." Sally gasped as I told her.

"Oh Danny. Not tonight. Not that too!" I could hear her starting to break down.

"Maybe three months. They saw the doctor today." She sobbed in the phone.

"I'm coming over!" Sally blurted out.

"No pet. You stay with Kat. She needs you more. I still have time to deal with Eve. This is more pressing tonight." She knew when I called her pet it was an order she shouldn't question.

"Sir. Are you sure?" Sally sniffled.

"I'm sure. Sally please don't tell her. I want to be the one." She didn't answer. "Promise me!"

"I promise." Sally replied.

"Thank you. Goodnight." I hung up the phone and went to bed. It was well into the morning when I fell asleep.

Saturday I had a showing. My heart wasn't in it but being a professional means putting your personal life aside and giving the customer the best you have. I think I did that.

I called Mary. Nikki was due to arrive that day. I asked her to have her call me when she had a moment. She said she would. Next I called mom but she wasn't answering. I knew she had been at the house when I was at work.

There was a note to call her when Nikki was home. Obviously she was still mad. I left a message asking her to call me. The house was an empty shell. It was one thing to have the women leave it was another to not have any kid's around.

Mom called back later that evening.

"Is she home?" Kat spat out.

"No, but..." I tried to explain

"Is she on the way home?" Mom pressed further. There was desperation in her voice.

"No, please listen I..."

"Don't call me again until you can answer yes to one of those two questions. Understand?" The phone went dead.

I tried to call Nikki but she wasn't answering her phone either. I called Sharon.

"Daniel?" Sharon seemed surprised I was calling.

"Sharon I've been trying to reach Nikki but she isn't picking up. Did she make it in town?" I asked.

I just needed to know she was alright. Sharon hesitated for a long time deciding how much she should tell me.

"Danny she's in town. She is staying at a hotel downtown." Her answer was short and ambiguous.

Instantly I knew why. Sharon had been sworn to secrecy no doubt. Women. Charles and George were right. Accepting she was at least safe I probed no further.

"I understand completely. I'll not keep you in the middle any longer. I just want to make sure she is safe." I explained.

"Danny. She ... this isn't easy...!" Sharon was struggling to find the words.

"She has my number. She has Kat's number. She has Sally's number. I don't care what she's done or not done. She can come home anytime. No questions asked." I let Sharon know there wasn't anything else to explain.

"I love you Daniel. I miss you...Please come..." Sharon begged.

"We both know I can't do that. Not until this is settled." I stood firm. "Sharon I do miss you."

That night may have been the worst moment of my life.

Sunday I stayed around home hoping Kat would stop by. Maybe even bring the kids home, but she didn't. I did talk to Eve that night. She said she was feeling ok but I knew that was just putting on bold face. The conversation was serious and private.

Monday I went to work and for the first time I seriously questioned my decision to let Nikki go. I left work early, I'm not sure why. I just wanted to get home and think I guess. I opened the door and there she was.

Standing alone in the foyer dressed as she did every day after work. She looked beautiful. So professional. So sophisticated. But there was something else, she looked strong and confident and yet vulnerable. She wasn't my real mother but she is the one I loved most.

"I'm so sorry..." Kat started to breakdown.

"It's ok. We'll get through it!" I replied.

I pulled her close as she ran into my arms. Her tears flowed down her cheeks wetting my suit. It? Which 'it' were we talking about? There seemed like so many right now. Sharon and Kat's work. Nikki and her infidelity, and then Eve. The old adage of things coming in threes strikes again. She tried to pull away to say something but I held her firmly to my chest.

"Don't say a word just let me hold you. We can talk later." Kat looked up at me she tried to pull herself up I bent down we kissed firmly. We stood there just the two of us for some time. She cried then we kissed then she cried some more.

"Danny the kids will be here soon. I need to go get changed." She looked at me one last time I let her go she glanced back at me I could see she didn't want to go.

Sally brought the kids home before mom came back out. The screams of 'DADDY' filled the house as they hit the door. Sally stood back, Lizzy was with her. They watched as I was mobbed by my kids.

Lizzy looked at me with piercing eyes. I met her gaze allowing her search for what she wanted. Lizzy had become and integral part of our lives, of my life. There was no doubt she has a crush on me for years.

Nikki has been like a big sister to Lizzy and to my chagrin even encouraged her on. Sally who is closer to Lizzy than probably anyone, since they spend so much time together watching the kids, has even suggested I spend more time with her.

I realized Lizzy was looking at me to see why I sent Nikki away. When she realized I was searching her eyes at the same time she became nervous. Was it because she was mad Nikki left or happy she hadn't come back?

After dinner and just as the kids were going to bed Sally said she would take Lizzy back to her aunt's. I suggested she let me. Sally looked at Kat and then over to Lizzy before she agreed. I knew Sally wanted to tell me something. I told her we would talk when I got back.

Lizzy and I had this unique relationship with one another. I thought the world of her but wouldn't admit it to her. Lizzy is a beautiful young woman just turned twenty not long ago. We teased each other constantly neither one giving an inch. Lately she was winning, something I could never admit however.

She has been getting bolder the last couple of years. Acting like she wants me to seduce her, or her me. Her latest tease is telling me about her new boyfriend Chuck and how crazy she is about him and him for her. I've never met the young man and I'm not so sure if I did he might regret it.

The drive wasn't that long it was quiet at first she seemed to sense there were issues I was dealing with. For once she wasn't trying to get a rise out of me.

"Can I help?" She asked.

"I'm sorry. What did you say?" I was taken aback by the question.

"If I can, I would like to help." She repeated.

"Help with what?" I wasn't sure the question.

"Danny, as much as you won't admit it I am not a kid anymore. I know there are things going on. I might not know exactly what. But if I can I would like to help." She looked at me with her big brown eyes. I wanted to tease her but she was sincere and I wanted to acknowledge that.

"Thank you, and you are right. I have a lot on my mind right now." She was happy I took her seriously. "If there is anything. I promise to ask."

We rode for a few minutes. We were almost at her aunts. I could sense her mood had changed several times on the drive. I turned to look at her since she was so quiet. It was then I saw the concern she had for me.

"She'll be back Danny. She would be crazy if she doesn't!" Lizzy looked over at me. I wanted to touch her hand to see what she was thinking. I thought it best not to.

We pulled into the drive I walked her to the door. I stood on the porch as her aunt opened the door. Lizzy stepped up into the doorway. She pulled me close and kissed me lightly on the lips. Her aunt had seen this many times before. She just laughed.

"Don't get all weird on me it was just a kiss!" Lizzy teased. Then she winked at me. I said goodbye to her aunt then started back home. Somehow I knew tomorrow would be better.

Kat threw herself at me when I walked in the door. Sally was standing behind her, I knew it the moment I looked at Sally, Kat knew about Eve.

"Danny I'm so sorry. I know you tried to tell me but I was so selfish I didn't give you a chance!" Kat was crying as she held me tight. "She's your mother!"

"You're all my mother..."

"NO DANIEL we're not. Eve is the one that gave birth to you!" Kat sobbed.

"But without you and Sally, I wouldn't be here to know that" I held Kat for a long time until she settled down. Sally knew there was nothing she could say. There was nothing anyone could say right now.

"About Nikki mom..." I tried to change the subject.

"What about Eve, Daniel?" Kat sobbed.

"Mom, not now. There's time for that another day. Let me try and fix this first." I said. I understood her pain.

"But Danny...!"

"Mom, really, don't ..." They could see I was whipped. The last few days have taken their toll.

"No Danny, I need to say it. So you can hear it, so Sally can hear it. All your life I have tried to teach you to be strong. To find a solution to your problems and to never give up. Tonight when Eve called I was devastated by the news." Kat shared. "But then I was embarrassed by how I have acted. I abandon you and on top of that I didn't even take my own advice. The teacher has become the student. Still I owe you an apology!"

I pulled mom into my arms and kissed her passionately.

"What about Nikki?" I asked not wanting this to linger.

"If she doesn't understand how much we love her. If she thinks she is better off someplace else. Then I can live with that. What I can't live without is you!" Kat kissed me again. "Danny I'll never leave you as long as you want me. I promise!"

Sally stood. "Sir, I'm going to bed, I suggest you two do the same." She winked at me letting me know she too knew things were changing for the better.

I was lying in bed thinking of Nikki and Eve when Kat lay down in front of me. I pulled her tight my cock slipped between her ass cheeks. Kat reached around with a handful of lube coating me until I was hard.

Kat eased me to her asshole and pushed back. I heard her exhale and then coo when I slipped deep inside. I didn't move allowing her to ride me at her leisure. Kat started slow and sensual. I gripped her tit and gently squeezed.

"Remember the first time we did this?" Kat asked

"I remember." I explained.

I remembered like it was yesterday. I was so shocked but at the same time eager to please her. It was so taboo I thought then and still do a bit to this day.

"I was so excited to do it. But so scared you would be opposed to it." Mom continued. "When you slipped in my ass for the first time I knew I could trust you with anything. I'm sorry for not trusting you with this."

Kat pushed my cock deep in her bowels. We worked at it for almost a half hour never picking up the pace. Mom started and stopped, wiggled and clenched, drawing out the inevitable as long as she could. She refused to cum without me. Finally she could hold off no longer. Her breathing was becoming erratic, her hand reached up and gripped my hand. Mom didn't need to tell me but she did.

"Please Danny now. I need to know my son still loves me." Kat was getting emotional. I had let her do all the work so far but I took over and started to

fuck her hard. I needed her to know I did love her and still wanted her as my lover and my mom.

"Mom you are my love. Never doubt that! Now don't move and let me show you how much." Kat stopped pushing back.

I plunged deep and then held still as well. My cock swelled and the first shot seared her inner walls. Mom gripped tighter on my hand as she felt each pulse fill her ass. Kat clenched her asshole and milked the last I had to offer as I slowly fucked her puckered hole several more times. I slipped out she rolled to face me.

"Hold me son." Mom whispered. I wrapped her tight against me. She wiggled in tighter. "That's it just hold me."

I called Eve in the morning she sounded better. I made plans to visit as soon as the drama with Nikki died down and she was well enough to see me. We didn't need to wait long. I rescheduled my Florida appointments to next week. I worked locally and at home.

Thursday night Sally and I were snuggled together after an emotional but randy round of sex. Neither one of us could sleep we just held each other and whispered romantically. There was a knock on the door. It was Kat, I looked at the clock it was well after 1 in the morning. I responded for her to come in. she was on the phone talking to someone.

"Nikki I know you don't want to, but if you want to come home you need to talk to Danny first. I could see mom had been crying. Sally started to leave but I made her stop.

"Nikki! We can talk about that later, he's right here." I could hear the voice on the other end sobbing in the phone not to make her do it. I couldn't make out all the words but the desperation was evident.

"Nikki here's Danny."

"Hello Nikki, this is Dan." I said clearly and calmly.

"Danny I am so sorry...I..I...want to come hommme!" Nikki was hysterical.

"Nikki we talked about this before you left. You can come home any time you want..."

"Danny you don't understand I have been unfaithful to you...and Kathryn!" Nikki bawled.

I knew the night she was in Atlanta waiting for another flight she had been unfaithful. When she didn't answer my calls I assumed it may not have been a onetime thing. The sting was still painful, but who was I to complain. But Kat that was a different story. I gathered myself.

"Nikki, I told you before, you can come home, no questions asked. I meant it then I mean it now." I said calmly.

"Danny you don't understand it wasn't just once but three times. And that is just with men!" Nikki was pleading with me to understand what she was trying to tell me.

"Nikki. I do understand. I knew before you called. It's ok ..."

"No Daniel it isn't ok. I love YOU. Do you hear me ..." She was sobbing uncontrollably now.

"Nikki is Sharon there?" I asked calmly. The phone rustled.

"Danny this is Sharon. Nikki is, well, she's upset."

"Sharon will she be ok until the morning?" I asked.

"She's here with Mary and me. She'll be fine." Sharon explained

"You will hear from me or Kat before noon. Will that be soon enough?" I questioned.

"Danny you take all the time you need. Mary will not let her out of her sight. Goodnight Danny. I love you!"

"Thanks Sharon I owe you one."

"Promise?"

"I promise." I said as Sharon hung up.

I looked at Kat and Sally they heard the whole thing. Sally and I both looked at Kat to see her reaction.

"I told her she didn't need to. But she told me about the woman." Kat explained. Mom looked hurt as she explained what they talked about before she came in.

"Well, what do you want to do?" I asked not sure if I wanted the answer.

"Danny I want her home with us. She belongs here. Please make her come home!" Kat looked at Sally then me.

"I have a better idea. I want you to get her and bring her home!" I suggested. "Sally see if you can get a flight for Kat to arrive in the morning. I want them to come home Saturday. I think they should have some alone time tomorrow night."

"I'm on it." Sally smiled and kissed me. She left the room with just a robe on.

"Danny I don't know if I can do this. What will I say?" I could see Kat was apprehensive about being the one to go.

"I love you usually helps!" I teased. "Mom she is scared. She feels alone and maybe a bit embarrassed. Just open your arms and don't let go, that will be enough." I held my arms open and embraced her. I could feel her concerns melt away the longer I held her.

"I better go get packed." Kat seemed excited to get going now. I dropped her off at the airport around 6 in the morning. With the time difference and some luck she would be with Nikki before breakfast.

Mary called around noon letting us know the two of them were locked in the bedroom. My spirits picked up. I had a long talk with Sharon after she got off work. Sally and I had a busy day. The kids were all gathered as well as Lizzy and Sam when Sally pulled in with Kat and Nikki.

They were very surprised to see a large banner over the front door welcoming Nikki back. The kids ran to them and mobbed their mothers. Sam walked over, Sally winked at me. Lizzy stood beside me.

"She's one lucky woman to have you." Lizzy whispered. "Thank you Danny, thank you for letting her come home."

I looked over at Lizzy she was tearing up. She knew? I don't know how and it really didn't matter. I wanted to tease her but I held back. Lizzy lightly punched me for mocking her then joined the others.

Nikki had looked up just as Lizzy hit me. She looked at me then Lizzy. She could see Lizzy was emotional. She looked back at me with a questioning gaze. I shrugged my shoulders. I then mouthed the words 'I love you'. That was all it took, she started crying just as Lizzy reached her.

They were both crying as they embraced. Over the years they had been like two sisters. They shared everything from what I could tell. I don't think I realized how just how much Lizzy missed Nikki until now.

I went to the car and started back with the luggage. Laughing, crying, hugging and playing were all going on at the same time. Sally joined me as I came back to the patio and watched the gang interact.

"I wonder if they know how brave you are?" Sally asked.

"Or dumb?" I replied.

"We both know that isn't true. Have you told them yet?" Sally looked over at me.

"Nah. I think it should be a surprise don't you?"

"I say trust your instincts!" Sally kissed me then went inside to get dinner started. Kat looked over to see if I wanted company but I let her know she should stay with Nikki and the kids. Sally came back out and leaned against me.

"Jr. just called." Sally smiled at me. "I put dinner in the oven to stay warm."

Just then another car pulled into the drive. Jr got out and opened the back door. His mother Sharon stepped out and then Nikki's mom Mary followed.

"MOM!" Sam shouted.

There was complete mayhem as the rest of the gang realized who had arrived. More tears, more hugging, and definitely more noise as they all rushed to greet the new arrivals. Since only Sally knew they were coming I got many confused glances from the likes of Kat and Nikki. But the one that touched me the most is when Lizzy looked back at me as she slipped from her mother's arms. I had a shit eating grin on my face and winked at her.

"YOU KNEW! You knew and didn't tell me!" Lizzy yelled as she walk in my direction. She was so happy but so pissed, I knew I got her good. Lizzy hit me, hit me hard this time. "I HATE YOU!"

Nikki spun around when she heard those words. She looked at Lizzy and back at me. Nikki looked at Kat then her gaze caught mine. I shrugged my shoulders for the second time. A small but discernable grin crossed Nikki's face. She turned away but only after she stared at Lizzy for a long moment. Lizzy was winding up again but I moved away.

"Don't get all weird on me. It's just your mom" I couldn't help but tease.

"I'll get you for this Daniel Masters!" Lizzy barked as I joined the gang around Mary and Sharon.

"Dinners ready in five!" Sally announced. Mary, Nikki, and Kat rounded up the kids and herded them in to get washed up.

Sharon reached out and took my hand. I kissed her on the cheek.

"Welcome home." I said. Sharon looked at me with a knowing glare. "You are at home aren't you?" I asked.

Sally was at the door. "The kids are waiting for you two." She grinned then turned and held the door for us. We reached the long table I took my place between Nikki and Kyle. Before Sharon sat down I spoke up.

"Sharon would like to say something before we eat." She looked at me surprised I wanted to do this now. Nervously she stood looking over the table. It was eerily quiet.

"After talking to Danny yesterday, and Mary last night I have decided..." She looked at Nikki, then Kat and lastly Lizzy. "...to not accept the job in Colorado. I'll be staying here. My home!" She looked at me when she said the last words."

It was like the sun came out after a storm and a rainbow appeared. The whole house seemed to be cleansed of all the negative emotions. Except for the health of Eve my world was getting back to a good place. With this drama soon to be behind me I knew I could now deal with Eve's situation with a clear head. Besides my family was once again whole.

Well after dinner, when the youngest were put to bed, did Sharon and I have a moment to ourselves.

"Do you have this all planned out or do you make it up as you go along?" Sharon continued to glare at me. "You knew when you sent her how this would work out. Didn't you?"

"I knew your place was here not thousands of miles away." I wiped the tear from her cheek with my finger. "I hoped you would see that when Nikki came to be with you."

"Have you had a chance to talk to Nikki?" Sharon asked. I shook my head. "Danny I don't want to be the one that tells you but she didn't come to the apartment when she arrived in town..."

"Sharon its ok. I already knew before Kat went to get her." Sharon wanted to say something. I could see the pained look as she held it in. "I knew before she left what was likely to happen. Now she knows. It will take some time for the wound to heal. But it will heal for both of us."

"How do you do it? How do you stay so focused? So strong?" Sharon asked. She only now seemed to realize how it was all intertwined.

"People like you and I accept the responsibility of others with ease. It's who we are. Others depend on us. At work and at home. We both accept that and do our best to live up to that trust. I know you think coming back is a setback in your career but believe me it isn't. There will be other opportunities. Better ones, trust me." We looked over Lizzy was watching us.

"Oh Danny are you sure?" Sharon moved to embrace me as Lizzy stood motionless.

"I promise!"

Sharon wept gently no longer able to hold back her emotions. I held her for several more minutes as she composed herself. Taking Lizzy with us we joined the others. It would be a couple of weeks before the company filled her spot in Colorado. But just knowing was enough for her.

It was late when they all left. Sam and I even played some pool with Sally and Jr. Kat and Sharon talked shop. Lizzy was talking with Nikki. Mary was dozing the stress taking its toll on her.

I walked to the car with Sharon and her family after all but one of the goodbyes were said. Lizzy was waiting for me at the door. I stood down less than half a step on the deck, at this height Lizzy was as tall as me. It was a ritual that we had shared for years, our good bye kiss.

"Are you still mad at me?" I teased.

"I never said I was mad, I said I hated you." Lizzy gave a cautious grin.

"I stand corrected, so do you still hate me?" I asked smiling.

We both knew that Nikki had told her about what that really meant. My smile let her know I was not shying away from the implications. Lizzy looked back in the house at where Nikki was.

"Danny, I hate you more than ever." Lizzy stood nervously waiting for her kiss.

"I wonder what Chuck would say about that?" I teased.

Lizzy became a bit befuddled by that question. She looked at me, her eyes searching to see if I knew her secret. Maybe I was wrong for not letting her know.

"If you want a kiss you will have to come get it." I teased again.

Lizzy knew the rules, she had tried to break them before without success. She stepped in defeated in her quest one more time. In return she thrust her tongue in my mouth forcing me to accept her revenge.

It took all I had to step back. My hands released her slender waist, her sexiest perfume wafted by as she stepped past me. Lizzy looked back, I expected her 'just a kiss' tease. This time Lizzy wanted to make her point clear to me.

"Thank you for bringing them home but I still hate you more than you will ever know." She said then ran to the car to join her mom.

The only problem, she was wrong. I did know.

When I walked back in the house Kat and Sally were sitting with Nikki offering moral support if nothing else.

The moment had come. We both knew it would. We hadn't avoided each other but I could tell Nikki was uncomfortable when I was near. She had held up well throughout the day but I knew this would be a very trying time for us both.

They were on the couch Nikki in the middle. I made my way to approach her but she was gripping one hand each of Sally and Kat. As I got closer she tightened her grip. Kat let me know I shouldn't advance any further. I made my way to the chair opposite them sitting down slowly.

"I'm glad you're home ..."

"Daniel don't ..." Nikki started to weep. Sally and Kat moved to comfort her. Nikki waved them off. "There were three men, one woman..."

"Nikki you don't have..." I tried to say. Sally snapped her head glaring at me to stop talking. Kat reassured Nikki.

"Yes I do!" Nikki continued.

"The first man was at the airport when our flight was canceled until the next morning. They put us all up in the same hotel. He was good looking, probably married. I'm guessing a salesman of some sort. He was so smooth, we had a couple of drinks but I wasn't drunk by a long shot. I went in his room feeling so excited."

I didn't want to hear this. Hearing she was excited to be with another man pierced my heart. I tried not to show it but I doubt I succeeded.

"He had some condoms. I made him put one on. It was...it wasn't bad, but it wasn't good either. I faked an orgasm just so he would finish. I left hoping I wouldn't see him on the plane the next day. I told myself I had just picked up the wrong guy. You called but I couldn't bring myself to call you back."

Nikki looked at me for the first time. I wanted to tell her to stop but Sally let me know that wasn't an option.

"I didn't go to Sharon's and mom's apartment the next night. Instead I got room in downtown Denver. I told myself I was just going to do some shopping but honestly I was looking for another man. I couldn't talk to you knowing I had failed. I was an easy mark I guess. I met a black man at the hotel bar. You know the office gossip about black lovers. I thought this might be different." Nikki looked up from the floor to see my reaction.

There was none.

"I invited him up to my room around midnight. He was big like you, not a biker guy but I guess you could call him a bad boy kind of guy. Anyway he wanted to start with a blow job. I wasn't excited about that but figured it would lead to better things. I made him put on a condom. That didn't go over well with him but he complied. The whole time he was in my mouth all he did is tell me how great a lover he was. He told me if I went black I would never go back and all that shit. He used me Daniel. I was just an orifice for his pleasure. There was no passion he treated me..."

I shifted in the chair. Another arrow pierced my heart but still I stayed silent.

"He ripped the condom off. He wanted to fuck me then talking about how I want to have his baby! I resisted. I told him if he tried I would scream. He laughed and then came all over my face and hair. I have never been so disgusted in my life. I told him I was no whore and to get out of the room. He threw a one hundred dollar bill on the nightstand. 'There! You are now!' he yelled as he left. I couldn't take a shower long enough to wash the filth off of me."

Nikki looked at me, now it was as if she wanted me to stop her. I sat there waiting to hear the rest. She had come this far I figured it couldn't get much worse.

"I wasn't going to give up just yet. The next day shopping I met a woman. She was dressed edgy, not punk but tattoo's and piercings. We hit it off. I figured if I couldn't find a man maybe another woman? After dinner and drinks we went to her apartment not far away. She stripped. I looked at all her piercings, nipples, belly button, clit, even her pussy lips. I should have known I was making a mistake when I saw the tattoo that read 'slut' above her pussy. She was aggressive and talented. Soon she had me writhing ready to cum."

I looked up at Kat and Sally. I could see they were both uncomfortable now. I felt guilty for the first time. Kat didn't deserve this. She had no say in Nikki leaving. Tears confirmed the pain she felt listening to this for probably for the second time.

"She wouldn't let me come. She kept me on the edge until I agreed to let her boyfriend join us. Danny I was desperate. I agreed. She left me dangling while she texted him. I was cumming when he walked in. I'm sure this was a set up." Nikki looked at all of us to see if she should continue.

I nodded for her to finish. "He was disgusting, tattoo's, piercings, he smelled bad. He was naked and stroking this little dick. He wanted to fuck me but I refused. He pulled the girl to him and just jammed his little cock in her. He treated her like shit then came in her. He wanted me to eat her pussy with his cum in it. I refused. He started to push me between her legs..." Nikki looked at Kat.

My heart was being ripped open. This was bad, this was very bad. I was supposed to protect her. I would have never let her go ... but I did.

"Go ahead tell him!" Mom advised Nikki.

"I was close enough to see his cum seeping from her pussy when it hit me... the smell! I started puking right on her pussy!! Well she lost it. He let me go, there was screaming. I was back in my hotel. I showered, packed and headed to Sharon's before they knew I was gone. When I closed the door to the room the one hundred dollar bill was still on the night stand. I am sure housecleaning thought it was some sort of test to see if they would take it."

The room became silent except for Nikki and Kat crying. Sally stood up and reached for mom's hand. Nikki didn't want to let go but Sally indicated they needed to leave. When they left I stood up and moved beside Nikki. She wouldn't look at me. I lifted her chin so she could see my expressions.

"I am so glad you're home!" I kissed her lips gently.

"But. I cheated on you!" Nikki pleaded for me to understand.

"And I cheat on you almost every day." I reminded her.

"No Danny. You make people happy. I was selfish. You do it to be unselfish and you do it for love!" Nikki was trying to explain what I already knew. "I don't know why I did it. To punish you for letting me go. To punish Kat for

letting you let me go. All I know is I did it for all the wrong reasons." Nikki sobbed.

"Nikki did you learn anything?" I wasn't trying to be glib.

"I learned that I love you more than ever. I learned that having sex with someone you care about is the best. I learned..." She looked up at me and stopped. She was going to say one more thing. She stopped, thinking she didn't want to hurt me anymore.

"Go ahead say it." Her eyes pleaded with me not to make her. "Nikki it's time, its ok. I already know. Say it and you will never have to say it again.

"Danny no! Not tonight...please don't make me..." She looked at me hoping I would change my mind. I nodded for her to continue. "Oh Danny I am sorry!"

"Nikki. Its ok say it. I promise it will be ok." I reassured her again.

"You promise?"

"Nikki stop stalling. I said I promise. Now please say it."

"I like being with women Danny, I'm a lesbian." Nikki confessed hoping not to hurt me.

"I know baby. I've known for some time. It was time you faced it yourself." I explained.

"I love you Danny! I will always welcome you in my bed, in our bed, but I just..." I put my finger to her lips.

"I know you love me. That has never been the issue for me. I want you to be the person you are, not the person you think I want you to be." I reached in my pocket and pulled out her wedding ring. I held it up. "This is only if you want it..."

Nikki pounced on me pushing me sideways on the couch. She smothered me with her full weight as she pinned me to the cushions. She was crying, tears streamed down her cheeks. I wrapped my arms around her holding her as she wept.

"Danny you still want ME?" She managed to get out between sobs.

"I have never wanted you more in my life Nikki! Will you still be my wife?" She couldn't even speak. She held out her hand I slipped the ring back where it belonged.

"I love you Daniel Masters. I really do! You do believe me don't you?" She lifted her face up to look at me as she asked.

"I believe you." I kissed her. "Now go. Your wife is waiting for you!"

"Let her wait. My husband needs me more and I know I need him! Take me to bed and ravish me. I need a hard cock in me." Nikki smothered me with kisses.

Knowing Sally was with Kat I knew no one would be waiting, or be lonely. It had been a long day and a longer week. Nikki and I started in the shower. Other than kissing we didn't fool around until we reached the bed. Nikki was so excited to have me in her she laid back on the bed and spread her legs. She was so wet with anticipation I slipped right in. So much for her being a hard core lesbian. I was actually happy I still had that effect on her. Nikki noticed as well.

"Danny how is it you are the only man that makes me feel this way?" Nikki flung her arms around my neck pulling me in for a kiss. "I love you. I love you inside me. Fuck me Danny. You make me so happy!"

Nikki came twice before I filled her pussy with my love. She sucked me hard not stopping until I filled her mouth with cum. Nikki happily drank it all down. We rested kissing and confessing our love over and over.

"I want you in my ass Danny!" Nikki moved on all fours.

"Are you sure Nik?"

"Daniel as your wife I insist!" Nikki demanded.

So instructed I moved behind Nikki and caressed her ass. Lubing us both up I eased inside as she moaned in response.

"Harder Danny!" Nikki cried out.

I plunged in her ass as she fingered her cunt. Nikki exploded in an orgasm almost immediately. "Yes you beast. Fuck my nasty ass. Do it. Please fill my ass Danny!"

Nikki knew she was in for a long ride. She knew she hurt me. Nikki wanted to let me know she was still mine and was willing to do whatever it took to prove it. I wasn't going to punish her but I wasn't going to let off easy either. Her ass was tight but after prolonged fucking it loosened up. I pulled my cock from her. Nikki moaned in disappointment.

"Please Danny put it back in. fill me up!" Nikki groaned. I said nothing waiting for her as to slowly close. I plunged back in she squealed in delight. Her body quivered slightly. "Yesssssss, fuck me!"

I pulled out after stretching her open, then pulled free again. Just when she was almost closed I watched as my cock pushed the puffy skin tight and then snapped around my slippery shaft.

"Please Danny don't tease me!" Nikki begged as her body shivered again with a mini orgasm.

"Cum for me Nikki. Cum for me and I'll fill your nasty ass with my love!" I was getting close. I plunged balls deep. I could feel her slap her pussy several times before she thrust several fingers in her dripping cunt. She must have flicked her clit at the same time.

"Oh god I love you Danny. Do it. Please do it now!" Nikki screamed so loud I thought the others might come running in.

I slammed her tender ass her filling it with all that I had left. My spent cock slipped out. I could see my cum puddle inside the gaping hole then seep out as it slowly closed.

Nikki rolled over and kissed me holding me tight. I don't know about her but I fell asleep still embracing her. I was up early as usual. I took a shower. Looking over at Nikki still sleeping I was content knowing the situation was stable for now. Adjustments would need to be made but that was to be expected.

In the kitchen I saw Kat and Sally slip in the room with Nikki no doubt pumping her for details. The kids would be up shortly and the house would be back to normal. Well as normal as it gets around here.

"Daniel Masters!" Nikki yelled at me as she rushed from our room. She was wearing just a robe her hair still dripping from a recent shower. Sally and Kat appeared at the door stopping there. One look at Sally and I knew. "Daniel! Why didn't you..."

Nikki was sobbing as she pushed against me. Her head pushed hard against my breast plate. She banged her head against me several times. It wasn't painful but it did hurt a bit. Finally she looked up I could see the pain she was in.

"Your mother? You poor man. I betrayed you and then this! Why didn't you tell me? I may not have acted like it but I am your wife!" She went from sympathy to being mad. "Danny this just isn't fair!"

"Darling it will be ok. I know it hurts but..."

"Daniel this isn't ok. If they are right she's going to die! That is one thing even you can't fix!" Nikki was beside herself in grief.

"I know." I said quietly.

"Oh my god. Listen to me. Danny I didn't mean ...Oh Danny I'm so sorry. Danny you wonderful, wonderful man. I am so, so sorry."

"Shhhh. We'll get through this." I pulled her tight. Nikki melted in my arms. Crying, Kat went back in the bedroom. Sally was wiping tears from her eyes.

"I better go check on the kids. They will be up soon." Sally said as she headed down the hall.

"Why don't you go with Kat she is in our room, I'll wait here for the kids." I kissed her gently. Nikki resisted but finally headed to the bedroom. There was a cloud hanging in the air all day but we did spend a great day with the kids.

The next few months were an emotional roller coaster. Like the wedding I choose to keep the details of Eve's departure and later Charles death a private matter. I ask you to indulge me on this so I can skip ahead.

Chapter 9

With the passing of Eve and now Charles. I have become the president of the Real Estate Company. The basic compensation is still based on the contract I signed years ago. Charles left Sally, George, Kathryn, and even Nikki something. After charities and other causes he supported he left me several pieces of property as well as generous financial compensation. Actually he left properties to Ivan and myself 50\50.

Charles was always concerned about too much money going to one's head. This way only with Ivan's approval could I do anything. I appreciated his concerns. The condo on the beach which had been my second home was willed to me on a stipulation.

The friends that visited each winter were to have the condo from November to May each year they came down. I was to have access the remainder of the year. When they are no longer able to travel I will get it outright.

Nikki, Kat and I were coming up on our seventh wedding anniversary June 22nd' 2010. I took them to Florida the weekend before to spend some time together. Nikki and I still loved each other. Sex although much less frequent, is still great considering her confession of being a lesbian.

The revelations from last year were becoming more of a focus for Nikki. When we're alone she is very attentive but when we aren't I can tell she is someplace else. We all arrived on Saturday had dinner out and fucked well into the night.

Sunday I took them to look at the house I had bought over a year ago at auction. It's a big house I hoped to renovate one day. Kat was excited but Nikki ...well ... she was polite, but I could tell her heart wasn't in it today.

I not only married Nikki I married my mom as well. These seven years with the few exceptions mentioned have been the best of my life. Kat and I are still madly in love. Even though Nikki has admitted her true feelings we still love and respect each other completely.

We have three wonderful children that are loved and well cared for. Sally, Sharon and Mary continue to be friends and lovers. The three of us have been fortunate indeed. That said, fate has its own story to tell.

Nikki, Kat and I spent the next couple of days just relaxing. Tuesday night the 22nd we went out for a great dinner and then dancing. The night was going great until we went back to the apartment. It started well enough but when it was over it was only Kat and I in bed. Nikki went to the spare room. Kat tried to play it off as she wasn't feeling good but deep down I knew it was something else.

Kathryn met me in the shower, at first I thought it was because we were sweaty from dancing, but she had other plans. On her arm was a plastic bag taped just below her shoulder.

"What have we here?" I laughed.

"Danny you know I can't get the cast wet!" Mom giggled.

There was no cast but we both knew what she meant. She wanted to relive that first night she seduced me.

"Well, I guess I better wash that cum from your hair." I teased.

Kat squealed in delight as I shampooed her hair. When I started washing her back she cooed softly. I stopped just above her ass like I did years ago. I started washing her chest, my hands cleaned her breasts. I gripped them firmly.

"Oh, Danny, how I wanted you to do this that night." Mom sighed as her hands gripped mine tighter.

"You have no idea how hard it was not to." I confessed.

Kat still has what I consider the most perfect tits for a woman her age. Big but not too big, full with almost no sag. Perfect areolas with nipples made for sucking. Even after nursing me and my three kids they are still a thing of beauty.

I continued my journey like I did before years ago. Standing to one side I started on her ass. The soap and warm water guided my hand. When I went down her crack the second time I noticed her eyes were closed and she again pushed back ever so slightly.

I moved to her right side my right hand slid smoothly across her stomach and then slightly lower. My fingers felt the small scar where she had her tubes tied before I was born. Kat looked at me smiling.

"Eve is with us Danny I can feel it." Kat whispered. I nodded that I understood. "Please don't stop."

I looked down her eyes were now closed tightly and her breathing sporadic. I moved to the outside of her thigh down to her knee and started back up I stopped just short of her vagina when her hand gripped my wrist just like last time.

"No please!" Kat teased me holding my wrist in place.

With a naughty giggle mom's hand guided mine along her inner thigh to her vagina.

"Mom!" I teased back. "Kathryn! It's me Danny!" I called out.

"SSHHH!" She replied just like she did then.

Only now it was so we would both remember that fateful day. Kat held me firm and then she put my hand directly on her pussy. With one hand on her ass the other was over her vagina cupping it like a baseball.

"I was such a dork." I reminded her.

"You were anything but a dork. Danny you were and still are the most loving person I have ever known." Mom replied. "Maybe inexperienced but never a dork."

Kat slipped her hand over mine and soon her legs spread even further. Kat put two of her fingers inside and then pulled them out. She thrust her hips and pressed my hand hard against her mound. I filled her pussy with two fingers just like that day.

"Yes. Oh Danny I remember it like it was just yesterday!" Kat moaned.

I remember how my left hand I found the soap and eased it down the crack of her ass. When I reached her asshole I no longer lightly touched it. I easily slipped my finger in her greedy ass.

"That's not how it went!" Mom protested.

"Do you want me to stop?" I teased.

"Never!" She groaned as my finger bottomed out.

With two fingers in her pussy and one in her asshole she started bucking back and forth moaning in pleasure.

"I'm cumming Danny. I'm cumming!" Kat hissed.

I held her tight and strummed her clit as mom rode out her climax. She embraced me, the plastic bag allowing her to bend her arm like the cast never would. Falling to her knees she took my raging hard on in her mouth.

"Cum on me Danny!" Kat begged as my cock started spewing thick ropes of milky cum.

She looked up her eyes filled with lust, just like those first days she taught me to become a man. The cum washed off in the warm spray, I pulled her up and kissed her passionately.

"I'm still in love with you Kathryn." I confessed.

"I know son. Now come show me how much by filling my ass." Kat offered.

This was not the last shower we took that night.

The next morning however Nikki seemed to be her old self. Bright and cheery she even sucked me off until I filled her mouth. Maybe she was really was just under the weather I tried kidding myself.

Thursday the two of them were on the way home to see the kids. I had a meeting in the afternoon and all day Friday. Saturday was Lizzy's twenty first birthday and I promised to be there for the party.

Lizzy was leaving the weekend after to the new campus she would be attending for college. She had her associate's degree she earned at the local community college and now was transferring to a university to get her BA. It was three hours away and Lizzy had already lined up a part time job for herself.

I was conflicted about Lizzy moving. It was no secret I had deep feelings for her. Sharon her mother even suggested I should take her out for dinner or a movie. Sharon told me how happy it would make Lizzy. Even though I always rejected her suggestions Sharon never stopped promoting them. I declined of course, even when Sally told me to trust my instincts.

Everyone knew Lizzy thought she loved me. It was the worst kept secret among the women in my life. Even her brother Jr seemed to understand her infatuation. For me I needed everyone to think Lizzy was still just a cute kid.

I made it clear that moving away would be the best thing for her. It was time she moved on, learn some independence and finish college. Hell maybe even fall in love and have the kids we all knew she wanted. Because of this complicated situation I made sure we were never alone.

I closed two deals Saturday morning and headed to the airport for the trip home. Since we came down for our anniversary I was flying commercial. The party started at seven with dinner and then the bar for drinks later. I had called Nikki but Kat answered her phone.

The moment she spoke I knew something was wrong. My first thought was Nikki and Lizzy had gone out the night before with some friends and got wasted just after midnight. Kat assured me Nikki was fine and Lizzy was home with her mom. She acted like everything was ok. I felt differently. I pried but she wasn't telling me anything over the phone.

Hanging up I placed my phone in with my computer and went through security. Placing my belongings in an overhead bin I settled in for the flight home. The plane taxied to a runway and sat. I watched through the windows as plane after plane departed, still we sat. I knew something was wrong and soon so did the others. We had been on the tarmac way too long without moving and the summer sun was heating up the cabin.

From out of nowhere came squads of cars and two portable ladder trucks. The plane was emptied and we were all loaded on buses and returned to the terminal. Sequestered they separated us until there was about thirty guys in the room. One by one we were interrogated then screened again. The best I could figure was someone made a threat, real or implied and they were trying to find the culprit.

Delayed and without a phone it was well past eight by the time my belongings were returned to me.

Since Nikki didn't answer last time I called Kat. She didn't answer. I figured she was at the party and couldn't hear the phone. Being one of the last ones released I couldn't find a flight until the next morning and it was a layover and wouldn't arrive until Sunday after dinner.

I called the charter office to see if any seats were available. They said I could hitch a ride but the cost would be $1500. It was planned to arrive at nine in the morning. By now I was so pissed and stressed from not knowing what the problem at home was I reluctantly agreed. I grabbed a cab to take me to the municipal airport that the charter was flying from. I called Kat again, again no answer. I called Sally figuring she at least would be available.

"Daniel where are you? Are you ok?" Sally asked. I explained the basics assuring her I was just tired and frustrated.

"I have been trying to reach Kat but she won't pick up!"

"Daniel your mother is over at Sharon's." Sally hesitated. "There's a bit of a problem!"

"What is it? Is everyone ok?" I asked concerned.

"Physically everyone is fine, just some drama. They won't tell me because they know I would tell you!"

"I feel bad I missed Lizzy's party if you see her tell her I'll make it up to her." I relayed.

Sally didn't reply. Even over the phone I knew there was something she was now keeping from me.

"Sally, I'm taking the charter it should be there in the morning. I'll call with more information then." I explained.

"Sir please come home as soon as possible. You are needed. Goodbye!" Sally replied. Then just like that she hung up!

I couldn't believe it, Sally hung up on me? This was not a good sign. I was now resigned to the fact I was all but helpless. Tired and hungry I knew I would never make it driving through the night. I accepted my fate and hopefully tomorrow would be better. It was almost midnight.

The vending machine supplied dinner. A lousy waiting room chair was my bed. It was about five when the party I was flying with arrived, and for them it was a party.

There were at least ten in all, it seems they were at a bachelor's party and still celebrating. I was beyond caring by now. By seven we were taxiing down

the runway and I was finally on my way home. I dozed in the back of the plane the party animals now succumbed to their over indulgence.

I woke as the pilot announced our descent and soon the wonderful sound of tires squealing on the tarmac welcomed me home. Almost.

I looked out the window and this wasn't home. I knew our airport well and this wasn't it. I called the attendant and asked where we were. She explained that we were in New Orleans. The plane pulled to a stop, the doors opened and two limos were waiting for the group. I reached the cockpit just as the last of them were departing.

"I didn't know I was going to New Orleans!" I complained.

"Just a stopover Mr. Master's we will have you home in a couple of hours." The captain explained. I was ready to scream but I knew that wouldn't get me home any sooner.

"I wish I had known! I would have made different arrangements." I explained dejected. A man in his late fifties or so and part of the group overheard my conversation.

"I'm afraid it's my fault. A friend of mine asked us to stop in for lunch. I just couldn't resist. He's rarely here. You're welcome to come!

"Thank you sir. That is very generous. But I'm going to go see if I can catch another flight." I replied somewhat rudely.

"But you've paid for this one. Please, you will be my guest, after we eat we will be going straight home I promise." He replied.

I looked at the pilot for advice. He looked at the man I was not quite happy with. With a warm smile he looked back at me.

"The chances of you getting a flight from here to home isn't good. By the time you get to the airport we will be back in the sky." The pilot explained.

I looked back at the passenger. Something about him made me waver. He thrusted his hand out to shake mine.

"Please I insist." He grinned.

He had a point. I felt it would be rude to refuse him. With little to lose I accepted my fate. Lemonade from lemons. I thought.

"Thank you sir that is very generous." He seemed surprised that I would be thanking him for ruining my return trip further. I stuck out my hand "Daniel Masters. But please call me Dan, all my friends do."

"Mike, nice to meet you Dan." He returned my handshake and followed me to a limo. He sat at the other end while I mixed in with the young men closer to my age.

Once in the limo. I called Sally and told her of my delay, she could offer no update except to remind me I was needed ASAP.

The two cars drove to a restaurant that looked very nice. Few cars were in the lot but when we reached the door I saw we were there an hour before they opened. Then I remembered about the time change.

By this time the young group had caught their second wind, the thought of food fueled their renewed enthusiasm. I met the groom he was a bit under the weather as they all were but he seemed like a decent guy.

The chef came out and I recognized him immediately since he has been on every TV show featuring food. He greeted Mike and instructed the staff to seat us outside.

There were eight younger men that were obviously here to party. One other gentleman I guessed to be in his sixties and Mike. The younger men looked to be about twenty five or so, probably college age or graduates.

From some of the conversation I had heard, most were from the same fraternity. I was looking for a way not to sit with them, it was their party, and I was in no mood to be happy with them. I needed to get home, I could feel it, I don't know how to explain it but someone needed my help.

Mike sensed my apprehension and asked the waitress to sit me with him and the other man, Carl.

"So Daniel. I'm sorry, Dan, what is so important at home? I was told you are a business traveler when they asked if you could join us." Mike asked.

He looked at me in a way that made me feel like we had met before. I'm pretty good with names and faces, but with just Mike as a name, I couldn't place him. I didn't recognize his face. Still he was polite, and seeing the restaurant we were at, generous. Calmly, I replied.

"The first is a promise I broke. Something I never do. It was a very important commitment to someone special." I explained.

Mike looked at Carl. They exchanged glances. They hesitated for a further explanation.

"A twenty first birthday." I explained. Mike seemed to understand. Carl was clueless.

"And the second?" Mike asked.

"I don't know. Something isn't right. I don't know what it is but I know I'm needed." I replied looking out over the water.

Carl seemed amused by words Mike seemed to take it serious. The waitress brought us iced tea and some appetizers to sample.

"Masters. I knew a couple with that name. Charles and Evelyn, wonderful couple. Went through some tough times once." Mike offered.

I looked back at him again but still couldn't place him.

"Charles seems like a very stand-up guy. Evelyn, is she your mother?" Mike asked.

A lead weight dropped in my stomach as he spoke. I couldn't lie but telling the truth would surely bring disgrace on their memory.

"You must be thinking of Duane their son. He passed away when I was young. I answered without answering." He looked at me with the eyes of a chess player.

"You must be right?" He replied. Mike knew something. If Mike was planning on moving to boxing me in he had his chance.

"So Charles is your grandfather?" He had me backed in a corner. He knew and was politely letting me off the hook. But why?

"He was. Charles and Eve passed away last year. She first he shortly after." I explained. Mike seemed truly stunned.

"I'm sorry to hear that. My condolences."

Carl looked at Mike, he was sensing something was going on and he was curious.

"So Dan, who deserves the credit for raising such a fine young man as yourself?" Mike asked coyly.

If there was any doubt he knew, that removed it. He didn't ask who my mother was he asked who raised me. Again he let me escape. Mike wasn't playing with me, I realized he was gathering information.

I call Kathryn mom." I explained making no doubt about letting him know he was right. "She will hold a special place in my heart forever!" I stated proudly.

Mike grinned but Carl seemed more confused than ever.

"Eve was a big part of my youth and her sister Sally as well." I continued.

"Well Daniel, I would like to meet your mother and Sally sometime!" Mike replied slyly.

Mike was letting me know he was no threat. He was asking to see Kat but called her my mother. By calling me Daniel he was sending a message that he was serious as well. This was an intriguing man.

"I'm sure they would be honored to meet you Mike." He seemed impressed with my boldness.

"If I remember Charles was in real estate. Do you dabble?" Mike asked.

Carl seemed to relax now the conversation turning to something he could understand.

"Charles owned a real estate company in Florida along the east coast. Ivan and I are partners in the company now. Ivan worked with Charles for years. He runs the place when I'm gone. I then work for a company at home, I'm a Jr partner there." Mike looked at Carl their eyes got big and they both laughed.

"Dan I think the reason you're on our flight was no coincidence. I believe we were meant to meet each other at this time!" Mike chuckled. Carl nodded his head in agreement.

The food came out, it was trays and trays of some of the best seafood and Cajun cooking I have ever tasted. The conversation stayed light through lunch the party animals quieted with mouthfuls of fresh food.

The Chef came out and personally thanked us each for coming. He and Mike talked for a bit then we loaded back into the limos for the airport. I called Sally and without asking any questions told her I would be home in a couple of hours. She told me Jr would be waiting to pick me up. Back on the plane I sat up front with Carl and Mike.

It turns out they are partners in a real estate venture. They had accompanied the boys. (The groom Mike's son) scouting for properties to invest in. He asked my opinion on several subjects. I explained I thought condo towers were costly and hard to sell at the moment.

I suggest he look at raw land along the I 95 corridor. Prices were still depressed but land had been moving, mostly to corporate buyers. I suggest

either commercial, and for the future, residential communities. If a condo tower came up at a fair price fine, but he needed to stay up scale for now, as people with money were now starting to invest again.

The middle class we thought was still struggling so any project there was probably eight to ten years out from now. But as the commercial developments got built the residential communities would no doubt follow. Mike and Carl seemed very impressed with my assessments and I believe learned some new things along the way.

The plane was descending and looking out the windows was the correct airport. I was home. We taxied to the hanger and Jr was waiting with Sam by his truck. We disembarked. Mike and I talking were the last to leave.

"Great job guys. Will see you soon." Mike explained to the pilots.

"Thank you Dr. Clark!" They responded. BAM! That name rang a bell. Clark! He was one of the names on my birth certificate.

We walked down the steps Mike turned to me. "Dan we will be talking soon. For now I'll let you get back to your family."

"Thank you Dr. Clark." I said shaking his hand.

Mike caught on to the change of my greeting. He looked at me carefully.

"I want to thank you and your team for saving my life when I was born. My mother would be glad we met." I smiled. "My time with her was too short. Because of you we shared something special and that I'll carry with me always." He was shocked I knew who he was. Even more so when I admitted Eve was my mother.

I shook his hand again, he looked at Jr and Sam as they walked in our direction. "Your friends?"

"You could say that. More like family really. It was their sister's birthday I missed." I explained.

Sam ran to me, we embraced as always. At fifteen he looked much older, but we still have the bond from when we first met.

"Dr. Clark good to see you!" Jr offered his hand.

"Doug this man says he knows you?" Mike teased as he shook Jr's hand.

"Never saw him before in my life!" Jr teased back. "Really doc, he's more like family. I wouldn't have a job here if it weren't for him." Jr shook my hand we bumped shoulders. "Dan we really should be going."

I shook Mike's hand one more time before we left. I shook Carl's hand as we passed the cars waiting for them. In the truck I was all nerves.

"So guys what the heck is going on?" I asked. Jr looked at Sam and nodded for him to tell me.

"We don't know they won't tell us but when you didn't show for the party last night all hell broke loose." Sam replied.

"They heard about the plane, some kind of bomb threat. Lizzy went off the deep end. Nikki tried to console her then she went bonkers." Jr said. "By the time it was over only Sally seemed to have it reasonably under control. Then you called and it all started again only this time it was over something different!" Jr explained in more detail.

I thought for a minute then smiled. Only Sally? That was the key.

"Yeah but now they are all over at your house with some lady and a guy. I think they're lawyers!" Sam added. "Been there since early morning waiting for you."

"Yeah all but Lizzy. She's home packing!" Jr added. The smile immediately left my face.

"Packing?" I asked. She was supposed to be home another week I thought to myself.

"Yeah and is she pissed at you!" Sam chuckled.

"Take me to Lizzy!" I ordered Jr.

"Mom said you would say that but she told us to bring you home first! Even if we had to tie you up to do it!" Jr replied.

"Fine let's get this over with!" I reluctantly agreed.

We almost passed by Sharon's house to go up the mountain. We pulled in the drive, cars were everywhere. I walked in the front door wearing the same suit I had put on the day before. I hadn't shaved, ran out of mints and surely smelled by now.

They were all in the living room. A shriek filled the house when they saw me as I dropped my luggage and brief case. Kat, Sally, Sharon, and Mary all came to greet me. Nikki stood across the room with a lady I didn't know. My lawyer Henry was there and now Sam and Jr joined us. After the dust settled so to speak, I went to greet Nikki. She put up her hand stopping me.

"Daniel I want you to sit in the chair over there. If you come any closer it will only make what I have to say more difficult." Nikki said. The room fell silent.

"Gentlemen if you please. Would you excuse us for a few minutes? What we need to say isn't for your ears." Nikki continued. Henry and the woman rose to leave.

"Karen you should stay. What we discussed earlier will be clearer in a few minutes." Nikki requested.

Sharon pointed to her boys to go.

"Aw, how come we never get to hear the good stuff?" Sam complained.

"Sam trust me when it comes to women you don't want to know!" Jr smacked him as they went outside with Henry.

By now all the women were seated on the couch except Sally, she pulled a kitchen chair up and sat beside me. She took my hand and held it in hers. I could tell just from her holding my hand how high the emotions were. Nikki started.

"Daniel the last few months have been very difficult for me but I have made a decision that I believe is best for all concerned. I have talked with each of the women here. There have been many tears and long sleepless nights for all. Nikki started." I didn't confer with Sally until early this morning, but as you can image she knew almost all of it beforehand anyway."

The room chuckled except for Karen. A calmness came over me. I could feel my worst fears melt away. I knew this was something I was expecting, just not this soon. I could tell what she would say came from her heart.

"You all have made the decision together then?" I asked. I looked around the room each woman nodded including Sally. "Ok then fill me in."

"Danny I want Sally to read you some passages from Lizzy's diary. I think that has helped us all make our decision."

"You read her diary?" I asked looking at Sharon.

"Before today only Nikki has." Sharon explained. "We don't know why but Lizzy gave it to Sally this morning."

I looked at Nikki she had that smile, like when she wanted to be naughty, I looked at Sally she held up a small book. Taking my hand she placed it on her bare thigh, one of hers resting on mine telling me to not move it.

"I'll read only the important parts. She does get a little long winded at times." Sally chuckled looking at us all. You could cut the tension with a knife.

"June 26th. 2005 sixteenth birthday. Mom promised me a real kiss from Mr. Masters. I knew he didn't want to but he agreed. He must love mom a lot for him to give in. True to his word he gave me the most wonderful kiss a girl could hope for. I'm so happy. I now know what she sees in him." The room stayed quiet Karen looked at everyone but me. Sally paused then continued.

"June 26th. 2006 seventeenth birthday. Another real kiss from Mr. Masters. I had forgotten how good it was. I want to do this more often." Sally hesitated for effect.

"June 26th. 2007 eighteenth birthday. I'm a woman now! Another birthday another kiss. I offered Daniel my tongue, he resisted at first but gave in. I thought I was going to faint. I am jealous of mom. No boy in school is even close."

I noticed she was calling me Daniel not Mr. Masters now. I remember that kiss like it was yesterday. She was a good kisser even then. Karen now looked only at me wondering why this girl felt this way.

"June 26th. 2008 nineteenth birthday. I was waiting for him but he wouldn't come to me. I wanted to teach him a lesson but the thought of not getting my kiss was more than I could stand. I went to him I kissed him when no one was around. I kissed him shoving my tongue in his mouth. He not only accepted it but replied in kind. I bit his lip for making me come to him. I think I'm in love with him." I looked at Sharon I could see she was thinking the same as me.

"June 26th. 2009 Twentieth birthday. I masturbated this morning just thinking of the kiss Danny would give me. I have been trying to seduce him, but he isn't anything like the boys in high school and now even in college. I'm still a virgin. I'll save myself for him like Nikki did, and he did for Nikki. I'm in love with him. He thinks he's protecting me but he's not. I need him to make love to me."

"June 26th. 2010 Twenty-first birthday. I have done all I can to seduce him and he will not take advantage of me. It only makes me love him more. I'll see him tonight I want him to make love to me for this years present. If he doesn't change his mind I'm leaving, probably for good. " Sally looked up.

There wasn't a dry eye in the room as I looked for comments. There were none.

"Sally read the entries from last night would you?" Nikki said. Karen looked stunned as Nikki her client wanted this to go on.

"June 26th. 2010 Twenty-first birthday. Nikki came to see me today. She took me into my room so we could talk. Nikki asked me again if I would consider marrying Daniel if he was divorced. I thought she was kidding but Nikki insisted she was serious. I thought I would faint before I could answer yes!! She said it would be my birthday present." Sally stopped.

I locked eyes with Nikki.

Sally started again.

"We just got word Daniel is on a plane that may have a bomb on it! If he dies now I don't know what I would do. I'm not sure I want to live in a world without him." Sally put the book down.

She looked around the room. All the women looked at each other. Nikki stood up.

"Daniel I want you to divorce me. Now. Today! You need to go save that young woman before she does something..." Sally took my hand again I could feel her comfort me.

"Nikki. You're my wife she's just a kid!" I replied. I tried to argue with her but we all knew what she was doing.

"Daniel you were younger when they tried to separate us, did it change your mind?" Kat stepped in to speak.

"No." I sheepishly admitted.

"Honey we have all known too long what you both mean to each other." Kat said defiantly. "Daniel Nikki wants this for Lizzy as much as herself. "

Mom stood beside Nikki and slipped off her wedding ring.

"Mom is that really necessary?" I asked afraid to hear the answer.

Sally squeezed my hand gently.

"Yes Daniel it is. When you married Nikki you married me. I'll still be your mother but it's up to Lizzy if I stay your lover." Kat stated.

Karen gasped at what she heard. Mom had called me Daniel. I knew the moment she did there would be no talking her out of it. My concern now was with Lizzy's mother, Sharon.

"Sharon this is your daughter. Surely you want her to find someone her own age ..."

"Daniel Masters! Am I your age? Every woman here except Nikki is old enough to be your mother. Lizzy is only nine years younger than you! She's twenty one. A woman. Look me in the eyes and tell me you don't love her!" Sharon stood like a mother protecting her cubs raising up to challenge me.

"Do it Daniel. Look me in the eye and tell me!" Sharon protested.

"You know I can't do that. I do love her but I love you all! I have made commitments." The room went silent. They realized what I was saying.

"Daniel." Sharon started. "It seems you have given so much of yourself to us all. We have forgotten to give back in return. You deserve to be happy, truly happy. The time has come for you to think of yourself, for Lizzy. I too give you my ring releasing you from any promise you made. Give this to Lizzy if she returns it I'll gladly accept it. If she doesn't marry you then you can decide."

Sharon slipped the ring from her hand and laid it on the table. Mary put hers beside it.

Sally squeezed my hand. She was trying to tell me something but what. I wanted to say something but she squeezed harder. As I held back she loosened her grip.

They all looked at Sally. She took the hint, Sally stood before me her back to the rest.

"Sir? Your pet will do as you request without complaint!" Sally winked at me! I was shocked but didn't react outwardly. She winked again and smiled. She was telling me something, and I was to play along. She looked at her ring. "Sir do you wish me to remove the ring?"

Karen was so shocked she looked around the room in disbelief.

"Yes my pet. I'll serve you all or none based on Lizzy's wishes. Sally took her ring off placing it with the others. All eyes were on Nikki.

"Daniel we have both known that I have been drifting in another direction. I love you. You have been the only man that has ever and will ever have my heart. I too have someone to share my life with. It's time for you to go to this woman before she leaves. Don't make the same mistake I did by foolishly letting you get away if but for one minute. She will be leaving soon." Nikki reminded me.

"If she thinks I might be free to marry her then why is she leaving?" I asked.

Nikki smiled.

"So you will have to go to her. You heard her words. You always made her come to you. This time Daniel she wants to make sure you have to come to her. Like you did before with me. She needs to know YOU want her. Daniel you need to do this and now!" Nikki looked so determined to get me to understand.

"Mary will you get Henry and the boys, the time has come." Nikki asked as she turned to her mom.

We waited as they came back in. Even Sam knew now wasn't the time to talk.

"Daniel when you sign these papers. I'll remove my ring and place it with the others. You will be free to marry her if you both desire." She looked at Karen. "Do you have the papers?"

Karen knew better than to argue at this point. She was just as moved as the rest. She set the papers on the table. With a pen.

I looked at Henry. "Do I need to read this?"

"Daniel she left it all up to you. If you want she gets nothing. Not even the kids!"

"Daniel. I trust you. We can talk later. You really must go it's almost five." Nikki pleaded.

I signed the document, Nikki slipped off the ring placing it in my hand. She kissed me for the first time since I came back.

"I love you Danny you make me so happy. Now take the box Kat has and go see your bride." She kissed me tears filling her eyes. "And Danny please make my present to her a surprise!"

Sally handed me the diary. I picked up the rings and placed them in my pockets. I removed mine as a sign of acceptance and handed it to Nikki. Kat gave me two boxes I opened them up the room filled with tears and laughter.

"Where are the kids?" I asked just now realizing that all the baby sitters were accounted for.

"They're with Maggie and George." Kat explained.

"What? How did you do that?" I asked shocked.

"It's a long story but you know Maggie. She has him wrapped." Mom held up her little finger.

"You better get going she was planning on leaving soon." Mary explained.

"We are planning on going out to dinner for her birthday." Sharon offered. Just then her phone rang.

"Hello. Lizzy!"

(pause)

"Your keys to the car?" Sam pulled them from his pocket with a large grin.

(Pause)

"Honey your brother left them in his pocket when he pulled the car in the garage. I'll have him bring them right down!

(Pause)

"Yes dear he is a pain but he's your brother. They're leaving right now." Sharon waved for us to leave.

I asked Jr for his keys, he smiled and tossed them to me. We started down the mountain.

"Guys I am going to need you to do me a favor."

"Sure." Sam offered.

"I'm going to drop you off. I need some time with your sister alone." I explained.

"Hey no way what if she takes off, then you will take off." Sam complained.

"You have her keys?"

"Yeah right here."

"Good keep them. Then she can't leave. Bring these then you know I won't leave." Same opened the boxes and showed them to Jr.

"Dude you take off we are keeping these!" Jr teased.

"Fifteen minutes guys then come in!" I dropped them off around the block I figured it would take them that long to walk. I pulled out my wedding band and put it back on so she could see it.

I pulled in the drive hoping she would see the truck and not me. I opened the front door with the key on Jr's ring. Lizzy heard the door close. She was in the

kitchen by the door to the garage a small mountain of stuff piled everywhere. I laughed to myself. She was never going to get this much stuff in her small car. It looked like she must have packed for hours.

"Brat did you bring my keys back?" She was bent over stuffing a bag with her back to me. Her ass looked perfect in her shorts. Lizzy had on a baggy sweatshirt, the sleeves cut short. Even in the house I could see she was perspiring. She had obviously made the decision to leave recently and was putting it in motion.

"Sorry I didn't. I was hoping you wouldn't leave!" I said softly.

Startled Lizzy turned to see me standing there. I purposely held my ground. I held her diary. Her lips quivered.

"What are you doing here?" Lizzy yelled. She shifted on her feet. I wasn't sure if she was going to run to me or run away.

"I've come this far. Don't give in just yet!" I taunted her. Lizzy looked at me puzzled.

"If you're going to make me come to you, you need to stand tall and confident. Be relaxed. Don't let me see how bad you want me." I teased.

Lizzy realized I was telling her how I felt when I made her come to me. I took a step in her direction.

"You see that? The first person that moves loses. Steady now let me come. This is the hard part. You want to finish it for them but you need to wait. Patience now. You have me. I just don't know it yet." I winked.

"Daniel..." Lizzy pleaded looking down to see I still had on my wedding band.

"Shhh. Don't say anything to let me have the upper hand." I warned her.

I took another step.

"See you're winning. I must want you to have come this far. But will I come all the way? Do I love you that much?" I taunted her.

Lizzy's lips quivered again. She wanted to run to me, but now she couldn't.

"You missed my party!" Lizzy reminded me of my promise.

"I did. I'm sorry. How can I make it up to you?" I took another step. I was within four feet.

"Why are you here?" She whispered her voice unsteady.

Lizzy was beside herself she didn't know what to do with her arms. Again she looked down at my wedding band. Her hips swiveled. I locked onto her big doe eyes. I took another step.

"Did you read that?" She pointed to her diary.

"Sally read it to me just like you wanted her to. She read your birthdays out loud, and last night." I explained.

Lizzy locked her eyes on mine. Her body quivered. Lizzy shifted back and forth, she was excited and scared at the same time. I could see how desperate she was for me to come closer. Lizzy looked at the book and again my ring. I had a feeling she wanted me to see something else she wrote in the book.

"Do you love me Danny? I need to know!" She begged. Lizzy's eyes pleaded for me to come closer. I had her now. I knew she would come to me but I also knew she would regret it later if she did. I needed to let her win.

"I have some things to show you." I held up my empty hand. "Now whatever you do. Don't move. You have me right where you want me. You've almost won but you risk it all if you give in too early." I coached her.

I was beside the counter. I laid down her diary. I reached in my pocket and pulled out a ring and set it on the counter.

I didn't know whose but it wasn't Nikki's or Kat's. They were in my left pocket. She looked at the ring she then glanced at me with a questioned look. My eyes never left hers. I reached in my pocket and withdrew another setting it beside the first. She looked at me again as I pulled out the third ring. She was visibly shaken.

"Daniel! No!"

"Not yet love. You've all but won, stay there and you may get it all. Move too soon and ..."

The door opened, Jr and Sam walked in the house. Lizzy looked at me and then to the hall leading to the kitchen. I could tell they were behind me, her eyes told me.

"Hey what's..." Smack!

"Shut up stupid we're early. I told you not to run!" Lizzy looked at them and back to me.

"Don't mind them they will wait and be quiet. Right guys?" My eyes never left hers.

"Sure." Sam replied.

"Lizzy look at me. Do you want me to stop or keep going?" I asked. She looked at me and then the boys before she looked back at me.

"I want you to finish." Lizzy had found her nerve.

I was proud of her. I reached in my left pocket and pulled out two wedding rings. I sat Kathryn's and Nikki's rings on the counter with the others.

"NO! Not your mom's too? She protested. I thought she would faint. "Danny I'm so sorry. This is so wrong! She started to move." Tears started to flow.

"Lizzy don't move!" I shouted.

I startled her with my outburst. She stopped. I'm not sure if she was scared or just following orders.

"Sorry. " I said. "You forgot the game. You were winning. You are so close, don't you want to know what it feels like to win?"

"Danny! Please." She protested.

I took one more step. I was close enough she could easily touch me. I held up my left hand and pulled my wedding band from my finger. Never taking my eyes from hers I slipped it off and reached back putting it near the others.

"That is everything I have to offer you. Except one thing." She could barely stand without fidgeting.

"Sam would you bring me the boxes?" I asked softly.

Sam handed me the boxes. "Guys, would you mind waiting outside for a few more minutes?"

"Hey I thought..." SMACK.

"Shut up dufus and get outside. He is going to propose!" Lizzy looked at me as they went out the back.

She was a mixture of nerves, excitement, and anticipation all rolled up in one bundle of emotions.

I got on one knee and opened the boxes.

"Lizzy will you marry me?"

"Are you sure?" She asked nervously.

"I'm sure. I promise." I replied. She knew that I would never break a promise. At least not this one.

"Kids?" She asked cautiously.

"As many as you want."

"But what about Kyle, Kenzi and Hunter?" She questioned.

"Do you love them?" I asked confidently.

"Oh Danny you know I do!" Lizzy professed.

"Then I agree to whatever you and Nikki worked out." I replied.

"You knew?" Lizzy asked in disbelief.

"My ex-wife would never trust her kids with just anyone." I answered with a knowing smile.

Lizzy clearly understood what was at stake now. She would not only be my wife but another mother to our children. She also knew I expected more in the future. Lizzy gathered herself and focused on me again.

"Did you read the last entry?" She asked gaining her confidence.

"I didn't need to." I replied.

"Do the others know?"

"Only Sally." I assured her.

"I get you four days a week. The other three they can have." Lizzy pointed to the rings now taking control.

"As you wish. But once you commit you can't go back." I warned her.

"We keep Sally as our pet?" She gave me a naughty grin.

"I think she would like that." I smiled.

"Then she isn't part of the other four." Lizzy continued. "We sleep in the master suite with Sally. No others are allowed in our bed without my permission."

"Agreed."

"Daniel? You know she is the one that brought us together. Right?"

"I do now." I explained.

"Promise me that she will stay with us in our bedroom until she decides otherwise." Lizzy was adamant on this point.

"I promise."

"Any questions?" She asked.

I looked at the boys in the back yard suggesting they could come in. Lizzy waved to Sam who was keeping watch no doubt trying to read our lips. They came in and stood silently.

"Three!" I continued.

Lizzy was startled by my reply. "The first?" She quickly asked regaining control.

"Will you marry me" I asked again.

"Ok my god you're right I never answered! YES. YES.YES!" I stood up and slipped the diamond ring the women had sent on her hand. It looked huge on her long slender finger. She took the other and slipped it on mine.

"The second?" She probed.

"May I kiss you now?" Her answer was in the form of a kiss. The guys watched as their sister mashed against me desperate to finally have me in her arms.

"Dare I ask what the third question is?" She asked out of breath.

"Can I give you Nikki's birthday present now?" I winked.

"Right now?" She looked at Jr and Sam. Even Sam understood what was at stake.

"Jr. I think that's our cue to leave again!" Sam groaned. They both came to Lizzy and kissed her on the cheek. Sam placed her keys on the counter.

I lifted her up in my arms and started to carry her up the steps.

"Guys one last favor. Please take the rings back to the house and give them to Sally. Don't let anyone else see them. Tell her I'll call her later. Oh and tell them not to wait on us for dinner."

Lizzy kissed me as I carried her up the stairs. "I think we both could use a shower first how about you?" She whispered. I turned to the bathroom instead of her room

"I could be talked into that!" I teased.

I reached in and turned the water on and stepped in with her still in my arms. She squealed in laughter as I stood in my two day old suit and she in her sweat shirt and shorts. Water splashed over us as I kissed Lizzy again wanting her to know I was hers.

"I want to marry you now. I don't want to wait another day!" She pleaded.

"Are you sure?" I asked happy she felt that way.

"Oh Danny yes!" Lizzy squealed.

"Alright then, we'll do it!" I agreed.

"But how?" Lizzy stopped to think.

"I'll take care of it! Now let's get you undressed there is one thing that we need to do first!" I let her down on her feet. Lizzy stood her big brown eyes watched me as I pulled her top off.

Lizzy had waited for this moment for so long she wasn't shy as I gazed upon her pert tits. I went to my knee slipping off her shorts and delicate panties. She was more beautiful than I deserved. I stood up indicating she should just stand as I shed my clothes.

The water cascaded over her ebony body, a testament of her father's race. Lizzy's long black hair settled over her caramel shoulders and down her back. Her small breasts with dark brown areola's and long stiff nipples had water dripping off them. Tall and athletic she had small hips and the most perfectly firm but delicate ass.

Unlike her father's African ancestors, hers wasn't proportionally large, this trait she shared with her Caucasian mother. The small tuft of black pubic hair sat just inches from her protruding lips. Lizzy's skin darkened a shade or two at her sex but her pussy lips were as dark as her nipples an amazing contrast. Just a sliver of her inner pink was visible as her stance shifted. I followed her long legs to the long slender feet that matched her hands.

I was almost undressed now, Lizzy was desperate to help me finish. She pulled my briefs down, her hand reached up and gripped my cock. I moaned then pulled her up to in front of me. Standing just behind her I leaned over and nuzzled her neck just above her shoulder.

"Danny" Lizzy mewed.

She angled her head, my lips followed her long slender neck to just below her ear. Her whole body quivered in anticipation. My arm slipped in front of Lizzy and pulled her firmly against me. Lizzy gripped my hand and brought it along her stomach and just under her breast. I gripped the firm brown orb just as my lips moved along her cheek.

"Do you still hate me?" I teased.

"Yes Danny! Yes I do!" Lizzy squeaked.

"Even though I came to you?" I nibbled on her ear lobe.

Slick with water Lizzy quickly turned to face me. Her ebony body shimmered in the sun from the skylight.

"You did come for me didn't you?" Lizzy now realizing what that meant.

"You're the only one Elizabeth, even Nikki came to Florida." I reminded her.

"Why me Danny?" Lizzy looked at me nervously.

"Because even the first time, for me, it was never just a kiss." I admitted.

"So you knew then too?" Lizzy trembled in my arms.

"I love you Danny...I've always loved you!" Lizzy gushed.

"Meet me in my room in ten minutes." Lizzy stroked my cock before she turned to leave. "And don't start without me!" She teased.

I dug out my phone from my clothes. Hoping it wasn't too wet to work I called Sally. I quickly gave her explicit instructions. She readily agreed. I told her we would be at the house by nine unless she need us earlier.

I knew where Sharon kept extra supplies I found a toothbrush and some mouthwash and dried my hair. When the time was up I headed to Lizzy's room. She was waiting for me standing in the clothes she no doubt planned in her dreams for this moment.

I closed the distance wrapping my arms around her. Lizzy's went around my neck. The feel of the sheer white teddy soften the lace of the bustier beneath it. The silky material of her g string caressed my thigh as she gripped my cock. I kissed her, she responded with a whimper.

"How many times do I need to undress you to get you in bed?" I teased her. "Do I get the pleasure again?"

I caressed her back as my hands worked down to her ass.

"Again, and again and again! If you want me!" Lizzy teased back.

I released the clasps on the back of the bustier. As the last one released I stepped back and looked again at her perfect tits, her nipples still hard. I slipped the garment off and tossed it aside. I kissed her tit through the sheer material. Lizzy groaned loudly.

"I have dreamed of this moment!" She moaned.

Lizzy closed her eyes and thrust her head back as she plunged her tit deeper in my mouth. I reached down and slipped her G string off. Releasing her tit I picked Lizzy up and moved her back to the bed. I laid her down and dropped to my knees. She gasped as my tongue slipped deep in her dark chocolate folds exposing the pink inside. Lizzy squirmed just short of an orgasm then gripped my face pulling it up.

"Later!" She hissed. I knew what she meant. I scooted her back further on the bed. Lizzy free from inhibition gripped my cock and guided it where we both wanted it to go.

I expected Lizzy to close her eyes. Instead she locked on mine showing me her pleasure as I slipped deeper inside. I was but half way in, well past her long gone hymen she popped years earlier with her fake lovers. God was she tight. Even Nikki wasn't this tight and she was a true virgin.

Lizzy hesitated but she couldn't help it, she had to look. I followed her gaze as Lizzy assessed the situation. As I pulled back, my white cock, drug her black lips along with me. Lizzy gasped then rolled her pelvis up to reach mine. I drove in pinning her to the bed. Lizzy's arms pulled me down her fingernails raked my back. She said in a barely audible whisper.

"I'm cumming Danny!" I pulled back quickly and pinned her again. I could feel her nails dig deeper in the skin on my back. Once more I pulled back and the quickly pinned her ass deep in the mattress. Lizzy's body started convulsing, her long but strong legs tried to impale me deeper in her hungry cunt to no avail. I kept her pinned down she was fucking her pussy on my cock.

"Touchdown!" She cried out as her bucking subsided. Lizzy acknowledged I had delivered Nikki's present. "Oh god Danny that was so... soooo...INCREDIBLE!" She purred.

Her nails retracted from my back her hands caressed the area as she regained her other senses. I was still just over half way in supporting my weight on my elbows. I dipped down letting my sparse chest hair tickle her nipples. I kissed Lizzy her breathing back to near normal. She pushed me up and looked down to see I was still hard. She pulled the teddy off as I suckled a nipple.

"Again, and again, and again!" I teased her. My white cock was slick with her cum and juices in contrast her black pussy. We both saw her pink clit starting to poke through the black sheath. She pulled me back down.

"Fill me with your love. Cum in me! I want your baby!" She gushed.

"You're not protected?" I asked.

With her being in college and an attractive woman, Sharon as her mother...I was embarrassed I hadn't thought of this earlier. I'm a responsible lover I thought.

"Danny I'm a virgin why do I need birth control? Do you want to stop?" I could see the fear in her eyes as she asked. Then I remembered my call to Sally. I had this covered.

"Should we shoot for twins?" I asked with a wicked grin. Lizzy pulled me back down for another kiss.

"I love you Daniel Masters. Shoot away!"

With a common goal I started a slow and steady rhythm before picking up speed. Lizzy matched me stroke for stroke. Her eyes glassed over her breathing short and frantic. Her pussy was loosening up but still I hit resistance well short of what I had to offer. Lizzy grunted on each thrust I backed off a bit choosing to focus on cumming in her. Lizzy was panting now her next orgasm building quickly.

"Fill me Danny. I want to feel you cum in me!" Lizzy pleaded.

"Twins?" I teased her. Her pussy contracted as I asked.

"Triplets! Please Danny, hurry!" I thrusted she moaned. "Deeper! I want your baby!"

"How about I just shoot the balls off and make it a girl?" I teased as she dug her fingernails in my back once again.

"YES. Now! Now Danny give me your baby girl!" Lizzy yelled at the ceiling. I thrusted deeper than before her pussy giving me contact with her cervix.

"Here she comes Lizzy. Here she comes!" I shot the first load against the opening of her cervix hoping to breed her with our first successful fucking.

"Take her from me you beautiful woman. Make a baby for us!" I groaned as each swelling of my dick was met with a tight contraction in her pussy. Lizzy was milking me. I could feel the excess wash back over my cock as her walls could expand no further today.

"Yes darling I can feel it. Oh god I can't believe this feels so good! Fuck me Danny" Lizzy moaned as another blast painted her pussy walls. "Don't stop fucking me Danny!"

We were both covered in sweat as I rolled to the side. Lizzy moved on top of me laying her head on my chest. We could feel each other's heartbeat. I caressed her back and ass. She kissed me over and over before locking in to one long sensual kiss.

"Can we do that again" She asked as my cock hardened beneath her pussy.

"Again and again!" I reminder her.

Lizzy reached between us and guided my hard slick cock back in her pussy. She whimpered as it slid back deep inside.

"Ah. Right there!" Lizzy cooed.

She laid her head on my chest and closed her eyes. Lizzy fell asleep with my hard cock stretching her young pussy. I closed my eyes and soon joined her. I woke with the feeling of her pussy trying work my cock inside her.

Awake now, I stiffened quickly, she leaned forward and I sucked a nipple as she worked herself into another quick orgasm. We finished with me behind fucking her doggie style. Just looking at her fine ass brought me off quickly even for a second cum. We showered a second time. I borrowed some clothes of Jr's just to get home.

I moved her things back to her room as she started packing some clothes. I told her were taking a trip for a few days but offered no more. She packed as if we were going for a month. Lizzy refused to let me watch what she jammed in her suitcases. I called Sally, they were home from dinner. She said

they were waiting for us. Sally had made all the arrangements as I requested and had me packed as well.

I carried Lizzy's clothes to her car she handed me the keys.

"I'm ready Danny, take me home!"

It was a special moment for us both. I was indeed taking her from the only home she knew to the one she has spent so much time in. At twenty one it would be not only her home, but in a way, her house.

I drove us home. Lizzy had her diary in her hand. We talked about her decision. She was positive it was the right thing to do. After making love she was more convinced now than before.

All the women made a big deal out of Lizzy's engagement. The welcome we got was overwhelming but I knew there was a hidden resentment. They had suffered too long and Lizzy knew this. She needed to handle this quickly and permanently. Jr and Sam had left after dinner no doubt going to see their girlfriends.

I stood up and asked for everyone's attention. The room became silent.

"I have an announcement but first Lizzy would like to say something." I said, Lizzy stood.

"I have been told you have heard some of my personal thoughts. But you didn't hear the ones I wrote this morning before I gave this to Sally. I would like to read them now." Lizzy opened the diary.

"Last night I learned how selfish I am. When we feared the worst about Danny all I could think of was how it would affect me. I looked around the room to

observe Mom, Mary, Nikki and especially Kat just like Danny would. All they were concerned with is how it would affect their friends and lovers." Lizzy stood, tears rolling down her cheeks. She tried to read but needed to gather herself for just a minute.

"All these women have ever shown me was love. All Danny ever did was show me and my brothers how to be a better person. This morning I'm embarrassed with myself for being so selfish. He has given so much and I so little." Lizzy read. She looked around the room.

"Before I continue. I want you to know this is a condition of our marriage. I take it as seriously as my vows to Danny." Lizzy announced.

She looked at each of the ladies again before turning to Sally with a wink. Her confidence back she opened the book.

"I know should Danny ever ask my hand in marriage I'll only accept ...if he continues with the relationships he has with Kathryn, Nikki, Sally, Mary and lastly my mother Sharon. I know he loves them more than I can understand, and they him. I only hope I can learn from him, and them, to be as loving and giving as they have been to me and each other." Lizzy ended then closed the book. They all looked at each other shocked at what they just heard.

"Danny just spent the last several hours making love to me. I could feel each of you as part of him." Lizzy acknowledged.

"As you know there are no words to describe how wonderful it feels to have his arms around you and him filling my insides with his love. But I want you to know the next time you experience that part of Danny, part of me will be with him filling you with my love also. Sally, may I have the rings?"

Sally handed the rings to Lizzy. Lizzy found the Citrine Ring and handed it to Mary.

"Thank you for being my second mother, and my mother's lover. I love you Mary!" They kissed then Lizzy moved on.

"Mom I love you more now than ever. I know you had a hand in this. Thank you and I love you more each day!" She kissed Sharon and slipped the Topaz ring back on her finger.

She moved to mom next. She held the wedding band Kat relinquished in her hand.

"Kat you will never take this ring off again. Daniel is rightfully yours. I want to thank you for sharing him with me. Lizzy isn't a lezzy, but if I change my mind I hope you teach me and protect me like you did Nikki." Lizzy told mom.

"I may not fill your bed but I'll never stop Danny from doing so. When we have kids they will be as much yours as Nikki's are today. I love you Kat. Even if we aren't lovers I'll at least always be in love with you!" She slid Kat's wedding ring back on her finger. They kissed like lovers for several minutes.

"Nikki we have talked so much over the years I feel like you are the older sister I never had. I can still remember the day I suckled your breast after you had Kyle, and now you give me your husband. You say your heart has moved on, and I know these ladies have filled it, but I also know that you love Danny in ways I'll never understand." Lizzy shared.

"I can never say thank you enough. I hope I'm half the wife you have been. I do cherish what you have done for me. I want you to wear this ring. Marriage is more than a piece of paper. Like Kat he is still yours. I am just sharing him with you. I love you and hope we can still be best of friends!" Nikki pulled Lizzy to her and whispered in her ear then slipped the ring back on.

"Sally I saved you for last for a reason. You probably already know what I am going to ask. But I want them to know too." She looked to me I nodded my approval. "Sally I want to move into the master suite but I don't want you to

leave it! With Sir's permission he has allowed me to ask if you would consider being my pet also. To be our pet? This would only pertain to our bedroom unless Sir instructs otherwise."

Sally looked at me tears rolled down her cheeks.

"Sir? May I? Please Sir?"

"Sally it's completely up to you!" I knew she was doing this for me and for Lizzy.

I could tell she knew this was coming but I truly think it was more emotional than she expected. In fact I bet she was on the brink of cumming.

"Yes Madam I would be honored to serve you both. But you must know Sir will always be my Master!"

"Agreed! Now come here my pet I have something to give you. Sally stood Lizzy walked over to her She took her hand and held the ring out.

"Lift your skirt pet!" Sally looked to me I nodded for her to obey. Sally lifted her skirt her bald pussy was on display behind her sheer panties. The crotch was damp with her juices.

"Remove your panties and hand them to me!" Sally did as she was told. Lizzy balled the thin material up and held them to Sally's mouth.

"Open pet." Sally opened her mouth. Lizzy slipped the small wad inside. "Now spread your legs wider pet."

Lizzy took the ring and handed it to Pet. "Put it in your pussy and don't you dare cum!"

Sally's eyes got glazed she was being displayed in front of all her lovers. I knew she was beside herself with lust. She buried the ring in her pussy.

"Now the panties, we don't want it to fall out." Sally remove the panties from her mouth and placed them in her pussy. I doing so Sally bent over and groaned. "Don't cum pet. You don't want to get punished on our first night together do you?" Lizzy asked.

Sally looked at me I shot her a warning gaze.

"No Madam!" Sally sighed in frustration.

Lizzy straightened her up and kissed Sally. Lizzy's right hand slapped Sally's pussy. Lizzy then firmly slapped Sally's clit. Sally moaned deep in Lizzy's mouth. Lizzy slipped two fingers in Sally's now dripping cunt pushing the panties deeper. She kissed her longer with Sally humping Lizzy's fingers. Lizzy pulled her mouth free.

"Beg me to come Pet, beg your new Madam to let you cum!

"Please Madam. There isn't time please let me cum!" Sally shot me a warning glance.

"Then cum for me Sally my love!" Lizzy commanded. Sally let out a growl gripping Lizzy's hand so she could pleasure herself.

"Let me give you pleasure tonight! Let me show these women what I am willing to do for you to try and repay what you have done for me!" Lizzy roared. "I

love you Sally. I want to give you pleasure. I will never punish you without sir's permission." Lizzy shrieked.

Lizzy allowed Sally to use her hand to orgasm. It was the first time I witnessed those long dark fingers in Sally's greedy cunt. With surely pent up desire and Sally's propensity to orgasm quickly, Lizzy made quick work of bringing her off.

Sally almost fainted she came so hard. I think her long pent-up desire to be fucked in public was at last coming true. She wanted this, she needed this. The list just got shorter.

Lizzy pulled her hand from Sally's snatch and offered them to Sally. Sally was dazed but happily cleaned them for her. Lizzy pulled her into a kiss you could hear the room sigh in disbelief.

"Sir!! The time!" Sally warned me when she recovered. Sally looked at me and then the clock.

"Ladies. I wish this could go on but I have an announcement and time is short." I said. I walked next to Lizzy and took her hand. "Lizzy and I are getting married that you all know, but even Lizzy doesn't know this!"

I turned to her.

"We are flying to Las Vegas tonight! By tomorrow we will be married!" Lizzy screamed in delight.

"Danny tell me you aren't kidding!" She dared to ask.

"Sally tell her!"

"Here are your confirmations. You better get going your flight leaves in just over two hours."

"Sally you are amazing. Mom. Mary I have to go!" Lizzy squealed. She ran to Sharon and Mary they embraced and kissed.

I went to Kat and Nikki. I explained that we are going to Las Vegas and then we will be in Florida for the week. When we get back I wanted to set down with the two of them and talk about the future. I told Nikki we would get her a proper settlement and talk about what was best for the kids.

Lizzy came over to say goodbye I went and talked to Mary and Sharon. Sharon told me how happy she was for us both. I felt a sense she thought it would be different now that I was marrying her daughter. I knew Mary would handle that and if not we would deal with it when the time came.

We made it to the airport in plenty of time and took our seats. Lizzy folded the arm up between us and settled in my arms after takeoff. We arrived in Vegas and headed to the hotel. Sally had all the paperwork completed but I need to wait for divorce papers to be filed at the courthouse back home.

We went to the room and then down for some light gambling. I played some cards while Lizzy played the slots. I lost she won but in the end we broke about even. We walked the town a bit then returned for some much needed rest.

Monday, Henry filed the divorce papers back home and faxed my copy after they were accepted. Lizzy found a chapel to get married in. After we registered at the marriage bureau and paid our fees we headed to the chapel for our service.

Duly married we spent the rest of the day seeing sights and then went to a show. That night we had a marathon fuck session. I stretched her pussy six

ways to Sunday and she kept coming back for more. Tuesday we were back on a plane to Florida.

Lizzy was surprised but thrilled to see Sally waiting for us at the airport. Sally greeted us then gave me a note to call Mike Clark the doctor. I drove to the condo and we unloaded our luggage. I called Mike, he asked if would be available to meet him and Carl at their office in Florida Thursday.

I explained I was in Florida for the week and would be happy to meet him. I offered to bring Ivan as well if we were going to talk business. He thought that would be beneficial. I recorded his office address and explained that we would be there at one.

Sally was putting clothes away Lizzy was on the patio soaking up the sun in her bikini. I kissed Sally for all her help and we then joined my wife on the patio for some much needed rest. I called home talking to Kat, Nikki and then the kids. We went to our favorite seafood restaurant then came back to the condo. Hand in hand Lizzy and I walked the beach just after dark.

"Danny I want you to fuck pet tonight, but can I play first?" She had a playful naughtiness about the way she asked.

"Are you sure? We are on our honeymoon you know?" I teased.

"Danny your cock is just too big. It feels good but my pussy is still adjusting." She was trying to flatter me and I knew it.

"We could stop making love until we get that looked at!" I teased her. Lizzy flung herself at me wrapping her arms around my neck. I gripped her ass supporting her weight.

"I have a better idea. Why don't you just put it in and never take it out! Then we'll both be happy!" Lizzy giggled.

I kissed her enjoying her playful enthusiasm.

"Now my darling, carry me to our pet she needs some Lizzy time!" My sexy wife suggested.

Lizzy kissed me as I cradled her and walked the short distance to the patio before I sat her back on her feet.

"What's the plan?" I asked as I held her to me.

"You go to the living room and I'll get our pet ready. I'll call you then." She gave me a naughty grin.

Lizzy may only be twenty one but she has always been much more mature than her age. When she was barely a teenager Lizzy insisted I spend time with her mother Sharon after Val passed. For the last five years Lizzy and Sally together helped raise the kids.

Over the years Lizzy has questioned Nikki about every part of our time together. Knowing the women in my life Lizzy probably knows more about me than I do. Based on the display back at the house with Sally and the ring, Lizzy probably knows just as much about Sally as well.

If she is anything like Sharon, I expect Lizzy to have that same wanton lust her mother has. With Lizzy and now Sally together I have a feeling I would soon find out.

I went to the main bathroom while the girls were in the master bedroom getting ready. I then went to the living room and waited for her signal. Sally came to the entrance dressed in just sheer panties and matching bra. Her bald pussy strained against the thin fabric her large tits weighed down the sheer bra.

"Madam is waiting." She turned her back to me the panties were tight in the crack of her ass.

Lizzy was sitting on the edge of the bed she had on a pink lace half bra and matching g string. She pointed to the chair for me. Pet stood at the doorway. I assumed as she had been told.

"Danny you are to sit there until I tell you otherwise. Please baby no talking!" Lizzy winked at me. "Now pet present yourself. Front and center!" Lizzy called out

Sally moved in front of Lizzy standing at attention.

"Remove your panties and put them in my hand!" Sally bent over her tits strained the bra as she slipped off her panties. "Now spread your legs and rub your pussy!"

Sally moved her legs open and rubbed her pussy and clit.

"Two fingers inside!" Lizzy barked.

Sally obeyed. I knew she came quickly and she was working herself into a froth. He pussy was sloshing when Lizzy made her quit suddenly. Sally was so close she moaned in frustration.

"Not yet my pet! First you have to earn it!" Lizzy took Pet's pussy soaked hand and raise it to Sally's mouth. Sally eagerly cleaned it as Lizzy caressed her tits. Lizzy stood and looked down at her own panties. "Slowly my pet I want you to enjoy every inch as you undress me."

Sally hooked her fingers in the waist string and as directed slowly removed Lizzy G string. I couldn't help but watch as her long brown legs seemed to go on forever. Lizzy put her long finger under Sally's chin and had her stand again.

"I have never had a woman suck my tits. Pet you may be the first." Lizzy whispered.

I thought Sally would cum right there she was so excited. Sally lifted Lizzy's small tit from the bra cup and proceeded to make love to it. Lizzy flung her head back her eyes closed as she reveled in the attention. Sally move to her other tit fondling the first one. Lizzy gained control and gently took her tit from Sally's mouth.

"Very good my pet. You may be called upon to do that often!" Sally looked so proud.

Lizzy kissed her firmly. I could hear Sally whimper. Lizzy sat on the edge of the bed the covers pulled off her dark skin contrasted with the white sheets. She pulled a pillow from the bed and placed it on the floor between her spread legs. "Kneel Pet!"

Sally's legs seemed to collapsed she moved so quickly. Lizzy again put her long brown fingers under Sally's chin pulling it up closer to her face.

"Pet. I am not a lesbian but I do like to cum. I will not lick your pussy but considering how good you made my tit's feel..." I could see Sally squirm her ass lower anticipating what she was about to hear. "...If you would like... you may be the first woman to lick my pussy!" Lizzy taunted her.

Sally started to dive in but Lizzy stopped her.

"Pet! Listen to me. You may use your tongue only! I am going to suck Danny's cock you must not let me cum before he does! When he cums in my mouth and after I cum I'll share his cum with you! Do you understand?"

"Yes Madam!" Sally's voice quivered in anticipation.

"Now if you are a really good pet and do not cum before then. I'll let Danny fuck your pussy for as long as it takes to fill your pussy with his cum. You may have as many orgasms as you wish." Lizzy tilted Sally's face higher for affect. "But if you cum before he fucks you, that will be the last one for tonight and you will sleep on the floor and not in the bed with us. Are we clear Pet?"

"Yes Madam. I understand!" Sally whispered desperately wanting to get started.

"Good now get licking!" Lizzy kissed Sally long and hard.

She released her chin her slender fingers caressing Sally's hair as she lapped at her pussy. I was hard inside my shorts as the erotic scene unfolded in front of me.

"Danny, you better hurry I don't know how long either of us can hold out!" Lizzy warned. I removed my shorts. The sight of Sally's white cheeks buried inside Lizzy's black legs and pussy had me dripping with precum. We quickly found a position we could all enjoy and I offered my cock for Lizzy to pleasure me.

She looked up her eyes were already glassy. I could hear Sally lapping at her dripping cunt. Lizzy was inexperienced but obviously she had put a lot of thought into all of this. I had a feeling as Charles once told me "still waters run deep" Sally and I would soon learn how deep her waters ran.

Lizzy's lips held on tight as her tongue caressed the head of my dick. The long fingers of her hand wrapped around the base of my cock stroking me.

Like her pussy she couldn't handle the size of my cock, and I wasn't about to try and force myself any deeper. I had Sally here if I need that! Lizzy was moaning I could see Sally rubbing her pussy on the pillow. Lizzy pulled free.

"Not yet Pet! He's not ready!" Sally pulled from Lizzy's pussy. I looked down and saw Lizzy slender hand go behind Sally's head and guide her back to her pussy. "Don't stop!"

Lizzy thrust her cunt back in Sally's face.

"I'm going to cum!" I announced not wanting Sally to lose. I filled Lizzy's mouth. My own orgasm consumed my attention. I wasn't aware of how much Lizzy came until Sally pulled back her face drenched in female cum.

"Do not cum Pet!" Lizzy gargled.

Lizzy pulled Sally's head up, she opened her mouth and Lizzy let my cum drip into Sally's mouth. Lizzy then kissed her. I watched as they swirled the cum between them. My cock wasn't really hard but when Sally raised her ass still locked on Lizzy I knew what she wanted. I stroked my cock a couple of times, I teased her slit. She pulled away from Lizzy.

"Fuck me sir PLEASE! I NEED TO..." I slammed my hard enough cock in her pussy. "...CUM!"

Sally was pulling Lizzy to her and pushing back on me, her ass quivered as her orgasm took hold.

"I love you Lizzy! I love being your Pet!" She kissed Lizzy again and again. I was hard now fucking her good. Sally was consumed in lust. "Thank you Madam. Thank you for letting me please you!"

Sally's head was now in Lizzy's lap. Lizzy reached down and pinched Pet's nipple firmly.

"Cum for me Pet. Feel my husband's big cock in your greedy pussy. The cock that should be in the pussy you just worshiped. Cum for me and I'll buy you a leash and collar."

Sally's pussy contracted around my cock when she heard that. She was dripping on the floor.

"YES. Oh yes Madam I am cumming for you. Please may I wear your collar?" She begged. Sally was cumming. She pulled off my cock and slipped gently on top of the pillow her body racked with spasms.

"Yes pet. You may wear our collar but only in our bedroom. It just wouldn't do to have my husband's aunt present herself in public as a slut. No pet that will not do." Lizzy bent down and caressed Sally's cheek. "Not unless we ask you to that, that is! Now when he cums in you, come wake me you have one last present to give me!"

Lizzy walked out the door. I helped Sally to the bed. She sucked my hard cock clean then spread her pussy and guided me back in. I released her bra letting her tit's free to entice me.

"Fuck me sir, but please take your time coming. I think I might burst if she has her way with me too soon!" I kissed Sally then proceed to fuck her.

Sally had several mini orgasms before I filled her pussy. She was going to go get Lizzy but she was spent. I found Lizzy just outside the door listening to Sally's cries of passion.

"Is she ready?" Lizzy teased.

"You are a wicked, wicked wife, and she loves it!" I teased.

Lizzy took my hand and led me back to the chair. I was glad in away. I needed the rest but really just so I could just watch. Lizzy had removed her bra and was now naked.

"You have been a very good pet now I just have a few more tasks and you can rest for tomorrow night's activities."

Sally couldn't believe there would be more. Lizzy laid beside Sally on the far side from me. She laid on her side her head supported by her elbow and hand. Lizzy kissed Sally gently her free hand caressed Sally's face and then worked down to her tits.

"Your tits are so big Pet. Too bad I'm not gay. I might be tempted to suck them."

Lizzy bent over and kissed one nipple. Sally sighed in frustration. Lizzy's hand went lower. Her long slender fingers and flat palm rubbed Sally's stomach. Reaching lower she rubbed across Sally's mons and over her clit.

"Madam I'm..." Sally started to stop her.

"Shh my pet just let Lizzy make you happy!" Lizzy's long fingers wrapped over Sally's pussy and disappeared inside. Sally spread her legs wide opening up her pussy for Madam. Lizzy withdrew her fingers dripping with

my cum and offered them to Sally. She greedily licked them clean. Lizzy returning to coat them again. This time she stopped at Sally's tit and smeared it around her nipple.

"There my pet, this is what you want right?" Lizzy hissed.

Sally lifted her breast and licked my cum and her pussy from her tit. Lizzy kissed her on the lips.

"You taste heavenly Pet!" Lizzy whispered.

Her fingers were deep in Sally's pussy. Sally thrusting her pussy so Lizzy could go deeper. This time Lizzy coated her own nipple then offered it to Sally.

"Here my pet try the chocolate version!" Lizzy teased. "When I have Danny's baby will you suckle my milk?"

"Yes Madam!" Sally moaned.

Lizzy's fingers were now back in Sally's gaping cunt. She brought them up to Sally's nipple and coated it again. Lizzy leaned over and sucked the nipple clean. Sally moaned near orgasm.

"Pet would you like to feed my babies. Let them suckle milk from these big tits? Lizzy's fingers dipped deep in Sally's pussy. Sally was so ready to cum she couldn't answer. "Would you like to be my milk cow Pet?" Sally thrusted her pussy up and grabbed Lizzy's hand forcing it tight against her clit.

"You would like that Pet wouldn't you? Do you want Danny to milk your tits? Or suckle them like he did when he was a baby?" Sally seemed shocked Lizzy knew that.

"Do you want you want to feed our babies. Your babies Sally? Cum for me Sally. Cum for me and I'll have babies we both can feed. Think of your big udders hanging down while our babies suckle those massive tits. Cum now Pet!"

"OOOHHH YES. Lizzy. I'm cumming for you Madam. I am cumming to show you I will feed your babies!" Sally yelled.

She clenched her legs tight around Lizzy's hand I almost came just listening to Lizzy play with our pet. Lizzy moved Sally on top of her and told her to push my cum from her pussy onto Lizzy's. When her cunt was empty she had Pet lick the cum from her pussy then had Pet lick her to another orgasm.

We all went and showered then landed in bed. Sally insisted Lizzy be in the middle.

I was up early as the girls still lay sleeping. I started the coffee and checked my emails. Then I called Kat. When I hung up I could hear them talking so I went in to check on them. Lizzy must have been up at some point she now had on a long white cotton sleeveless cover-up. Her right nipple poked out over the plunging neckline. The other nipple tenting below the fabric.

"I meant what I said Sally. I want you to do what Kathryn did. I want you to train your breasts to give milk. I know you want to, I could see it every time they nursed." Lizzy's long brown index finger traced over Sally's creamy white breast. She circled her nipple then lifted her head to kiss the tip.

Sally was on the far side of Lizzy. She was naked as they talked. Sally saw me and motioned for me to join them. I slipped back in beside Lizzy. Sally propped up laying on her side facing us both.

"Give me your hand Daniel." Sally asked. I gave her my right hand and she took it with her left.

She pulled Lizzy's gown up uncovering her naked pussy and now her belly button. She lay my hand flat on Lizzy's belly placing her hand over it. I looked at her in utter shock. Her eyes locked on mine a huge grin crossed her face.

"You feel it too. Don't you?" Sally grinned. I could only smile I was so happy. Lizzy looked at both of us trying to figure out what we were talking about.

"What!" Lizzy pleaded.

"You're pregnant!" I stammered. It just kind of jumped from my mouth. I was still in disbelief it happened so fast.

"A girl!" Sally informed a stunned Lizzy.

"Are you sure?" Lizzy squealed in disbelief. Sally and I looked at each other. Our hands still firmly pressed to her tummy.

"Yes my love, we're sure. Lizzy we're going to have a baby girl!" I announced. I kissed her long and hard. She turned and kissed Sally now accepting we may be right.

"I love you Danny! Oh Sally this will be our first child!" She kissed me and then Sally. She put both hands around Sally's left tit squeezing it so the nipple protruded. Lizzy latched onto the nipple sucking it into her mouth. Sally moaned lightly. Lizzy let it go with a POP!

"Just checking!" She teased. "Danny I need some money to go shopping with Sally today."

"Sally will pay for anything you want to buy while we're here." I explained. "Let's get ready for lunch and you can drop me off at the office afterward. I need to talk to Ivan."

I left the two of them lounging in bed in high spirits. Sally was old enough to be Lizzy's grandmother, but the bond they shared was ageless.

After lunch I went to our office. Ivan and I spent most of the day preparing to meet with Mike and Carl the following day. Ivan had done his homework as always preparing several portfolios. I also called Charles old friend Morris in construction and talked with him extensively. I was cautiously optimistic with the numbers, but as Ivan reminded me this wasn't our first rodeo.

With the lessons from years past still fresh in our minds I needed to be realistic. I had learned a hard lesson personally but I knew being too conservative wouldn't secure our future. Conditions like this come maybe once in a lifetime. You have to take chances if you are going to take it to the next level. This sale could be two or three levels long term.

Ivan dropped me off at the condo the girls weren't back yet.

I changed and jogged on the beach enjoying the sunny afternoon. I was in the shower getting ready to take the girls out for dinner when they got home. The door opened and Lizzy joined me ducking under the shower head. I kissed her and wrapped my arms around her.

"Did you miss me?" She asked. I kissed her rubbing my stiff cock across her stomach. "Me too, but you'll have to wait until later!" She kissed me back as her hand stroked my cock teasing me. I was done with my shower. I stepped to the door to leave.

"Don't start without me!" I teased her back as I closed the door behind me.

"No promises!" She replied as I left her alone.

Sally was in the other bath. I called Nikki and the kids she seemed really happy for me. In fact I think it was a relief for her. Nikki had that spark back in her voice. The kids all wanted to know when I would be home it has been almost a week since we had seen each other. It was even more touching when Kyle and Kenzi asked when Lizzy and Sally would be home too.

Lizzy and Sally finished about the same time wearing similar outfits. Nice print tops and dress shorts. We went to great Italian place where we shared a bottle of wine during dinner. Back at the condo we settled in on watching a chick flick the girls wanted to see.

When the movie ended. Sally went to the spare bedroom. Lizzy still curled up next to me looked up and kissed me. I caressed her body pulling her tight. We kissed for several minutes.

"Your pet is has gone to bed?" I asked.

"She thinks we should be alone." The way she answered let me know Lizzy didn't feel that way. Not tonight anyway.

"I can see I need to have a talk with her?" I suggested. Lizzy's eyes brightened at my suggestion.

"You're ok with that? It's our honeymoon Danny." Lizzy replied. I kissed her, she filled my mouth with her tongue.

"I have a feeling you aren't done playing with your new puppy?" I teased.

"Danny tell her she needs to come prepared. I'll come get her in twenty minutes." Lizzy was giddy at the thought of it.

Now I knew many things that could mean, but with Lizzy I had no idea which one it would be. I stood up leaving her lying on the couch.

I walked to the spare room and knocked on the door. Sally opened it.

"Danny?" Sally responded as she gave me a questioned look.

"Pet why are you in this room? Did you ask permission to leave us?" I questioned her.

Sally was surprised with the tone I addressed her. Calling her pet let her know I was serious.

"No Sir? Please forgive me." Sally replied sensing I might be angry.

"Your presence is required. You have twenty minutes. Madam will come get you." I explained. "Madam expects you to be prepared!"

"Yes Sir. Thank you Sir!" Sally agreed. I could see she was getting excited as she stood there. I stroked her cheek gently letting her know I was not mad. Turning I left returning to Lizzy.

"She will be ready."

"Daniel. You need to tell her..." Lizzy started to get emotional. "... I want...I owe ...I need..."

"Lizzy I'll handle it." I kissed her letting her know how much I appreciated her feeling that way. "But first she needs to be punished!"

"We do think alike! Be firm Danny, but be gentle." Lizzy replied. "We do want her to enjoy it!"

"My thoughts exactly." I confirmed.

I was waiting in the bedroom, the covers on the bed had been pulled back. I had on just a robe. Lizzy in her robe left minutes earlier to get Pet. I looked at the clock, they should be here by now. I looked back at the door.

Lizzy was now wearing a black leather bustier, black lace panties, black garter with black fishnet stockings, and black five inch spike heels. She was holding something in her hand. She stepped further in the door. A silver chain hung from the leather loop in her hand. She tugged lightly and Sally appeared.

Pet had a black leather collar with short chrome spikes attached to the chain. She had on a black leather bra several sized too small her large breasts spilling over the top. There was a wide black belt around her waist. A clasp on either side secured her wrists with black fur lined cuffs.

Her black silk panties had a red zipper down the center. Her four inch heels made her look so much taller. Her makeup was pasted on. Her red lipstick made her look like a whore. This had to be one of Sally's wildest fantasies.

"Come my pet!" Lizzy commanded. I stood as Lizzy led her to me. Standing her arms secured to her sides, Sally was almost helpless.

"You have been a bad pet and need to be punished!" I chastised her.

"Yes sir I understand." She shifted on her feet. I pulled the straight back chair from the vanity and sat down.

"Put her across my lap she needs to be spanked."

I thought Sally would run to me she was so excited.

Lizzy paraded her around delaying her fate. She walked Sally to the front of a full length mirror letting her see what she looked like. Lizzy tugged her chain bringing her to me. I helped her bend over me her tits on one side of my legs her pussy on the other side.

The panties she wore almost covered both cheeks the zipper came clear around to almost the top.

"Pet we need to teach you a lesson." I roared.

SMACK! With my bare hand I spanked her ass over her panties. I am sure it stung but hardly hurt her. SMACK! SMACK! SMACK! SMACK!

Sally squirmed and grunted after each attack. I had her attention now. Lizzy stopped me. Bending over she reached through Sally's spread legs and unzipped the zipper. Sally's cheeks were pink but not red. Lizzy pushed the panties open and rubbed her cheeks. Sally responded with a whimper.

"Pet listen to me. You are here for a reason. I am Danny's wife but you are his woman!" Lizzy slipped her fingers down between Sally's ass cheeks. When she reached Sally's steaming pussy she rubbed her lips.

"You aren't really like the others. You lick pussy just for the thrill of it! You're a real woman that needs a real cock in here!" Lizzy slipped two long fingers in Pet's cunt.

"Oh Madam!" Sally thrust her ass higher.

"Steady Pet we do not want to add to our punishment do we?"

"No Madam" Sally sighed.

"Good! Then you will listen and not cum." Lizzy fucked Sally's pussy then reached over and fed Sally her fingers. "Because if you cum without permission this is all you will taste tonight."

"Yes Madam" Sally hissed.

"My pussy is too tight for Danny's big cock. I can only take part of it. But this pussy. This is a pussy that loves dick. This pussy can take all of our lover's big cock. Right Pet?" Lizzy was fingering Sally the whole time. Sally was grinding her pussy on my thigh. Her arms secured she couldn't pleasure herself.

"Yes Madam!"

"And you love it don't you. You love his cock. Right? You love cock deep in your pussy. You love when he sprays that hot cum inside your hungry cunt." Lizzy was driving her wild in anticipation. "You love when his balls smack your clit as he takes you from behind. Tell me slut tell me how much you lust after my husband's cock!"

"Yes Madam I do. He is the best lover I ever had! I love him and yes I love his cock!" Sally squealed.

"And yet you tried to deny him your pussy tonight? He loves me. He loves my tight little cunt. He loves to see my dark brown lips spread and grip his cock." Lizzy slipped a third finger in Sally. "Pet you know how much I love him inside me. He stretches me so much I want to scream in pleasure."

Lizzy stepped back Sally groaned in disappointment. Lizzy offered Sally her fingers. Sally gladly cleaned them. Rubbing Sally's ass she slipped them back in her waiting cunt.

"But he loves you too. Danny is all man and he needs a real man's pussy. Your pussy. He needs to have his whole cock smothered with pussy and you are the only one here that can do that my pet." Lizzy pulled her fingers from Sally's pussy and slathered it along the crack of her ass.

Lizzy spread Sally's ass cheeks then shocked us both by rimming Sally's' asshole.

"Oooohhhh!" Sally purred.

"You like that pet?" Lizzy licked it again, and again.

"Yes Madam!" Lizzy dipped her fingers in Sally's pussy and teased her brown star. Sally ground her pussy in my thigh then tried to get Lizzy to stick her finger in her ass.

"You like that too pet don't you?"

"Oh god yes!" Sally was desperate to cum.

"If you are a good pet then we will see. First Sir will finish your punishment and if you have not cum then I may let him fuck you!"

"Thank you Madam!" Sally hissed. Lizzy then whispered in my ear. She pulled the panties open so I could spank Sally on her bare ass.

SMACK!

"Pet will you ever withhold your pussy from Sir?" Lizzy asked.

"No Sir. No Madam."

SMACK!

"And will ever withhold your ass from Sir?"

"No Sir. No Madam."

SMACK!

"Pet will you ever withhold your mouth from Sir?"

"No Sir. No Madam."

SMACK!

"And do you now understand that you will always share our bedroom unless we instruct you otherwise?"

"Yes Sir. Yes Madam.

SMACK!

"And do you know we both want to help you live out all your fantasies and fetishes."

"I do now Madam. I do!"

Lizzy went to the dresser and brought back a butt plug and some lube. She greased the plug and Sally's ass then eased it in as Sally groaned in pleasure. She zipped her panties closed and spanked the plug in her ass lightly. Sally yelped in surprise.

Lizzy moved to in front of Sally she helped her up and moved to her face they kissed wildly.

"Do you now know how deep my love for you is Sally? How much you are a part of me? Of Danny? Of us?" Lizzy was caressing Sally's red ass cheeks.

"Thank you Elisabeth. Thank you both. I have never been happier!" Sally gushed.

"Good now my pet we need to finish your punishment." Lizzy threw a pillow on the floor and jerked the chain guiding Pet to it. "Kneel" With her arms restrained I helped her down. Lizzy remove the robe I had on.

"Let her suck your cock but tell me before you come!" Lizzy warned me.

I offered Sally my raging hard on and she greedily took it. Lizzy bent down beside Sally she kissed her bulging cheeks. She nibbled her ears and whispered how she wished she could take as much as of my cock. The sight of them together on their knees. Sally pleasuring me and Lizzy teasing her the whole time just felt right.

My balls started sending signals to my brain. I started to go deeper in Sally's mouth. With no hands to control my depth she was at my mercy.

"I'm going to cum!" I announced.

Lizzy pulled my dick from Sally's mouth and proceeded to stroke me furiously. She aimed my cock at Sally's chest and drained me while Sally squirmed to take me back in her mouth. Lizzy move in place and sucked me clean. Lizzy smeared my cum on Sally's chest even taking her tits out coating them both then putting them back in the bra.

"Please Madam. I need to taste him!" Sally begged. She had been spanked, fingered, denied orgasms, and now her favorite pleasure just inches from grasp.

"No pet. If you were still in the other room you wouldn't have gotten even the pleasure of feeling his love." Lizzy did kiss Sally offering her any remnants of what she cleaned from my cock.

"Suck him I want him hard" She ordered Pet.

It didn't take long before Sally had worked me into a solid state again. Lizzy had me lie on the bed then helped Sally up. Lizzy removed Sally's panties and paraded her around on the lash and played with the plug in her ass. Removing her shoes Lizzy led her to the bed.

Now pet I have decided to take mercy on you. You are to sit on his cock but you may not cum until I tell you. If you do you will be punished further."

"Yes Madam." Lizzy positioned her over me I helped steady her and slipped my cock in her insatiable pussy.

"Oh please Sir don't move or I'll cum!" Sally begged.

She sat straddling me, her arms still restrained, trying not to pleasure herself any further. Lizzy left. In the mirror I saw her heading for us. She had a strap on dildo dangling from her crotch. It was dark brown like her. Long but slender it had soft ridges the whole length.

"Pet have you ever been fucked in both holes at the same time" Lizzy teased. Sally's eyes grew big I felt her whole body quiver when she saw what Lizzy was offering.

"No Madam. Please be the first. Fuck me Madam! Oh hurry please!" Sally pleaded.

"No pet you will suck my cock first. Then if you have not cum I'll give you your pleasure." Lizzy was merciless. She moved in place slowly removing her shoes.

Lizzy stood on the bed and offered Sally her cock. Sally easily took the intruder and lathered it with her saliva. It was all she could do not to fuck herself on my cock. She moaned for Lizzy to hurry.

Finally Lizzy pulled out she walked behind Sally. We both felt her get on the bed. Sally was shaking but her pussy stayed locked balls deep over my cock. Sally was panting, the anticipation was becoming too much.

Lizzy must be teasing her ass I guessed. Sally bucked against my pelvic bone. Lizzy pushed Sally forward. Her tits mashed into my chest. I reached around and spread her ass cheeks. Then I felt it the plug pulled from her ass.

"Cum my pet you have earned it!" Lizzy whispered. I felt the ribbed dildo slowly enter Sally. It felt heavenly as it slid alongside my cock.

"OH FUCK ME!" Sally yelled.

She came before Lizzy started the second stroke. Her orgasm rocked her whole body. Lizzy never stopped and neither did I. By the time she recovered from her third orgasm she was begging us to stop but Lizzy insisted on one more.

I was ready to cum but knew Lizzy had plans. Lizzy pulled out of Sally after her fourth climax. She quickly removed the harness and her panties. I pulled out of Sally she rolled to the side. Lizzy mounted me.

"Oh god Danny I need you in me!" Lizzy screamed. Fuck me baby. Cum in me! Fill me up so Pet can eat my pussy.

Sally heard this and instantly turned to watch Lizzy straddle her pussy over my cock.

"Relax Madam, let your pussy go. Let Danny take control. He's a wonderful lover." Sally was calm and comforting.

Struggling to stay on my cock Lizzy released Sally's arms from the bindings. Sally sat up and kissed Lizzy. "Its ok baby. Relax. Deep breaths, now let out. Feel him go deeper. They both looked down. Sally rubbed Lizzy's stomach.

"He's deeper!" Lizzy squealed. She kissed Sally. "I can do this!"

"Not tonight baby. We don't want to hurt you. Just take your time. Your pussy will adjust. Let Danny do what he does best. Let him make you happy. The rest will come in time." Sally whispered.

I'm not sure how much Lizzy heard of the last part. She was cumming and I was cumming in her!

Lizzy collapsed on me we kissed for several minutes.

"Was I better Danny? Could you feel it go deeper?" Lizzy moaned she was so excited.

"Lizzy you are perfect. I love you. I want to make you happy. Yes I could feel it but we should go slowly. You have our baby inside don't forget!"

"Hear that little girl daddy is already worried about you!" She flung herself at me we kissed. I love you Danny.

"I love you too."

"Good! Now I want you to fuck Pet's ass until you fill it with cum while she cleans my pussy. I think she deserves it!"

We ended the nights fuck fest just like that. Lizzy had cum two more times and finally pushed Sally's face away she was so sensitive. Sally came once after that and again as I filled her ass for my third cum. Again we all took a shower and slept together this time Sally was in the middle.

I woke in the morning early again. I started the coffee and called back home catching Kat before she left for work. She was missing me I could tell. I had a big day ahead of me so I went over my notes once again. I called Morris the local contractor and asked if he could be available if we needed him. He would be in the area and would be happy to stop by. I also called Darius at home and talked to him about maybe coming back down to work on the projects if needed.

I headed back in the bedroom Lizzy lay on the bed naked her legs spread wide. Her pussy was wet and puffy. Her dark brown lips spread, serious pink was showing. Sally obviously had just brought her off. Lizzy heard me and through half open eyes smiled.

"Having a good morning dear?" I teased.

"I'm having a great morning!" She looked to the bathroom. "Yours is about to get much better also. Just then Sally emerged her face still smeared with Lizzy's juice.

Sally came to me but stopped short. She reached down and gripped my cock now tenting my boxers. I pulled her in for a smoldering kiss. Lizzy squealed in delight as she saw me take charge.

"Now you can have what you want pet!" Lizzy threw me a pillow I dropped it at my feet.

Sally went down on her knees dragging my boxers down as she did. I stepped out and she enveloped my raging hard on. Lizzy jumped from the bed and moved behind Sally. She spread Sally's legs splaying them wide. With one hand she slipped her long slender fingers into Sally's dripping snatch the other she plied her large tit and pinched her nipple.

"Don't you waste a drop of it!" Lizzy whispered in her ear. Lizzy removed the hand from her tit and started at Sally's lips stretched around my cock. She caressed her extended neck down between her big tits and to her stomach. Sally was bucking against Lizzy's hand I could tell she was going to cum soon.

"Don't you stop when you cum, his pleasure comes first!" Lizzy warned her.

Sally moaned around my cock. She was so close I was concerned she might actually bite me.

"Cum Pet! Suck him and cum. Suck him." Lizzy found her clit and rubbed it mercilessly. "Now cum!"

"Arrgghhh! Sally groaned around my cock as her orgasm overtook her pussy.

She pumped my cock with one hand and started to desperately suck me again. My balls boiled as the sight of the two of them together was too much. I thrusted, Sally sucked, the first spurt was on the way down her throat.

I gripped my cock and helped Sally milk it as I fed her a steady supply of fresh cum. My legs almost buckled my orgasm was so intense. Slipping from her mouth Lizzy slipped in front of Sally and kissed her deeply.

"Pet there will be no punishments tonight. We are at your service. Whatever you want to do we will do for you!" Lizzy kissed her again and even licked her own excitement from Sally's cheeks.

I kissed them both and thanked them but as much as I wanted to stay and play I had an important meeting to attend after lunch. I showered with Lizzy but I made her behave herself. I dressed in a suit as usual.

I called Ivan to cover a few things, he had good news. We agreed on our plan. I offered to take them to lunch but Sally said she was staying home to get some things done. Lizzy readily agreed asking if she could take the car while I was in the meeting. I agreed so she went and changed coming out in a beautiful light yellow sun dress with a white accent belt. I could see her nipples, although not visible tent the fabric.

"Honey you need to put a bra on!" Sally warned her looking at her tit's knowing my feelings about the subject.

"Danny? I thought you liked my tits?" Lizzy asked. I reached for her and squeezed them.

"I love them but you need to put on a bra. Please?" I asked.

Sally stepped in again.

"Daniel doesn't want to be seen in public when he is working and present the wrong image. What would happen if at lunch or at the office he meets a client or potential client. He needs to present a professional image. Just not with that profession!" Sally teased as she explained. "After hours, at home or when you aren't with him then you can be more relaxed." Sally explained.

Lizzy went back to the bedroom returning shortly after wearing a padded bra that accentuated her breasts.

"Thank you both. If I am going to be a good wife I'll need to learn I represent my husband and my children." She kissed Sally then me. "Happy now?" She was being sassy. Lizzy pressed her tits against me. I kissed her.

"I love you!" I replied. Lizzy smiled knowing she had made me happy.

Chapter 10

I pulled in the parking space and turned off the car. We were early so I hopped out and opened Lizzy's door. Looking around I saw Ivan's car a couple rows over.

"Give me a call, I'll come get you." Lizzy kissed me. She looked stunning standing in the sun. A light wind flapped the hem of her dress as she stood straightening my tie.

"Dan! Good to see you!" I turned to see Mike and a lovely young lady with him. He approached with his hand out as he closed the short distance he was now from me.

"Mike! Good to see you." I greeted him. "This is my wife Elizabeth" I introduced Lizzy as we shook hands. He glanced quickly at the young lady with him. She grinned back. Something about Lizzy meant something to them.

"Lizzy please!" My wife offered as Mike shook her hand.

"Dan, Lizzy, this is my daughter Molly. She is working the summer before school starts again. Lizzy shook her hand Molly couldn't take her eyes off of her. Suddenly she realized I was waiting to shake her hand.

"Sorry but...Dad...?"

"Uncanny I agree." Mike replied. He seemed to give her a look letting her know that she shouldn't explain what it was that was so intriguing about Lizzy.

"Dan please, when you're ready. Take your time Carl is running a bit late." Mike looked at us both. A big smile crossed his face. "You're welcome to come inside and wait Lizzy."

"Thank you sir but I have some errands to run." Danny call me and I'll come get you, she reminded me.

I gave her a quick kiss. I grabbed my briefcase and some files and walked with Mike and Molly to the office. Ivan greeted us. Introductions were made and we went into a small conference room.

We talked generally for twenty minutes before Carl showed up. I thought Mike was truly impressed with us however the mood change dramatically when Carl arrived. We had done our homework and they had done theirs. We presented three properties we felt would fit their needs to start with.

The first was a large parcel situated beside a tract of land we owned. The problem was it had no access without our property and everyone knew it. The second problem is the owner was a bit eccentric and insisted on cash. Carl was sharp but greedy. He wanted us to cut our commissions, take deferred payments, and no commissions on tenants.

Ivan let me talk helping only when I needed financial support to back up my figures. Mike spoke rarely preferring to do what I did as a kid, sit back and observe. We had talked about a half hour when Carl talked about how he could bring crews in and build for less than local crews.

He was full of shit and Ivan and I both knew it. This is Florida the land of low wages. This was 2010 the worst recession in eighty years was just starting to turn. Unemployment was high, and northern builders don't know shit about hurricanes and tropical storms.

I gathered my papers up and put them back in my briefcase as Ivan explained the return on investment. He finished and I looked at Carl with a glare.

"Thank you gentlemen! I appreciate you allowing us to come but we will not take up anymore of your valuable time." I put my hand on Ivan's shoulder. "Pop's let's go."

Carl was flabbergasted. He thought we were either stupid or desperate. Mike stood up and looked at me.

"Dan are you really prepared to walk out?" He asked. Mike knew I was. I could tell he was doing this for Carl's benefit.

"Mike with all due respect to you and Carl, we came here to help you make money. Helping you helps us. We bring qualities no one around here can offer."

"How so?" Mike asked.

That was the real question. He wanted to know how we could help him where others couldn't.

"Ivan and my grandfather have done business here years. We know the people. We know the trades and we know the suppliers. We know the small brokers. They trust us and we trust them. Carl here wants to go big with some XYZ Associates. Big money, bigger overhead." I said passionately.

"The problem is they won't negotiate and they won't deliver. Every time they do a deal the small brokers get shafted. Well those small brokers live here. Their relatives run these towns and counties. Before you know it the red tape is three feet deep and then when you build they will not come and neither will their friends." I tried to explain.

Mike looked at Carl hoping he understood what I was saying.

"Ivan has been here forty years and everybody trusts him. You need these local people to embrace, better yet to be part of your projects. If Ivan and I had the cash to buy the one property we could develop it ourselves. But we will not go into debt to do it, and even if we wanted to the banks aren't loaning money."

"Ivan is too close to retirement to risk his future on another bullshit terrorist attack or something. We need a company like yours. You have one hundred million in cash setting around." Carl looked at Mike like he told us something. Mike was as shocked as Carl.

"You buy the one property and in two years with the property we own as partners we will both have the land cost covered. I can have you four fortune five hundred brands on the property in less than a year."

Mike sat down and indicated I should do the same.

"How can you do that?" He looked perplexed.

For the next twenty minutes I went on to explain our proposals. Mike seemed interested but with years of selling behind me I could see Carl turned off. My guess is he had already made a decision before he arrived.

"Dan can I have a minute with you privately?" Mike asked.

"Sure!" I replied. He walked me to the counter where Molly was sitting.

"How long are you down for?" He asked.

"Just until Sunday maybe sooner. Kind of miss the kids." Molly looked up quickly when I said that, I was taken back at first by her shock.

"Sorry. Lizzy is my second wife! We are technically on our honeymoon right now." Mike grinned. He looked at Molly I saw the look they shared back in the parking lot.

"The birthday girl?" Mike asked. He had remembered.

"The same." I smiled.

"Oh my goodness! Dad told me about that!" Molly laughed.

"Yeah well that was a unique couple of days. Let's not go there now." I sighed.

"Dan I would like to invite you and your wife Lizzy to my son's wedding next Saturday at home?" He asked then looked at Molly. "Actually it was Molly who suggested it, but I feel the same way now."

"Well I should ask Lizzy before I commit." I replied.

"Great call her up and have her meet us at the Crow's Nest. She should know where that is. It's just down the road from your condo." Mike gave me another grin letting me know I wasn't the only one that did his homework. "Molly I'm going to go wrap this up. Honey why don't you get ready. We don't want Lizzy to spend any more time away from her husband."

I rode to the bar with Mike and Molly. I waited in the parking lot for Lizzy to pull in. I removed my coat and tie she kissed me. I told her how much I missed her. She asked how it went. I told her I really didn't know. Less than fifty-fifty if I had to guess. I led her to the high top Molly and Mike were setting at. She ordered a drink and I ordered the same beer Mike was drinking. The waitress check our ID's.

"Well happy twenty-first and six days birthday Elizabeth!" The waitress said.

"Thank you!" Lizzy blushed.

The conversation stayed on general subjects. The girls talked about college. Mike and I talked sports and general business concepts. It seemed neither one wanted to talk about families at this time. I was happy to keep some things private for now. I looked at my watch. Sally was at home we needed to get back. Mike saw me look.

"We should let them get going Molly. This is a special week and Sunday will be here soon enough!

"Actually I was going to ask Danny if we could go home early!" Lizzy announced. "I miss his kids so much and I know they miss him!"

"You miss his kids?" Molly looked at Mike as she asked.

"Well I've been babysitting them part time for the last five years. They are so special." Lizzy said.

Mike looked at me in a strange way then snickered. It suddenly hit me. He thought I seduced her. Lizzy saw the same look and realized what she had said.

"Mike! You should be ashamed of yourself! It wasn't like that. Daniel was a complete, and I mean COMPLETE gentleman the entire time. Even when I didn't want him to!" Lizzy scolded him. "Nikki and I are still best friends! And we didn't make love until he was divorced. Shame on you!"

I thought Molly was going to fall of her stool she was laughing so hard. When she calmed down she turned to Mike.

"They have to come. Daddy you need to make sure they come!" She was still giggling.

Mike asked Lizzy to attend the wedding and of course she readily accepted.

"And Dan just so you know, you will be sitting with my second wife. I'll be with my first wife, my son's mother. Molly will send you the details."

We said our goodbyes. All of us laughing at Lizzy's outburst, well maybe not Lizzy so much.

Lizzy was very excited about the wedding. We talked about how the day went in detail. Sally had cleaned the whole condo and had dinner started. She insisted Lizzy and I sit on the patio and she would serve us. She kissed Lizzy then kissed me. I could feel something was wrong. Sally was scared. I could feel the conflict deep inside.

I change into shorts and a shirt. Lizzy wore shorts and a bikini top. The sun was setting behind us the ocean glowed in the golden light. Lizzy brought out a beer for me and two glasses of wine for her and Sally. She curled up in my lap her slender body felt great against me. I whispered to Lizzy. She listened then whispered back. The conversation was heated. I thought it was too soon. Lizzy didn't want to let her dangle any longer.

Sally came out wearing shorts and a tight tee shirt with no bra. Her big tits stretched the material. Carrying some snacks she asked if she could talk to us both. I knew at that moment Lizzy was right.

"Daniel. Lizzy I want to talk to you about something that's bothering me." Sally looked nervous. I could feel she was trying to let us down gently. "The last two nights have been a dream come true. Actually every night with Danny is, but now with you Lizzy...AMAZING. The two of you together get me so excited... I want to pinch myself to see if it really is a dream." Sally explained.

"I want to be your pet in the worst way. But it isn't right that I stay in your bedroom. When we get back I'll move to Danny's room. You can have the master suite." I looked at Lizzy we knew this moment would come.

"We are the same you and I." Lizzy explained as she nuzzled deeper against Sally. "I want it all too. You will need to teach me! I need you there with me. Danny needs you!"

"Are you sure?" Sally asked looking at me now.

"Mom the day may come when you decide to leave us but Lizzy speaks for us both." I assured Sally.

Lizzy kissed Sally then took her and led her to me I stood up and kissed Sally then Lizzy.

"Ladies I need to fuck someone and now!" I teased.

We went to the bedroom and stripped. Lizzy offered Sally up to me, but I had a better idea to start the night. I ate each of them to an orgasm then positioned them on the bed with several pillows. Sally was facing up and Lizzy lying face down was on top. I fucked them both alternating between them. They ground their pussies against each other kissing the whole time. The tightness of Lizzy was a stark contrast of Sally's smoothness. They both came multiple times before I unloaded in Lizzy's pussy.

We finished the night with Sally cleaning Lizzy's cunt while I filled her pussy from behind. The subject of Sally's place in our hearts and bed was decided that very night.

I was up early and actually went for a run. I had a good feeling about the day. I knew the meeting didn't go well yesterday. Mike was maybe sold but Carl wasn't, I could feel it. I trusted my instincts in the past and had no reason to doubt them now. They weren't the only clients interested but they were in the best position financially.

I started the coffee and took a shower. Drying off I looked at the girls just now waking up.

"Danny we want to go home early!" Lizzy pleaded "We miss your babies!"

"Sally why don't you see if we can change our flights to tomorrow morning. I have some things to handle today. Later I have something to show the two of

you." I explained. "I'm going to take the car if you need to go out get a cab or call me."

"Sally and I'll be fine. We are going to lay out and work on our tans!" Lizzy teased

"Well just don't burn any sensitive parts I am not done with the two of you yet!" I teased back.

I called Nikki and told her we were thinking of coming home early. I was talking to Kat when another call came in. It was Ivan. I said goodbye to Kat and answered Ivan's call.

"Dan can you come to the office this morning?"

"Was just getting ready to leave." I replied.

"See you shortly." He said happily.

I arrived at the office Ivan met me at the door.

"I received a call from some woman, she asked for you by name. Refused to tell me what she wanted, said she will be here at 9:30." Ivan explained. I could tell there was another problem troubling him. "I talked to Carl this morning they're going in another direction." He added.

Suddenly my morning didn't look so good. It was a tough pill to swallow, but hey, we did our best.

"Sorry Ivan. Maybe if Charles was still here..."

"Dan you did a great job. You even had me sold! Maybe we should look at this ourselves. I have some savings."

"Ivan, we've talked about this, we'll be fine. Besides we still have our properties. Our day will come." I consoled him.

I made a few calls. At the appointed time a woman came in the office and asked to see me. She was tall for a woman. I am guessing in her mid to late fifties. Impeccably dressed and made up, and she was black.

"Good morning Ms. Patton. I'm Dan." I introduce myself.

"Please call me Winnie, Dan." She smiled nervously.

"Well Winnie how may I be of service to you?"

"I would like to buy some property. You come highly recommended!" Winnie's smile broadened.

"Well lets' go in here and see what we can do for you." I ushered her into the conference room. "I'm going to ask Ivan to set in with us. He's my partner and has extensive knowledge on current properties."

I seated Winnie and asked Ivan to set in with us.

"Would you like any refreshment before we start? A coffee maybe?"

"Thank you for the offer but I'm not staying long." She grinned at me. "You see Dan I'm here to buy three pieces of property. Actually I want to buy the options to three properties."

I looked at Ivan he looked at me.

"Ok Winnie, which properties do you have in mind?" She opened her satchel and pulled out three purchase contracts for options on the three properties Ivan and I talked to Mike and Carl about yesterday. Clipped to each one was certified check made out to the property owners.

"Can you help me with this?" She asked me as Ivan was reading the contracts.

"Well we'll sure try Winnie." I grinned back.

"Good now you need to get this done today. The first property is this one. If you don't secure this one, the others are off the table." Ivan handed me the contract. It was the property beside ours.

It was a sizable piece right along I-95 at an exit. The problem is it had no access to any existing road. That and the property to the west was wetlands. Without our property it was land locked. In good times it could bring upwards of 1.5 million. Today it was worth maybe half of that. Old man Baker was asking 1 million and he wouldn't budge. Their contract was an offer for nine hundred thousand. Starting with a one hundred thousand dollar option for 180 days.

"Winnie I know the owner on this property. He's pretty stuck on his figure, however Ivan and I'll go see him." I looked at Ivan he was still reading the other contracts. "If we secure this one we have your permission to pursue the others?"

Winnie smiled.

"You get that one and the others you may negotiate as you see fit" She handed me her card. It just said Winnie and her phone number. "I expect you will call the bank to verify funds. Ask for Miss Hawkins."

"Danny this all looks good. Standard contract. Every property is discounted ten percent. Baker will be the problem as we know." He handed me the other contracts. "You know Winnie on at least one of these we may be able to get you a better deal. Maybe both."

"Ivan that is the maximum we will spend whatever you save us we will compensate you accordingly. Now if you don't mind I have more business to attend to." Winnie stood to leave. "You have my number. I'll be available if you need me. You have until five today. I suggest you use your time wisely."

Standing she shook Ivan's hand and then reached for mine. I took her hand then put my other hand over the back of hers. I could tell she was terrified. Winnie was no real-estate buyer, she was a front man for someone else...and I knew who.

"Winnie tell Mike we will call you as soon as we know something." Her reaction was priceless.

"You knew?" She asked stunned.

"Tell no one what we have talked about. We will be in touch." I let her hand go. "You did a great job. Ivan and I appreciate what you are doing."

We made a stop then headed to old man Baker's. Ivan was on the phone with the other listing brokers. As I suspected they had already been contacted. Ivan negotiated over the phone, they knew him and trusted him. We pulled into the dirt drive at old man Baker's.

He lives in a sorry looking shack he calls home. I waited for Ivan to finish the call. We removed our suit jackets and ties before we exited the car. Mr. Baker was on the porch as we started walking up the gravel drive.

He released Rusty. He was just a year old but almost full grown. The big golden lab bolted in our direction. Ivan braced for the attack but he headed to me instead. I reached in my pants pockets and pulled out the treats we had just bought. The big brute jumped up, his muddy paws landing on my once clean shirt. I teased him then handed him a couple of treats. He licked my chin as I bent down then headed to Ivan. Ivan was spared the paw prints. He just dropped the treats.

"Thought I might see one of you two." Mr. Baker said. "Glad you both came."

"How long ago?" I asked.

"About an hour ago. Never made it to the porch. Just yelled from the car." The old man laughed as we both shook his hand.

"Got a minute?" Ivan asked politely. Rusty came back for another treat.

"Sure take a seat. Guess you two want to talk real estate?"

"Bill we have come with and offer!" Ivan wasted no time on small talk. Mr. Baker looked at me.

"Your grandpa talked highly of you son. Sorry to see him go. When your mother died, done broke his heart." I was surprised he knew Eve was my mother. I don't even know if Ivan knew. "You got kids?"

"Yes sir, three with my first wife, planning on more with my second." If Ivan wasn't surprised before he was now.

"Only kin I got left I care a shit about is my great granddaughter." The old man explained.

I had no idea why we were going down this track. Then he shifted gears. "So Ivan what you offerin?"

"Bill our client is offering to purchase the land for nine hundred thousand, against a one hundred thousand option." Bill looked at Ivan then to me I could see he was confused.

"Mr. Baker, what Ivan is trying to say is this. We will give you a check for one hundred thousand dollars today. If you accept it you agree to sell the property to our client for nine hundred thousand dollars total. Our client has six months to come up with the other eight hundred thousand dollars. If they do you will be required to sell it at that time. If they don't come up with the full amount you keep the one hundred thousand." I explained.

"But if I take the money I can't sell the property to anyone else?" He started to understand.

"Only for six months. At six months or before you will have a check for the full amount or the property is yours to do with as you want. And you keep this check."

"No land contract?" He asked. I looked to Ivan.

"Bill, its cash or nothing. Paid in full before transfer or you keep the money and the property."

"Tell me son what would you do?" Bill turned to me. This was the moment of truth. Would he trust me?

"Mr. Baker right now the property is really not worth more than seven fifty to eight hundred tops. Who knows what it will be worth a year from now. Maybe more, maybe less? This offer is more than fair for today's market." I looked at Ivan and then back at Mr. Baker.

"I need to be honest with you Mr. Baker. Ivan and I have talked to several people. The person that is making this offer we met today for the first time. Ivan and I believe it's someone that is associated with previous potential clients. If so they may become partners with us for our land."

Bill looked at Ivan and then at me. "So what commission do I owe you if you make this happen?"

I turned to my partner. "I'll leave it up to Ivan."

"Bill we will take no commission for the deposit. That is yours free and clear. We get 8% normally but we agreed with the other clients to take only 6%. Danny and I agreed with what we stand to make on our property we will only charge you 4%."

"Rusty get in the house!" Mr. Baker said. The dog sprung up and went in the open door. "Gentleman let's go!"

I looked at Ivan. Bill was pointing to the car. We led Mr. Baker to the car. Ivan sat in the back.

"Where to?" I asked not knowing where he was taking us.

"Main Street first." I drove as he and Ivan talked. "Turn in here." I pulled into the bank parking lot.

"Bill this is the bank?" Ivan explained.

"Danny you stay here. Ivan come with me." Bill barked orders. They left and went into the bank. I waited for almost twenty minutes. They came back out.

Ivan sat in the back not saying a word. "Dan can you take me home?" Bill asked.

"Sure Mr. Baker." We rode in complete silence. I pulled back in the driveway. Bill got out as did Ivan. I got out my side. Bill shook Ivan's hand and thanked him. He and I met at the front of the car.

"You are your mother's son aren't you? I like that Daniel." He let go of my hand and started to leave. "Sorry about the shirt. Oh and your grandfather was very proud of you."

Ivan was sitting in the car as we waited until Bill reached the porch. He let Rusty out before we backed out and headed off.

"Well?" I asked

"He signed the contract. The bank notarized his signature. Next week I have an appointment with him and his lawyer. He wants me to be the executor of his estate?" Ivan was still shocked.

"He couldn't have picked a better man!" I replied.

Ivan made some calls but the word was already out. Soon both of our phones were ringing constantly. We stopped at the one brokers and closed the other deal we felt was the better of the two. By the time we reached the third we knew they would be desperate.

Ivan could have been brutal but we had to make sure it was a win-win for everyone. They took our first offer which meant they would have gone lower but we were happy and so were they. By two thirty Winnie was back in our office and all the documents were signed and notarized.

It was about four when I was on my way home. The phone rang. I guessed it might be Mike.

"Hello?" I answered.

"Hello Dan. Winnie called and said everything is handled." I knew it was him.

"Yes sir. All the I's dotted the T's crossed."

"Daniel you may know that Carl and I are on opposing teams now? It's important that my name isn't brought up at this time."

"I understand Mike. Only Ivan and I know." I explained.

"Molly is going home tomorrow to help with the wedding next week. I would like it if you three could travel with her.

"The girls and I were just talking about that this morning! That would be great."

"Great I'll have her call Lizzy with the details." Mike offered.

"Thank you Mike. Thank you for everything!"

"You just get ready with those clients. I'll see you next week when I get home."

I was on top of the clouds when I arrived back at the condo. I had called Ivan and told him about the talk I had with Mike.

Molly had already talked to Lizzy. The girls were waiting for me to arrive. I flopped down on the couch Lizzy laid on top of me wearing just her bikini.

"Good day?" She asked.

"Well it was a good beginning to the future if it all works out." I didn't want her to get her hopes up too high.

"You still have something to show us?" She asked. I had forgotten all about that.

"Sure we can go before dinner." I happily replied.

"Tell you what why don't you take a little nap and I'll have Sally get you up in a half hour." She kissed me. "I have an errand to run. And yes I'll wear a bra!"

I got up and changed into boxers and tee shirt and laid down on the bed. I closed my eyes knowing this day was a turning point in my life.

A set of warm lips was wrapped around my hard cock. I looked down Sally was greedily sucking on me. I moaned as she reached for my balls. Normally I could last for as long as I liked but somehow the desire to cum overcame me this time.

"Sally!" I warned her as I thrust up in response of her expert manipulation.

This only urged her on. I felt the first contraction shoot a burst of cum deep in her throat. She pulled up her lips sealed to my cock so her mouth could take the next burst. Swallowing all she had milked Sally took me deep in her throat accepting the next burst like the first.

She groaned as the fourth one filled her mouth. Now all that was left was small after spasms amounting to little more than a dribble. She wiped her lips with her fingers cleaning up any she had missed then licked it clean.

"Madam asked me to get you up!" She crawled off the bed. "I am going to take a shower. I might need help!" I joined her and fingered her to an orgasm then helped her wash focusing on her big tits and nipples.

On the way to dinner we stopped by the old house I bought years ago. I turned off the alarm and we went inside, Lizzy and Sally were overwhelmed with the size and grandeur of the place. I told them about some of my ideas to renovate. Sally looked at Lizzy.

"It doesn't look like much but I had it checked out. It's a good solid house. I plan on updating all the electrical, heating, cooling, and plumbing. The floors are solid and can be saved I pointed out. I'm thinking it will cost a fortune but we bought it in a foreclosure.

"You want to live here?" Lizzy asked?"

"I was hoping we could live here." I explained

"Seriously Danny?" Lizzy asked again. She looked at Sally they were almost speechless. Almost.

"Well with what we did today if it all comes through I'll have some extra money. We should be able to get started in six months or less. This place isn't on the ocean but as long as the condo is still ours we have access. This is a perfect location on the inter-coastal. The kids will have neighbors to play with. You can even walk to town. And it's big enough that all of the kids can spend their summers here if they want."

"Danny! I love you." Lizzy kissed me then Sally. "Sally we have to pick out the baby's room. Come on!"

Sally stayed behind for just a second.

"I love you Daniel, and every day I love you more than the day before."

I knew I would need to spend more time here with this new project we have going. The previous owners had redone the kitchen and dining room. The work was top notch but they ran out of money and then lost the house. I figured if I sold the apartment it would cover most of the renovation, but I was still looking at least a hundred grand to get it all done.

At dinner it was all they talked about. Moving walls adding closets. They talked about new tables to seat fourteen. Couches, chairs, colors, an office. It went on for hours after we got home. It had been a long week. A great week, but long.

"Ladies I'm going to bed. Please don't wake me." I cleaned up and was so tired I didn't even slip on boxers. I heard them come in Sally nuzzled my back Lizzy curled up inside me. I nodded off feeling on top of the world.

I had shifted in the bed I was now on my back the distinct feeling of Lizzy on top of me. I could feel her hand gripping my hard cock, she was rubbing her pussy with it. I could feel her wetness then the wonderful feeling of her pussy envelop me.

"Lizzy!" I whispered.

"Shhh. Danny you're asleep. You're having a dream!" She giggled.

"If this is a dream don't wake me up." I teased. I gripped her firm ass and held it tight as I thrust up filling more of her pussy.

"Yes baby, do me!" Lizzy whispered.

I fucked her nice and slow. She came without making a sound, except for her heavy breathing and quiet whimpers. I rolled us over and with me on top she locked her long legs around my thighs and held on. I pinned her ass to the mattress and filled her pussy with my love. She came again as I finished cumming in her. There was no way Sally didn't hear her cum that time as she cried out in pleasure.

"Thank you love I needed that!" She held me tight not letting go. "When you get home tomorrow you need to see your kids and your wives. You will not share our bed until you spend a night with each one. I owe them that and I owe you that."

I rolled us over with her now back on top. Lizzy moved up and kissed me.

"Now remember this was all a dream." She lay her head on me. I could feel her stiff nipples against my chest. We both fell asleep like that.

We met Molly at the airport for the charter flight. It was the same plane I was on a week ago. The four of us sat together. We made one stop to unload other passengers along the way. I then moved sitting further back from the girls working on some proposals. Molly came back to join me.

I noticed Lizzy keeping an eye on her as we talked about business. Her questions weren't basic. I gathered quickly she was taking business courses in college. She reminded me a lot about myself at that age. We talked for about fifteen minutes. I could see Lizzy was getting anxious, a green tinge of jealousy started to show.

After the third glance Molly started to catch on.

"Should I go?" She asked.

"No I think it's better she joins us if you don't mind." I replied.

Molly looked at Lizzy and motioned for her to join us. Lizzy blushed but was too intrigued to not come. Lizzy sat beside me. Molly and I continued with our discussion on what she was learning and what was the real word. I was explaining how I was helped through the years by having mentors. Experience is invaluable when mixed with new ideas. Lizzy and Molly were both surprised when I suggested she contact Sharon. Lizzy's mom.

"Why mom?" Lizzy asked.

"First because she is one of the best at what she does. Second, she can help Molly understand what it's like to be a woman in a man's world." I explained.

"How did you get to be so smart?" Lizzy kissed me and when back to join Sally.

We arrived home to great fanfare I dropped my bags and the kids came running to us all. I don't write about them much but I do spend as much time with them as I can. With my erratic schedule I pop home during the day and see them or bring home work and watch them play. Today and tomorrow I plan on spending with them.

Seeing Nikki and Kat were very emotional on us all. I'll be honest I was a bit concerned how the dynamics would change with Lizzy as my wife. The fact it all happened so fast, and we have been gone so long, could and maybe should, cause friction. My concerns were quickly dispelled when Nikki approached Lizzy first and not me congratulating her on the wedding.

Kat welcomed her as well and then they both embraced Sally before heading to me. That night Lizzy went to stay with Sharon and Mary. That alone reinforced the message she sent before we left. Nikki and I spent the night together. It was like a burden had been lifted from her shoulders. I thought it might be awkward but she was more willing and passionate than she had been in recent months.

Nikki begged me to fuck her the moment the bedroom door was closed. I picked her up, stripped her and myself. She was so wet we didn't even waste time on fore play. I was balls deep in her pussy when she wrapped her legs around me. She pulled tight indicating I shouldn't move.

"Just let me feel it for a minute." She closed her eyes and sighed deeply. "I don't know why Danny, but when you're gone, I always think of you! When I saw you today my pussy longed to feel you inside."

"So you still love me?"

"Danny I'll never stop loving you. I think I love you more now." She looked up at me nervously.

"More. I just divorced you and married Lizzy?" I reminded her. I thought I knew what she was saying but I needed to make sure.

"We did the right thing Danny. You set me free to be who I am, a lesbian with a male lover. We both know that you will be the only man to ever be in this pussy again." Nikki assured me. "Danny, Lizzy is so in love with you, I wanted this for her as much as for you!"

Nikki released her legs. The need to fuck and be fucked was too much to delay any longer. Nikki came twice before I unloaded in her. Sweaty and frazzled from our orgasms she lay beside me. I caressed her and she kissed me constantly.

"I know you won't give me details but how was your honeymoon?" Nikki was dying to know.

"It was very interesting. Great of course. Lizzy is very much like you." I shared.

"Danny she isn't anything like me she's straight, skinny and black!" Nikki teased.

"See that's what I mean. She has fun, she likes to experiment, and she likes to do naughty things..."

"You mean nasty don't you?" Nikki pinched my nipple.

"She likes to do erotic things." I was meeting her half way. I pinched hers back. "She loves to be in control at times but loves to submit as well. Like I said she is very much like you. Maybe that's why I love you both so much!"

"Did she and Sally?" Nikki was trying to slip one by me.

"Nice try. But I'll tell you this, I doubt anytime soon. She had her opportunities to go all the way but never came close. I think you are right she is straight and likes it that way. Still she does appreciate a good orgasm as much as the rest of us!"

Nikki chuckled at my cryptic message.

"I think it's time for another one myself!" Nikki announced. Like I suggested earlier, it was like a fog had lifted. Nikki was insatiable that night giving as well as she got. I was happy for her and happier that I felt as close to her as the day we got married.

Sunday night I spent the night with mom. Lizzy spent the night with Nikki. I knew they would confide in each other about all that happened over the last couple of weeks.

I entered the room with Kat, she was laying on the bed in a sexy number. I extend my hand inviting her to join me. I reached around her waist and pulled her close, her head rested on my chest.

"I love you like the first day we kissed as lovers." I said. Kat pulled her head back. I kissed her as we slowly moved over the floor like in a slow dance. "I hope you know I think of you every minute of every day."

"Me too son." Oh how I love when she calls me that. "Are you happy now? Were we right? Is Lizzy the one?" Mom asked. I stopped dancing. Setting on the side of the bed I pulled her into my lap.

"You mean besides you? Kathryn you will always be number one here." I put my hand over my heart. I kissed her passionately. "To answer your question yes. She loves me maybe more than I love you, and I do love her every bit as much as I love you." I kissed her again.

"I'm so glad Danny!" She kissed me. "You have come so far from the little boy I raised. You are a man now. A successful man at that. Your father would be very proud of you!"

"Mom he should be very proud of you. We have both come a long way! We have three kids, and if you can keep a secret you may be a grandmother in nine months!" I said. Kat looked shocked.

"Danny are you sure?" She was ecstatic.

"No and that is why it's between you and me. But Sally thinks so and she is rarely wrong." I explained.

"So soon? What are you going to do?" She asked.

"Right now I am going to put you on this bed lube you up and ram my cock up your ass until you beg me to stop or I run out of cum!" I teased her.

"Oh Danny. I was hoping you would do that!" Kat kissed me and eagerly assumed the position.

I fucked mom in the ass twice filling her both times. With my balls drained. I brought her the fourth orgasm finger fucking her in the shower like we did the first time we were together.

Monday night I slept with Lizzy and Sally, but no sex. Wednesday night I went to spend the night with Sharon. I wanted this night to be different so I asked her out to dinner. She readily accepted, dressing very sexy for the restaurant we went to.

We talked through dinner where Sharon had a couple of glasses of wine. The obvious topic of conversation was her daughter. By now she knew everything Lizzy had told her and any of the others. We were in the car heading to her house. I pulled into the drive and parked the car not turning off the engine.

"Sharon if you feel better about it we could just call this a night?" I reached for her hand, my mother-in-law's hand. I could feel the conflict inside. She wanted me but she needed me to make the first move.

"Danny. Lizzy made me promise you and I should stay lovers. What do you think?"

"She's your daughter." I reminded her.

"She was my daughter before she married you. She wanted us to be together then?"

This is the first time tonight she allowed herself to be vulnerable in front of me. I trusted my instincts. I reached across the car and pulled her into a kiss. Sharon melted in my arms. Kissing me back passionately.

"I've missed you Danny." Sharon whispered.

"I've missed you. Thank you for giving me your daughter." I kissed her gently.

A flood of emotions burst through as I did.

"Oh Danny she is sooo happy. How could I not want her to be with you? But to be honest I was afraid I might lose you. When we gave you the rings I was terrified. Does that make me a bad mother?" Sharon was crying.

"I think the fact you did give your ring proves you aren't. Lizzy loves you and she knows how much I mean to you and how much you mean to me. I'm sure there will be some adjustments, but she made it clear before she accepted she wanted us together. Shall we go inside? I have been dying to get between your legs since I picked you up."

"You are staying the night I hope?" She teased.

"And all morning if need be!" I added.

We went up to Val's old room, it was like nothing had changed. I remember when Kat and I made love here. I remember the first time Sharon and I made

love on this very bed. There was a nervousness about her as we started. I unzipped her dress, she held the cups to her breasts as I kissed the back of her neck.

"Danny, I need you!" Sharon cooed.

"All in good time." I whispered.

Pulling the dress from her shoulders I kissed along each arm. When I tugged the front down her tits spilled out for my pleasure. Not as big as Sally or Mary, they are more than a handful. I gripped them firmly and pulled her back against my hard cock.

"Lizzy told me she asked Sally to stay." Sharon whimpered.

"For now, I think she likes being dominate like her mother!" I teased.

I was thinking of how Mary likes to be dominated, a situation Sharon is well suited for.

"Yes, I could see that." Sharon moaned. "But like me she wants her man strong!"

Sharon twisted in my arms. I pulled her dress down as she stepped out. With garters holding her stockings in place I noticed Sharon was wearing the sexiest of panties barely hiding her pussy. Sharon tugged at my belt. I released the clasp of my slacks and pushed them down with my briefs. Picking her up a pulled her panties to the side as Sharon guided my cock in her desperate cunt.

"Fill me Danny. Stretch me out for that cock!" Sharon cried out.

Her arms went around my neck, her lips pressed to mine. We were coupled at both ends neither one wanting to let go. We fucked standing up but I knew this could only go on for so long. I waddled to the bed and fell on top of Sharon impaling her with my cock.

"Oh! Shit!" Sharon cried out as I stabbed her cervix. "You're too big for me! How does Lizzy take this?"

She looked up at me while I kicked off my pants. I only smiled letting her know we were not going to discuss that. Unencumbered by my pants I was free to fuck her. Sharon wrapped her stocking covered legs around me and groaned as she urged me on.

I arched my back and teased her nipples, Sharon was getting close to an orgasm. She pulled my face up to hers and locked back on my lips. Her tongue was playing with mine, I moved a bit faster in her. I could feel her passion build as we kissed. Sharon moaned in my mouth, her hands refusing to let me stop kissing her.

I felt her pussy contract, her lips pressed harder! My hands were just above her ass pulling her up so I could fill her whole pussy with cock. I looked down briefly her nostrils flared pulling in more oxygen. Sharon's pussy contracted one more time. I could feel her stomach tighten.

I felt a slight tug on my lip as Sharon bit down.

"AH, oh, ah, oh, ah, oh! Danny!" Sharon shrieked!

She was jerking around beneath me. I rammed her hard a couple of times. She happily protested then he legs gripped me tight to stop me from moving.

"Don't move!" She squeaked. "I just want to feel you in me. I want to feel what Lizzy feels!"

I didn't move for a good amount of time. We actually separated and finished undressing, except for the garter and stockings. Those I insisted she wear. I let her be on top so I could watch her magnificent tits as we started fucking again.

Sharon and I started slow but ended up fucking like wild animals the rest of the night. I did stay past breakfast as we consummated our love again in the morning this time inviting Mary to join us. I doubt I could have filled her pussy with a thimble worth of cum but Mary didn't seem to care after two orgasms.

Thursday night Lizzy and Sally joined me once again in our bed. I had made the rounds and for now and all seemed right with the women in my life. I knew the best days were ahead of us, I also knew there would be days when I would be tested again.

"Are you happy?" I asked my little brown vixen.

"Danny I am the happiest girl in the world!" Lizzy replied as she curled up inside me.

The following day Ivan called to say the business in Florida was progressing just as we hoped. We had commitments from two of the largest fast food franchises at the main location. One of the world's largest retailer was committed and all but signed to a long term lease at the same location. At the other locations we signed off on a major development at a second location where they were putting in an outside mall with retail, restaurants, and a movie theater. It was another long term lease with them developing it but Winnie's shell company financing it. Mike was making out on both ends.

Ivan was handling most of the paperwork I was on the phone constantly. Art had some contacts and secured a couple of leases. One is an up and coming all natural restaurant that has been growing very fast. The only problem we

had now was brokers calling us with offers for land that clients were desperate to sell. The word was out and now they were coming to us.

With his son's wedding coming up Saturday Mike was pretty preoccupied but we did get to meet Wednesday for lunch. We agreed to go back to Florida next week.

Nikki and Sharon took Lizzy shopping for a dress for Mike's son's wedding. They refused to let me see it until the day of the event. Saturday came all too soon but that afternoon I was in my suit waiting for Lizzy to come out of the bedroom.

She was stunning! Lizzy's hair was done up, her makeup was subtle and impeccable. The long pale yellow dress had a faint print. Two spaghetti straps supported the gown that just covered the swell of her breasts. It flowed to a delicate brown accent belt that almost matched the color of her skin. From her slender hips it flared in small pleats resting just inches from her knees. It was a perfect dress for a summer wedding outdoors. Her shoes were wedge sandals open at the toes the painted nails all done up. Small silver earrings and a silver necklace. Were her only jewelry other than her wedding ring.

I presented her a long slender box. Sally, Kat and Nikki watched as she opened it. Inside were two earrings and a necklace. The earrings were gold studs with diamonds. The necklace was five miniature gold hearts intertwined in a circle. Inside each heart was a different gem representing the five women in her life. In the middle was one carat diamond representing me.

"Danny it's beautiful!" She swooned. Lizzy kissed me as I placed it around her neck. She quickly replaced the earrings with the new ones. Sally removed the old necklace and after a round of kisses we were on the way.

We found our way to the country club where the ceremony and reception were taking place. Arriving early we milled around looking the place over. We didn't know anyone so conversations were brief at first. Finally the call to

take a seat was announced. Lizzy and I sat near the back on the groom's side. People of all sorts filed in. Young, old, black, white, Asian. Latino, and Indian. A whole cornucopia of guests as diverse as I have ever seen in one place.

It was at the last moment I caught a glimpse of a familiar person. It was Winnie. She was carrying a young boy who looked to be about two in her arms. I assumed it was a boy only because of the clothes he was wearing.

She went to the front in our row but I couldn't see where. Just before the service started I was surprised we were even invited as I counted just over two hundred people. This was a small wedding I thought for the son of a prominent doctor.

The service was quite nice. Unique in many ways but still touched on tradition. The bride looked to be of Asian descent but with darker skin. She was lovely in her white dress, pretty but not stunning. Mike's son was average height and weight. They made a nice looking couple as they stood taking their vows.

After the ceremony they had the traditional reception line. The actual wedding party and their relatives receiving us was as diverse as the people waiting to be received. As we got closer I recognized Mike, and of course the groom. We hadn't talked much on the plane but he did recognize me. There was the bride and of course their attendants. Her mother (Asian), her father (Indian), a white woman (his mother), Mike, and two clergy.

There was the usual delay for pictures. Hors d'oeuvres were available as well as an open bar. I grabbed a beer and Lizzy had a glass of wine. I looked for Winnie but didn't see her. There were cards with seat assignments just inside the building.

Lizzy found our name and we headed over to find our table. I was surprised it was near the front until I remembered Mike said we would be sitting with his second wife. We walked that way and noticed Molly and a black woman sitting at the table. Molly was a playing with the young boy that Winnie was carrying.

Lizzy and I approached the table Molly jumped up and hugged Lizzy as they exchanged kisses on the cheeks.

"Danny, Lizzy, this is Skylar, dad's wife and my step mother. Sky this is Danny his new business partner and his wife Lizzy!"

As Sky stood up to greet Lizzy I looked over at Molly. It was clear she was dying to see my reaction to the two of them together. We both looked at Sky and Lizzy exchanging greetings of hugs and kisses. I moved to greet Molly with a hug and kiss.

"Uncanny don't you think?" Molly whispered as she held me for just a second longer.

Molly was right, Sky and Lizzy could be sisters. Sky's bright white smile and doe like brown eyes could be Lizzy looking in a mirror in a few years. They looked almost identical except for the age difference. Tall, slender, athletic, they were the same height and skin tone. Having just met her Sky seemed to have that same easy but confident personality.

I offered to shake Sky's hand but she insisted on exchanging the same hug and kiss on the cheek as she did with Lizzy.

"Pleased to meet you Danny, I've heard so much about you." Sky offered.

"Thank you, it's my pleasure to finally meet you as well." I replied smiling. "I hope Mike has said mostly good things." I teased.

"Oh it wasn't from Mike, although you are growing on him. It was from my mother Winnie!" She replied.

"Winnie is your mother? Well, I am honored!" I replied shocked.

It was all coming together now. I should have known. I had been so distracted by business I missed all the clues. I laughed at myself knowing Charles would've had a field day with this I thought.

"And this is my baby brother Sam!" Molly introduced the small boy playing.

Lizzy instantly went to her knee forgetting all about her new dress to speak at his level.

"I have a little brother named Sam too." She told Molly and the boy.

"Only he isn't so little anymore." I added. Holding my hand up to the height of my nose.

"Thank you both for coming" Sky welcomed us again as Lizzy stood up.

Just then Mike and Winnie came walking our way. Something about their body language caught me off guard. My curiosity piqued I watched every move, every glance, every minute detail about them. I could see they were more than just in-laws. Winnie welcomed me first with a hug and then kiss on the cheek.

"I've been wanting to do that since the day I saw you in the office." Winnie teased me as.

She was still holding my left hand when Mike shook my right. I could feel it, they were more than friends. My gut told me they were lovers too. I looked away instantly hoping he wouldn't see I knew.

"Winnie I would like you to meet my wife Lizzy." I said.

They greeted with the standard greeting here a light hug and kisses to the cheek. I looked to Sky to see if she knew about her mother. She studied me then looked to Mike. She gave him a knowing grin.

"Dan, I have duties to perform. I leave these women under your care. I trust you to look after them until I am relieved of such duties." Mike joked.

"It would be my pleasure sir!" I saluted him as if he had given me a command. We all laughed as he went to the head table. "Ladies can I get anyone a drink before dinner starts?"

"I'll have a glass of wine." Molly stated.

"Only water for me I am afraid." Sky replied. "We're pregnant with number two, so I'll pass." She rubbed her stomach. I looked at Lizzy briefly.

"Danny I would like a scotch, neat!" Winnie added.

I left them behind as I went to the bar. Molly's boyfriend Jim was in the wedding party we learned. After dinner all the normal traditions were followed. As the night went on a young teenage girl picked up Sam and took him home.

Lizzy and I danced for some time. The bride and groom visited our table. You could see and feel the how close they all were. We eventually met Molly's mom. She seemed like a lovely woman but I had the distinct feeling she didn't get along well with Sky and Winnie.

It wasn't what she did say, it was what she didn't that made an impression. Most of our time was talking with Winnie, Sky, and Molly. Lizzy and Sky hit it off. Molly and I talked about, you guessed it, business.

It was getting late Lizzy and I made the rounds thanking everyone for inviting us. The last to say goodbye was Mike and Sky.

Mike pulled me aside as the girls chatted.

"I would like for us to get together soon Daniel. As Molly and I suspected Sky has taken a liking to Lizzy and you. Maybe when we are in Florida next week we can go to dinner?" He asked.

"We would like that." I replied. I could tell he wanted to say something about what I knew. I decided to play my hand. He let me off the hook once, I felt I owed him.

"You have beautiful daughters...and handsome sons. You're a lucky man Mike." I acknowledged, then hesitated. "We both are."

He had not missed the fact I said daughters, not daughter. A welcome smile crossed his face knowing no more needed to be said.

"I trust you will tell Lizzy before we meet. I would hate for her to learn later." I could see his concern for both our wives.

"I'm sure the news will only bring them closer. They do have so much in common!" I winked letting him know there was a hidden meaning.

On the way home Lizzy was ecstatic about the whole night. The jewelry, the wedding, Winnie, Molly, and especially Sky. I told her about going to Florida next week and Mike and Sky wanting to go out. It was only when we were in

bed with Sally did I tell her about Sky being Mike's daughter as well as his wife. She and Sally were desperate for details but of course I had none.

Lizzy jumped on Sally forcing her on her back. Lizzy kissed her repeatedly, her excitement already flowing. Lizzy raised her ass and offered me her sex. I gripped her hips and thrust my cock in her tight pussy.

"I wonder if the three of them do it together?" Lizzy hissed as I drove in deeper.

"What do you think pet? You want to be my mommy tonight? You want to watch me make love with my daddy?"

"Yes baby. I'll be your mommy tonight!" Sally moaned as Lizzy worked her tits.

"I love you mommy. You're so much fun to be with. When daddy fills my cunt I am going to let you lick his love from my pussy. Then mommy, he's going to fuck you!"

"Yes baby, mommy needs to be fucked. She needs to show you how we made babies like you!" Sally replied in character. Lizzy pushed back on me hard squealing in delight.

"Rub my clit mommy. Baby needs to cum!" Sally reached between them and flicked Lizzy's exposed clit. I could feel my heavy balls slap Sally's hand as Lizzy started to cum.

"Yes mommy make your little girl cum for daddy!" Lizzy screamed as the forces inside exploded in her pussy. I was primed but not ready to pop. Lizzy pulled off when she gathered her wits. "Daddy lie down I want to fuck you while you lick mommy's pussy."

I lay on my back, Lizzy mounted me, her cunt wet and puffy. Sally now dripping herself straddled my face

"Kiss me baby, kiss mommy while you fuck your daddy" Sally moaned.

It was the last thing I heard. Sally's thighs covered my ears as she ground her pussy to my mouth. If Sally was any indication on what they were doing. Lizzy must be working her magic on her nipples again. My balls were ready to burst, when Sally came, she flooding my face with her cum. Sally lifted off, I saw Lizzy's small tits bouncing her nipples long and stiff. Free to concentrate on herself and my cock Lizzy came as I filled her pussy.

"Oh yes mommy. Daddy is going to make a baby!" Lizzy announce.

Sally wasted no time in positioning herself to accept my cum as Lizzy hovered over her.

"Yes mommy, that's daddy's cum I am feeding you!" Lizzy pinched Sally's nipples making her groan.

I stood on the bed and took Lizzy's hair presenting her with my cock.

"Baby. Mommy needs it bad. Get me hard for mommy!" I teased.

Lizzy looked up at me. She gave me a big smile.

"Yes daddy your baby will get you hard for mommy!" Lizzy has been hungry for my cock before, but this time she loved doing it for the game we were playing.

She took the cock that just left her pussy and sucked me for all she was worth. When I was good and hard she released me. Lizzy spanked Sally's pussy firmly.

"Mom! Open your fucking cunt so daddy can shove his big cock in you." Lizzy squealed. She smacked it again even though Sally did as instructed. Sally moaned in Lizzy's pussy. Lizzy started fucking Sally's mouth.

"Do it daddy. Fuck her pussy while I cum!" Lizzy commanded.

She ground her pussy harder on Sally as my cock penetrated Sally's red gaping cunt. Lizzy moaned as she came on Sally. This sent Sally bucking against me. Lizzy rolled off and I plunged deep in Sally as she came.

"Thank you baby. I love your pussy. Mommy loves when you cum in mommy's mouth!" Sally sighed.

She was getting ready to cum again. Playing mommy to Lizzy was keeping her extremely excited. I continued to pump her hard. I knew my balls weren't going to last much longer. I looked at Lizzy she knew what I was thinking.

"Mommy daddy is going to cum. Do you want it in your pussy? Maybe you want it in your mouth? Or maybe you want it on your tits so baby can watch you lick it off?" Lizzy only drove Sally crazier if it was possible.

Sally was just about to cum the options were driving her nuts she wanted them all.

"Mommy hurry!" I yelled.

"Tit's!" Sally screamed. She started cumming. I fucked her hard but I needed to pull out soon. I felt the first blast coat her walls. Sally moaned.

"Tit's! Please Danny on my tit's!" Sally squealed.

I pulled out and gripped my cock. Sally groaned in frustration her fingers replaced my cock in her pussy. I shot a wad over each tit leaving streaks along her chest. I fell back and watched as my orgasm continued to throb along my body. Sally gripped her tit and started sucking it clean. Lizzy bent over rubbing her black nipple through the creamy cum coating them. When Sally was done licking both of her own Lizzy offered hers.

"Here mommy lick daddy's cum from your baby's little titties!" Lizzy purred.

It was an amazing night of role playing and sex. It didn't happen often but when it did I knew Sally was never happier. Lizzy loved to do this for her knowing Sally's list was getting shorter.

Fourth of July Sunday. 2010.

Monday Lizzy had a doctor's appointment scheduled. I took her and waited as Lizzy got the results she was hoping to hear. Lizzy was in fact pregnant! She was so ecstatic she couldn't wait to call Sally and tell her she was right.

Lizzy called her mom and told her to bring Mary and the boys over for dinner. I dropped Lizzy off at home then called Nikki and invited her to lunch. We were setting at our favorite cafe drinking ice tea after eating.

"I wanted to tell you something personally before you get blindsided." I smiled letting her know it wasn't bad news, at least I hoped. "Lizzy is pregnant."

"Danny that is wonderful! Congratulations!" Nikki reached for my hand across the table. I took it and she squeezed it.

"So you are ok with this so soon? I just want you to know..."

"Dan, you are so special. Your wife is pregnant and all you're worried about is me?" Nikki fawned. She squeezed my hand again.

"I just want you to know that I still love you and I appreciate what you did for Lizzy and me." I replied moving to sit beside her.

"I know things will change, that's inevitable, but our kids will still be a priority." I said. "If you ever feel I'm neglecting you or the kids talk to me. Please don't take it out on Lizzy. Nikki, she thinks the world of your friendship. I would hate if anything I did came between the two of you."

"Danny I'm happy for you both. This is what Lizzy and I talked about before I made the decision. Lizzy wants kids, she wants your kids. I want you two to be happy. I love that you are doing this but really I'm happy." Nikki leaned in and kissed me.

"And Danny, you have never neglected anyone of us. I promise if you do I'll come to you first." Nikki replied smiling.

I kissed her right there in the cafe. I was just as much in love with her as the day we first kissed. Our relationship had changed but not our love.

"I want to sit down and work out an equitable settlement with you Nikki. It needs to happen just in case anything happens to me." Nikki looked me in the eyes.

"Do what you think is best and call my lawyer. I trust you Danny. Now take me back to work so I can look surprised tonight when Lizzy tells me how lucky she is!" Nikki kissed me.

That night with everyone on the patio, including Jr. his girlfriend, and Sam. Lizzy broke the news. Sally stood beside me as the others crowded around Lizzy with congratulations.

"I have a good feeling about this Daniel." Sally whispered.

I took her hand I could feel the positive energy she felt. Just then the boys came our way and offered their good wishes. When the kids were put to bed Kat, Nikki, Lizzy and I were setting in the living room talking. Sally came out of the bedroom standing before us.

"I would like to tell you all something." Sally announced waiting for our attention. "George has agreed to pay for the renovation to the house in Florida to our specifications. Darius and the crew will be coming next week to get started."

I stood up.

"Sally that's great but why?" I asked for us all.

"Daniel I have lived with you for all these years and he has given me nothing. I have asked for nothing, but I am still legally his wife. Should we divorce I'm pretty sure it would cost him more than one renovated house." Sally smiled. I walked over and kissed her. "When it's done he will pay for the house. I'm then giving it to you and Lizzy for a wedding present."

"Sally!" Lizzy jumped up and kissed Sally over and over. "I love you so much! It will be a perfect place to raise our kids!" Kat and Nikki looked at each other and then at me. I think it was time we all sat down.

We talked as adults for much of the night working out a plan for how this might work over time. Kat and Nikki assumed we would all live under one roof. But with the business in Florida booming and the clients I had here at

home it looked like I would need to commute. It was comforting to see them all trying to accommodate each other's needs. In the end we had an interesting set of options. What was clear was there was an overriding desire to stay together if possible.

Tuesday Lizzy, Sally, and I boarded the charter plane with Molly, Sky, and Winnie. Mike was coming tomorrow. I dropped Lizzy and Sally off at the condo then went to see Ivan. Things had steam rolled while I was gone. Closing the deal so quickly had caught everyone off guard. Now that it was done offers were flowing in. Morris was waiting for leases to be signed to get started constructing.

I had him go see Sally and Lizzy about the house. He was going to be the general contractor. I wanted to get permits pulled for the house. That night he was waiting with his architect with some preliminary changes to my original plan.

Morris and I made some changes for traffic patterns and structural integrity. The final plan is six bedrooms upstairs and three baths instead of two. On the first floor we will open it up to five larger rooms. With the kitchen newly remodeled we could focus on the other parts of the house.

Wednesday night Lizzy, Sally, and I went to dinner with Mike, Sky, and Winnie. After dinner we returned to the condo and sat around and talked. Mike and I were discussing business as the girls talked about the house renovations. I suggested to Mike we should consider starting a property management company instead of hiring one.

I suggested Molly could be in charge and offered Sally as an assistant. She had helped George early on in his business and knew she would be invaluable as a mentor. That and she could be available as Molly finished her college courses. He said he would think of it. We set up a meeting with Ivan for Friday morning.

Friday Mike and Molly showed up. Ivan and I had very good news. The permits were waiting to be approved, the contractors lined up and the leases were being signed. Ground breaking should be taking place by the first of August.

Mike's good news was six of the original investors had committed to come with us. The funds were allocated and the options would be paid in full by our expected start date if not sooner. He handed me a check for Mr. Baker for eight hundred thousand dollars.

Mike was going back soon to work as his sabbatical was drawing to a close. A new class of interns had arrived and he was needed back at the hospital. He and I would still meet weekly but mostly at home.

We then talked with Molly about starting a management company and what that would entail. She seemed very excited but scared.

The early part of October we were moving into the finished house. It was beautiful. George was true to his word. The interior mirrored the original house very closely. We supplied some of our own fixtures and amenities but everything was new including the exterior.

I had a four car garage added out back that we paid for. When it was done I put the house in a trust for Sally and Lizzy. The house back at home was put in a trust for Nikki and Kat. Once again except for the condo, I was homeless.

Nikki and I had reached a very fair settlement. As well as her half of the house she kept all her money, her 401K, and a car. We had joint custody of the kids, which I agreed to support financially. I pay half the house bills. Nikki and Kat split the other half.

It has worked out that I usually leave Florida Wednesday nights with Lizzy and stay at home until Sunday night when we fly back. That way I have the weekends with the kids. If there are empty seats Sally will come also.

By the holidays Lizzy was just starting to show to the average person. Her breasts were growing and Sally had started taking her injections and using a breast pump to stimulate her milk glands. We brought all the kids down for the school break. Nikki and Kat came when they could. Sharon and Mary came for a week and just loved being near the water.

We celebrated New Year's Eve 2011 in the new house in Florida.

Sky and Mike had their second child a little girl in January. The first buildings were now up and starting to see some business. Ivan and I helped Mike and his investors purchase some other commercial properties. A few we sold for a profit. We also purchased a large residential development that had been started prior to the crash. This was Mikes dream. He wanted to get into the residential arena.

I took Lizzy home to have the baby so Sally travels with me now. March 2011 is here and so is our new baby girl Mikayla. While both of her mothers are doing great dad is just holding his own. Kat has started helping me more as Sally and Lizzy attend to Mikayla. The kids are now in love with their little sister even Kyle is happy to hold her. Hunter and Kenzi just love knowing they have someone they will be able to boss around.

Sally is withholding sex until Lizzy can start again. Nikki and Kat have been more than happy to take up the slack. Sharon has been sexually charged seeing her daughter first give birth and now being a grandmother. Lizzy and Sally have been staying at Kat and Nikki's house until her first checkup. After that we will take Mikayla home to Florida.

The night after her six week checkup Lizzy and I went out to dinner alone. I could tell she was a bit nervous, and to be honest so was I. We returned home Sally was in the nursery with the baby. I led Lizzy to the bed and sat down beside her. As I kissed her once again this night I could tell she was tense as I touched her.

"Danny I'm not skinny anymore!" Lizzy complained. She was worried about her figure.

"Liz you just had a baby. Give yourself some time." I started to remove her top. "You're still beautiful and sexy!"

"You just like my big tits!" She teased.

"Oh I think there are other places I like just as much as your tits." I replied. I had her bra off now nibbling on her swollen breasts.

"Like my fat ass?" She wiggled it, so reached down and pinched it.

"Never knew you had one before!" I zinged her.

"You just want to shove that big cock in it. Too bad buster! That is still not going to happen any time soon!" She teased back.

"Well I could think of other places?" I kissed her firmly on the lips.

"Not there mister. There is only one place you get tonight and if you don't hurry it might just close up!" She teased again.

I finished undressing her and myself. I suckled some of Mikayla's breast milk then grabbed some lube.

"Do we need that?"

"Just for the first few times. You're still healing, this will help, trust me. I rolled on my back. I wanted her to control things for now. Lizzy lubed me up, with

her eyes closed, she slipped the head of my cock just inside her pussy and stopped.

"You ok?" I was concerned.

"I want to remember this moment!" She grinned.

Lizzy took her time and started down my cock. She kept her eyes closed I watched her soft belly jiggle as she worked herself deeper. Her tits dripped milk her breath already unsteady. I could feel her warmth work over me.

I looked down her pussy was stretched the dark brown skin yielding to my slippery cock. Lizzy was further down than ever before. She started fucking me and with each stroke she went deeper. At one point she held her breath. She pulled up and as she came down she expelled like I was pushing the air from her lungs.

I was getting excited just watching this thing of beauty tentatively make love to me. I wanted to thrust up so bad but I waited to see how far she could go. I didn't have to wait long. Lizzy was getting excited herself. I could feel her juices starting to flow.

Next I felt her pussy brush my pubic hairs. Lizzy was concentrating, her eyes closed her pussy throbbing. She was starting to stroke my whole cock I could feel her pussy start to spasm as she gave the final thrust.

"Danny! Oh god. I have always wanted to do that!" Lizzy had my cock balls deep in her tight snatch. "You made me a mother. Now make me a woman! Fuck me hard. Make me cum all over your whole cock tonight!"

Lizzy fell on me as I rolled us over. I took my time to make sure I wasn't going to go deeper than she could enjoy. Lizzy was groaning with desire as I plunged over and over in her greedy cunt. She had her hands on my hips to

control my depth. When I felt my hair brush her clit she gripped my ass cheeks and pulled me all the way in.

"Yes!" She hissed. She opened her eyes looked right in mine. "Fuck me Danny I want another baby!" She buried her fingernails in my ass cheeks thrust her pussy up until she winced. "Fill my cunt you stud give me your son!"

I had no choice, the thought of her wanting another baby overpowered my senses. I was ready in an instant to do as she commanded. I fucked her, as she came I pumped a week's worth of baby making cum in her pussy.

I thrusted up and let my weight pin her to the mattress her milk filled tit's and hard nipples pressed against my chest. I kissed her as she searched for ways to work my cock even deeper. I hovered over her letting the last of our spasms die as my cock slipped from her pussy.

"Are you ok?" I asked. I could see she was happy but I needed to make sure we didn't go too far too fast.

"Oh Danny that was perfect! I love you! I can't wait until Pet gets to see me take your whole cock." Lizzy kissed me. "Now drain my tits and fill me up again. Mommy wants a baby boy for daddy!"

Lizzy, Sally, Mikayla, and I flew back home to Florida. When I came home from work the next night Lizzy was feeding Mikayla, her one brown breast latched on by our daughter's mouth. The other breast was uncovered the nipple large and swollen. Mother and daughter were bonding.

Sally was in the kitchen making dinner. She had on a pair of tight shorts and a tank top over her nursing bra. The years of working out has done wonders. Sally will never be slender but with her massive breasts and her now trim waist flowing to womanly hips she was still sexy for being in her sixties.

I went into the den and made a few phone calls preparing for the next day. It was around nine when Lizzy brought Mikayla in and let me hold her. The great thing about babies is about all they do is eat and poop. The bad thing about babies is all they do is eat and poop! I had been holding her about a half hour when the later was taking place. I called in reinforcements.

Lizzy appeared wearing her black bustier outfit complete with all the trimmings. She had Pet on her leash the flaps of her nursing bra dangling and clothespins clipped on each swollen nipple. She wasn't wearing panties but had a butt plug with a tail in her ass.

"Come my cow. Your baby will need to be fed soon and you are wasting all of that precious milk!" Lizzy had a short flail whip in her other hand. She smacked Pet on the ass as she turned her into position to take Mikayla from me.

Sally looked at me embarrassed but clearly excited as well.

"May I Sir?" She held her arms out. I handed her the baby. "Thank your Sir."

My hand slipped down and rested on her ass cheek. I picked up the tail the long black strands slipped through my fingers as she turned to leave. I gripped just the end, gave it a slight tug then let fall back against the back of her legs. Sally moaned as the plug tugged at her tight hole then drew back in against the stop. Lizzy started to lead her from the room, stopped and turned.

"I'll need you in the bedroom to milk the cow!" Lizzy tugged on the leash. "Ten minutes!" She yelled back.

I went and cleaned up and met them in the bedroom. Mikayla in a fresh diaper was being fussy by now. Lizzy placed her on a thick blanket on her back. She tugged Pet with the leash and indicated she should get on her hands and knees. Pet was now hovering over Mikayla her milk swollen breasts clamped off.

"Are you ready to be milked my pet cow?" Lizzy whispered in Sally's ear.

"Yes Madam!" Sally's voice was hoarse with desire.

Lizzy removed the clothespin from her right tit. Lizzy rubbed the big red nipple hanging down on the end of her massive milk filled breast. Milk started to drip as Lizzy grasped the teat and squeezed. Pet moved her tit to Mikayla who quickly latched on and started to suckle, the babies' protests falling silent.

"Lizzy you will drain the other one!" I demanded. Lizzy looked up at me shocked at what I was implying. But I remember the look she had when she fed on Nikki's tit years ago.

"Danny?" Lizzy questioned.

"Now baby!" I replied firmly.

Lizzy moved to the other side a sly grin crossed her face. She laid on her back and slid under Pet's other breast. Releasing the clothes pin she latched onto the other teat. Sally groaned as she shifted to accommodate them both. Lizzy's hand went to her pussy. I smacked it away.

I wanted her excited not satisfied. It wasn't long before Mikayla was done feeding and was now asleep. I took the baby burped her and placed her in the crib in the next room leaving the door open.

Returning to Pet I lifted the tail and slipped my hard cock deep in her oozing pussy. With the butt plug still in place Sally moaned in pleasure. From the sounds of it Lizzy was still feeding since I could hear her slurping. I knew Sally was too excited to last long. I fucked her hard and steady letting her orgasm take hold.

She started jerking as she came her tit pulled from Lizzy's mouth. Milk was slinging to and fro as her massive tits flopped in tune to my fucking her. Sally was cumming her whole body convulsed as I buried my cock deep inside her. I could see and feel her juices flood over my prick dripping off my balls.

Lizzy wasn't through with Sally, she moved offering Pet her pussy. Lizzy slipped her head between pet's legs. Her long slender arm reached around Pet's thigh and took my cock from her pussy.

"No!" Pet protested as Lizzy took it in her mouth. Pulling me out Lizzy responded.

"Lick my pussy cow! You cum again when I do!" Lizzy commanded placing my cock back in Pet's pussy.

Lizzy let me start fucking Pet again licking my balls. She would then pull me from Pet's pussy and suck me clean. Sally responded each time with a groan in protest. They were both getting worked up my balls were burning to unload.

Sally clamped down on Lizzy's clit desperate to move things along. Lizzy responded by bucking her hips up. She took my cock from Pet's pussy and jammed it down her throat again.

"Please let me cum!" Sally wailed. "Fill my pussy Sir!" I could hear Lizzy moan as Pet quit servicing her cunt. Her other hand found Pet's head forcing it back to her bucking cunt.

I was inclined to fulfill Pets request as I was ready to cum, still pulling out of Lizzy's mouth was no easy decision. Lizzy helped by guiding me back in Sally as soon as I bottomed out I started cumming. Lizzy then did something she had

never done! She slid under Sally and sucked her clit. Sally exploded slamming herself hard against me.

"Yes. Yes. Yes. Oh thank you Sir!" Sally yelled out. I was afraid she would wake the baby.

I was filling pet's pussy full of cum Lizzy was squirming under her she wanted to cum. Sally latched back on her clit just as I pulled out of Sally. Lizzy was trapped, she was starting to cum from Pet's oral assault. Her face directly under Sally's cum filled pussy.

I pulled on the tail of the butt plug still wedged in Pet's greedy ass. Pet contracted her pussy globs of my cum dripped on Lizzy's face. Lizzy was cumming bucking against Pet's mouth until she fell limp below Pet completely spent.

Cum still flowed above Sally her so Lizzy positioned her mouth catching the last drops then licked the large glob from Pet's puffy lips.

Lizzy slid from beneath Sally turning her over Lizzy moved on top and filled Pet's mouth with my love. I looked on as they kissed and squeezed each other tit's spraying fine mists of milk over each other. Pet whimpered as Lizzy giggled.

"Use your mouth and get Sir hard!" Lizzy commanded.

Pet led me to the bed where she guided me to lay down. Sally bent over me her ass again in the air her massive tits still dripping as they hung down. Pet then proceeded to work my cock with her mouth. When I was sufficiently hard Lizzy came over and played with the butt plug still lodged in Pet's ass. Sally moaned and groaned as Lizzy fucked her ass with the fake cock.

Lizzy pulled the leash up and kissed Pet. "Fuck your ass on his cock!"

Tugging Pet with the leash she positioned her over my cock facing my feet. Lizzy pulled the plug from her ass and added lube to us both. Sally guided her open asshole over my cock and started down. Lizzy lightly spanked her pussy as she descended over my cock.

Pet gave a loud sigh as she hit bottom. Lizzy continued to spank her pussy. Sally flinched and contracted around my hard cock with each slap.

"You like that don't you pet? You like to be bred like a real cow don't you? You like it up your ass!" Lizzy teased.

"Yes Madam. I love how his big cock stretches me. Thank you Madam!" Sally moaned.

She was panting and getting excited again. I could see her legs were getting tired though. I pulled her back to lay on me facing up. I fucked her ass from below. Lizzy mounted us both she faced Pet her leg between ours. I could see her pink clit extended from the little brown sheath. She positioned it over Pets and rubbed them together. Sally's asshole contracted around my cock even tighter.

"Fuck us Danny make our hungry pussy's cum for you!" Lizzy squealed.

I pumped Sally from below. Lizzy rubbed her from above. Sally was so close to cumming I thought she would snip my cock off with her asshole. I gave her one last thrust as Lizzy rubbed her clit hard.

"I'm CUMMING!" Sally yelled.

Her body didn't know whether to buck against me or Lizzy so she just pushed my cock deep in her ass. Lizzy started to cum now and rubbed them both until any contact was too much. Lizzy fell to the side panting. Sally wanted me to cum but I knew where she wanted it most. I rolled her off the side. Sally lay on

her back splayed like the slut she just was. I got to my knees and stroked my cock coating her chest.

The hot ropes of cum brought her back from her orgasm as she fed on her tit's and nipples. I fell back completely drained. I woke to the sound of Mikayla fussing. I looked to find Lizzy curled up inside Sally sleeping in their favorite position. I got up, picked up the baby, changed her and took her to the kitchen. I warmed up a spare bottle and rested her in my arm and fed her.

As she was taking the bottle I wondered where she would be twenty two years from now and whose bed she would be in?

They say it's always the calmest before the storm. I found out the hard way they were right. Mikayla was a great baby. Sally and Lizzy spoiled her endlessly. Sally was working part time with Molly at the new management company Mike and I are partners in.

Lizzy started taking online college courses. Initially she wanted to be a teacher but Molly suggested she take business courses instead. Back at home Kat still worked with Sharon at the insurance company. Nikki was a top accountant where she worked. My oldest three are in day care three days a week, Mary is the nanny the other days.

I still commute each week. It seems someone was going or coming with me. Shuttling everyone around to be with each other was becoming a problem now that Mikayla was getting older.

Occasionally feelings got hurt but I tried to make sure everyone spent some time with the other women as often as possible. All the kids were down for the summer, Mary coming with them. She went home to Sharon as Kat and Nikki took vacation time to be with them overlapping one week. Lizzy announced in July that she was pregnant with our second child!

Work was starting to really pick up. Ivan and I talked about a bigger office. He was reluctant but I explained that I would like to do it now while he was still working to handle the transition. We found a great location. Consolidating the real estate company, the management company, and Mikes investment company all in one facility. The extra offices we leased out. After selling the other building we almost broke even.

Bill Baker stopped in one day while I was at the office he asked if I would attend a fundraiser he was sponsoring for disadvantage children in November. Considering he was the guy that started this whole operation it would have been difficult to turn him down, but I would have done it anyway. I readily agreed.

The investment company was growing. The properties we first started with were now almost completely built. The theater was now showing movies, the restaurants serving food, the retail stores their goods. Two of the three initial properties we completely leased the third over 75%. We are just now closing a deal to invest in a huge multi building, multi unit condos on the inter-coastal.

Mikes investment firm will be involved in the financing and our reality company will handle all internal sales. That is huge because even if they don't buy at this location we now have a list of known buyers to show other properties to.

Mike was becoming a real friend as well as mentor. We met at least once a week often times more. He and his wife Sky would go to dinner with Lizzy and I regularly. On occasion when they were all in town Sally and Winnie would come also.

As you could see things are going good for the most part. Being away from each other seemed to be the only drawback for now and that seemed under control.

The house in Florida was filled to capacity for Thanksgiving. Mary and Sharon came down with Kat and Nikki and all of my children. With little room to spare the massive table in the dining room was buzzing with activity.

The Saturday after thanksgiving was the benefit for the kids Bill invited me to attend. Mike, Molly, Sky and Winnie all came. We hired a couple of babysitters so the seven adults could all attend as well. It was a great event. We got to meet many of the kids that were living in an orphanage as well as those temporarily living with families.

Bill Baker approached me as I stood with Lizzy and Sally at one of the silent auction tables. He asked if we had a minute. We followed him to a teenager holding the hand of a young girl. Bill introduced her as his great granddaughter Cindy. Lizzy looked at me as Sally move to greet this small and frail child.

Sally bent down to say hi, the little girl started to smile. Her blond hair and blue eyes radiated as Sally put her arms out as the tiny child struggled to walk and fill them. Sally whispered to her then the girl giggled. She looked up at Lizzy her eyes sparkled with happiness. Lizzy bent down as the girl reached up to her. Lizzy picked her up as Cindy squealed in delight.

"She is beautiful Bill you must be very proud and happy." I said. He looked at me then down to the child.

"Dan, I was hoping you and I could find a day we could talk?" Bill looked serious for such a happy event.

"Sure." I answered.

"Good. I would like if Lizzy could be there also." He added as his hand combed through Cindy's hair.

"Tell you what why don't you bring Cindy to the house tomorrow and we can talk while the kids play. Say 12:30 for lunch?"

"Thank you Daniel we'll be there." Bill and I shook hands. We stayed for another ten minutes or so talking before the teenager came and got Cindy.

When Bill showed up Sunday without Cindy I was a bit concerned. Moments later a woman showed up and dropped her off in front as Bill waited. Bill and Cindy came into a house of utter chaos. Kids playing, women cackling, football on TV, and on top of that Lizzy was feeding Mikayla.

I could imagine for the old man living alone this was going to be too much. Instead he took it like a trooper. Cindy clung to Sally the moment she came in the door. Her voice weak and raspy she looked on as the older kids stopped by only long enough to say hi.

Lizzy took Mikayla upstairs to the bedroom to change her then brought her back down to join the fray. Bill had met Kat, Nikki, Sharon and Mary, but I took this opportunity to I explained who was related to who and what they each did.

Cindy wanted to play with Mikayla, she was only eight months old but Cindy was happy to just sit with her and Lizzy. We sat and ate lunch, when the mess was cleaned up Bill asked if we could talk. Bill was taken back when Kat, Nikki, Sharon, and Mary joined Lizzy and Sally with us in the living room. Nikki was holding Mikayla. Sally held Cindy who was nuzzled deep in her massive breasts.

"I was only expecting to talk to Dan and Lizzy but I guess you all might as well hear this too." Bill looked at each of the women.

"It's ok Mr. Baker please feel free to speak frankly." I suggested.

"Please I would like you all to call me Bill." He asked.

He looked over at Cindy who was now sleeping on Sally's lap.

"As you know Cindy is my great granddaughter. I'll not get into details but she is no longer living with her parents. I have legal custody of her but they won't let me raise her. I live alone and my house is not the proper environment for a child. I talked to Dr. Clark one day after he examined her. He suggested I talk to you."

"I am honored but why me?" I looked at Bill and the women.

"You see Dan, Cindy was born premature. He says you know about such things." The whole room went silent. Bill looked nervously around the room." You see Dan, Cindy is almost two and half!"

We all looked at the small girl wrapped up in Sally's lap. We all knew she was too small for that age.

"So how can I help you Bill? I'd be happy to help you find a home." I gladly offered.

I had been to his house many times and he was right. The women all looked at me like I was missing something. As I looked back at them they made it clear I was.

"Danny what I think Bill is looking for is a home for Cindy to live in not a house to buy." Sally explained as she stroked Cindy's blond hair.

"Oh!" It still took a minute to sink in. I know what you're thinking, all this time I'm telling you how smart I am. How I study people and all that. But in my

defense he was a client. I thought he wanted housing advice, a proper place for him to raise her.

Not my brightest moment I will admit.

"OH! Bill are you asking me if we will adopt Cindy?"

"Not adopt, well at least not right now. I was thinking more of taking her in, raising her in a loving home." He looked around the room then back at me." I have money Dan. I can pay you!"

I looked at Lizzy first. I knew the moment she looked at me the decision had been made. I looked at Kat and Nikki I saw the same look Lizzy has. Mary and Sharon both grinned knowing I already made up my mind. Then I looked at Sally and knew if I didn't she would.

"Bill we don't want your money, but we do want to help!" He looked around there wasn't a dry eye in the room. "When do we start?"

He was blown away. I guess he thought we were just going to talk and maybe decide later.

"Are you sure you don't want to talk about it?" He asked. He was surprised not a word had been said.

"Bill if she doesn't live in this house as soon as possible I'll be living with you! Am I right ladies?" The whole room agreed.

Bill stayed and watched some football. Cindy was the center of attention until the woman from child services returned to take her away.

The whole next week was spent on getting her released into our care. Bill had the ultimate decision but he wanted to make sure child services did their job too. This was just in case his grandson ever took it to court. By the next weekend however Cindy was at least living in the house.

Christmas was around the corner. We took Cindy with us as we all headed north for the holidays. Lizzy was almost seven months pregnant and starting to show. Not only that, she was becoming very emotional. I wasn't sure if it was hormones or the first Christmas with Mikayla that made her so moody. Cindy was fitting right in, the kids loved her and she loved being with the Mikayla.

This was the best Christmas I had had in many years. The house was filled with holiday spirit, and the presents didn't hurt either. It had been a tiring but productive year and I was looking forward to the next.

It was the first day everyone went back to work after the holiday. I was in the office at home. Lizzy went to have lunch with Mary and Sharon. I heard Mikayla fussing and went out to see if I could help. Sally picked up Mikayla and moved to the couch to feed her. Removing her bra she nuzzled the baby until she latched on.

Cindy hopped up on the couch and without a word gripped Sally's other tit and sucked on it as well. Soon she was latched on feeding with the baby even duplicating the sounds Mikayla made. Sally looked up at me she was so moved she started to tear up.

"I think you've found another mouth to feed!" I teased.

"Looks like you're getting cut off!" She teased back.

"Gladly!" I replied. I watched for another few minutes then went back to work. I had a feeling this would be a good thing.

We stayed in town for the 2012 New Year's Eve Party which was held Saturday night. Monday I went into the northern office and talked to Art. I was still doing a considerable amount of business here but the demands of Florida were only growing. The expense of flying was starting to add up financially as well as physically.

It was only a two hour flight but all the time getting to and from was eating into the day. Besides with Cindy and now another baby on the way it would be harder to bring Lizzy or Sally along. Art and I talked deciding to look at our options. I had a meeting with Mike that afternoon but he canceled.

Lizzy was at the house alone with Mikayla. Since Mike canceled I decided to go home and work from there. Sally and Cindy were spending the day with Mary and the kids at Sharon's. Sally asked if I had talked to Lizzy. Replying I had not, Sally explained that Mary had talked to Sharon.

It seemed Sharon was concerned when Kat asked to leave work early after she received a call from Lizzy. I told her I was on my way to the house when Sally asked me to pick her up at Sharon's. I stopped and picked her up, she seemed concerned but I told her she was just probably feeling a bit under the weather and didn't want to bother Sally since she was with the kids. When we arrived Kat's car was in the drive.

We entered but I didn't see anyone. As we walked in I could hear voices in the one bedroom. They were just whispers so I figured Lizzy just put Mikayla down and didn't want to wake her. I went in the direction of the room. The closer I got only one voice could be heard. It was moms.

"Yes baby right there." Kat whispered. Strange phrase for Mikayla I thought. "There Lizzy, she will like that." Kat's voice strained in desire.

Confused I stood just outside the door trying to decipher the conflicting inputs. Kat must be teaching Lizzy some new way to get Mikayla to go to sleep I thought? Sally looked at my confusion and moved right beside me. We heard mom groan. Sally and I looked in just as...

"Yes you little bitch suck my clit!" Kat hissed through clenched teeth.

They were both naked. Mom was propped up on her back her legs splayed open and pulled back by her arms. Lizzy was face down in her pussy we could hear her lapping at the juices Kat was leaking.

Being a man I did what men do. I watched! At first I must have ignored the jingle of the keys and the front door slam. Hearing the door Lizzy looked up seeing my shit eating grin and smiled. Her face was wet with pussy. Kat looked over her eyes glassy with passion. She saw me alone. Her desire taking over she placed her had on Lizzy's head and guided her back to her pussy.

"Almost there baby! Almost there!" She whispered neither of them paying any attention to me.

I was shocked of course, except for one time in the throes of passion had Lizzy ever done such a thing, and then it was just a brief lick of Sally's clit. I was getting excited just watching and wondering who seduced who? I reached down and rubbed my cock as Kat whimpered with Lizzy's tongue in her cunt.

I heard the engine roar and tires squeal. Jolted from my primeval lust I looked around to see Sally had left. When I realize she was pissed it occurred to me why. Shit! I needed to find her and talk to her.

I looked and found the keys to mom's car and took off after her. The first place I looked was Sharon's. The car wasn't there. I looked at Sharon's work and then at Nikki's. I tried her phone but she refused to answer.

It was getting late now and very close to dinner time. On a hunch I looked at one last place. Relieved and yet uncomfortable I pulled mom's car behind mine.

Maggie opened the door when I knocked. "I was just getting ready to call you. She just showed up ten minutes ago. Danny she won't tell me why she's here."

"Danny go away!" Sally screamed.

"Sally you know I'm not leaving you here. Maggie will understand but George..."

"You leave him out of this!" Sally yelled.

"I'm trying to. Now if you don't want to go to the house I understand. Let me take you to a hotel for the night."

"Why Danny! Why?" She sobbed.

"Sally I don't know. I'm as surprised as you, but not now, and please not here!" She looked at me I wanted to throw up. "Please Sally not here. I'll fix it. I don't know how at this minute but I will."

"I don't want to go back!" She protested.

My phone was ringing in my pocket. I looked at it was mom. I canceled the call knowing this was more important.

"I know you don't, but I need you to be strong for me, for you." I replied. Maggie looked at me she knew she needed to help.

"Sally think of Cindy. You can't leave her. Daniel is right. You must go before he gets home."

"You will fix this?" Sally looked at me. "Cindy can stay?"

"Sally, Cindy is going nowhere. You need to come with me now. We can go anywhere you want but we must leave here now. Please say you will come." I pleaded.

"Will you take me to dinner? Alone?" She stood up.

"You lead and I'll follow. Just you and me." I promised.

Sally kissed Maggie thanked her and we took off. I swear I saw George pulling in the street as I followed Sally. I called Kat, she was wondering where her car was. I told her I couldn't to talk to her now, I had an emergency. I asked her to get the kids home and I would see them all soon.

Sally held it together for dinner but swore she wouldn't go back to the house and see those bitches together. Fuck!

I rented her a room and called Molly in Florida and booked two tickets to Florida in the morning. I promised Sally she and Cindy would be on the plane together in the morning. I told her I would have Mary bring her things tonight and I would bring Cindy and see her off in the morning.

I called Mary and asked her to meet me at the house in an hour. For the moment the only one that knew what was going on and why was me. I arrived at the house Kat knew something was up but fortunately Lizzy had no clue.

Nikki was home I asked her if she could get Lizzy out of the house for a couple of hours without raising suspicions. She said they had talked about seeing a movie and would take her if I promised to tell her what was going on later.

With Lizzy out of the house Marry showed up and Sharon was with her. I got Sally's stuff and went with Mary in her car to deliver her clothes and Cindy to the hotel. I left Mary with Sally and Cindy and brought my car back home.

Back at the house. I explained what happened. What Sally and I saw and how upset she was. I explained the scene at George's.

Kat was all but destroyed. She explained that Lizzy had called her at work and explained she was having an emotional day. Kat came home early, they talked for some time. Lizzy confided in Kat she thinking about all that Sally had done for us and wanted to pleasure her in this special way. Lizzy insisted the first time to be special so she asked for Kat's help.

Mom told her to just get with Sally and she would be understanding and appreciative. Lizzy started to bawl and carry on then Mikayla started crying and soon mom found herself giving in. That was when Sally and I saw them together. What we saw was just Kat helping Lizzy.

I could tell Sharon was getting upset now, probably because Lizzy didn't come to her. She said nothing at the time but left shortly after. Kat and I talked but she was still devastated. I told her we would get through this.

Nikki and Lizzy came home both in a good mood. Lizzy went to feed Mikayla. I took Nikki aside and told her the whole story as well. During all of this I asked that Lizzy not be told yet. I explained she is emotional enough and this pregnancy seems to be harder on her than the first.

Nikki became very quiet as I explained that I was planning on spending the night with mom to calm her down. When I told Lizzy I was going to be with Kat, she kissed me good night and headed to our room. At least she was happy.

I found myself in the bedroom with mom knowing she was still quite upset. I started to undress her as she stood between my legs as I sat on the edge of the bed. I removed her bra and started sucking on her tits. No longer filled with milk they were soft and settled lower on her chest. The nipples still long grew puffy as I sucked on them.

"Sorry they're no longer what they once were." Mom whispered.

"They're perfect. Soft with big nipples!" I teased.

"But they sag, floppers if you ask me." She teased herself. I cupped them from below and held them up where they should be.

"I love them saggy. Reminds me how much you loved me and our kids to feed them. The nipples set just perfect. Besides when you go bra-less it drives me crazy." I teased. I sucked them until she begged me to stop. Pulling her on top of me we kissed.

"I love you Kat!"

"Even after today?" She asked still upset.

"Even more after today. We can fix this I just need to figure some things out. Now make love to me like it was our first time!" We kissed deeply.

Moving back on the bed I rolled on top of her. She closed her legs so I couldn't enter her pussy.

"The first time you fucked my ass!" She reminded me. I forced her legs open. She then complied giving me access to her cunt.

"You're being punished." I explained as I slipped my cock in her slick pussy.

"Yes son! Punish me. Punish me good!" Kat hissed. "Punish me until I beg you to cum. Then fill me with your love."

Having Kathryn here with me just felt right. Sally holds a special place in my heart, I love Lizzy more than I can explain, but there is one woman that has stood with me through thick and thin. I eased in her pussy savoring every sensation as her womanly sex parted for me.

Mom moaned softly as she took me in, then whimpered as I slowly pulled out. We had just started and I could tell she needed me tonight. Her whole body welcomed me to press tight against her. Kat's nails raked my back softly, my hands gripped her hips.

She grunted and I buried my cock until her mons pushed back desperate for me to find her deepest pleasure center. With her legs splayed wide Kat's heels locked behind my knees. She started to undulate below me a clear sign she was ready for more.

I picked up the pace, her response was instant gratification.

"Oh Danny you do love me!" She squeaked. "Not harder just faster."

I pulled up to my elbows, we both looked between us and watched as my cock pulled all the way out and then back in quickly. Kat's naked lips glistened as they clung to me pulling out then disappeared trying to follow me back in.

"Hurry Danny, I can't wait much longer!" Mom sighed as her body responded in a way that I knew all too well.

"No my love you're being punished. Cum for me, show me you're sorry." I scolded her.

"Harder then Danny, punish me, make me cum for you!" Mom demanded

I pounded Kat's pussy until she wrapped her arms around me as her orgasm took over. She grunted and groaned arching her back offering me pussy to do as I wished. It was a powerful climax but I was not finished with her yet.

I waited until the last spine tingling shudder passed through her body, then I slowly fucked her to a second orgasm filling her with my love. I waited until she was asleep before I left her bed. I took a shower then checked in on the kids.

I went to my office and thought about what was going on and why. For almost ten years this has been one happy group of women that loved each other. Even when Lizzy and I got married there was never the type of concern I had now. It was almost two in the morning before I nuzzled up to Lizzy. Tuesday night I didn't get much sleep.

Wednesday would be worse. I was up early heading to the hotel, when I pulled in I saw Mary's car was still in the lot. My guess is she stayed the night and I for one was happy for that. I called up first, they were waiting for me. Cindy was thrilled to see me as she babbled on about Mary who left to check up on the kids at home before they went to school.

Sally explained she wanted to breast feed Cindy before we left for the airport. She was cordial to me but still miffed. I decided now wasn't the time to chastise her for this behavior. I knew that would come soon enough. I had a feeling this had been brewing for some time. I wondered if this was the straw that broke the camel's back.

I dropped Sally and Cindy off at the airport. Sally kissed me passionately but I could tell she was still upset. I held onto the kiss not letting her go. Finally breaking free she looked me in the eyes. She could sense my concern and confusion. I sensed her fear.

"I'm sorry Daniel. You don't deserve this. I'm not mad at you. I just ...she. I can't believe they ..."

"You go home and think about this. I'll see you there Thursday. Please just don't say anything to upset her until I get there and we can talk!" I said firmly.

"I promise!"

"Good. Now I want you to go see Molly and Ivan before I get there tomorrow. They will tell you what I need to know." I kissed her and Cindy one last time before they went through security.

I was on my way to see Art again. I'm sure he thought about it more than I did but he wasn't dealing with world war three and I was. Before I arrived I got a call from Lizzy. She was trying to call Sally and couldn't get a hold of her. I told her I would be home soon to explain where she was.

Art was actually prepared to make me a substantial offer to buy me out. In return he wanted to continue to do business with me in Florida. He had many baby boomers that were looking for retirement homes and rentals. All he wanted was a commission for any of his clients we closed a deal with. I told him to send the stuff to Ivan and I would let him know by Monday.

I went home to find Lizzy and Mary embracing. Lizzy was distraught. Mary had spilled the beans, well at least half the can. She didn't tell Lizzy why Sally went home, just that she did because she was mad at Kathryn.

"Why won't she talk to me?" Lizzy wailed when I hugged her.

"Look honey Sally is upset right now. I sent her home to take care of some business." I hugged her trying to get her to settle down. "I promise you will

talk to her soon. I'm going home tomorrow. I will talk to her and figure this all out."

"Danny I need her! Please tell me what is going on!" Lizzy protested.

"Baby I'm not sure myself right now. I know that doesn't help but you need to give me some time." She was sobbing in my chest.

I needed help so I called in reinforcements. I called Jr and Sam. They both agreed to take their sister out for dinner. I had at least a few hours to deal with this now. The problem is Sam called Sharon.

Now Sharon is mad at Mary for getting her daughter Lizzy upset and not coming home last night. By the time Jr picked up Lizzy. Nikki was pissed at Sharon for getting her mother Mary upset. That and now she had an attitude towards Kat for starting the whole thing.

By the time Lizzy came home she was at least in a better mood but still worrying about Sally. She fed Mikayla and again she headed to bed early. Kat was over at Sharon's and Mary was staying here tonight.

Nikki was blowing off steam complaining about how Kat was getting all the attention. I warned her that she had better tone it down before Lizzy heard her and things got worse. Mary spouted off at me for yelling at Nikki, although I really didn't yell. As for Mary, I was already not happy with her. They were both on thin ice. I didn't respond to Mary except to say I thought was time she go to bed and get some rest.

"My mother will go to bed when she want's. The little bitch started this not mom!" Nikki yelled at me. Even Mary looked at her.

"Nikki! That's enough. You're upset, stop there before you say something you will regret." I warned her. Mary looked at me then Nikki.

"Or what!" Nikki screamed.

"Or I will need to punish you!" I said firmly.

"I would like to see you try!" She challenged me with a wicked grin.

"Nikki!" Mary warned her.

"Mom you stay out of this!" I didn't hesitate. I moved to her picked her up and threw her over my shoulder and headed to her room.

"Mary get in here!" Like a dog obeying a command she followed us in. Nikki kicking and screaming.

"Let go of me you asshole!" I pulled out the chair and sat down. Twisting her over my knees I lifted her skirt up and pulled down her panties SMACK! SMACK! SMACK!

"Mary get me something to restrain her hands!" I yelled. Nikki was wailing her hands then tried to protect her ass. Mary found some nylons. I had Mary tie her wrists as I restrained her.

"Danny let me go!" She pleaded. "I'm sorry..." I pulled Nikki's panties off and stuffed them in her mouth.

"Mary get undressed now!" I barked. Mary stood and unleashed her massive tits. Easily as big as Sally's milk filled breasts.

"Remove Nikki's clothes!" I stood Nikki up holding her wrists. Mary undressed Nikki but couldn't remove her blouse or bra because of her arms.

"Cut them off." I demanded.

Nikki started to argue through her gag but Mary soon returned and cut the clothes off. Nikki was fighting back so I took her back over my knees and spanked her again. SMACK! SMACK! SMACK! SMACK! SMACK!.

Nikki's ass was now red Mary looked on. I could see Nikki was getting wet. I carried Nikki to the bed with her arms behind her. She had only her legs to resist. I indicated that I needed more restraints.

Mary provided panty hose. We cut them in half, I tied one leg to the head rails and the other to the foot rails. I kissed Mary so Nikki could watch and then had her undress me. My cock sprung out as she released it. Mary dropped to her knees and took me in her mouth.

Nikki squirmed around on the bed. I sat between her legs and fingered her pussy. As my fingers became coated I interrupted Mary and fed her Nikki's pussy juice. Nikki started to respond to my fingers by thrusting up. I spanked her pussy making sure to get her clit.

Nikki yelled into the panties. Soon she was shifting her hips trying to avoid the spanking. I fucked her pussy with my fingers still feeding Mary. Nikki came back around begging for more. I spanked her pussy again, again she protested. I pulled Mary from my cock and kissed her. Nikki moaned with desire.

"Fuck her mouth!" I instructed Mary. She was confused since Nikki was gagged but she positioned herself over Nikki's mouth. Rubbing her cunt over Nikki's nose and mouth Mary was getting close to cumming. I pulled her forward to her hands and knees.

"Please Danny I need to cum." Mary whimpered.

I offered her my cock she happily took it back in her mouth. I played with her nipples and even her pussy over her back. Her juice was dripping over Nikki's chest. I was almost ready to cum. Pulling free I move behind Mary and slammed my cock deep in her pussy. My balls were right over Nikki's gagged mouth. Mary had lowered her mouth to Nikki's cunt.

"Don't lick her pussy she is being punished!" I warned Mary.

I grabbed her hair and pulled her head back. Mary didn't protest but Nikki did.

"Fuck me Sir. Fuck my needy pussy!" Mary gasped as she started to cum. "Punish my bad little girl!" Mary's pussy slammed back on me you could hear the slaps as we coupled. I started spewing cum deep in her womb. The silky goodness too hard to resist any longer. Nikki was desperate. She lifted her head and nuzzled my balls with her nose. She wanted to cum.

I thrust Mary's face in her daughter's cunt. "Don't let her cum!" I commanded.

I pulled the panties from Nikki's mouth.

"Please Danny I'm sorry. Please let me ..." I jammed my pussy and cum covered cock in her mouth. She sucked me hard trying to punish me for withholding her pleasure.

"That's it you naughty girl suck your mom off me!" I reached down and gripped her jaw pressing in deeper. "You will never call a woman I love a bitch in anger again do you hear me?"

Nikki looked up at me knowing I wasn't playing now. I was serious. She nodded her eyes telling me she was sorry. I pulled my cock from her mouth. I

pulled Mary up from Nikki's pussy still locked onto Nikki's eyes. She rolled her hips looking for Mary to let her cum.

"I'm sorry Danny. I'll never do that again." I bent down and kissed her. She slipped her tongue in my mouth asking for forgiveness. I replied letting her know I was sorry too. I pulled off.

"May I cum Sir?" She pleaded.

"Not until you're done being punished." I pulled Mary back and let Nikki clean her cunt of my cum. Only when Mary came again would I let her lick Nikki to a climax. We ended the night with me fucking Nikki's ass while Mary sucked on her clit to an earth shattering orgasm.

I took shower and again well into the night slipped in behind Lizzy. With half of the women mad at the other half and no one sleeping in the same place I knew this needed to end and soon.

I was on the way to Florida when I talked to Ivan and Molly. I called Art and expressed some concerns of Ivan's. Art said he would get some answers but didn't see that it was a deal breaker.

Sally was there to pick me up. She had Cindy who ran to my waiting arms with a big smile. I could tell her time alone was beneficial. She could barely wait for Cindy to give me a kiss before she gave me one. Sally played me some voice mails Lizzy left her. She was all but begging Sally to call.

"Danny, she still doesn't know?" Sally was still devastated over the event but no longer mad at Lizzy.

"She knows something is wrong, but not why. Don't you think it should come from you?" I asked.

Sally took my hand as we walked to the car. Cindy hugging my neck as I carried her in one arm. Sally was conflicted now. She was hurt but didn't want to upset Lizzy any further. We drove to the house and went inside for lunch. We talked about all the drama back at home. I had a feeling I knew what the problem was and I was working on a solution. I was still missing one critical piece.

"Would you girls like some ice cream before I go to work?" I asked.

Cindy screamed in delight. Sally only smiled knowing I was going to win this easily.

"Sure, seems the only one that will be complaining is my waist line!" Sally joked. We walked the several blocks to the soft serve stand.

Cindy was playing on the slide as we finished up. She looked healthier and stronger. Not only that, she was walking better. Sally thinks it's the breast milk. I think it's the love.

We talked about what Ivan learned and what Molly had to say. I had some tough and expensive decisions to make but like every time adversity faced me I followed my instincts.

"It's time I go fix this. All of this. I need to go to work." I looked at Sally.

"How are you going to do that?" She asked.

"I don't know yet but I know it can't be done here." Sally went and got Cindy from the slide. When she came back I gave her some sobering news. "I'll need you to fix your problem first."

"How am I going to do that?" She asked. For maybe the first time since she left George Sally was scared.

"I don't know but I do know you can't do it here either. So you better have a plan by the time I get home!" I explained.

We were walking back to the house. Cindy holding each of our hands. She was so happy skipping along. We were approaching the house that backed up to our house. It was a nice sized place nowhere as big of course, but it was on a side street off the inter-coastal. There was a pickup in the drive, in the bed was realtor signs. The driver pulled one out of the bed and carried it to the yard.

"Excuse me is that house for sale?" I asked.

"No just had some signs to get rid of. Thought this looked like a nice place to put one." He looked at me like I was some sort of moron.

"I'm sorry. Could you hold on one moment?" I asked him as I dialed my phone.

"What do you mean hold on? I have work to do." He complained.

I held up one finger indicating he should wait.

"Hello Barb this is Danny. What you asking for the house on Pine?"

(Pause)

"What's your bottom dollar. I have a buyer?"

(Pause)

"Well it's me."

(Pause)

"Yep. Cash."

(Pause)

"Great. I'll take it!"

(Pause)

"Thanks. I'll be by in an hour to get the keys." I hung up the phone. "You can take the sign back. The house is sold."

"Great that just cost me forty bucks." He said disgusted with me. I opened my wallet and handed him fifty.

"Here, take this and if they ask you tell them I took down the sign." I grinned.

"Mommy. Daddy just buy a house?" Cindy was pulling on Sally's hand. Sally lifted Cindy up and kissed her.

"Yes he did!" She looked at me. "Daddy loves you and me so much. He wants us to be happy. He wants everybody to be happy!"

Sally kissed me.

"You need to go to work. I'll be ready when you get home." Sally said as she looked at me. "Danny. You were right. I'll have our bags packed."

"I'll get a flight. See you baby." I kissed Cindy. We went home I picked up my stuff and went to the office.

I was home by six.

"We don't leave until eleven. Do you want to kill some time?" I smiled.

"Danny I need to see her first. Is that ok?" Sally was nervous how I would react.

"Even better. Where is that kid of yours?" Cindy was playing hide and seek. We played until dinner then after I read her stories until we both fell asleep.

Sally woke me up. I took a shower and we headed to the airport. Mike was waiting for us with Winnie as I carried Cindy in my arms. We gave each other a sly smile. He nodded to me and I to him.

The trip was smooth the cool night air was great for flying. We touched down about one in the morning. I unbuckled and picked up Cindy from the seat. Sally looked at me I could see she was scared. We left the plane first, two people were waiting in the terminal for Mike and us. Sky was there to get Mike and Winnie who had been gone for almost two weeks on vacation.

Beside her was Kat. She looked at Sally I could tell she was just as scared as Sally. Mike slapped me on the back.

"Good luck Dan, talk to you this week." He and Winnie kissed Sky then walked away. Mike looking back with a wink.

"I'm going to load the car. I think you two have some talking to do." I stated. Cindy saw mom and wanted down. When I sat her on the floor she ran to Kat.

"I missed you Kitty!" Cindy said. I picked up our bags and waited. Kat hugged her.

"I missed you too baby!" Kat said, then she looked at Sally. "Oh and how I missed you!"

"Come on pumpkin. Mommy needs to talk to Kitty." I told Cindy. She took a small bag and followed me out the door. She looked back at Sally and Kat.

"But daddy they're kissing!" Cindy tried to explain.

"They are? Well pumpkin that's a good thing!" I replied happily.

The ride home was quiet except for Cindy chattering before she nodded off. The house was completely still. Kat took Cindy and headed to her room. I guided Sally to the master suite. We entered silently. I stripped Sally, I could feel her shaking as I removed each garment.

"Are you coming?" She whispered.

"I think it best the two of you figure this out." I answered.

I kissed her and smacked her gently on the ass sending her on the way. I leaned against the door frame as she slipped into bed behind Lizzy. I could see Lizzy snuggle deep inside Sally under the covers.

"Madam your pet is back!" I heard Sally say. Lizzy woke with a startle from her slumber.

"Sally! Your back! Where have you been? Why did you leave me? No one will tell me anything!" Lizzy released a barrage of questions. Then she saw me. "You're in trouble buster!"

"I think Sally has something to tell you first." I replied.

I looked at Sally in the dim light. She knew now was the time. I opened the door and closed it waiting on the other side.

I walked away when I heard the Lizzy starting to apologize, and Sally do the same. There were sobs and crying and then silence. Only then did I go to the couch and grab a blanket a fitting spot for me to allow this in the first place.

I was awaken in the morning by Cindy crawling up on the couch to be with me. She was so happy to be back with the other kids she was bubbling over with energy. Hunter and Kenzi loved having her around. Kyle by now was beyond babies but he kept a close eye on her making sure she wasn't taken advantage of by the older kids.

Kat and Nikki were getting ready for work. I asked them if they would come right home after work I had something to discuss with them. They readily agreed. I called Mary and asked if she could come over for the day, she said she would.

I called Sharon and asked her to come over for dinner also. She was still pissed but agreed only when I told her everyone else would be here including the boys. I then called Jr and invited him and his fiancé to join us. Last but not least I called Sam. I explained that I would like him to come. He was on board and promised to make sure Sharon came.

Kat had given Mikayla a bottle earlier. I heard the shower running in the master bedroom around nine. I took Mikayla and Cindy in around ten to Sally and Lizzy so they could feed them. Mary showed up shortly after, she and I went downstairs and set up the play area how I wanted it.

Ivan called in the afternoon with good news and great news. I talked to Molly she was excited about my suggestion.

By six the house was bustling JR brought his fiancé Rachel. I gave them each a chore to do. Sam good to his word brought Sharon. Sally and Lizzy were on board. Mary was still not happy with Sharon and Kat.

Nikki and Kat were talking but were still on the outs. Sharon seemed pissed at the world for some reason. Fortunately the pizza's I ordered were delivered on time. With the adults putting their differences aside for now we pared up so each child had an adult, Sam finding a new friend in Cindy.

She clung to him like he use to do to me. Fifteen people all at one long table eating and getting along, for the most part. I sat beside Sharon, I could sense she wasn't a happy person. I took her hand and held it under the table. She looked at me. It was one of the few times I felt how vulnerable she was. I kissed her cheek and whispered in her ear.

"It will be all set right soon." She looked at me, I could see she was skeptical.

"But it's not all what you think. Danny. Some of it's about work..."

"It's ok. Trust me just a little bit longer." I kissed her cheek again. I could feel a sense of relief as she continued to hold my hand.

While the table was being cleared I met with Sally.

"Well do you think they're ready?" I asked. She looked over at the others.

"I have a good feeling now that we are all together. What about the kids?" Sally asked.

"I was going to send them away but I think they should stay it affects them also. Besides it's their love that brings us all back to our senses." I explained.

"Daniel when did you become so smart?" Sally chuckled.

"I had three great mothers, plus Charles and George." She kissed me on the lips in front of everyone.

"It's time." She said.

"Ladies and gentleman I have something to tell you. Grab a kid and please get comfortable." I announced.

JR was with his girlfriend Rachel. Sam was with Cindy. Kat had Mikayla. Nikki had Kenzi. Mary had Kyle. Sharon had Hunter. Sally and Lizzy joined me as I started to address them.

"First and foremost I want to apologize for what has been going on the last week, but really it has been festering for longer than that. I take responsibility for that. For letting you down." I started. All of the adults looked at each other.

"We all know that the day Lizzy spent with Kat was what triggered all this drama. You all know that Sally's feelings were hurt, and she felt betrayed. Lizzy felt she was doing something for Sally. They have made up and hopefully they are past that."

"We are." Sally explained. Everyone looked at Sally and Lizzy setting beside each other holding hands.

"We just needed to be with each other and work it out. We have too much to lose being apart." Sally explained.

"And that is where I have failed you all." I started again. "This business in Florida has provided us with an opportunity to provide for our families now and well into the future. But living in two different places is ripping this family apart. And make no mistake we are all one big family."

I looked around at each person. Even the kids seemed to know I was talking about them too.

"Now the question is? How do I fix this? I would give up the whole darn thing in Florida, move back here just to keep us together and happy. It occurred to me that if I did, we could lose Cindy. Now we all know that isn't going to happen!" I looked at Sally and the rest as they all looked at Cindy.

"So our financial future is in Florida and so is our hearts. The only thing we have here are jobs and houses. So I propose we all move to Florida. Well anyone that wants to!" I offered.

Nikki stood up to speak

"What about jobs. Can we afford not to work? Besides I like working. I like my career!" Nikki asked looking scared. Sharon, Kat, and Nikki all looked at me.

"I'm glad you asked!" I smiled at her. "If you chose to come you will be taking over for Ivan one day soon. You will be the numbers person running two to three businesses." I explained. Nikki seemed pleased I would even suggest it.

"Sharon if she decides will be running her own insurance company. I would expect if she and Kat are still on talking terms, will still work together." I explained. "I have the option of buying an existing company whose owner is looking to retire. Regardless Kat will have a job there working directly for the owner."

Sharon looked at Kat, I could see they both wanted this. Nikki was seemed even happier.

"Lizzy I am hoping will take over for Sally at the investment and management company after the baby is born. Sally and Mary will be running the big house, as well as the second house we just bought that is right behind it. Jr and Rachel can move into the apartment if they want. Sam will be heading to college, so he can live at home or on campus depending on where he settles. Kyle, Kenzi, and Hunter will be starting school next week in Florida!"

There was considerable discussions before Sharon spoke up.

"Danny. This is all so sudden. When do you need to know?"

"I have decided I cannot live without all my kids together. We will be home Sunday. Lizzy, Sally and I will be there as well. I was hoping Nikki, and Kat could give notice and start by the end of the month." Kat jumped up and hugged and kissed me.

"Yes! Count me in. Nikki are you coming?" Kat gushed turning to Nikki.

Then the moment came only I was anxiously waiting for. Nikki looked at Sharon, I could see she was conflicted.

"Sharon I love you but I can't leave my babies!" Nikki looked at Sharon pleading for her to come. Sharon looked at me she gave me that wicked grin letting me know she knew the answer.

"When I need you, you are always there!" She looked at me then to the other women. "You knew during dinner didn't you?"

I only smiled.

"Daniel we ladies have been fools lately. We have been petty and selfish." Sharon added.

She went and picked up Cindy and kissed her.

"All you have ever wanted is to love us and have us love you. You knew before you got here what the answer would be. You just had to show us what we have forgotten." Sharon glared at me.

Sharon was mad and happy at the same time. I could see her gain her composure, the strength we both knew she had. Sharon kissed Cindy again as the girl wrapped her arms around her neck and hugged tight.

Sharon looked at all the ladies. "We forgot how much we love and need each other! Can I ask you one question?"

"Sure!" I grinned.

"Can Cindy sit on my lap in the plane?" The whole room erupted in cheers and tears.

Everyone was hugging and kissing. The kids even seemed to know that something good was happening. I was holding Cindy and she was the happiest of them all. Somehow she knew this was for her too. Rachel and Lizzy came to me as I stood looking at all the drama from the past months and weeks melt away.

"Do you really love them all? The women I mean?" Rachel asked me, then looked at Lizzy.

"Yes I do." I looked at her seriously. "Each and everyone the same but different." She looked at Lizzy to see her reaction. Lizzy just nodded. Rachel seemed unconvinced.

"Ok, let's say there is a fire here, right now. You can only save one woman here. Who would you save?" Rachel asked challenging in me now.

"That's easy!" I said. I handed her Cindy. "I would save you, but have Cindy go in my place."

Rachel seemed shocked by my answer. Cindy hugged her and played with her long hair.

"He really means that!" Lizzy explained. "That's why we love him so much."

Lizzy started kissing me her milk filled tits and pregnant belly pushing against me. I offered to take Cindy back.

"May I?" Rachel asked holding on to Cindy, who was now talking to her as she continued to play with her hair. "I think I am starting to understand."

"Sure. But don't get too attached Sally can be very protective!" I teased.

The damage that had been done over the last week had been all but forgotten except by Lizzy. Against my better judgment she insisted Sally be punished. I refused to administer it but allowed her to proceed with my supervision. She and Sally slipped into the master suite as I was finishing up

with Kat and Nikki and the kids all tucked in bed. Mary and Sharon left earlier along with the boys and Rachel.

Lizzy met me at the door she was dressed in her favorite dominatrix outfit, except her belly was bulging out. Sally lying on the bed covered up.

"Take a shower we aren't ready for you yet!" Lizzy commanded.

I returned to find the lights were turned down and several candles were lit around the room. It was clear Sally was tied to the bed. A single chair was at the foot, her spread pussy not five feet away. I could see Sally's face was shiny. Lizzy's pussy was puffy her pink clit extend from the dark brown sheath. Lizzy was running her hand over Sally's body as it quivered beneath her. Sally's head was propped up so she could watch herself being punished.

"YOU, will not speak!" Lizzy pointed to me." "If you do you will leave and not return until morning!" Lizzy was clearly in control tonight. I nodded I understood. She then turned her attention to Sally.

"Tell him!" Lizzy commanded her.

"Danny, please don't stop her!" Sally was scared but at the same time excited.

"Good. Now my pet we have unfinished business you and I." Lizzy spanked Sally's pussy hard several times. Sally groaned quietly. "Lift your pussy!"

Sally strained to lift her cunt from the bed. Lizzy quickly slipped a pillow underneath her ass. Moving between Sally's legs Lizzy lowered her mouth to Sally's pussy

"Madam you don't have to do that!" Sally moaned.

SMACK. SMACK. SMACK! Lizzy punished her pussy hard.

"Yes I do you ungrateful bitch! Why do you think I went to her?" Lizzy shouted. SMACK. SMACK. SMACK! Sally strained her pussy higher begging for her to continue. "Now shut the fuck up and cum for me!"

Moving back between her legs Lizzy again started eating out Sally's pussy. I watched amazed as Lizzy brought Sally to the edge of a massive orgasm. Sally thrashed about the bed begging Lizzy to stop. Lizzy paid her no mind and continued to bring her to a new level of excitement.

I could see Sally straining against the bonds holding her. She so much wanted to pull Lizzy up but to no avail. Her eyes closed, her stomach tensed, I could tell she was savoring every moment of this encounter.

A slight whimper escaped, Lizzy looked up and pinched her nipple causing Sally to only moan louder. If Lizzy was not accomplished she was at least effective. Sally's legs wanted to close but tied off she couldn't. Her knees slightly bent, started to shake. I watched as her hands opened wide then balled into fists hoping the bonds would fail.

"I love you child!" Sally groaned.

With all her strength Sally pushed her cunt up against Lizzy as her body started a frantic shudder. Sally's legs stiffened and her toes curled, it was all too much as her orgasm ripped through her body.

"No more!" Sally cursed.

Her tits flopped around her chest, her stomach looked like tidal waves were breaking beneath the surface as her muscles contracted again and again. I

have to admit it may have been one of the most intense orgasms I have ever witnessed. Then it all stopped.

Sally lay motionless. My guess is Lizzy only stopped because her tongue and jaw were no longer able to continue.

Lizzy moved on top of Sally and kissed her for the next five minutes.

"Are you ready for your punishment?" Lizzy asked.

Filled with lust Sally only nodded.

Lizzy moved to the night stand and pulled out several clothes pins I watched as she clipped them to Sally's milk filled tits. Sally filched with each one but didn't cry out. Nikki then clipped several to Sally's now gaping pussy. I flinched along with Sally. This was something Mary might like but I wasn't sure about Sally. I sat silently looking on stroking my cock.

Lizzy walked behind me to the dresser she returned with two long candles. One white one red. She moved to Sally. I tensed up ready to grab Lizzy when Sally looked me in the eye letting me know I shouldn't stop this.

The first drop hit her on the upper slope of her breast. She closed her eyes, purred then looked at me letting me know she wanted this. My cock went limp as Lizzy continued to drip hot wax over Sally's body.

"You like that don't you slut?" Lizzy teased.

Sally only nodded.

"My bad little pet is going to pay this time!" Lizzy chuckled.

Sally continued to respond with low moans of pain and pleasure. When the first drops of wax dripped over her pussy Sally hissed her response for me to hear.

"Yesssss!" I closed my eyes I couldn't watch.

"Open that cunt for me slut!" Lizzy commanded. I expected to hear it sizzle in her juices.

This went on for several minutes. Then just before I was going to leave Lizzy kissed me.

"Look at our pet now!" Lizzy whispered, I opened my eyes.

Pet was covered in wax almost hiding her pussy and tits. Even the clothespins were coated in place.

"Shall I continue Pet?" Lizzy asked.

"Yes madam!" Sally said huskily.

Lizzy looked at me. She stared me down reminding me of my agreement.

Moving to Pet's side she peeled off the wax from around her pussy. Pet was purring as each piece fell to the bed. The drippings along her perineum elicited the loudest response, her eyes glassing over.

Lizzy moved to the night stand I saw her pull out the lube. She came to me slathered her hand and coated my cock. Then she moved to Pet. Her hand

moved over Pet's pussy, it now glistened with lube as well. She added more and moved to her ass. Lubing that as well.

"Master come here!" Lizzy hissed. She released Pets legs and then her arms. Pulling her legs up to her hands. "In her ass!"

I moved in place on the bed. Lizzy grabbed my cock and stuffed it in Pet's ass. I fucked her for several minutes while Lizzy probed her pussy. She had three fingers inside churning her juices. Sally was in heaven her body squirmed with desire.

Lizzy pulled me out as Sally protested and indicated I should stay where I was.

"Pet on your knees!" Lizzy barked. "You cum when I tell you!"

Sally quickly moved in position her ass just inches from my cock. Lizzy guided me back in then went at her pussy one more time. I could feel the pressure as her fingers played below my cock. Sally was bucking on us both. Lizzy's left hand crossed over her right and pushed me out of her ass.

"No Madam!" Sally protested.

"Not yet pet! Soon I promise!" Lizzy pulled her hand from the gaping cunt in front of me.

She lubed it up and dripped more lube over Pets ass crack. Placing her hand at the entrance I watched as she curled her thumb between her fingers. She pressed back in Pets pussy as the lube allowed her to push deeper. Sally groaned.

"Take it slut. Take your punishment!" Lizzy ordered "Don't you dare cum!"

Sally grunted pushing back. I was so enthralled at what was taking place at the moment it didn't occur to me to stop this.

Lizzy worked her hand further in, she twisted her wrist. I could see she was getting concerned as well. Still like a deer in headlights I did nothing.

"No Sally!" Lizzy pleaded.

"Yes Madam you must!" Pet pleaded.

Reaching between her legs she grabbed the thin brown wrist and pulled the long delicate hand deeper in her pussy

"Fuck you Slut!" Lizzy yelled she jammed her hand inside to where Pet held her wrist. "Cum for me slut!"

Sally lowered her face in the mattress and yelled out as a massive orgasm erupted within her body again. She and Lizzy both were fucking her pussy as I was still paralyzed by what I saw. The eruptions continued as her pussy dripped with fluids her back and tits shook.

Lizzy had her right hand deep in Pet's pussy pushing, pulling, twisting, and turning. With her left hand she was pulling the clamps off her nipples and pealing the wax off as well. This only prolonged Sally orgasm she was still crying out in the mattress. With all the wax pealed and clips removed. Lizzy milked her tits on the bed. Her right hand still embedded in Pet's pussy she allowed Sally to recover.

Lizzy smeared more lube on Pet's asshole. "Fuck her ass!" Lizzy looked at me.

It took a moment for this to register. Even if I wanted I knew I couldn't, my dick had gone limp long ago.

"Fuck her ass!" Lizzy repeated. I looked down to show her and much to my surprise I was as hard as ever. "Hurry she needs to cum again!"

"I can't!" I responded. "You're hurting her!"

SMACK! She slapped my face.

"Fuck her ASS!" Lizzy yelled.

"But Lizzy..."

"Please Danny for us...It's on her list!" Lizzy softened her voice. It was a plea not a demand.

Oh my god! It finally hit me. This was no punishment this was a reward. I remembered these things were on her list but I was opposed to them. I make people happy. Lizzy's hand guided me to Pet's asshole.

Sally pushed back excited to help. I plunged in to the tightest orifice my cock had ever felt. I would like to say I fucked her until she begged me to stop, but the fact is by the time I worked myself deep in her ass we both were ready to cum.

Lizzy fucked her pussy, my balls dragged along her slick arm. Sally bucked on us both as I unloaded in her ass which sent her on the way.

My orgasm consumed my body. Sally's ass so tight it expelled my shrinking cock easily. I fell to the side my cock continuing purge the remaining cum over

my thigh. Sally somehow was lying on her back. We both watched as Lizzy pulled her hand from Sally's cunt and coated Pet's entire tit with her whole palm.

Sally hungrily cleaned Lizzy's hand then both her tits. I don't know when I have ever seen her so happy.

"Thank you Danny. I'm so glad you stayed!" Sally said holding my hand.

"Not sure I want to see that wax thing again?" I teased.

"I knew you thought I was in pain. But it really wasn't that bad. Still. Maybe like cum farts we should take that off the list?" She teased.

"Cum farts? Lizzy asked as she undressed for us.

"You don't want to know." I replied.

"Oh but my love I do!" She slipped on top of me.

"I'm ready for the last of my punishment if you are Madam!" Sally smiled at us. "Then I can show you?"

"Let's go slut!" Lizzy jumped up. "Hurry Danny!"

Lizzy pulled Sally into the shower making sure I was following. Lizzy fell to her knees the shower door open and with a swift movement she started working her hand back in Sally's pussy. I thought this part was done but Sally looked at me letting me know there was more.

"Do it slut!" Lizzy squealed. I saw her maneuver her hand inside Sally. Sally gripped Lizzy's head to brace herself. Sally started squirting all over my little brown wife.

"Yes slut! Cum!" Hose me down! Punish me!" Lizzy squealed.

She worked her hand and each time she pulled out Sally pissed down her arm or on her chest. I thought I had seen it all, but this was as decadent as I had ever imagined. Lizzy no longer getting pissed on pulled her hand from Sally.

"Thank you Madam!" Turning away from Lizzy she bent over. "Cum fart!" Sally warned her.

I pulled Lizzy from her knees just as Sally's ass sprayed my cum over Lizzy's legs.

"Oh you Nasty woman!" Lizzy squealed as the second shot sprayed over her. Lizzy looked at me.

"You did this with her?" Lizzy was laughing in delight.

"Just once." I replied.

"Oh Sally that was awesome!" Lizzy grabbed her and hugged her I turned on the shower and stepped in with them both.

"You two happy now?" I asked.

They looked at each other and then mobbed me. Only after I filled Lizzy's pussy and Sally licked it out did we make it to bed.

The next morning Sally thanked Lizzy for what she did but made her promise she would never do it again. Lizzy tried to argue but Sally pointed out that Lizzy wasn't a lezzy and should stay true to herself.

"But it made you happy." Lizzy protested.

"You're right it did, and now every time we are together I will remember how special you made me feel." Sally brushed her hand over Lizzy's cheek. "It will be a moment I will never forget."

They bantered for few more minutes before Lizzy finally promised. Sally was happy she won, and because I knew why so was I.

Chapter 11

When the plane was loaded Sunday all of the kids, Lizzy, Sally, Mary, and Kat all came. After helping us get the kids settled Mary and Kat went home later that week.

February 2012 Lizzy and I welcomed our newest member a son Casen. He is my third boy along with Kyle and Hunter. He was a big baby and giving birth for Lizzy wasn't easy. Casen is a happy and healthy baby none the less. I decided then we wouldn't have any more children. Kenzi seems to be taken in by him much more than his sister Mikayla.

With Sally now back home helping with the children Lizzy has decided to finish getting her Bachelor's degree.

Lizzy is taking just a class or two and working with Molly part time. The management business has taken off and the two of them head that up. Sally and now Mary run the two houses when they are home. Taking care of six kids and playing taxi driver is no small feat. They both love it and work well together.

The adjustment for school was minimal. Kyle took it the hardest but he seems happy now that summer is near and he has new friends to play with. Kenzi and Hunter have been growing and seem the ones that accept change easily.

Lizzy and I adopted Cindy, but make no mistake Sally is her favorite. Cindy is still small for her age but seems to be much healthier and growing faster since she started living with us. Mikayla and Cindy are inseparable now that the baby can walk. Cindy is her protector from the older kids, a funny thing since she is the smallest. She makes up for it in other ways, she is the smartest.

Bill set up a trust for Cindy. He tries to give us money now and then but I still refuse. Bill has become a regular guest. He is such a private person I think he worries about coming too often. But there is more than Cindy that keeps him coming back if I read him right. He and I watch sports together, sometimes we just go fishing.

Mike, Sky and Winnie are frequent guests. Molly is engaged and loves having Lizzy as a friend and coworker. Ivan has secured his future and still watches over all things financially.

It took a bit longer than we planned but by April the other house had been renovated and everyone was moved in. Sam was living with Jr and Rachel in their mom's old house back home. Jr and Rachel decided to stay near her parents but with him having a pilot's license they could fly down when they wanted. Sam graduated in June and took a scholarship to a school in Georgia.

Its January 2013 we have been all together in Florida for some months. At first everyone started where they left off but over the last year a new normal set in. Except for one situation it was done without my input.

Sally is now in her mid-sixties and with all that has gone on over the last year I could tell she was starting to feel her age a bit more. Sally visited Lizzy and

I in the bedroom much less frequently now. She wouldn't say why of course but I knew and so did Kat. On my insistence Lizzy, Kat, and I talked one day. The conversation was emotional but frank.

I knew things about Sally no one else knew, at least not yet. I spent many months thinking it over and decide to do what my instincts told me to do. Unfortunately my heart disagreed. I knew we couldn't keep everything from Sally so it was no big surprise when later that week Sally came to me privately.

She asked if she could move from our room into her own permanently. I explained that it was her decision and hers alone. I would support her completely. That night Sally called Lizzy and me into our room. Sally informed Lizzy she would be moving out and suggested Kat move in.

Lizzy objected at first but with tear filled eyes finally accepted it was going to happen. Sally didn't explain why except that she had just made up her mind. I knew it was best. It was time for her to enjoy the rest of her life.

There were other reasons but for now neither one of us wanted to admit it. I supported her decision but was concerned she felt Kat needed to take her place.

With Nikki now spending much of her time next door with Sharon maybe Sally thought Kat was free to move in with us. Sally would take a room down the hall and reminded Lizzy there was still plenty of room for visitors!

Lizzy made her promise she could come visit occasionally. Sally kissed her long and hard letting her know they would always be close. We decided there would be no big announcement it would just gradually take place.

Lizzy came to me the next day. She made me promise to do something for Sally. With all I have been through and the expenses I incurred it wasn't a

good time. I talked to Kat and when she agreed with Lizzy I knew I need to close some deals.

It took some time and many arrangements. Schedules were changed, early that summer tickets were purchased. Lizzy made me proud as she pulled it all together.

Early one Friday, Lizzy, Sally and I were on the plane to a destination only Lizzy and I knew about. Late that night the three of us were in our cabana looking at darkness listening to the waves lap the shore. Sally was overcome with emotion. It reminded her of our honeymoon. She talks about it all the time but this was something different all together.

We slept together that night, no sex just sleep as the week before and the flight was taxing for us all. I was up early as usual I walked the pathway to the lobby and talked to several of the staff. The looks I got were nothing compared to the snickers as I walked past. The sun was up and the first travelers dotted the white sands.

I walked back to the Cabana coffees in hand and waited for the two sleepy heads to wake up. Lizzy was first, she walked out naked and sat on my lap kissing my cheek.

"Thank you Danny." Lizzy whispered.

I kissed her letting her know she was welcome.

"Are you ok with me joining her?" Lizzy teased.

"As long as you don't expect me to join you." I replied.

"We'll see?" She replied.

Sally came from the bathroom in her robe. She sat on the chair in front of us. I handed her a coffee.

"This is beautiful!" Sally beamed. "It was so late when we came in it was hard to see. We are on the beach?"

"We are, come with me." Lizzy said. She picked up the towels and grabbed Sally's hand.

"Lizzy aren't we forgetting something?" Sally asked as she looked at Lizzy's naked form.

"Oh, I'm sorry. Yes I am!" Lizzy replied. She took Sally's robe off and pulled her out the door.

"Lizzy!" I heard Sally squeal as she was pulled outside.

"Danny!" Sally yelled.

I walked to the door and watched as two naked women ran to the beach squealing the whole way! They had both stopped breast feeding, Sally almost a year and half ago. Lizzy had stopped nursing Casen just a few months ago.

I enjoyed the sight of tits bouncing down the path as they ran by the window. No longer nursing they both have returned to a size closer to before. Regardless I still find them sexy as hell, and, Lizzy still loves to go braless.

Sally turned back to me ecstatic as I looked on smiling. Her massive tit's flopped as Lizzy continued to pull her down the path. I followed until I reached the sign. I nodded to the attendant, she smiled at me.

"I love you MOM!" I called after her." Sally looked back with one of her happiest smiles.

I walked back to the cabana and I picked up Sally's robe. I then went to the table and opened up my computer. I answered some e-mails and worked on a proposal. I called room service and ordered lunch for the three of us. There was a knock on the door.

"Mr. Masters..." The security person started talking.

""Danny please." I smiled.

"Danny." She returned my smile. "These two ladies say they are with you? This one claims she is your wife the other one your mother?"

The beautiful young lady tried to look stern but I could see right through her. I looked at Sally and Lizzy standing behind her dressed in white terrycloth robes. I looked at the security guard, the name on her badge had Christi on it.

"Christi, they are with me. Lizzy is my wife. Sally, is really my aunt. I just call her mom." I explained truthfully.

My guess is Christi was a few years older than me. She projected a confidence about her. She seemed more impressed than surprised as I explained who they were to me.

"Danny they can't run around the complex in the nude!" Christi was trying not to smile. "They can do that on the beach in the marked areas but not around the cabana's."

"Christi I'll try and make sure they obey the rules." I laughed. She tried, she really did, but she started laughing too. "Ok you two jail birds get in here!" I teased.

"Thank you Danny." Christi smiled.

"No Christi, thank you!" She looked at Sally and then focused on Lizzy. I could see she was intrigued by the sexy brown minx.

"And ladies. No more sex on the beach!" Christi warned them.

"Lizzy?" I called her out. "Is that true?"

"A little! It started while I was helping her with the sunscreen!" She grinned. "It's on her list!"

"Christi, if there are any more shenanigans from these two you call me." I insisted. I gave her my phone number.

"Thanks Danny." She turned to leave. She addressed Lizzy. "Sorry I had to stop you."

Christi left. Sally flew into my arms.

"Daniel!" Sally smothered me. "I can't believe you did this for me!"

"We did this for you." I corrected her. "Lunch will be here soon. You two need to get cleaned up and presentable."

I think they finished in the shower what they were stopped doing on the beach. Wearing only their new found robes they joined me for lunch. I sent them on their way after lunch with explicit instructions to follow the rules.

Later that evening we grabbed a cab and headed down the beach a few miles for supper. Just outside the restaurant the three of us walked along the paths adjacent to the beach. Hand in hand Sally enthusiastically told me about her day with Lizzy.

Since a young adult she had always wanted to walk along a nude beach. Sally couldn't be happier than the one Lizzy found. She talked about feeling the wind teasing her pussy. The warm sun on her ass. The frustration of sand in places sand doesn't belong.

She told me how she walked in the ocean and peed with nothing covering her pussy. What she didn't tell me was what she and Lizzy were doing that got them in trouble with Christi. We walked back to the restaurant and grabbed a cab back to the resort.

Back at the cabana Sally pulled me into the bedroom. For this night Sally purposely chose one of the flimsiest of dresses. No longer nursing her once milk filled tits are still huge and noticeably straining to escape the confines of her garment.

The thin material hugging her womanly curves, the cheeks of her ass devoid of panty lines. Her now tanned legs and wedge sandals accentuate her calves. With Lizzy's help her makeup was spot on.

Sally pulled me to the side and whispered in my ear while Lizzy was out of the room. A naughty grin accompanied her slowly nodding head.

"If you insist?" I replied.

"I insist then!" Sally giggled.

Lizzy walked in the room, we both looked at her, I had a feeling she knew something was up. Sally went into the bathroom but came back almost immediately. Taking her place in the chair she looked at me and smiled.

I moved closer to Lizzy and put my arms around her waist. Lizzy readily accepted my kiss and even more so my hands. I reached around and unclasped her skirt and unzipped it all the while continuing our kiss.

Lizzy pulled back and looked at me not sure what I wanted. She glanced over at Sally and then back to me. My hands moved to the hem of her top and started to pull it over her head. Sensing something special was happening she didn't say a word.

I pulled my polo shirt off over my head and reached for Lizzy once again. We were both in bare feet, her in just panties, and myself in shorts and briefs. I resisted the urge to grip her luscious tits and instead gripped the waist of her panties.

Lizzy cooed as I lowered them caressing her long slender legs along the way. After she stepped out of them I stood in front of Lizzy waiting for her to make the next move. Lizzy hesitated then unsnapped my shorts and removed them with my briefs at the same time.

I could tell she wanted to grab my cock but after a quick glance at Sally she held back. Standing naked before each other, I looked excitedly at my wife. I pulled her tight against me and started kissing her once again.

Lizzy moaned as my hands roamed her body. Lizzy reached down and gripped my cock stroking it to full hardness. We were kind of moving in place, slow dancing if you will. I looked over Lizzy's shoulder to find Sally glassy eyed looking on.

I could tell by the heave of her chest she was getting excited. Seeing me look at her she slipped her hand under the hem of her dress. Lizzy was now urging me to do something.

"I need you in me." She whispered hoarsely.

Her arms went around my neck, mine slid under her ass. With little effort I picked my wife up and positioned her over my cock. Lizzy quickly spread her legs and guided me to the opening of her juicy pussy. Slowly I let the weight of my wife lower over my cock. I looked at Sally and she watched my white cock disappear in Lizzy's black pussy.

"YES!" Sally muttered quietly.

"Danny I think someone is secretly watching us?" Lizzy moaned.

Instinctively Lizzy wrapped her legs around my waist to help control our movements. I lowered her down until she groaned then lifted her back up until I was just inside. Lizzy pulled herself tight against me her chin digging into the top of my shoulder.

I could feel the heat radiate from her body in the damp ocean air. A film of perspiration soon formed on her ebony body making it shimmer in the soft lights of the bedroom. I glanced at Sally and noticed she had one tit pulled from the top of her dress. On hand was kneading the nipple as her other hand was busy between her covered legs.

Lizzy thrust back extending her arms around my neck, I felt the cool rush of air flow between us. We continued to move in a circular motion as we copulated in a standing position. It was now Lizzy's turn to see Sally.

"Danny I'm sure of it! Someone is watching us make love." Lizzy squeaked happily.

"Does that get you excited?" I whispered loud enough for Sally to hear.

"God yes!" Lizzy groaned as she thrusted herself hard over my cock.

Suddenly I heard the soft buzz of a vibrator. Now facing Sally she had her dress pulled up to her waist. With legs spread I saw the little vibrator disappear between her pussy lips for just a second before being pulled along her slit to tease her clit.

"Danny I want to watch!" Lizzy pleaded.

Moving to the bed I sat down with Lizzy positioned on top of me facing Sally. Lizzy sat up straddling my cock controlling the situation for now. Looking up I could see she was fixated on Sally just feet away above my head. The buzz was louder but so were Sally's moans.

"I'm not ready yet...Danny!" Lizzy hissed still locked on Sally.

Having focused my attention on supporting Lizzy as we fucked earlier, I wasn't even close. From just the sounds I heard coming from Sally I knew she was close and Lizzy was trying to hold her off. I heard the vibrator disappear inside Sally, the muted vibrations making it clear it was deep inside. I heard Sally slurp her tits, no doubt coated with her essence.

Lying back I took a moment to see what Sally saw. Lizzy tall and slender sitting atop me, her long legs folded along my sides. My sizable cock was moving in and out of her dark brown lips. The pink of her clit was just starting to expose itself. Her pussy lips glistened with our oily excitement, the small patch of black curly hair scrubbed her fingers as they occasionally reached to diddle her clit.

Lizzy's long slender midsection showed little evidence of the children she bore me. Her tits however plumper now sagged slightly from the lack of milk they once carried. The dark areolas seemed more pronounced against the almost white skin from the palm side of her hands. Lizzy twisted and tugged on the long thick nipple, the weight of her tit elongated the area until she reversed the motion and pressed her tit hard against her chest.

Lizzy's long elegant neck poked out behind her even longer black hair. Her white teeth contrasted with the pinkness of her lips before blending in with the caramel color of her surrounding features. Lizzy glanced down at me her big brown eyes letting me know she couldn't hold out much longer.

"Hurry Danny! I need to cum!" Lizzy warned me. I knew she was speaking for Sally too.

She reached for her clit one last time, her eyes returned to Sally who was rubbing her clit with the vibrator. The buzzing was loud and at times sounded like it was hard against bone. I closed my eyes and let myself just take it all in. Sally, Lizzy, the hot tight pull of her pussy on my cock.

"Ready?" I whispered.

"YES!" The two of them cried out in unison.

"Five...four...three..."

"AAARRRGGGHHH!!" Sally moaned. I could hear her bouncing in the chair just out of sight.

"Two..." I replied louder.

"DANNNNNYYY!" Lizzy plunged hard over my cock her hand massaging her clit between us.

No longer able to hold back myself I flooded Lizzy's cunt. I gripped her ass and pulled her even tighter to me trapping her hand between us. The jolts of pleasure were so hard Lizzy's whole body surged with my orgasm. I came so hard I think Sally may have felt it. Then there was only the sound of three happy and satisfied lovers in the room.

"ONE!" I yelled out.

Sally laughed so hard she fell to the floor. Lizzy seeing Sally started shaking on top of me laughing herself. I had to admit it was pretty funny. Sally joined us in bed where she thanked us for taking another item off her list.

I was surprised to learn after all of our time together this was the first time Sally had ever just watched two people engage in intercourse.

"Lizzy it was so beautiful watching Danny and you!" Sally started to tear up. "I can't tell you how much you both mean to me."

Lizzy and I were moved by what she said. That night we all three slept together.

Sunday was much the same. Sally and Lizzy went down to the beach. I walked to the rail by the sign to check up on the girls.

"Danny!" A voice called from behind me.

"Christi!" I replied happy to see her. "Just checking to make sure the prisoners are following the rules." I laughed.

"Can I ask you a personal question?" She asked.

"You're welcome to ask but I don't promise to answer." I smiled. She seemed apprehensive now. "Go ahead. Try me."

"Is that really your wife and Aunt?" She asked leaning on the rail with me.

We looked out over the pristine beach and blue waters just beyond the barricade. Sally was lying on her stomach Lizzy's ebony hands slid over her skin applying another coat of sunscreen. Even from here you could tell they cared deeply for each other.

"It's true. Lizzy is my second wife. Three kids with Nikki. Two with Lizzy. Lizzy and I adopted a little girl, but she's really Sally's little princess." I explained.

"Why did Lizzy say she was your mom?" Christi asked. I looked over she blushed a bit embarrassed.

"I had three. Eve, Sally's older sister was my birth mother, but she is no longer with us. Kathryn raised me, but to some degree Sally did as well. I called them each mom." I explained.

Christi looked at me still unsure if I was being honest. I held out my hand offering it to her. She looked at me then placed hers in mine. I covered it with my other hand and closed my eyes. I released it and smiled. Christi, still perplexed wasn't finished.

"And the list?" She asked just whispering now.

"That my dear isn't my secret to tell." I winked at her. "So you're head of security?" I asked changing the subject.

Christi reminded me of my first wife Nikki in size and proportions. She is cute but not stunning. Friendly yet self-assured. Her uniform did little to accentuate her well-toned body. My guess is her being in charge had more to do with her abilities and less to do with stature. I doubted she weighed much over 120 pounds. Not the type of person that instills fear for anyone breaking the rules.

"I am." She said proudly

"How would you like to make some extra money?" I asked.

"Danny we aren't allowed to work for others." She replied. "Besides I'm not quite sure what you want me to do."

"All I ask is you call me each day, after work of course, and report back to me." I explained.

"That's it?" She asked.

"That's it. No spying or eaves dropping just keep an eye on Sally and call me." I replied.

"And Lizzy?" She asked.

"Lizzy and I will be leaving tonight. Others will arrive to take our place." I grinned.

"Others?" She asked.

"Lizzy and I need to get back to the kids." I replied turning to go. "Oh, and if you want to know what's on the list you will need to ask Sally."

I returned to the cabana and made some calls. I was working on another proposal when they returned for lunch. We took a short nap and then Lizzy insisted I spend some alone time with Sally.

"Danny I love you!" Sally purred as I slowly slipped my cock in her pussy.

"I am glad Sally. I love you too." I grunted as I drove in again.

"Fuck me son, fuck your mother one last time." She pleaded.

"Sally. You have never stopped being my mother and never will. And I'll never stop fucking you if you will have me." I pounded her pussy.

"Thank you Danny." She squealed. "Now make me cum!"

Sally insisted on coating her tits with my second load, the first still dripping from her pussy. She slipped on a cover up and headed for the beach. I followed her back to the railing. Christi was waiting for me it seemed.

Lizzy ran to meet Sally. Sally removed her cover up, we could hear Lizzy squeal from where we stood. Sally lifted her massive tit and licked it clean. Christi moved to head her way.

"Give her a minute." I asked. Christi stopped.

"I can't let them do this on the beach." I held one finger up. Just then Sally ran into the surf Lizzy following her. They were in up to their necks kissing and I am sure doing more under the water.

"I have seen some crazy stuff but those two are in love." Christi said forgetting who she was talking to. She looked at me blushing yet again. "Sorry Danny. I shouldn't have said that."

"It's ok. You're right." I replied. "That is why I love them both so much."

I looked on for a few more minutes.

"I have to go. I hope you will call me." I replied. "Or if it makes you feel better, you can call Lizzy. We have no secrets."

I had us packed and ready to go when Sharon and Nikki arrived. I explained the layout and rules. They quickly changed into their suits.

"Lizzy needs to come in soon, we have a plane to catch." I kissed them both and walked them in the direction of the beach.

Christi was just returning to her post when we arrived.

"Christi!" I greeted her. "This is Nikki my first wife, and this is Sharon, Lizzy's mom."

"Ladies it's so nice to meet you!" Christi blushed again.

It was then I saw it. I had my suspicions but this time Christi clearly responded as I suspected. I filed it away letting them introduce themselves.

"So have they been behaving?" I asked. Christi looked surprised I would ask in front of Nikki and Sharon.

"Well now that you ask. Lizzy has been getting a bit touchy feely again." Christi blushed.

"I understand. Well she and I'll be leaving for now." I replied. "But you need to keep an eye on these two as well."

"Danny!" Sharon protested. "I'm nothing like my daughter!" She teased. They spotted Lizzy and Sally. Nikki and Sharon each kissed me deeply and headed that way.

"Were you serious just now?" Christi asked. "Do I really need to watch them too?"

"You let me know when you call." I grinned. Christi as I suspected seemed happy to oblige.

"Danny!" Lizzy called me. She was running naked in my direction. She stopped when she saw Christi and pulled on her cover up. "Can we make love before we go? Sally has me all worked up but the cops around here have us on lock down."

"Sure honey. God knows we don't want another plane incident." I winked at Christi.

I looked at Sally she was embracing Nikki and Sharon. Lizzy and I went back to the cabana and made love. Sally joined us as we showered. Lizzy happily helped her wash the sunscreen from her body.

The cab pulled up I kissed Nikki and Sharon passionately as did Lizzy. Sally trembled as I kissed her as well.

"Thank you Danny. I'll be waiting when you get back." We kissed again. Turning to Lizzy. "Tell my baby I love her and mommy will be home soon."

"You have fun I'll give her a present from us." Lizzy squeezed Sally's tit.

"Goodbye Danny! Goodbye Lizzy!" Christi said as we were walking from the cabana. "I'll miss watching over you!" She grinned at Lizzy.

"Don't worry, we'll be back!" Lizzy taunted her. Just like that Lizzy pulled Christi to her and kissed her on the lips. "These two should keep you busy while I am gone!" Lizzy teased. Nikki and Sharon just laughed.

Christi gave me a look as if to ask if she had really just done that.

It was Tuesday when she first called. Lizzy received it. She brought Cindy and placed her in my lap as I worked at my desk. Still small and frail for her age Cindy wrapped her arms around my neck. Her effervescent smile and disposition lights up every room she enters.

"Christi called." Lizzy kissed Cindy on her forehead.

"And are the ladies behaving?" I asked.

"Of course not." Lizzy squealed leaving Cindy with me.

Each night a report came in to Lizzy. Even when Kat and Mary went down on Wednesday. Sharon and Nikki returned that night giving Lizzy a full report on the continued frivolities. Christi it seemed had her hands full. Lizzy would report to me each night as she lay on top of me my cock buried deep in her pussy. Sometimes she would cum mid story while she fucked me.

Friday night the call came in later than usual. This time Christi wanted to talk to me.

"Danny!" Christi slurred as she spoke. "Kat wants to talk to you!" I could hear the music playing in the background as Christi yelled in the phone. They were obviously at a bar.

"Danny?" Kat asked, she herself was quite happy. "Son I have a favor to ask."

"Yes mom" I replied.

"Christi...

"Mom." I cut her off. "What happens in Vegas stays in Vegas! But you should talk to Lizzy."

I handed her the phone.

"Mom wants to know if she can finish what you started." I teased her.

"Mom? Danny says you want to be a bad girl!" Lizzy squealed. There was a pause. "You promise to tell me everything?" There was another brief pause.

"I love you mom. We'll see you in the morning." Lizzy hung up thrilled Kat confided in her.

Lizzy and I boarded the taxi and headed to the cabana.

"You're not disappointed Kat won't be spending the night with us?" Lizzy asked.

"You're ok with her spending time with the cop?" I asked Lizzy.

"Not as long as what happens in Vegas stays 'in' Vegas!" Lizzy replied. Meaning Christi wasn't to become too attached. It wasn't the first time Lizzy had made such comments.

"I love you Liz!" We kissed as the driver headed to our destination.

The ride was nice the stars were out and the water shimmered as we drove along the coast.

Our driver delivered us to the main lobby. After I paid him I carried the two small bags we brought. Lizzy and I got several looks as we passed through the lobby. I was happy no one stopped us. It was later than I hoped when we entered the cabana. Mary was waiting up for us.

"She's waiting for us!" Mary whispered. She had on her collar and leash indicating they wanted to play.

"Madam is in charge tonight. I'm going to sleep." I explained. Lizzy knew I was dog tired and offered no complaint.

"Yes sir!" Mary answered excitedly.

Lizzy grabbed the leash, made Mary strip for me and led her to the room where Sally was. There was a short but clear outburst from the room as they entered. I went into the main bath between the two bedrooms and prepared for bed. I walked to the other bedroom and listened at the closed door. The sounds on the other side of the door confirmed my suspicions.

I went to the living room and decided the couch was comfortable enough without pulling it out. I remember my head hitting the pillow.

I love it when she curls up inside of me. Even after two kids I doubt she has gained ten pounds, and they must be in her tits. She kissed me then settled down inside of me. I wrapped my arm around her slender body and pulled her in tight.

"Did you and your pets have fun tonight?" I whispered.

"MMMMMM." Was all she replied.

"Good night my love." I kissed the back of her neck she was already asleep.

The sun was just coming up as I stood looking out the window at the surf in the distance. She entered the room quietly carrying her shoes. I was standing to one side so she didn't see me at first. I even thought of letting her slip out without stopping her. She was half way across the room when she saw me.

Christi stopped. Maybe she thought I was mad. Maybe she was expecting me to chastise her. She looked at me and crooked her head undoubtedly expecting me to approach her. I didn't. Still Christi stood waiting for me to move.

"He won't." Lizzy whispered. My naked wife looked over at me then up to Christi.

"What?" Christi asked.

"Come to you." Lizzy sat up yawning and rubbing her eyes. "He won't."

"Thank you Danny." Christi's voice quivered.

"Don't thank me, thank Lizzy." I replied with a smile.

Christi cocked her head again and looked at me. My eyes directed hers to my wife.

"Thank you Lizzy." She said softly.

My wife stood up her naked body stretched to her full height. Christi was dressed for the bar and dancing, a slinky sexy number that barely covered her ass and showed off her modest tits. Lizzy moved to Christi, without her uniform they were almost a mirror image, except Christi is a bit shorter and white. Lizzy pressed against her then kissed her on the lips.

"She does taste good doesn't she?" Lizzy asked still pressed against her.

Christi blushed not knowing what to say at first. She looked at us both, I could see her fear of the situation subside.

"She is an amazing woman, and yes she tastes exquisite." Christy said hoarsely. She moved in to kiss the little black minx now holding her. My wife leaned back avoided her kiss but still held on.

"Lizzy isn't a lezzy!" She teased.

Christi blushed even more now. Lizzy boldly pulled Christi's dress up the tight material clung to her waist her ass and pussy now on display.

"Now you can go to him." Lizzy purred.

She kissed Christi passionately letting her know she approved. Releasing Christi, Lizzy headed to Kat's room.

"Danny make sure our guest gets home safely." Lizzy called out as we both watched her skinny ass walk away. "Oh and Christi, make sure he gives you a proper kiss goodbye. My house, my rules!" It was Sharon's saying and I knew what it meant.

Stunned Christi stood where Lizzy left her. She watched Lizzy turn the corner, then remembering she was to approach she did.

"I thought she said..."

"Let's just say Lizzy can be unpredictable." I explained before she could ask. Christi tilted her head again. "Kat is special."

"That's an understatement if there ever was one!" Christy laughed. "I have never cum...!"

She must have remembered Kat was my mother. Just then Christi turned beet red. I smiled letting her know it was ok. Relieved she continued.

"Lizzy? And the others?" Christi was trying to understand.

"Not in that way. Even with Kat it's virtually one sided." I explained cryptically.

"Are you saying..." Christi asked out loud.

"Lizzy isn't a lezzy, the fact is she isn't even bi." I assured her.

"But..." Christi looked back to where Kat just went. "... your mom said..."

"That is a secret you need to ask Lizzy about." I winked.

"But you?" She asked. I only nodded. "Even Nikki and Sharon?"

"At times." I replied.

My eyes hadn't left hers, her dress still pulled up around her waist, her neatly groomed pussy on display. Christi looked at me cocking her head still soaking it all in. I reached for her, Christi shuddered as my hands gripped her waist. I pulled her dress down covering her sex. I held her ass firmly just the thin stretchy material between us.

"Not going to happen." I whispered.

"How can I thank you?" She whispered back. She seemed disappointed I refused her offer.

"You already have." I assured her. "Besides I'm pretty sure I play for the wrong team."

"But you are special?" It was part question, part statement. Christi looked deep in my eyes.

"Not that special." I suggested. "You're leaving early aren't you?"

"I have the afternoon shift and I didn't get much sleep last night." She giggled. "Actually none!"

"Let's get you home." I said.

"I don't live that far." She replied hoping I would let her go. "As head of security they provide housing."

"Then I'll walk you there. Wife's orders." I insisted.

Risking being rude she allowed me to walk her to the back corner of the property. The closer she got to the building the more nervous she got. I stopped her in a secluded spot and looked around.

"I take it she's the jealous type?" I asked Christi. She blushed again.

"You knew?" She reacted in shock. I winked.

"Good night fair lady." I teased.

I looked around again and pulled her closer, Christi looked up as she pressed against me, her body trembled as I pressed my lips to hers. A sudden calm came over Christi. Her tongue probed between my lips. I accepted and met her, we kissed far longer than I expected. I pulled away. She looked disappointed again.

"Thank you for all you've done." I said, then handed her an envelope from my pocket.

"What's this?" She asked a bit disoriented.

"The phone calls. We had a deal." I replied. "I always keep my promises." I turned to leave.

Christi grabbed me at the last minute. "Tonight after dark."

"Excuse me?" I was the confused one now.

"Sally's list. She wants you to make love to her on the beach." Christi grinned at me. "I get off at midnight but I might be able to linger around to provide some privacy?"

"Are you sure?" I asked.

"You lied back there Danny." She pointed in the direction of our cabana. "You are that special."

I walked back to the cabana. I hardly recognized Sally she was so dark from the sun, and better yet she had no tan lines at all. Well maybe the crack of her ass.

It was well past noon when all four of them were up. Sally and Mary were already at the beach sunning some more. I told Kat and Lizzy what Christi said. I thought Lizzy was going to run out to kiss Christi again.

I met her at the rail she seemed to be waiting for me to arrive.

"Are you sure?" I asked. This could get you in trouble. Maybe even fired!"

"Nah, happens all the time, well maybe not someone like you!" She teased. "It's the off season. The beach is usually deserted this time of year. Just act drunk if you get caught. No one wants bad press."

"Thank you. I want you to know it's going to be a surprise for Sally." I winked at her.

"I think I owe you?" She replied. "Last night Danny... Kat, Lizzy!" Christi stopped short.

"Christi, please don't take this wrong, last night wasn't supposed to happen. I am glad it did and so is Kat."

"But!" She said a bit hurt.

"There are six women. Six!" I repeated for effect. "There is a very fine line between harmony and world war three. Then there are the six kids which depend on them."

"Then why did you let us the first time?" She looked at the beach with four of the women present.

"You wouldn't believe me If I told you." I replied.

"Try me." Christi said.

"I followed my instincts." I smiled. She cocked her head trying to see if I was serious. Christi then burst out in a big smile.

"Midnight! Oh and Danny. It might be best if it was just the two of you." She looked at Lizzy applying sunscreen on Sally's big tits again.

"Agreed." I laughed.

I left her standing there as I walked back to the cabana.

...

""Where are we going dressed like that?" Sally asked.

"Trust me mom, hurry we need to go." Damn how long does it take to slip on a pair of sweat pants and a tee shirt I wondered?

"Danny this isn't fair!" Lizzy protested. "I want to go!"

"Lizzy we discussed this. Now be quiet here she comes." I scolded her. Sally was led to me by Mary. The black outfits Mary bought looked ridiculous but I hoped they would conceal us most of the time.

I walked her along the lighted path hoping no one would see us. Christi was waiting for us, she checked to see if the coast was clear. There were few vacationers this time of the year, the beach looked deserted. She was at the railing where she unlocked the gate and opened it. Sally looked at her and back at me.

"Danny is this what I think it's?" Sally beamed.

"Sorry it's at night. but..."

"You are such a wonderful lover!" She whispered.

"I don't want to be rude but you really do need to hurry. I can't leave this gate unlocked for long!" Christi explained.

I passed the sign that had kept me at bay for my time here. The one that had a red stripe through the circle with an arrow pointer. No men allowed beyond this point. This particular part of the beach was for women only!

I grabbed Sally's hand, we walked across the deserted sand where the waves were lapping at the shore. I stripped her, she removed my shirt we locked in a standing embrace. The stars were out behind tufts of clouds a small crescent moon provided little light.

I laid her down and moved between her legs. I knew she wanted me inside her but I wanted to make this night memorable. She gripped my hair and pulled me tight. I grazed on her pussy nibbling on her folds as they opened up for me. The sand was soft, she wiggled in it pulling her nipples for further effect. It was a small tremble then a solid shudder. She pulled me up so I could suck her clit.

"Danny!" She cried out. "I'm cumming!"

Her body shook then she pressed up as her hands forced my head down tighter. Her legs closed then opened hoping I could drive deeper. She bucked and wiggled, sand was kicking up. She pulled her tits stretching them up. AAARRRGGGHHHH!

"Yes my love. Cum for me. Cum hard!" I encouraged her.

Sally mashed my head back to her pussy as she desperately wanted me to suck her clit through her orgasm. My cheeks buckled as I drew the nub into my mouth she came all over again a second wave adding to the first.

She pulled me up, I pushed my pants down. I aimed my cock at her pussy and drove it deep.

"Yes. Oh god yes!" Sally sighed.

She kissed me as I arched my back to find her mouth. Sally pulled me down and held me tight catching her breath. I could feel her big tits rise and fall as she pulled me tighter.

"Danny. I still remember the first time you made love to me." Sally whispered. "I have never felt more loved by anyone. The first time you fucked me turned my life around and allowed me to be free."

"I'm glad." I replied as I worked in and out of her. "You deserve this. This and so much more."

"Thank you son." She giggled. "I know we don't have much time but I would love to feel your cum inside me."

"My pleasure mom!"

"Fuck me baby. Fuck your slut on this beach for all the world to see!" Sally begged. "God I love your cock!"

There is no such thing as perfect love making I guess, but I would like to think we came close. She and I watched in the dim light as my cock slipped between her tan pussy. The sounds coming from us drowning out the surf. It was slow and fast, Sally mashed my chest with her tits. I pulled out once and rubbed my cock across her lips as she licked me.

I fucked her some more then wiped our excitement on her tits. Sally then sucked my cuck. Moving to her knees she let me take her from behind. I drilled her cunt slapping her ass with my pelvis. Then just when I thought she would come she pulled off and ran to the water's edge.

Sally laid in the water as it receded behind her. "Fuck me Danny, show me how much you love me!"

I joined her in the surf my cock dripping pre-cum and her juices. She spread her legs and guided me back in her cunt. I was close, she was closer. The warm water splashed over us. Sally started to cum.

"Fuck me Danny!" I shot my first load deep in her pussy.

"Fuck me." The second load filled her now.

"Fuck me." The third load gushed from her pussy.

"Fuck me." The fourth load seared her clit as I pulled out and hit it dead on. She cried out as her orgasm pulsed inside her. Her hand jacked what little was left. She rubbed it over her clit as the surf washed it off.

"Danny that was incredible!" Sally sighed as she pulled me back on top for another desperate kiss.

"I told you!" Lizzy giggled.

"Oh my god!" Christi laughed. "That was so hot!"

"Lizzy!" I protested. I looked up to see them both naked watching us.

"Danny you need to leave. We think someone saw you?" Lizzy said as she bent over to kiss me. "Hurry the gate is open."

I found my pants and shirt and quickly made my way back across the beach. I passed Lizzy's cover up and Christi's uniform. I slipped through the gate. Kat and Mary were waiting.

"Where's Sally?" Kat asked.

"Lizzy and Christi said someone saw us and sent me back." I puffed catching my breath.

"Were they naked?" Kat asked looking at the pile of clothes on the beach on the other side of the rail. I nodded. "And you believed her?"

"You mean?" I sighed looking at the beach. The same beach I just came from. The same beach where I could clearly see nothing further than the glow of the lights along the path. "Lizzy?"

"Come on lover, looks like Mary and I get you for the night!" Kat teased me.

I was surprised when I emerged from the shower removing the sand from my body that Sally, Lizzy, and Christi were back. Christi dressed in her uniform again, however I noticed she was missing her bra. Lizzy and Sally stood before us stark naked.

"Am I in trouble?" Lizzy asked as she led Sally past me heading to a bedroom.

"What do you think?" I asked knowing she wanted to be.

"Promise me you will punish me?" She smiled looking at Christi.

"Promise!" I grinned.

"Danny make sure our guest gets home safely." Lizzy called out as we all watched her lead Sally down the hall. "Oh and Danny, make sure you give our guest proper kiss goodnight. My house my rules!"

Everyone including Christi knew what that meant.

"Mary after you say goodbye to Christi please go and keep them company." I asked her. "Oh, and Lizzy is being punished until I get back."

"Yes sir. I understand." Mary replied. She kissed Christi passionately and headed to the bedroom.

"Christi would you like me to walk with you and Dan?" Kat asked. Christi looked at me and back to Kat.

"I think it best you don't. There may be someone waiting for me, and after last night..."

"I understand." Kat cut her off.

"Do you?" Christi asked. She looked at me and then to Kat. There were suppressed emotions as they looked at each other. "Thank you Kathryn but I better go."

Kat moved to her and kissed her passionately without answering her. Kat led her to me and headed to the bedroom as well.

"I'll have her with me Danny." Kat said. "Take your time, she is being punished."

I took Christi's hand and led her out the door. We walked in silence part of the way.

"Nikki was her first true love." I broke the silence. We stopped at the rail looking over the beach still holding hands.

"I see." Christi replied. "And now?"

"Nikki has moved on with Lizzy's mom Sharon." I replied looking at the sky above.

"And Kat? She's in love with you Danny. She didn't even have to tell me to see that." Christi claimed. "Lizzy?"

"It gets complicated as you can see." I said. "Thank you for bringing them all back to me. I know..."

"Will I see any of you again?" Christi asked cutting me off.

"I doubt it." I replied. "This was all for Sally. This was on her list. Our hearts are at home." I explained not wanting to look at her.

Christi squeezed my hand. We walked a bit.

"Six kids?" She asked. "I always wanted kids. There was a time when I had a boyfriend...we talked about it...then. I guess..."

"You're still young!" I replied.

"Not for that. Maybe adopting?" Christi squeezed my hand again. "If the right person comes along."

"She will." I smiled. "Promise."

"Thank you for coming." Christy said her voice filled with emotion. She pulled me down for a prolonged kiss. She held on tight not wanting to let me go. "I think I love you?"

I kissed her again and gently removed her arms from my neck.

"I think you have someone waiting for you." I replied. Looking through the bushes at her residence. A woman that looked a bit older than her was sitting on the patio smoking. "Good night fair lady."

Christi looked at the woman then back to me.

"You say you always keep your promises?" Christi asked looking back at the woman again. "Are you sure she will come? The right person?"

"She will, I promise." I replied then winked.

I don't know why but I think she believed me.

...

We all looked at the beach one last time. The taxis' were all loaded up. I was getting ready to move in beside the driver when I looked in the distance. Christi was watching from a far. The plane ride home was anticlimactic for sure. The reception when we got home was just the opposite.

After that trip I took a few days to reflect on where we stood at this time in our lives. Sally seemed to have come to grips with her age. The list now all but checked off. She seemed to have enjoyed the trip but we never had the talk. I knew the time would come too soon.

The kids were all growing and doing well. Bill stopped by several times a week now, ostensibly to see Cindy but I knew better. For now he would have to wait a bit longer.

It's now 2014, almost two years since we moved to Florida. Having everyone so close is proving beneficial but raises new challenges. The responsibilities of work, school and raising six kids having shifted, so have the emotional needs. Time ticks on for us all and with each new day we choose how we want to live.

Rachel, Sam's wife now, once accused me of being some kind of Svengali. There is no doubt I affect so many lives here, but not once has anyone asked to leave that I have not willingly supported. I would soon be tested on this front as well.

This February we celebrated Cason's second birthday with the usual fanfare. For some reason Lizzy was becoming increasingly insecure and demanding. I wasn't alone in trying to address it. Kat and Sharon tried to help.

Resentment was building, behind my back of course, but I could sense it. I knew I needed to act but how? Then as luck would have it circumstances took over.

As always things seem to come in three's, and this time was no different, kind of.

Out of the blue I received a call from Mark, Mary's ex-husband and Nikki's dad. I was taken by complete surprise as he spoke to me in a calm and respectful manner. He wanted to talk to Mary and hoped I would help him. He explained how he had hit bottom and was now putting his life back together.

We talked for a considerable time. I even agreed to fly out and meet with him before he would talk to Mary. Not taking his word for it I made some

inquiries and even called his employer and sponsor like he asked. Mary has visited Mark twice over the last couple of months. Sally went with her the first time. Mary just came back after a week alone with Mark.

Several days after Mary returned he called. Mark and I talked for a long time.

Sally and I sat down with Mary. It was a very emotional night for us all. After I called Mark back and voiced our concerns he readily agreed to all terms. The next night Mary met with Nikki in to discuss her intensions. I'm not sure who I was proudest of, Mark for turning his life around or Mary for accepting him back.

Nikki and I waited as Mary checked in. They were both a bundle of nerves.

"Are you sure mom?" Nikki kissed her one last time.

"I loved him once, I think I can do it again." Mary smiled back.

"You know there is always a place here for you." I said. I kissed Mary on the cheek.

"Sally said she has a good feeling about this." Mary grinned nervously.

"Tell dad I said hi." Nikki started crying.

"I will baby." Mary promised as she walked through security.

"I hate you Danny!" Nikki sobbed as her mom walked out of sight.

"I know Nik, I know." I held her tight. "But it's what she wants."

I knew the others were feeling the same way. I was proud of Nikki for letting her go.

The week Mary was gone I received a call from Maggie, George's love interest back at home. The news wasn't good. George had another setback with his health. Out of respect for him I'll keep it confidential. George asked to see me. Maggie suggested it was no hurry but hoped I would find it in my heart to come soon.

"Danny, do you think Sally would come?" She asked her sweet voice holding back tears.

"We'll come together." I promised her. Maggie thanked me for understanding.

That night I asked Sally to go to dinner with me. As I suspected she knew something was wrong. Sally met me dressed as sexily as she ever had. I took Sally to her favorite restaurant and all through dinner we avoided the inevitable. Back in the car she sat silently.

"Where are we going?" She asked as I headed away from home.

"Trust me, please?" I looked over at her she took my hand and closed her eyes.

"Danny!" She protested.

"Please Sally?" I replied.

I valeted the car and entered the lobby with her arm and arm. We made it up to the room and I closed the door silently. She waited for me to approach her. I moved behind her unclasping her dress, I pulled the zipper down. I loved this dress.

With no bra to support her large tits her back was unobstructed. I slipped the thin straps off her shoulders. Sally shivered in anticipation. Reaching in from behind. I lifted her tits and fondled them like she loved me to do. She leaned back into me savoring the moment as I kissed the back of her neck. Only her moans suggested I should move on. Slipping her dress down. I pulled it from her as she stepped free.

Moving behind her I gripped a hefty breast with one hand and slipped my other inside her panties. Sally widened her stance giving me access to her dripping pussy. Coating the tit I held I offered it to her and like always she sucked it clean moaning.

My fingers dipped in her honey pot the second time. I coated the same tit abut didn't offer it to her until my fingers worked back in her sopping cunt. Her lips wrapped around her stiff nipple and sucked. Sally started cumming the moment I brushed against her clit.

Pushing back against me she was desperate to reward me but I held her firmly making her ride out the passion against my fingers. Sally almost went limp her orgasm was so strong. Pushing my arms from her she fell to her knees pulling at my belt and slacks. Soon she had me in her greedy mouth. I removed my shirt and tie tossing them with my jacket so she could look at me unimpeded.

Sally was hungry with desire as she attacked my throbbing cock. One hand jacked me, the other coaxing cum from my balls. There was never any question what the outcome would be as Sally continued to pleasure me. I thought of holding off but knew she needed me. Wanting the night to last forever, reluctantly, I gave her what she worked so hard for.

There was no longer a need to be gentle. Her eyes told me what she wanted. Placing my hand behind her head she reached up with her hand and pushed it for me. The time had come to take one remaining item off her list. I checked to make sure. I let her know it was going to happen.

One last gasp, then I pulled her head hard. My cock slipped over her tongue and down her throat. I expected her to gag more but she suppressed it the best she could. With one last thrust I filled her stomach directly. I pulled out so she could breathe she pulled me back and cleaned me off swallowing what hadn't been injected in her belly. I went to kiss her but she refused my advances.

Sally removed her panties and stuffed them in my mouth. Moving to the middle of the bed she spread her legs inviting me in. It took mere minutes to get hard enough to slip into her pussy. Once inside I continued to revive my previous aroused state.

Knowing what she loved most I propped myself up and let her watch my cock stretch her pussy. Sally's slick folds caressed the length of my cock as she looked on. Sally grunted when I bottomed out. Spreading her legs farther she offered me the deepest most intimate parts of her body. Taking her legs I pushed them up to her chest and pummeled her pussy hard.

Sally gazed into my eyes, she wanted this and so much more. She chirped with each thrust. Her hand found her clit and rubbed it stiffly as I continued to fuck her pussy. With a massive groan Sally came a second time.

I released her legs and once again fucked her from on top. This time I trapped her hand on her clit sending her off again. I was still not ready to cum, I was holding off, I wanted her to remember this night. Her cunt would be sore for a week if need be but Sally was going to get everything I had. Turning her over I fucked her from behind. Sally whimpered until she came shortly before I did.

I took the panties from my mouth and kissed her back. Starting at her neck I worked lower until I reached her creamy ass. Pulling her back on her knees I licked the crack focusing on her brown star. Sally sighed deeply as I worked my tongued deep in her asshole.

I pulled my cum from her pussy and coated her asshole inside and out with it. I lined my cock up and started to push. Sally fell forward. Turning over she grabbed her legs and offered me her ass from this position.

I dripped saliva on it and again pushed against her opening. Sally closed her eyes. I watched her lips tighten as the head worked past the initial resistance. A broad smile replaced it as I made my way deeper. When I bottomed out she opened her eyes showing me how happy she was.

We both knew this could take some time. Her legs were up against my shoulders, her hands gripped my hips and showed me the pace she wanted. Sally played with her tits, sucked her nipples and rubbed her clit. After yet another orgasm she had me on the way.

I picked up the pace helping me find the sweet spot for building my desire. Sally felt me getting close she purred as her ass loosened up welcoming me to continue on. She closed her eyes not in discomfort but to savor the moment. Reaching up she offered me her finger to my lips. I sucked it in and filled her ass as she came with me one final time.

We were both covered in sweat as I rolled to the side pulling her close. I could feel our hearts beating as we lay together. Sally took my hand and wrapped it over her side as we both drifted asleep.

The sun was up and so was I. I sat looking over this aged beauty wondering how I would live without her. I wasn't sad she would be leaving, I was happy for the time we had together. I knew I would see her again but we both knew this journey was now over.

"I love you Daniel Masters." Sally said. It was the first words spoken since we entered the room. "I'm going to miss you my son."

"I love you mom." I replied.

She was crying now. I admit for just a moment. I was too.

I sat and held her hand, she closed her eyes and a broad smile crossed her face. Tears continued to flow, happy tears this time. I could feel her love for me and knew in some small way we would always be connected.

"Has the time has come?" She looked up at me no longer able to cry.

"It has." I bent down to kiss her. "They are waiting for us."

Sally stood naked with the spirt she always had when we were together.

"A shower with your mom?" She asked.

"I better not Sally." I replied.

She hesitated for moment stung by my rebuke. Sally looked back seeing the difficulty I had using her proper name. She smiled and winked at me letting me know she understood.

"You're probably right Daniel." Sally said seriously. "The farmer would be proud of you."

We pulled in the drive, the kids had just left for school or day care. With Mary gone to be with Mark, the two of us walked in together. Sharon, Nikki,

Kat, and Lizzy were waiting for us. For the next hour I explained what was happening with George.

I went to work leaving them to comfort each other. I returned to greet the kid's home from school. Over the next few days they too were told that changes would be taking place. Kyle insisted he be with me when we told Cindy Sally would be leaving.

Cindy struggled to understand this wasn't just another trip that Sally was taking. Cindy clung to Kyle the whole time never letting go. All through dinner she sat with him. It wasn't until she fell asleep in his arms that we could get her to go to bed. The next morning in front of everyone she confronted him.

"You left me!" She screamed at Kyle as he sat at the table. "I hate you!"

Cindy ran to her room and slammed the door. All eyes turned to this little pistol of a girl confronting her oldest brother. The women all looked at each other and then at me. I just smiled.

"Dad can I take Cindy with you to say goodbye to Aunt Sally?" Kyle asked. There was a hush as he had never shown this kind of sensitivity or initiative before.

"Please, go get Cindy and bring her here." I replied.

"What if she won't come?" Kyle replied thinking she was mad at him. "You heard what she said!"

"If you go alone she will come." I assured him looking at Lizzy. Confused he headed that way.

It was moments later she emerged in his arms, Cindy's wrapped around his neck. Kyle questioned how I knew she would come with him.

"Cindy, would you like to go with me to say goodbye to Sally?" I asked. You might think it was too much to ask a six year old, but Cindy is no average six year old.

"No!" She protested. Holding tighter to Kyle.

"Kyle is going with us. Are you sure?" I asked again. She looked at him to see if I was making it up. He nodded.

"Will you come with me?" Kyle asked Cindy.

"Yes!" She kissed his cheek. "I still hate you!"

Cindy laid her head on his shoulder and smiled at me.

The next day just the three of us went with Sally and landed at the airport not far from George's home. Except for Cindy and Kyle in the back seat the drive was quiet. We pulled into the drive I had known so well. I looked at Sally, she looked at me. I went and helped her out of the car. Kyle and Cindy were holding hands as we walked to the door. Maggie was waiting as we arrived.

"Danny!" She greeted me happily. "Sally!" She hugged and kissed her first then me.

"Maggie this is my son Kyle and our daughter Cindy." I introduced the kids.

"George is upstairs. He would like to see you first Danny." Maggie explained. She pointed to an elevator he had installed.

I went up and talked to him for almost an hour. Coming back down Sally and Maggie were talking with Cindy and Kyle. Sally stood. The moment had come. I embraced her, she held me tight.

"I love you Aunt Sally." I whispered.

"I love you Danny." She whispered back. Sally moved to Kyle. "Take care of my angel will you son?"

Kyle ran to her and kissed her cheek. He was crying now. "I promise mom!"

Sally moved to Cindy, bending down she took her in her arms moving her head against her large breasts. Cindy didn't cry instead she looked up at Sally.

"Don't cry mommy. I'll come see you!" Cindy looked up smiling. I was so proud of her.

"Mommy loves you baby." Sally kissed her one last time before handing her off to Kyle.

"Danny before you go." She held her hand above mine and dropped two rings in my palm. One was Mary's the other was hers. "Call me when you get home and let me know you're safe."

The car ride back to the airport was mostly silent, Cindy had dozed off, her head on Kyle's lap. I checked in the car then we waited for the plane to load. Kyle sat beside me holding Cindy as she slept.

"Dad. I'm sorry." Kyle said trying to make it better.

"Kyle, there isn't anything to be sorry for. I was lucky just to have her in my life. This is where she needs to be right now." I said "Someday soon you will understand."

"I think I already do." He looked at Cindy in his arms and smiled.

"I think you're right." I smiled back.

We woke Cindy and loaded on the plane. As soon as the seat belt light went out Cindy crawled in my lap. She sat with me and played with Kyle until we landed.

"Daniel you have made him a very happy man. I don't know how to thank you?" Sally said on the phone.

"Just tell him I love you both for everything the two of you have done." I replied.

Sally was someone Lizzy had bonded with well before we were married. In fact Sally was really the one that brought us together. Sally has been an integral part of not only our home life but our sex life as well.

I could go on for hours about the games and story lines the two of them concocted. It wasn't always spectacular but between the two of them it was usually memorable. They fed off each other, teased each other, but most of all loved each other.

I'm sure as much as I miss, and will miss Sally, Lizzy will miss her more. The fact is the two of us have really never been alone for more than just a few days. With Sally no longer involved in our lives on a daily basis, Lizzy is worried she won't be enough for me.

She's wrong.

Lizzy was waiting for me in bed a few nights later. Dressed in just a sexy bra and panties she laid nervously as I entered. I smiled at her the moment I saw her, she seemed apprehensive as I moved closer.

"Danny do you still love me?" She asked her voice quivering.

"More than ever!" I replied.

"But..."

"Shhh, my love. Not another word until you cum!" I pressed my finger to her lips.

I removed my clothes and lay beside her. My finger traced the bra around her breasts. The dark skin contrasting with the bright pink pattern. I leaned and kissed her nipple through the material. Lizzy closed her arms tight beside her breasts forcing them up as she squealed in delight.

Slowly I moved one strap from her shoulder kissing the top of her breast to the side of her neck.

"You taste yummy!" I teased her not kissing her just yet.

Moving back to her chest I slipped the other strap off. I gazed now upon both dark brown slopes. I lingered waiting for her to respond. Lizzy sighed, her arms still pushing her tits up. I peeled one cup off and suckled her nipple like I had done when they offered me her milk.

"Danny." She moaned.

"Shhhhh..."

Lizzy helped me remove her bra letting her modest tits fall to the side of her chest. I sucked one up pulling it taunt. God how I loved these I thought. The dark areolas seemed bigger than before she nursed. Her nipples thicker and but just as sensitive. I slipped my hand over her tummy. She tensed letting me know she was still self-conscious about her body. I placed my lips to her stomach and blew firmly giving her a zerbert.

Lizzy doubled up laughing and pushed me away. I slipped my hand under her panties. Her pussy raised to meet it. I found her clit and brushed it lightly on my way to the goal.

"No talking until you cum!" I reminded her.

I moved my lips near hers, my hand finding the source of her wetness. I watched her melt into submission as my finger slipped inside.

"Show me you want it!" I teased.

Lizzy pushed her pussy up with her legs. The panties not allowing me the movement she wanted. I slipped a second finger beside the first. She gasped still straining to push higher.

"I love this part." I teased some more. "You want to spread your legs so I can go deeper but if you do. I can't remove your panties!"

Lizzy rolled her hips so her pussy could face my hand. She was bucking now. Fucking my fingers still inside her panties. She wanted them off. She wanted to open her sex to me so I could fuck her properly.

"Cum my love. Cum for me, and then I'll give you what you want!" I whispered in her ear.

She bucked again. Her long lithe body contorted desperately searching for more. I brushed her clit with my thumb. Lizzy gasped. Her hand grabbed my wrist and forced mine hard to her sex, Lizzy bucked again, one, more, time.

"IM CUMMING!" She yelled. I clamped my mouth over hers muffling any additional sounds. She fucked my hand her body twisting and turning hoping her panties would magically disappear. I pulled my hand from her sex as she clamped her legs shut. I was pulling at her panties, it was all she could do to open her legs to let me pull them off. I removed my mouth from hers.

"Daniel! Fuck me!"

I moved between her legs, she was still recovering from her orgasm. I pried her legs apart, the pink inner pussy flesh beckoned my cock. With brute force I held her open and stuffed my cock in her flowing pussy. Lizzy pulled me down her ebony legs wrapped behind mine

"YES!" She cried out. "Fuck me. Please fuck me." Her voice trailed off as she felt me deep inside her.

Her legs held me tight. She now kept me from moving in her.

"I love you inside me." She looked up her breathing starting to regulate.

"I love being in you!" I reminded her. "This is my all-time favorite pussy!" I assured her.

"Do you mean that Danny?" She held me tighter. I tried to fuck her but she wouldn't let me move.

"What do you think?" I asked.

"I'm not the same little girl you married." Lizzy said her voice sounded uncertain. "I'm not hard and firm anymore. My titties sag, my tummy is soft, my pussy isn't as tight.

It was a cold hard slap in the face. She had eluded to it before but now she had smacked me with it like a cold wet rag. It broke my heart she felt that way.

So you think I wanted to marry you because you were a hot piece of ass? Is what I wanted to say?

"Elizabeth. You were a beautiful woman when I married you, but you need to understand you are still a beautiful woman today. Each time I see your tits I remember how I suckled them. Each time I feel your soft skin on your tummy it reminds me what you carried inside. As for your vagina if anything it's more perfect than before!" I tried to cheer her up.

"You are exactly the same little girl that I married. The one I fell in love with so many years before I would admit it. She just has a little different body than she had then. Maybe she is more mature but she is still that little girl inside."

"You mean that Danny?" She asked.

"I promise!" I replied.

"Then fuck your wife!" She laid back and spread her legs. "Fill that pussy and make me happy!"

I pulled back we both looked at my cock slide from her dark brown pussy lips. Lizzy's pink clit just protruded from its protective hiding spot. I plunged in. We both shivered in excitement. Pulling out her juices told me how excited she really was. I started a rhythm I knew she liked. Shifting my cock to massage her G spot. Before long she was panting again. With no restrictions she voiced her pending climax.

I was lost in a world of my own. I loved this woman. I loved fucking her. I loved being with her. It was time to show her just how much. I picked up the pace pistoning in faster and faster. Our bodies slapped together. Her clit rode the ridge of my cock as I pulled out and then shifting to pleasure her G spot going back in.

"Danny!" Lizzy moaned in desperation. "Hurry!" She pleaded.

She hadn't needed to say it, I was already ahead of her. I felt her quiver and then with a force I rarely summoned I filled her pussy.

"AAAARRRRGGGGG!" I cried out.

"OOOOOOHHHH YYEESSS!" She responded. I collapsed on top of her. Letting her share her orgasm with me.

"I love you Danny." Lizzy said as she snuggled up against me.

I knew we both had made progress. She knew I still loved her, but I knew this wasn't over yet. In the morning I left the two rings of Mary and Sally on Lizzy's dresser. I knew it upset her but she didn't want to talk about it.

Having Sally and Mary leave didn't solve the underlying problem. If anything it made it worse. Before I could put my plan into action a second situation came to my attention. There was unrest in the other house. This was a bit more complicated since it involved something I couldn't control. Politics!

Sharon is now running her own insurance firm. The previous owner only comes in part time to help out and stay involved. Kat is still working for Sharon and they love it. I've always wondered what kind of conversations they have when they are at work. Sharon and Kat rarely spend time alone but they are still quite affectionate when they are together.

Nikki is transitioning with Ivan's help to handle all of our business accounting. He may even stay on part time just for something to do. Nikki has become an integral part in all we do. She loves the daily challenge and Ivan has been a great mentor. Professionally Nikki is as happy as I have ever seen her. I feel she has found her purpose in life.

Nikki and Sharon have become much closer in recent years and even more so these past few months. I always felt that part of why Mary left was to distance herself from Sharon. I even discussed it with Mary, but she assured me it was all about her and Mark getting back together.

With Mary's departure Nikki and Sharon are almost exclusive. Nikki and Kat rarely spend time together being intimate. If that happens it is at most once a month. They do however talk constantly. They always have and still do look after the kids as equal mothers.

Recently Nikki has wanted to marry Sharon. The state of Florida has been fighting the courts for years. Nikki talked about moving to another state to get married but you would need to become a resident for at least six months. The second reason to get married was to keep Sharon to herself.

The first situation I had no control over except to point out that moving away would require changes not only to their jobs but more importantly to our kids.

The second issue was less of a problem for me, but I knew it would affect mom.

Kat and I talked extensively. Like I knew she would Kat agreed to support Nikki in any decision she made. I talked to Sharon as well. She was willing to support her lover but agreed the alternatives were drastic. I floated a plan I thought might offer Nikki what she wanted and at the same time keep the amount of disruption to a minimum.

Sharon and I sat down with Nikki and I presented my plan.

My grandfather Charles had left me their condo on the ocean. Each winter a family rented it. The agreement was they had it during the winter as long as they could come. With age and failing health they no longer came. With only two bedrooms it was too small for our family. The last few years I have rented it out using it only occasionally when it wasn't rented.

The condo is about ten miles from the house but a good twenty minute drive. I offered to let them stay there for six months, just the two of them, or with Kyle, Kenzi, and Hunter, Nikki's and my three children. I agreed Kat and I wouldn't visit. They could drop the kids off at school and they would be waiting here to be picked up after work.

The next day Nikki and Sharon agreed to try it. Kyle asked to stay here with Cindy. With all parties agreeing, Kenzi and Hunter would go live with their mom. It took only weeks to move in. Before I left for work that morning Sharon and Nikki gave me their rings. They were now committed to each other.

With Sally and Mary gone the kids were being cared for by working adults. With Sharon and Nikki gone that left Kat, Lizzy and me. Kat had taken off work to help out but she still had responsibilities there. Lizzy to had commitments at work even though her schedule was more flexible. Me? Well good luck figuring out my schedule, even my assistant can't do that.

I fixed that problem easily. I hired Mrs. Martinez to watch the kids and do some light house cleaning. She came highly recommended. Late forties, average height and weight. Long black hair she kept tied up, a pretty face that would look better with a smile. She and her husband have two grown children. Efficient she was. Personable she wasn't. Still her efforts allowed me to focus on the real problem at hand.

Kat met me at home for lunch. Lizzy had taken Kyle and the rest of the kids to the beach to spend the day with Nikki and their siblings. I led her to her room and sat beside her. She held my hand for a brief moment we looked at each other. I could see the lust in her eyes. I pulled her facing me in my lap our lips met with all the passion we could muster.

"I need you?" She hissed.

"I know!" I bit her lower lip softly.

"Now Danny I need you now." She bit me back.

I pulled her top over her head. Her bra hit the floor at the same time. I kissed her again as she worked my shirt off. I nibbled on her ear as she started to stand. We removed our shorts, undergarments and all. I pulled her closer and sucked her nipple. She moaned then squealed as I bit it gently.

"In me NOW Danny!"

Kat scampered on the bed, she wiggled her ass at me while I grabbed the lube. There was no extended foreplay just desire as I placed my cock against her asshole.

"Hurry Danny!"

"Mom! We need to at least start slow." I suggested.

The lube spread beside the head of my cock. A small wave pushing towards the ridge. I could hear her panting as the last of the purple head slipped past her tight opening.

"Oh baby that feels so delicious!" She whimpered. "Deeper Danny. Hurry!"

"You have the most magnificent ass mom!" I complimented her.

"Then fuck it" She begged.

I pushed myself all the way in she cooed as my pelvis pressed against her ass.

"I can never get enough of that!" Kat sighed. "Now baby don't make mommy beg. Not today!"

With those words I proceeded to fuck her ass just like she loved it least. Slow and steady. I let her feel every vein, every ripple my cock possessed. She knew each one by heart now but she loved it just the same. Kat moaned begging me to pick up the pace but I knew there would be more pleasure if we took our time. And for now we had that luxury.

Slowly I brought her to the brink of her first orgasm. When she was close I pulled my cock out letting the cool air enter her distended ass.

"No baby. Please just fuck me!" She whimpered. "Please let me cum?"

I pushed back in spreading her open, Kat's body did a quick shiver. I pulled out again she groaned in frustration. I let her asshole wink at me. I knew her pussy was doing the same. I ran my finger over her clit. She pushed back, I

impaled her ass again but this time she was prepared. Kat slammed back taking me completely inside.

"I'm cumming baby. Fuck me!" Kat squealed. I stroked her slowly she spasmed through a small orgasm in no way filling her need. "Danny!"

I wrapped my arms around her and pulled her in my lap as I sat back on my thighs.

With one hand I gripped her tit the other I snaked between her legs.

"Now cum for me mother!" I teased her pussy and rubbed her clit.

My hand fondled her tit as I kissed the back of her neck. She bounced on my cock still buried in her ass but in this position she could move very little. I pressed two fingers inside her dripping cunt beside my cock. Strumming her clit I knew this wouldn't take long.

"Oh Danny...I'm cummmmmmmiinnng!" Kat twisted free of my grip on her tit and pulled my mouth to hers. She kissed me as she rode out a shattering orgasm her ass pressed firmly to me. I fed her the hand from her pussy she greedily licked it clean. I pushed her forward until she was back on her knees.

"You want to cum mom? Then cum!" I spanked her ass firmly then started fucking her like she wanted before.

"Danny noooooooo!" She complained.

We both knew this time she meant yes. I dribbled more lube on her ass, my cock was met with little resistance now. She wiggled beneath me as I moved so fast the sounds of us slapping together were out of sync with the motions.

"Hurry Kat. I need you to cum!" I warned her. I felt her fingers now in her pussy I knew she was rubbing her clit. "Mom I'm almost there!"

Then like a switch turned on and a lightning bolt stuck her ass Kat started grunting.

"Now baby! Now!" Kat pleaded.

I sent a wad of cum deep in her ass as she continued to grunt encouragement. A ringing in my ears, a pounding in head, a spasm in my body let me know her ass was full of cum. I fell backwards. The last thing I saw clearly was her asshole gaping open and my cum running over her pussy.

I caught my breath and she hers. We met in the middle kissing and holding each other tight. We took separate showers. We didn't even talk while she got dressed. I loaded her bags in the car. Kat took a long look at the house and sighed. I could see how conflicted she was. We both knew it had to be done.

I sat on the bench with her looking at the time.

"You better go." I said calmly.

"Are you sure Danny?" Kat asked.

"I think so?" I replied.

"What if she doesn't come?" Kat looked at me nervously. "This isn't Becky, Danny."

The reference was clear.

"If you feel that way. Don't come back without her then!" I said firmly.

"What about you?" Kat's eyes watered.

"Trust me." I replied.

"I would feel better if Sally was here." She said.

"So would I." I kissed her. Kat turned leaving me stand there watching her leave.

The ride home was somber. I entered the house and called Mrs. Martinez. Before I hung up she agreed to help. I went into the bedroom and looked at her dresser they were all setting there just like I left them.

They arrived later than I expected. I carried Casen and Cindy, while Kyle carried Mikayla. Lizzy brought in the bags. I put the Casen and Mikayla to bed. Lizzy got Cindy ready and Kyle went in to read her a story. I said good night to Kyle and Cindy.

Lizzy met me in bed I could tell she was exhausted.

"You and Kat have a good day?" Lizzy asked as she snuggled against me.

"We made love around noon." I replied.

"Without me?" She teased.

"We did." I replied.

"I wish you wouldn't do that." Lizzy said, but was too tired to tease me any further.

"We won't. Not without your blessing." I answered.

"Thank you. I'll talk to her in the morning." Lizzy giggled as she closed her eyes.

"She isn't here Lizzy. She left." I explained.

"Ok then another day perhaps." She drifted asleep just like that.

...

"DANIEL MASTERS where is she?" Lizzy was screaming.

I looked up it was still dark outside. Lizzy was standing beside the bed looking at me furiously. I sat up to face her. Then I saw she had Kat's ring in her hand.

"I told you she left." I repeated.

"You go get her right now Danny!" She screamed.

"I can't do that." I replied.

"Why not?" She yelled.

"I promised her I wouldn't." I said calmly. "I can't call her either."

"You did this didn't you?" Lizzy yelled. "Just like you sent Nikki to mom! Just like you sent Kat to Becky? Just like you let Mary go? And Sally, you let Sally leave!"

"I didn't send her, but I did let her go." I corrected her.

"She's your mother. She is the love of your life!" Lizzy yelled.

"No Lizzy, you're wrong, YOU are the love of my life?" I replied back firmly.

"She needs you! You need her!" Lizzy screamed.

"She wants me. YOU need me. I want her but I need YOU!" I raised my voice just to let her know I was serious.

"Don't you get it Lizzy? You are the one. You always have been. The others I made happy, but you my love, you are the one that makes me happy!" I explained calmly. "You are the only one I ever went to!"

"But I gave them all the rings for you!" She said quietly. "I did it for you!"

"No my love. They already had the rings. You didn't give them. You returned them. A gift is something you didn't have before." I tried to explain. "They weren't mine. They were ours. All of ours. Each part of the others."

"You mean...?"

They all left for you. Sally, Mary, Nikki, your mom. Even Kat. They all want you happy." I explained.

"But Kat. Why did she leave you? She has a home here?" Lizzy protested.

"Did you ever think maybe she didn't leave me?" I asked.

The room became eerily quiet.

"Danny what are you saying?" Lizzy asked. I could see her start to wobble.

"Why her Lizzy? None of the others? Just Kat? I asked "Tell me Lizzy tell me why she is the only one?"

"Danny? Are you saying she left me not you?" Lizzy stood shaking. I reached out and took her hand.

"Maybe you should ask her when you see her." I replied.

"Danny what if she won't come back?" Lizzy started to cry.

"It's time you learn what true love is my dear." I pulled her tight. "Sometimes when you let go you get more love back than you gave. Remember that my love. Other times you need to show them they are worth pursuing!"

"Please take me!" She pleaded.

"No Lizzy. I think this is one time you need to go alone." I assured her. "You get ready and I'll book your flight."

"A flight?" Lizzy asked. "Where am I going?"

"You'll know when you get there." I smiled.

A flurry of activity preceded the moment she stood in front of me. The cab was outside waiting.

"What should I say?" Lizzy stood nervously in front of me.

"Maybe if you gave her something that meant more than words?" I suggested.

"The ring!" Lizzy shrieked. I followed her to the dresser where she had returned it with the others. She pulled Kat's from the top and showed it to me. I took the ring.

"Here I have a case to put it in." I said. I took the ring and set the case on top of the dresser. "In the drawer is the box."

She opened the drawer I flipped the case open to put the ring in. Closing the case I put it in the box, then placed the lid on top. Lizzy retied the ribbon and placed it in her purse.

"I hate you Daniel Masters." She said as I walked her to the cab. Her kiss reminded me how much.

I found the cheapest ticket I could find to get Lizzy to the resort. I wanted her to have plenty of time to think and reflect before she faced Kat. I knew the risks of letting Kat go. There was even a slight chance Lizzy wouldn't come back. I called Mrs. Martinez and she came to help me get the kids ready for school.

Kyle and Cindy both noticed Lizzy and Kat were gone. I dropped Mikayla and Casen off at daycare. Mrs. Martinez stayed at the house to clean. Being

the first day I was confident but not cocky. I knew the stakes were higher than ever before.

Sharon stopped to pick up Kayla and Hunter on her way home to the condo. Kyle went with her so he could babysit his siblings. Sharon and Nikki were attending some seminars the next few nights. Kyle left leaving Cindy with me and the toddlers.

Cindy had Mikayla ready for bed as I dealt with the bundle of energy, Casen, now two and a half. I was chasing a naked baby down the halls when the phone rang. Cindy in her ever helpful way answered it. I knew it was Lizzy the moment Cindy begged her to bring Kat back home.

"Lizzy?" I answered as Cindy handed me the phone.

"Danny!" She started crying. "I messed up bad!"

"Tell me baby." I tried to calm her down.

"She's with Christi!" Lizzy sobbed in the phone.

"Did you give her the ring?" I asked.

"No. I want to come home!" Lizzy was sobbing uncontrollably.

"Lizzy? Remember the day I proposed?" I asked. "Remember how you made me come to you?"

"Yes." She sniffled.

"Open the box and take out the ring." I explained.

"Now?" She asked.

"Yes baby now." I replied. I heard her put down the phone.

"Danny are you sure?" Lizzy squealed in happiness.

"Remember what I said last night?"

"Sometimes when you let go, you get more love back than you gave." Lizzy repeated.

"Make sure she opens the case with Christi." I suggested.

"I love you Danny!" Lizzy said her voice filled with emotions.

We hung up. Cindy crawled on my lap and looked up at me. With Kyle gone and both moms away I knew what she wanted.

"Well baby I guess it's just you and me!" I teased her. Cindy flung her arms around my neck.

"It's ok daddy. I'll take care of you!" She hugged me tight. "Can we play Barbie's?" She giggled.

"Sure I replied." Why not I figured. Maybe I would have more success with a toy woman?

The thought that just months ago there were six women in my life and now there may be none didn't escape my thoughts. I was pretty sure Lizzy would return but Kat was another gamble on my part. Christi wasn't Becky. This is a woman like Nikki that Kat could fall in love with. Still I had no right to keep her from finding that out.

Letting kids sleep with us was never a practice we encouraged. There were exceptions if they were sick, or if there was a storm. Cindy was in our bed when I came from the shower. I usually just sleep in pajama bottoms but I pulled on the top as well. I moved to the opposite side of the bed from where she was sleeping.

I must have been more tired than I realized. I woke to the patter of feet and the not so discreet whispers of Cindy and Casen. I opened my eyes, it was dark, the clock said it was two in the morning. Mikayla had already joined me in the bed. Cindy now helping Casen. With the mission now accomplished the three of them jockeyed for position. Cindy holding her sister as Casen snuggled next to me.

"Are you happy now?" I asked Cindy.

"They were lonely too!" She whispered.

If Mrs. Martinez was concerned Lizzy and Kat were still missing she never said a word about it. Cindy was off to school Mikayla and Casen stayed home today with her. I went to the office. Nikki asked if I had heard anything. I explained that Lizzy called but offered no details.

I decided to work at home in the afternoon to give Mrs. Martinez a break with the kids. She has only been here a few months, and she still has not offered to call her by her first name. It became apparent that afternoon she had warmed up considerably to the kids and them to her. She was no Sally or Mary but there was genuine concern and attention devoted to the children.

When school let out and all six were now in the house her drill sergeant side came out. Asking about homework and making sure schedules were followed. Snacks were limited to the dining room and kitchen. Play time was outside so I could work.

Dinner was started, Mrs. Martinez's eyes never seemed to leave the window. Kyle was allowed to visit his friend with strict instructions to be home on time. Sharon came and picked up Hunter, Kenzi, and Kyle. She asked if I had heard any more than I told Nikki at work. She left disappointed. I too was becoming concerned.

The bed was filled with kids as I emerged from the bathroom after my shower. I pulled my top over my head and slid into the spot Cindy had no doubt left for me. I woke from my slumber to the sounds of someone in the house. I listened to see if I should be concerned then I heard them talking.

"Daddy!" Cindy whispered.

"I know." I replied back. "Pretend you're asleep."

"Ok!" She giggled.

Lizzy came in the bedroom quietly heading to the bathroom. When the bathroom door opened the light from inside cast a ray providing a glimpse of what was waiting if Lizzy looked. The bathroom door closed the illumination trapped inside the bathroom with her. Cindy and I heard Lizzy sigh.

"Daddy?" Cindy whispered.

"Not yet." I replied moving closer to Casen and Mikayla. Cindy woke her sister I could hear her whisper in her ear.

The door opened and the light extinguished. I felt her slip in behind me. There is no feeling in the world as when the one you love pulls you close. I felt her shake as her hand held me tight. Lizzy was crying. I rolled to face her. Kissing her gently she stopped crying for the moment. I kissed her some more until she melted in my arms.

"I have a gift for you!" Lizzy whispered.

"I have a better one for you." I whispered back. "Now Cindy!" I said.

"Mommy!" She and Mikayla squealed as I turned on the light. Casen woke startled but when he saw Lizzy his fear turned to joy. The three of them climbed over me attacking Lizzy. Her tears of love for me quickly turned to tears of love for the kids. Hugs and kisses lasted for many minutes. Lizzy was overcome with emotion. Cindy looked at me smiling. She grabbed Mikayla's hand and led her out the door.

"He's not lonely anymore." Cindy told her sister. "You can sleep with me!"

I picked up Casen. Lizzy looked at me still a bit overwhelmed.

"Here let me, she said taking Casen from me." She hugged her baby like never before. "Let mommy tuck you in sweetie!"

I waited for some time before she returned. Lizzy had brought back not only Kat but Christi as well. The day Sally bolted from the house when she caught Lizzy with Kat everything changed. Sally and I both knew what she and Lizzy had would never be the same.

Something happened that day with Kat, a connection was made that Lizzy has been afraid to admit. Lizzy doesn't see Kat as a lover, although they have been intimate. The fact she brought Christi back is proof of that. No it's

deeper than that, I think Lizzy sees Kat as the person that replaced Val, her grandmother, in her life.

Like Kat, Val was a strong woman, a sensual woman, a caring woman. Like Kat a woman that devoted her life not only to her son, but his wife. And not just any wife, but also a strong woman, a loving mother, and a sexual partner. I could be wrong, but I think the apple has not fallen far from the tree.

Without a word she laid down beside me. I pulled her close. We kissed for several minutes.

"What did you learn?" I asked my question taking her off guard. Regaining her composure. Lizzy was quick to respond.

"I learned Lizzy isn't a lezzy! She giggled. "But she can't live without your mom!" Lizzy replied seriously.

"You ok with that?" I asked sincerely.

"Will you still love me if I am?" She gazed in my eyes.

"I always have before." I replied.

"You knew?" She cocked her head.

"I knew the moment we first kissed." I replied. "Don't get weird on me, but it really was more than just a kiss!"

"Danny I hate you!" Lizzy protested remembering how we teased each other when she was teenager.

I turned out the light and kissed her deeply.

"But what about your present?" She giggled.

"She can wait. You're being punished!"

"Promise?" Lizzy squealed as I pulled off her pajamas.

"Promise!" I replied as she helped me remove mine.

I know we have made love more passionately before but I don't know if it ever meant more to both of us than it did tonight. Lizzy slid down taking my cock in her mouth eliciting my first groan. Laying between my legs I offered to return the favor. Lizzy slyly let me know that her time from home wasn't all drama. She took her time changing positions and style several times.

Lizzy loves to suck just the head and jack me with her hand, then when I arched my back she would fill her mouth until she gagged. Her long fingers caressed my balls. She held me at the edge of orgasm.

"Cum for me Danny. Let me taste your love!" She purred.

As soon as she sucked the chrome from my helmet her mouth filled with fresh semen. She jacked me through the end of my orgasm. My hands flailing trying not to push her head down over my cock. Lizzy sucked and licked and nibbled the sensitive bulb. I could feel her licking the little slit on the end. No longer able to stand the torment I pulled from her mouth and rolled on top of her.

"That was so much love!" Lizzy squealed. "Will you have any left for my pussy?"

'Let's find out?" I grunted as I slammed my cock in her cunt.

"I think hubby missed me!" Lizzy teased. "I have been a bad girl!"

The feeling of her velvet walls against my cock was like heaven. The head was still too sensitive but the rest was basking in warm slick pleasure. I rolled us over putting Lizzy on top. This wasn't her favorite position, but then again she was being punished.

She started working me with her pussy. My hands found her tits. I rolled the sensitive nipples between my fingers. Lizzy whimpered picking up the pace. I refused to let go as she bucked harder slamming her pussy hard over my cock.

"Danny!" She gasped.

I pulled her nipple lifting them slightly. Lizzy was drawn between following my hands or continue fucking me.

She did both. Her pussy gurgled with me inside. I watched her stomach tighten her ribs jutted out just below her chest. Lizzy held her breath then with her nipples surely burning she arched her back and proceeded to climax! Lizzy shuddered above me bouncing quickly, very quickly on my cock. I could have come but I decided to wait. I let her finish, then pulling her off I moved behind her and pulled her to her knees.

"I should take that tight black ass!" I teased her.

"No Danny! Please no, I promised Kat!" She replied.

I pushed in her pussy Lizzy groaned and pushed back.

"Cum!" Demanded.

"I just did!" Lizzy protested

"Cum again. You're being punished!" I reminded her.

I felt her finger rub her clit the other hand caressed my balls. She wasn't playing fair hoping I would come first. I started fucking her faster but this just made me want to cum even more.

"Cum Lizzy!" I begged.

Her hand moved faster. I heard her moan. Her pussy gripped my cock which was all I needed to fill her cunt. She pulled off after the second rope shot in side. The others coated her back and ass while she continued to rub her clit through her orgasm. I flopped down beside her. Lizzy moved to me and took my cock in her mouth sucking me clean.

She lay on top of me. I rubbed my cum in her back.

"Danny I promise to be a good wife from now on." Lizzy kissed me. "I love you so much."

"I love you too Lizzy but daddy is tired. He needs to sleep." She kissed me. I had a feeling of a warm wet cloth wash my cock and balls. The shower was running...

Chapter 12

I was up early. After my shower I dressed in shorts and pull over. I took my laptop and sat on the couch checking e-mails. Saturday has always been a

day for the kids and this would be no different. A door upstairs opened and soon I heard walking in the hall. I looked at the open staircase. Christi was standing with Kat.

"I told you he would be up. You go down I'll take my shower." Kat whispered turning to leave.

Christi descended the stairs tentatively. She crossed the room and was clearly wet from her shower.

"Good morning." I said cheerfully as I looked up from the screen.

Christi held closed a white terrycloth robe, any undergarments would be hidden as she sat opposite me. I looked back at the computer screen.

"Good morning Danny." Christi replied softly.

"Was it a nice trip?" I looked up happily.

"It was fine." She said still sizing me up.

"Is there anything I can get you? Maybe some fresh orange juice?" I sat the computer to the side.

"I'm fine." Christi tilted her head giving me a questioned look. She still hadn't figured it out.

"I could start some coffee, I'm actually quite good in a kitchen." I explained.

"Really I'm fine." She insisted. There was a long pause. Christi was waiting on me. But as you know I don't offer what I don't know. "Danny why am I here?"

Just then a door opened upstairs. The patter of little feet filled the hall.

"Do you want to go?" I questioned her. More doors opened, more feet running.

"I didn't say that." She looked up the noise now growing louder. "You didn't answer my question!"

"Hold that thought." I held up my finger. "Cindy!"

"Daddy she's home! Kitty is home!" Cindy yelled.

She and Mikayla came running down the stairs Casen following close behind. Lizzy stood at the railing looking at them scamper to greet me. I closed the computer and set it on the table knowing well and good what would happen if I didn't. Cindy delivered her sister to me and returned to retrieve her brother. With Casen now in my lap Cindy turned her attention to our guest.

"Daddy who is she?" Cindy stood arms crossed defending her ground.

"This is Christi. Mommy and Kitty's friend." I explained. I looked up Kat was now with Lizzy at the top of the stairs looking on. "Why don't you go say hello."

"Ok!" Cindy smiled.

I'm not sure what Christi expected but we all knew what Cindy would do. She ran the three steps to Christi and flung her petite body into the startled arms

of our guest. When Christi opened her arms her small breasts popped into view and she was clearly wearing no panties. Cindy kissed her on the cheek then reached in her open robe and grabbed a tit.

"Daddy they're small like mommies!" Cindy announced. "Do you have milk?"

Christi was so taken aback she turned beet red instantly. She was at a loss for words. Kat and Lizzy started laughing upstairs.

"Danny?" Christi looked at me unable to react.

"Cindy! Stop that!" I reprimanded her. "Now close her robe and get down from there."

Cindy closed her robe but again stood her ground.

"Daddy she's pretty!" Cindy ran her hands through Christi's bright blonde hair. "She smells good!"

"Cindy come with me, let's get you kids dressed. Kenzi, Hunter, and.....Kyle are coming home for a few days." Lizzy explained as she picked up Casen. Cindy hearing Kyle was coming quickly jumped from Christi and took Mikayla with her.

"Sorry Christi." Kat giggled.

"It's ok. I just wasn't expecting that!" She looked at us both still embarrassed.

Kat sat down beside Christi kissing her cheek. "Would you like some coffee before the troops arrive?"

"Maybe I better." Christi looked back at me. "You still haven't answered."

Kat led her back upstairs to get dressed before coming back down for breakfast. Before long Sharon and Nikki arrived dropping off the kids. Organized confusion is what I call it. I went with them for the morning then I took Kyle to his soccer match in the afternoon.

Cindy of course insisted on going to watch. I fired up the grill and cooked everything from hot dogs to shrimp. Nikki and Sharon joined us for dinner. We played games with the kids until bed time. Sharon and Nikki left the kids here and headed home about the same time.

Kyle was allowed to stay up which meant Cindy would as well. The ladies were in the kitchen. Cindy was setting on Kyles lap playing with her doll.

"Dad is Christi staying?" Kyle asked.

"I don't know son. Do you want her to?" I asked.

"I think Kitty does." Cindy said still playing.

"Do you princess?" I asked. She looked at Kyle and nodded.

"We do." Kyle smiled. "Come on sis it's time we get some sleep."

"Kyle. Ten minutes." I said. "Cindy you sleep in your own bed!"

"Aw dad!" She protested.

Lizzy joined me in the overstuffed chair. She curled up resting her head on my shoulder. Kat walked Christi to the couch and sat down beside her. The conversation was light. We didn't discuss Christi's visit or what went on before she arrived.

Christi did explained how much she enjoyed the day. Facing that way Lizzy and I saw her come down the stairs. Lizzy was going to get up but I held her letting her know not to move.

Like a little munchkin she ran across the room and jumped in Kat's lap.

"Cindy?" I scolded her.

"I can't sleep and you won't let me stay with Kyle!" Cindy argued.

She nuzzled inside Kat and rested her head upon her chest. She reached for Christi's hand and held it then like the princess she is, she drifted to sleep.

Cindy had us all wrapped around her little finger none more than myself. She knew my bark was louder than my bite, but she also knew my limits. She knew if Kyle wasn't there to protect her Kat would. I let Cindy stay so Christi could see firsthand even the children's voices would be heard.

We talked for another hour and then decided to turn in.

"Let me take the princess" I said as I helped Lizzy up.

I reached for her and started taking her from Kat. Cindy woke looking at me.

"No! You take Kitty." She pulled on Christi's hand. "I'm going with Christi"

"Cindy!" I warned her.

"Please let me do this." Christi replied. You three go ahead. I want to do this." Christi took Cindy from my arms. "Besides I could use a break. These women are very passionate."

"I'll tuck you two in." Lizzy said to Cindy and Christi. "I'm a little sore myself!" She winked at me.

Cindy wrapped her arms around Christi's neck as she prepared to carry her up to bed. Kat and I kissed the three of them goodnight before they turned to leave. Christi stood for just a second. "You still haven't answered me!"

"Hold onto that thought." I said. She was disappointed but knew now wasn't the time.

Kat filled my arms and kissed me deeply. "I love you son!"

"You care to show me how much?" I teased.

"I thought you would never ask!" Mom kissed me again pulling my hands to her ass.

I followed her upstairs. Dispensing with our clothes we cuddled in bed.

"Did you find what you were looking for?" I asked stroking her hips and ass cheek.

"I'm not sure Danny. I think so. But this is too important and it might just be my emotions." Kat whispered. "What do you think?"

"I think I love you and want you to be happy. I have Lizzy and the kids which is enough for me." I replied.

"Lizzy and I both agreed we would never leave you again. Not for Christi, not for anyone!" Kat kissed me deeply. "Christi thinks she loves you Danny but. I am not sure....."

"Mom, if she stays it will be for you. Not me." I said firmly. "Trust your instincts."

"I wish there was a way I could know for sure." Kat said.

"There is. If you think she would go along?" I suggested.

"You would do that for me?" Kat asked.

"I would be doing it not only for you but this entire family!" I kissed her again. "Now do I get to fuck your ass or are we going to talk all night?"

Kat wanted to suck me off but I knew tomorrow would be a busy day. I suckled her tits which always gets her dripping then she got on her knees. I lubed us both up and pressed to the most sensitive spot on her body.

"Slowly Danny. I want to feel every inch slip in me." She moaned.

We have done this so many times but I never get tired of the feeling the first time I enter her ass. The firm resistance, then like the wave of a magic wand the intense pressure as her anus defies nature. I stopped as the mushroom head is clamped from that shaft. Kat always tells me this is her favorite part.

I let her push back at her own pace, tonight she was taking it in silence. Concentrating on my cock it stretched her further the more she took. Only when she bottomed out would she let me start fucking her. Tonight was about connecting again. Reaffirming not only our love but our commitment to each other and Lizzy. I would give up a thousand Christi's to keep the two of them. Only now did I realized I wouldn't need to.

I fucked mom's ass. Her every twitch, her every murmur telling me what she wanted tonight. She came well before me. It was a good orgasm, not some out of body experience, but clearly satisfying. When I filled her ass I knew she was still mine. I kissed her right after confirming I was all hers as well.

We decided to take two cars, Lizzy was with me, Casen, Hunter, Kenzi, and Mikayla in back. Kat had Christi and of course Kyle and Cindy. Sharon greeted us in a suit I thought was a bit too small around the kids but then Nikki's wasn't much better. Sometimes I think Kyle is the luckiest eleven year old on the planet! It was a perfect beach day, warm, sunny and not too humid. I helped carry the toys and boogie boards down to the water.

There must have been a conspiracy. Lizzy, Kat, and Christi each had on a very revealing suit under their clothes as well. I set up two large umbrellas and in short order the kids and I were in the surf having fun. At times so much sunscreen gets slathered on I think we should buy it by the gallon. I think sometimes they use so much just for the fun of putting it on each other.

Coming from the tropics Christi was deeply tanned as well, but they all paled in comparison to my ebony wife. Lunched was served on the patio. Christi holding Mikayla since Kyle had Cindy. Casen just ran to every woman there garnering the most attention. Hunter and I were playing Frisbee in the water with Kenzi. Mikayla was now napping in Lizzy's arms, Casen in Christi's under one umbrella. Kat, Sharon, and Nikki under the other. Cindy had Kyle half buried in sand for the third time.

Mid-afternoon I noticed Sharon and Nikki took Lizzy, Kat, and Christi in the condo. It was almost half an hour when they emerged with refreshments.

After dinner Nikki and Sharon asked to speak to me alone. Having spent several months on the beach away from everyone Nikki decided it wasn't working as she hoped. The kids missed me and their siblings when they were with her.

"Nikki the kids can come live with us, you know that." I assured her.

With Sharon's help we discussed several options for fifteen minutes or so. In the end I explained that the final decision would be hers. Nikki then asked about possibility of moving back to the small house next door.

"Of course you can, it's your house." I replied. But I knew that isn't what she was asking.

"Danny, if we do there needs to be some rules." Nikki looked at Sharon and then at me.

"What rules are you suggesting?" I asked. Sharon took her hand offering support.

"There can be no visitors." Nikki said. "I'm sorry but I need Sharon for myself."

"So what did Kat and Lizzy say?" I asked.

"I told you." Sharon laughed at Nikki. "Danny they will abide by your wishes." Sharon explained.

"And the kids? Are they visitors?" I wanted to clarify.

"Danny they will be living in the big house with you." Nikki seemed to be nervous.

"But they aren't welcome to come see you?" I tried to understand.

"Danny, what Nikki is trying to say is for now she would like there to be limited access." Sharon spoke up. "Of course the kids can visit but maybe not every day all day?"

"I see." I replied. I figured as much. "What about Christi. If she moves in with Kat is that a problem for the two of you?"

Nikki looked at Sharon, then smiled. "We think she's perfect!" Nikki squealed.

"Even for the kids?" I asked.

"Daniel we trust you to decide that." Sharon added.

"Give me a few days to think about your proposal. I agree in principal. It's the details I want to consider." I explained. "You do know if Kat, and maybe Christi aren't allowed to visit the two of you the opposite will be true as well."

"We have one exception you didn't mention." Nikki said. She looked at Sharon and back to me. "Danny, Sharon still needs you."

I looked at them both. It had been months since Sharon and I were intimate. I could see the desire was still there. Sharon had a dilemma. She was committed to Nikki but still wanted to spend time with me.

"I'll let you know soon. I promise." I kissed them both and we joined the others.

I went to the spare room to use the computer. I had made my mind up on one matter and needed to get it set in motion. Logging on the internet I went to work.

I asked Kyle to stay with Kenzi and Hunter at the condo for the night. Kat rode home with me alone. Christi and the kids with Lizzy.

"You're ok with this Nikki proposal?" I asked.

"Danny, we both know she will be happier." Mom replied.

"I told them if you couldn't visit neither could they." I explained.

"Honey we're ok with that. We have you and each other." Kat said happily.

"Nikki wants Sharon and me to spend time together." I brought up.

"As well you should. Danny she needs you." Mom reached over and took my hand. "Maybe if you took her on business trips?"

I looked over, Kat gave me that knowing smile.

"Your flights leave tomorrow. I'm sending Cindy." I said.

"She will like that. Thank you son." We rode in silence mom and I holding hands.

Cindy was not happy Kyle didn't come home. She is still having a difficult time with Sally gone. With the kids now in bed. Lizzy and I were just cuddling.

There was a knock on the door. I looked at the clock it was almost midnight. I went to the door it was Kat and Christi in robes. I ushered them in.

"We came to get Lizzy!" Kat giggled.

They opened their robes, Christi had on a harness with long slender dildo's hanging from it. Kat was holding nipple clamps.

"Can she come out and play?" Christi cooed.

I looked down the hall to see if any of the kids were up. I saw Cindy duck back in her room.

"Can I daddy?" Lizzy gave her best little girl impression.

"Better still, why don't the three of you stay here? I have someone that needs me." I grabbed my top and put it on. "Ladies I'll see you in the morning."

The ruckus in the room quieted as soon as I locked the door and pulled it closed behind me. I walked down the hall and gently pushed the door open. Cindy was in bed faking she was asleep.

"Baby are you awake?" I whispered. She refused to respond.

"Too bad I was hoping you could keep me company tonight." I whispered. "I get lonely when I sleep alone."

I went to the guest room and slipped in bed. I didn't need to wait long before the patter of feet told me she was looking for me.

"Daddy?" She whispered beside the bed.

"Yes baby?"

"If you're lonely I can stay with you."

"I would like that." I replied. She jumped in the bed. I pulled her close kissing her cheek. "I love you princess."

The sun was just starting to rise over the horizon as I looked at the plane schedule and emails. I heard a door close upstairs, her eyes met mine as I looked up. Slowly she made her way down the steps.

"Danny why am I here?" Christi removed her robe standing naked before me. "You haven't answered me."

She stood nervously waiting for me to respond. I picked the robe up from the floor and draped it over her shoulders. I pulled it closed and tied it. I kissed her cheek gently. She sighed in frustration. Her arms trapped inside wouldn't allow her to reach out.

"Well you aren't here for that!" I scolded her. "I suggest you get you're skinny ass back upstairs and get dressed you have a plane to catch."

"What if I don't want to go?" Christi challenged me. I pulled her into and long and passionate kiss.

"Please it's important." I replied.

"To you?" She snipped

"To Kat!" I explained. "And to Lizzy."

Mrs. Martinez didn't say anything that morning when Kat introduced our new guest. She did seem pleased to see Kat and Lizzy were back however.

"Maggie will pick you up at the airport. Please have her call me when she returns to the house." I explained to Kat. "See you tonight Princess."

I kissed Cindy as Christi held her.

Maggie called when she returned to the house giving me the bad news with the good. I thanked her and hung up. Sally called me later that day after Kat, Christ and Cindy were headed back to the airport.

Sally gave me her assessment of Christi, as I expected it was very positive. After that we had a long and tearful conversation.

Three weary and tired travelers were met by throngs of excited family. Sharon and Nikki came with me and of course all of the kids. Cindy clung to Christi even when Kyle tried to take her. It was only when I pried her away she would let me pass her to Kyle.

"Let's go get pizza!" I suggested. Sharon had Hunter. Nikki had Kenzi. Lizzy had Casen. Kat took Mikayla.

I took Christi's hand as we walked to the vans.

"Danny why am I here?" Christi asked as she and I sat with Kat that night in the living room. I turned to Kat and nodded my final approval.

"Christi. I would like you to come live with us." Kat finally asked her.

Christi looked at her then back at me. She seemed truly shocked by the statement. She cocked her head, her hands shook.

"You mean this whole last week wasn't just a onetime fling?" Christi Asked. Kat took her hand and held it firmly.

"You were..... you were scrutinizing me? Judging me. Did you grade me as well?" Christi snapped back seemingly offended.

"Oh Christi! It wasn't anything like that. Sure we wanted to get to know you but Danny knew before he sent me to get you." Kat explained passionately.

"Then why 'am' I here?" Christi asked, now truly desperate to know.

"So you could scrutinize us!" I replied.

If you would have touched her with a feather she might have fallen over. Christi was so emotional she looked like she might just pass out.

"Christi would you like to be part of our family?" I repeated taking her hand.

"But you don't know anything about me!" She protested. Kat and I both smiled.

"I know everything about you we need to know." I smiled.

"Like what?" Christi was still not convinced.

"I know you're head of security for a worldwide organization. I know they do in depth background checks. To hold your position, there can be no criminal issues, and no drug issues." I started. "Your lover smokes but you do not, so she doesn't respect you. You took a week's vacation to come which tells us you weren't happy in other ways. You helped Sally with her list and let Lizzy misbehave. That tells me you have a naughty streak. But there was one deciding factor." I explained.

"And that is?" She was crying now.

"The kids love you. Especially Cindy." Kat said. "That and I'm in love with you!"

"But what about Danny. He refused, even when I offered." Christi sobbed.

"And if you return that may never happen." I warned her.

"You're sending me back?" Christi pulled from my hand. I nodded she was right.

"Christi this must be your decision. Mom will not come again."

"If you want me to stay then why do I need to go?" Christi asked the obvious.

"Kat will explain." I kissed her firmly. "Goodbye Christi."

I headed upstairs to Lizzy.

Kat alone saw her off the next morning after the kids said their goodbyes. She called Kat that night letting her know she was safely home.

The reports from Sally were getting even worse. Every day I wished I hadn't promised. Wednesday the call came in. George had passed quietly in the night.

I called Sharon and Nikki with the news. Lizzy, Kat and I drove up per our agreement. Friday the three of us, Sally, Maggie and his partner Darius and wife attended the brief service he requested. Darius and our lawyers met the next morning at the hotel I was staying at. There wasn't much to discuss just papers to sign. Darius handed me a check and we shook hands.

Kat spent the night with Sally and Maggie. Lizzy and I went to dinner with Darius and his wife then retired back at the hotel. We picked Kat up in the morning. I kissed Maggie and Sally on the cheek and then started home with mom and Lizzy. We stopped for the night the clerk was surprised I only wanted one room.

"I am so proud of you son!" Kat said as she lay on top of me. "Sally loves you so."

"So do we!" Lizzy added as she guided my cock in Kat's sopping pussy. "Now fill her up!"

My mind shifted to the business at hand. I thrusted up in mom causing her whimper.

"Yes baby fuck me!" Kat groaned.

I could feel Lizzy's greasy fingers slip in Kat's ass beside my cock.

"Lizzy!" Mom squealed. "What are ....."

"I want to feel his big hot cock stretching your pussy!" Lizzy whispered in Kat's ear.

"But Lizzy you never....." Mom protested.

"I know, but this is special." Lizzy cooed.

"You're going to make me cum!" Mom warned Lizzy.

"Good then you can watch him fill my black pussy!" Lizzy taunted her.

"You bitch!" Mom groaned as Lizzy fingered her ass deeper.

Lizzy moved closer and kissed Kat passionately. Their tongues danced, Kat reached over and twisted Lizzy's nipple. They were tormenting each other and I was enjoying every minute of it.

"Hurry Danny fill her pussy I want to lick it out!" Lizzy hissed.

"You do?" Mom groaned at just the thought of it.

"Tonight I am your little black bitch!" Lizzy chuckled. "I owe that much to Sally."

Soon we had a rhythm and Kat was bucking between the two of us.

"Cum mommy!" Lizzy teased her. "I want to taste you with his cum!"

Smack. Smack! Lizzy was spanking Kat's ass now too.

Kat ground down on me. I needed to cum.

"Yes Danny, I feel it now. Give it to me" She whispered. "Sally wants you to give it to me!"

I thrusted up, she bore down. Lizzy jammed her fingers deeper in her ass. And then I remembered that first night with mom in the shower. Where it all started so many years ago.

"AAAAARRRRGGGGHHHHH! MOM I LOVE YOU!" I screamed as a geyser erupted inside her pussy.

"I know baby. Sally knows. Eve knows. Charles knows. And now George knows!" She hissed in my ear. "I'm cumming Danny! Oh God I'm so happy. Fill mommy up. Show us all how much you love us!"

"Yes. Yes. Yes!" I blabbered as the geyser erupted over and over!

Kat fell on me. I wrapped her up and held her tight. I felt a peaceful sensation fall over me like never before. I looked over at Lizzy she was looking on in amazement.

"Danny are you ok?" She asked. I was confused.

"I think so?" I grinned happily. "Why?"

"Mom are you ok?" Lizzy shook Kat.

Kat rolled off. "Not just ok. Fucked senseless!" She purred.

"I think we'll need to call room service!" Lizzy looked at Kat's and my groins.

We both looked down we were literally covered in cum. I mean what looked like a bucket full. Kat looked over and saw I was still hard.

"You're not calling them yet." Kat squealed. She moved over me facing away and impaled my cock in her ass. "You wanted it now come and get it you little black bitch!" Kat hissed.

Kat laid back. Lizzy looked at me, I could see she was doing this for me as well as Kat. Without further hesitation Lizzy moved between mom's legs and worship her oozing cunt.

"That's it bitch. Lick up my baby's cum!" Kat gripped her hair and mashed Lizzy's face hard in her pussy. "If you do good job I might let him fill your pussy too!"

Lizzy went to work knowing Kat would soon be between her legs doing the same thing to her. I just laid back and fucked Kat's ass and massaged her tits as they worked each other up.

Lizzy was fingering Kat and sucking her lips. When she knew I was getting close Lizzy started working mom's clit over. I pulled mom's nipples, Kat groaned in response. Before we knew it I was cumming in mom's ass and Lizzy was licking more of Kat's flowing pussy juice.

We took a short break and showered. Moving to the other bed. Kat and I focused all our attention on Lizzy. I ate her pussy to one orgasm as she sat on my face and mom sucked her tits and kissed her through her climax.

Somewhat revived mom placed Lizzy on top of me and guided my cock in her pussy.

"Lean forward baby!" Kat directed her.

Spreading her ass cheeks mom started rimming Lizzy's ass.

"Oh mom! That's so nasty!" Lizzy squealed in delight. "Fuck me Danny! Fill me so your mom can eat my black pussy!"

I figured this might take some time having cum twice already. Lizzy fucked me fast then stopped so Kat could rim her asshole again. Mom wasn't so patient. She soon worked a finger in Lizzy's ass sending her over the edge for her second orgasm. It was all I could do to hold Lizzy on me so I could continue to fuck her. She shuddered and squirmed and soon I could tell she was getting ready to cum again.

Kat was desperate to eat her pussy. She did something from our past. I felt her move past my balls and slip a finger in my ass!

"Mom!" I yelled.

"Cum Danny. Fill your wife's cunt! Our wife's pussy!" Mom hissed.

"Yes Danny hurry. Your wife must be punished!" Lizzy cried out as her third orgasm wrenched her body.

I pumped her pussy full of cum expending the last ounce of energy I had left. Lizzy rolled off, my ass lost its intruder. Mom was between Lizzy's legs.

I left the squeals and moans as I went and took another shower alone. When I returned they were embracing each other kissing. When they went in to shower together as I called home. Mrs. Martinez was holding down the fort.

She seemed happy to report the latest news. I explained we would be home tomorrow and gave her some simple instructions.

Lizzy and Kat snuggled together in the bed playing with each other's tits. I moved behind Lizzy. I had never seen them so happy.

With only kissing and light petting, Kat has joined Lizzy and I to sleep together on occasion. There have even been a few times Lizzy has joined mom and me after we made love. But this is the first time the three of us had ever been intimate, together, at the same time.

This was a watershed moment for me. I learned something valuable this night. In doing so I filed it away for the future.

The next day we pulled into the drive. She stood alone in back of the house.

"Ladies." I woke them up from their naps as they snuggled together in the back. "You have someone waiting on you!" I pointed out the window.

Kat and Lizzy bolted from the car when they saw Christi standing on the patio. I got out and opened the trunk. I pulled two of the bags out then walked past them embracing where she stood. I placed the luggage in the house and looked on at the emotions of her decision bubbling to the surface. I saw Kat open her purse and hand Christi something as I headed back for the rest of our luggage.

I closed the lid and headed back where she stood alone to face me.

"Danny can we talk?" Christi asked. I sat the luggage down and moved closer.

"We can always talk." I explained.

"Why am I here?" She started to cry. "Please Danny I need to know."

I led her to the bench in the shade placing her on my lap.

"Because we need you." I tried to explain.

"But I have nothing to offer." Christi replied. "You .....you are offering so much. Your wives. Your kids!" Tears ran down her cheeks. "You have offered everyone you love! I don't even have a job now!"

"Christi. I knew this moment would come the first day I met you. Don't ask me how, but I did." I explained. "I made a promise didn't I? Did you find her?"

"That's why you sent me back!" She yelled. "You bastard! You knew Kat was the one!"

It was like she just thought of the question and the answer at the same moment. "What if I didn't come back?"

"But you did, giving up everything to do so." I acknowledged.

"Why did Kat want me to give this to you?" Christi held her hand open showing me the ring.

"That ring is the one she and Nikki picked out for each other many years ago. When I first got married I gave Nikki this ring, and the matching one to mom." I replied. "Lizzy is now and will always be my wife."

I took the ring and slipped it on the ring finger of her right hand.

"As long as you wear it there, Kat may be your lover if you like. Sharon and Nikki have opted out." I explained. "Are we clear?"

"And Lizzy?" Christi asked. "Why is she so different?"

"I courted Nikki in a sense, but she came to me." I explained. "Lizzy is the only one I truly pursued. She will always be special."

"Special for Kat?" Christi questioned.

"That is for them to decide." I replied. "You probably know more about that than I do."

"And you're ok with that?" Christi said more than asked.

Christi knew where Lizzy stood on lesbian encounters. I didn't reply, I just waited for her to think about it.

"And if I move it to this hand like Kat?" Christi looked me in the eyes and moved the ring to her left hand. "Then what?"

"Christi there is no guarantee that will ever happen." I explained. I took the ring and placed it back on her right hand.

"I understand. Thank you Danny. I do love you!" She gushed.

Christi waited for me to make a move. She seemed confused for a few minutes then grinned. Christi nodded that she understood and accepted my terms.

"You're not going to kiss me now are you?"

She didn't wait for my answer she just lunged and kissed me. I wrapped my arms around her as she wrapped hers around my neck.

"Christi, I feel the same way. Now go tell your wives so they can stop spying on us." I looked back at the patio door.

"Oh and Christi, before the three of you go upstairs and celebrate. Please call Nikki and Sharon, tell them we will be by to pick up your kids."

"You mean that don't you?" She gushed.

"As long as you wear that ring, I do!" She kissed me longer than I expected before she ran inside.

Thanksgiving was coming up soon and there are still issues that have not been resolved. Nikki and Sharon have been staying at the condo on the beach alone. They talked about moving back into the second house but wanted to keep their privacy.

I knew that was a recipe for disaster. How do you tell six kids they can't visit their mom and grandmother living right next door? Nikki and Sharon drive right by every morning and every night, in fact they drive right by anytime they leave the peninsula. We talked one night and agreed that for the foreseeable future they would live at the condo.

The question now was what to do with the second house. I thought of suggesting Kat and Christi move next door but I knew if the kid's didn't protest Lizzy would. With Sally gone this was Lizzy's house and everyone knew who wore the pants when she was in it.

Fortunately a better opportunity presented itself. Mrs. Martinez and her husband have been renting for years. Rafael is a manager at a retail store in town. Their children now young adults have moved away, but still visit regularly. The problem is their current house isn't big enough for the whole family to come at one time.

"Mrs. Martinez how would you and Rafael like to live in the other house?" I asked one day.

"Mr. Masters we cannot afford to live in such a nice house." She admitted.

"But if you could would you?" I asked again.

"Yes Mr. Masters. Of course." Mrs. Martinez dared to smile.

"Good. Then it's done. Whatever you pay in rent now you will pay to live next door." I insisted. "Plus you must call me Danny."

"But Mr. Masters....."

"Ahh! Danny, I insist." I smiled.

"Mr. Danny this is too much!" She argued still calling me mister.

"Mr. Danny it is then! Take the rest of the day off and go tell Rafael the good news." I smiled.

Mrs. Martinez looked at me like I was crazy but soon she was heading out the door but not until she kissed my cheek.

Christi has been here only a few months and yet it feels like she has lived with us for years. In some ways she has taken the place of Sally in the home especially with the kids. She has an honest love of the children and they in turn have taken to her as well. With all six kids living in the big house and now Christi, there is still some sorting out going on.

I had asked Christi to hold off looking for a job until the New Year. I can tell she is getting restless to get back to work if for no other reason to feel she is contributing. In the meantime Lizzy has been taking Christi to help out at the management company.

2014 is fast approaching and with it the decisions I feel need to be made. The first part will be easy, the second I have been putting off for some time. With Christi here my mom, Kathryn, seems to be as happy as I have seen her in recent years.

Lizzy on the other hand has been struggling to find herself. Lizzy knows I love her, and I know she loves me. When Kat went to visit Christi, Lizzy was incensed. If she was jealous of Christi why did she bring her back too? No Kat is not the problem.

It doesn't surprise me that Lizzy and Christi have grown closer since she moved here. It is like Christi has replaced Nikki as that older sister in Lizzy's life. In her own way of course, on more than one occasion, Lizzy even asked me when Christi would share my bed.

Christi is not the problem. Ever since Sally left there is an emptiness. If I were to ask, and I have, Lizzy would say she misses Sally. I'm sure she does, we all do, but there is something else, something she thinks she is hiding from me.

It took some time but I'm pretty sure I know what it is. Getting her to admit it will be difficult, it's not something one easily discusses, even with your husband. I need help on this and I have just the person to do it.

Nikki's mom and dad hosted a New Year's Eve party for many years until her their divorce. Sharon and Mary held it after that, Kat has taken it on since we moved to Florida. With just days to go the excitement around the house was building. The kids were looking forward to it as I told them they could stay up late, promising Kyle and Cindy they could watch the ball drop.

I was excited for other reasons that will be clear soon enough. Sally has been gone since shortly after George died this past year. Oddly enough she accompanied Maggie to Italy to visit Maggie's family she has there.

I have been true to my word with my uncle. Since the day I talked to him before he passed, Sally and I have not been alone. Bill Baker has been a constant visitor ever since Cindy has been living here. Ostensibly it was to see his great granddaughter and me, but I knew better.

It doesn't happen as often now, maybe that's why I was so surprised to see her sitting alone in the bedroom. Kat stood as I entered from the bathroom in just my sleeping shorts. Thinking maybe she just wanted to talk, even though she had on just her robe, I stopped just inside the room.

"Mom?" I questioned.

"Lizzy said its ok." Kat replied nervously.

"She did, did she?" I teased with a big smile on my face.

"Cindy couldn't sleep, so they took my room." Mom explained.

"What about Christi?" I asked.

"I could invite her? I was hoping....." Mom moved closer.

"I would prefer it that way myself." I grinned meeting her in the middle of the room.

I slipped my hands inside the lapels of her robe and held her as I planted a delicate kiss on her lips. Mom wanted more but I held her back for now. I caressed her cheek before brushing her hair back behind her ear.

"What is it my love? What's troubling you?" I whispered as I kissed her neck below her exposed ear.

"Sally called to say she would be coming." Mom looked into my eyes pleading to understand.

"That's a good thing isn't it?" I kissed her lightly one more time.

"Are you sure Daniel?" Mom challenged me. By calling me Daniel she made her point she didn't agree.

"No my love but it must be done." I gave her a devilish grin.

"How do you do it Danny?" Kat whispered.

"Because I know, no matter where I am or who I'm with, there is one woman that will always love me as much as I love her." I replied softly kissing her once again. "I would do anything to make her happy, anything mom."

"Oh Danny you do!" Kat gushed. "I have never been so happy.....but....."

"Shhh." I stopped her. "Let me worry about that."

Kat wanted to protest further but I silenced her by kissing her passionately. Wrapping my arms further inside her robe I now caressed her back. Mom searched my mouth with her tongue which I happily accepted. My hands moved lower over her womanly curves before I gripped her ass.

Kat whimpered as I pulled her in closer. Her tits warmed my chest as she pressed in tighter. Mom's hands pushed my shorts over my hips as we still stood in the middle of the room. I slipped the robe off her shoulders. Stepping out of the shorts we slowly danced in place letting our hands find places we had not explored in some time. I am no longer in my twenties, mom is no longer in her forties, and still she is every bit as desirable to me as that first day in the shower.

Slowly walking her back I moved her beside the bed. Mom sat back then moved to the center presenting herself to me like she done so many times over the years. I stood silently taking her all in. That familiar face with her happy smile, those soft and loving eyes.

Looking lower her once full breasts that fed the youngest of my kids now drifted softly to each side. Lower still her hand covered the scar that reminded us both of the fact she never had children or never could again. I bent over and moved her hand and kissed the deformity to her body. I looked up to see the slight twinge of pain Kat still carries.

"Why did you do that?" Kat asked uncomfortably.

"Shh. Let me finish." I grinned. "Open your legs."

Mom reluctantly splayed her legs and in doing so the pussy lips parted a clear sticky string of excitement clinging to each pink lip. Her legs quivered as I looked lower to her feet. I had seen this sight often but for some reason today was something special. I can't remember a time when I wanted her more than I do right now.

I moved between her legs kneeling just part way. I caressed each leg from her ankle to her knees. Kat's legs drew up slightly and moved further apart.

"Danny!" Mom sighed as my hands moved over her thighs to her hips.

"Tell me why?" I whispered.

"Why?" Mom looked confused.

I moved my hand closer together over the crease along her pelvis. Her legs bent even more at the knees as she responded to my light touch. She thought I was going to attack her pussy. Instead I moved my hand back to her scar.

"Why does it bother you so?" I answered her question with my own.

Mom looked deep into my eyes as if to ask if she could trust me. Just the question struck a nerve. It was like I took her back to a time we don't talk about any more.

"I always wished I could have given you a child." Kathryn responded surprising me with her candor.

Mom looked up at me, I could see the sadness in her eyes. I bent over and kissed her scar one more time. I moved between her legs and placed my cock at the entrance to her pussy. I smiled broadly and moved higher over Kat and kissed her softly.

"Oh but you have my love, we have six wonderful children because of you. I would have been nothing without you." I kissed her softly again. "Thank you for seducing me!"

"Danny! I did not seduce you!" Kat squealed in protest. Kat dug her nails in the cheeks of my ass and urged me in her pussy. I folded my arms under her

shoulders as my elbows supported my upper body. I pulled her up pressing her tits against my chest.

"So you're telling me you didn't break your arm on purpose?" I whispered remembering that night clearly.

My cock slipped deeper in her dripping sex. Mom cooed as she opened her legs wider giving me total access to her pussy.

"I would have Danny, oh I would have done anything ....." Mom gushed.

The moment I pulled out she demanded I return to fill her cunt back up. She started to squeak as each thrust now stabbed her cervix. Kat was so juicy now with our mixed excitement the sounds filled the room. Her hips pushed up driving me back to the depths of her pussy.

Our sexes slapped as I started to piston in her pussy faster and deeper.

"Oh fuck!" Kat grunted as I slammed down once deeper than before.

"Sorry." I moaned then backed off slightly.

"Don't you dare hold back! I need you Danny, I need to feel all of you!" Kat moaned digging her nails deeper into the tender skin of my ass.

I pulled out and then slowly pushed along the soft seeping walls of her pussy. Mom responded by wrapping her legs behind my calves urging me along. With the slower steadier pace I allowed myself the pleasure of enjoying the woman that started it all.

"I love you mom." I whispered my emotions getting the best of me.

"Oh honey you don't know how happy that makes me." Kat replied kissing my chest.

I felt her cunt contract around my cock, the sensations added to my already growing need to cum. Determined to extend our pleasure I stopped thrusting and just nestled down against her comfortable body. Kat responded with a murmur and wrapping her arms around my waist. I slithered down my cock staying just inside her warm cavern. Crooking my neck our lips pressed hard together, our tongues desperate to prove our love.

It was all too much, my cock straining to hold back flinched just inside the opening to her pussy.

"Yes Danny ....." Mom gasped as she felt the impending surge. "....fill me with your love."

I tried to thrust but she held me from moving except to attack my lips in another kiss.

I wanted her to cum. I wanted to make her happy. I needed her to know I am still in love with her. The head of my cock was just inside the opening. I could feel her soft inner lips tug gently on my glands.

"MOM!" I protested wanting to enter her deeper.

"Cum my baby, fill mommy!" Kathryn urged me still keeping me from thrusting.

The desperation in her voice was enough to set me off. My cock twitched expanding with a surge of red hot jism. Kat moan as I filled her channel then rolled her hips to caress my knob even more. My body spasmed as my balls contracted sending not one but two more quick deposits into her sex.

Kat had held off as long as she could. Releasing my legs and gripping my ass mom pulled me deep in her cunt as the fourth wave of pleasure wracked my body. Mom grunted and then thrusted up grinding on the root of my manhood. Cum gushed from her overfilled cunt and oozed over my balls where it slapped against her ass.

Grinding her pussy hard Kat's cunt clamped hard over my cock. Pinned beneath me her body convulsed letting me know she was enjoying an orgasm as well. I thrust in her deep one last time her legs wrapped behind me holding me in place as her climax wound down.

Kat sighed softly then gave one last post orgasmic shudder. Completely spent mom released my legs and let her arms fall to her sides. I propped myself up and looked at her glowing beneath me.

"Are you happy now?" I teased. She opened her eyes and grinned.

I bent down to kiss her, my cock slipped free of her well fucked pussy. Her mouth accepted mine in a long slow sensual kiss.

"Good night mom." I kissed her forehead.

Rolling to the side we didn't even go get cleaned up.

Kat was still sleeping as I left her alone in bed to take a shower. When I came out the bed was empty and I have to admit being a bit disappointed she didn't join me. I got dressed and headed down to the kitchen to grab some coffee Kat had started.

I expected to see Lizzy first as she usually gets up early like I do. When I turned Christi was walking across the room. Dressed in just a robe and her hair not even brushed she looked a sight.

"You're up early?" I ribbed her.

"Someone wanted to cuddle. I sent her to the shower and came down for some coffee." Christi gave me a knowing grin.

"Sorry, guess we could have cleaned up a bit." I teased back.

"I think she was happier you didn't." Christi replied.

"Me too." I laughed.

"Danny can we talk some time?" Christ asked her mood changing.

"Do you mean talk or t.a.l.k.?" I asked being serious.

"Both I guess." Christi blushed.

"Are you ready for that?" I challenged her.

"I think so." Christi whispered.

" A week from Wednesday is New Year's Day, can we wait until after that?" I asked.

"I guess so." Christi avoided my eyes.

"We could do it sooner if you want." I proposed.

"No....no that won't be necessary." Christi agreed.

"I'll work it out." I reached over and took her hand in mine and kissed her cheek.

Christi hugged me. I could feel fear run throughout her body. I turned back to the counter and sat down two mugs and filled them with coffee making them just as they liked them. Christi took both, thanked me, and then headed back up the stairs.

Its Thursday after Christmas, I was standing on the deck, the chill up my back was not just the weather. I was disappointed Sally didn't come before the holiday but she was adamant she not attend. Looking down at my phone I watched the minutes tick off before I dialed.

"Bill is this too early?" I replied when he answered.

"Perfect timing Dan, Rusty and I just got back from our walk." Bill responded.

"Glad to hear he can still keep up with you." I joked.

Rusty was just a pup when we went to Bill's house years ago. Bill himself just had his seventieth birthday not long ago. They were truly best of friends, I've always thought Rusty's youthful energy has kept Bill young himself. I gave Bill the information we discussed before the holidays. He paused long before he replied emotionally.

"Are you sure Daniel?" Bill asked.

Everyone knows that using my proper name is allowed only when I conduct business. This was not business, but it was serious just the same.

"William, we agreed this was best." I said seriously knowing calling him William would enforce my point.

"What about Rusty?" Bill questioned.

"I'll leave that up to you." I replied. "The kids are off for the holidays but he's welcome anytime."

"I'll bring him before I go then." Bill sighed.

"I understand."

"Thanks Danny." Bill said emotionally.

We hung up, I stood looking out over the inter-coastal watching the occasional boat pass by. She nuzzled up behind me moments later pressing her warm breasts into my back.

"You ok baby?" Mom asked.

I turned and looked into her eyes and saw the same sadness she saw in mine. I bent down and pressed my lips firmly against hers. Kat kissed me back letting me know she understood.

"I am now." I winked at her when our lips parted.

"I'm so proud of you....." Mom pulled me down for another kiss. ".....I love you Daniel"

"I love you mom." I grinned happily now. I slipped my hands over her robe and cupped her ass.

"Not now, the kids will be up soon and Lizzy is looking for you!" Kat giggled.

"Sounds serious!" I teased.

"You should go." Mom said then pulled from my arms and shook her ass at me as she headed back inside.

I headed up the stairs to the master bedroom. I knocked gently then opened the door. Christi was naked sitting on the bed leaning over my also naked wife her mouth tugging on a dark brown nipple. Lizzy's eyes slowly opened and locked on mine. Her upper teeth pressed tight on her lower lip. Seeing me she relaxed and a broad smile crossed her face.

"Danny!" She sighed loudly.

Christi gave up her prize and looked over her shoulder at me grinning. Christi turned and looked back at Lizzy this time. Lizzy looked up uncommited, Christi leaned in and kissed Lizzy sloppily.

"I better go." Christi whispered.

We both now looked at Lizzy to see if she would protest. Her hesitation made it clear what I suspected all along. Christi waited patiently then stood up and walked to the chair and picked up her robe. She placed the garment over her body so Lizzy and I both could watch, then without a word between us Christi left locking the door behind her.

"Danny.....!" Lizzy murmured.

I moved closer, removing my top and shorts along the way. Lizzy lay spread eagle in the bed. Now that Christi was no longer blocking the view I could see Lizzy's fingers working deep in her pussy. Here was my ebony goddess sprawled on a bed of white sheets. Her black fingers in her pink pussy, her perfect white teeth again clamped down on her lower lip.

I moved between her legs my cock long before ready for action. Lizzy's eyes pleaded with me not to tease her. I pulled on her wrist, two long black fingers glistened with her excitement as they slipped from her sex. I lined up perfectly and with one slow but firm push entered the depths of her oily cavern.

"OOHH YESSS!" Lizzy cried out much too loud.

Her long slender legs thrust her pelvis up taking my entire cock in her greedy cunt in one desperate motion. I pulled out quickly and then trust back letting her know I wanted this as much as she did.

"I love you Elisabeth." I moaned in her ear.

"Do you Danny? Do you really?" Lizzy asked as her hands wrapped around my back.

"I do baby, I do love you, let me prove it to you." I groaned thrusting into her quivering cunt.

"Yes Danny show me....."

Lizzy's heels dug in against the back of my ass cheeks as she greedily pulled me tight. I closed my eyes and concentrated on just feeling her desires grow. I moved closer letting her nipples caress my chest. It drove us both wild. Lizzy's pussy clenched tight around my cock, her pelvis slammed up urging me deeper.

"I remember that first kiss clearly." I whispered.

"Oh Danny!" Lizzy moaned.

"You're even more beautiful now." I hissed softly.

Lizzy opened her big brown eyes and looked in mine. I drug my cock over her sensitive little bud. Lizzy quivered beneath me.

"Are you awake now?" I teased.

"Danny I'm going to cum...."

"Not yet my love." I taunted her. "Kiss me!"

Lizzy was writhing beneath me now. She was alternating between thrusting up to fill her cunt with my cock and caressing her clit with it. We rarely make love in the morning, we tend to be night people when it comes to that. Something about snuggling up and drifting to sleep with Lizzy just seems to make her happy. This morning was about more than making love. Kat knew it, Christi suspected but I was convinced.

"Kiss me Liz." I commanded her.

"DANNY!" Lizzy cried out in protest. "I NEED IT.....

"Kiss me." I arched my back offering her my lips.

Lizzy's legs untangled from me and she stretched up desperate to fulfill my demand. I plunged deep in her cunt the moment our lips touched. Like a zap from static electricity her whole body tensed up. Lizzy pressed her tits hard against me.

"Ugh, ah, oh, oh mmm! Ugh, ah umm ummmmmmm." Lizzy moaned over and over.

"Here it comes baby, here's my love!" I grunted.

Our pelvises pressed hard against each other, my cock expanded sending the proof of my passion to her deepest reaches. Lizzy wrapped her arms around me pulling herself hard against my torso. I slammed just twice more making her groan in reply.

Lizzy looked up at me with that look I knew all too well. We rested for just a moment then rolled over so she could be on top. Lizzy rested her head on my chest her long hair tickling my ribs. This was her favorite position, she would sleep like this every night if she could.

I heard the patter of feel running down the hall. The not so quiet whispers of the kids trying not to wake us. Lizzy sighed knowing we could not avoid getting up.

"I'll go. I whispered caressing her back.

"Danny are you sure?" Lizzy asked. I knew she was not talking about the kids.

"Yes Elizabeth, this time I am sure." I replied kissing the top of her head. "Now let me go before they break down the door."

After my shower I headed downstairs to find Kat and Christi with six bubbling kids happy Christmas had come and they had no school. I needed to go to the office but I knew Bill was coming in another hour. Dressed in jeans and Polo shirt I joined the fray. If Christi was too disappointed she didn't let on. I loved that about her.

One by one Lizzy greeted each child with a kiss, it was a ritual that was repeated at least twice a day without fail. Whether it was a good day or a bad one, Lizzy made sure each child knew they were loved.

Christi helped me clean up as Kat and Lizzy took the kids up to get dressed. I was handing her the dishes I had just rinsed off as she loaded the dishwasher. When the last one was placed inside and the door was closed she stood before me clearly disappointed.

"You can still leave you know." I said softly caressing her cheek.

"What about your mother?" Christi asked her voice wavering.

"That's her decision." I explained.

"And if I stay?" Christi asked nervously.

"After this morning I make no promises, for now or the future." I stated.

"But if.....you did promise." Christi reminded me.

"If you keep yours, I promise to keep mine." I replied seriously.

"Danny I want to stay!" Christi thrust herself at me.

She thrust herself into my arms, I pulled her tight. God how she wanted to cry but we both knew that wasn't going to happen. I caressed her hair letting Christi gather her composure. I kissed the top of her head letting her know it was going to all work out.

Christi looked up her blue eyes searching for more. I bent down and offered her my lips. Christi greedily accepted thrusting her tongue in my mouth. I returned her passion as a way of letting her know I would keep my word.

"I've talked to Molly, you will start working full time Monday the sixth." I offered as we parted.

"What about Lizzy?" Christi asked confused.

"Lizzy has a new job." I teased.

"She does?" Christi seemed surprised.

"She does, it's called, stay at home mom!" I laughed. "Her house, my rules."

Christi laughed with me now knowing only half of that was true, it was her house. Still she agreed not to say anything until I talked to Lizzy first.

Bill showed up just as the kids started coming back downstairs. I opened the door and there beside him not even on a leash was Rusty. I welcomed them both in. Bill happily entered, call me crazy, but somehow Rusty knew something was wrong.

"Rusty!" Bill called out.

Rusty was about five now, Bill had raised him from a puppy. This was the same dog that jumped up on me when we sold Bill's property. Rusty looked at me warily no longer happy to see me. He looked back at Bill and with the saddest eyes I have ever seen on a dog he stepped in the door and crouched down.

Casen not yet two started over, Hunter almost nine followed suit. Rusty looked at the approaching pair and started a low growl. Hunter sensing danger hesitated. Casen oblivious to the displeasure of the furry beast seemed to pick up steam.

Just as the toddler was within a few steps Rusty barked a warning.

"Rusty stop that!" Bill chastised him.

Rusty looked at Bill as he was being scolded, Casen startled first by the bark and then by the shout stumbled forward landing squarely on Rusty's back. I was prepared to grab my son but Rusty sensing he was in enough trouble did not react except to look at Bill.

Obviously the dog outweighed Casen by several multiples but his restraint was remarkable. Casen grabbed a handful of fur to right himself. I expected Rusty to snap at him for this breach of etiquette but again he remained composed.

Seeing his younger brother unmolested Hunter cautiously made his way over. Rusty looked at Bill, the soft rumble of the growl again emanated from within. Bill glared back but Rusty didn't stop. Hunter reached down and ran his hand over the golden hair on Rusty's back.

Rusty looked up at me, again you can call me crazy, but I knew at that moment this dog knew he was not leaving this house with Bill. I picked up Casen and took him with me, Hunter kneeled down and wrapped his arms around Rusty's neck.

Bill and I took Casen with us outside on the deck, Rusty never moved from the front door. Bill didn't stay long. We talked but he was on a schedule. I thought Hunter might be playing with his Christmas presents from yesterday but when we came back in he was still with the dog.

I'm not sure who was sadder, Bill for leaving the dog, Rusty for seeing Bill leave, or me for knowing what they meant to each other. I walked out to Bill's old truck, the paint faded, the seat covered with dog hair. He gave me some food and the bowls Rusty ate out of and shook my hand one last time.

"I'll call you tonight." Bill said softly before he drove away.

I never had a dog when I was a kid, it was just mom and me, she worked, I was in school. I never had one as an adult, I don't know why, maybe too busy I guess? I walked back in, Hunter still petting Rusty.

"Come on son, we should give him some time alone." I reached out and helped Hunter up.

"Dad he seems so unhappy." Hunter explained.

What could I say to that? Rusty stayed by the door waiting for Bill to return. He glared at me every time I walked in to check on him. He knew I was behind this, and he was not happy one bit. I may have never had a pet but I knew nature calls on us all.

Bill told me how Rusty would let me know when he wanted out but the whole day he never moved. Cindy insisted on feeding him but Rusty refused even her prodding to eat. The kids had gone to bed, Hunter clearly upset Rusty had not touched his food.

Kat and Christi headed up, Lizzy walked over and petted Rusty goodnight. Like I said, everyone knew they were loved in this house. I was waiting for Bill to call and told Lizzy I would be up in a minute. I sat on the couch, Rusty looked at me and I looked back at him. We were sizing each other up and I'm not sure who was better at it. Just then the phone rang.

"Bill?" I answered.

"Sorry it's so late Danny, we a got to talkin and the next thing ya know ....." Bill tried to explain.

"No problem, just setting here with Rusty enjoying some peace and quiet." I joked.

"How's he doing?" Bill asked.

"Hasn't moved an inch." I explained.

"Hasn't even gone out?" Bill asked concerned.

"Not an inch Bill." I repeated.

"Danny hold the phone up so he can hear me." Bill suggested.

"Sure thing." I replied. I walked over to Rusty, he lifted his head.

"Rusty be a good dog!" Bill yelled over the phone.

Rusty jumped up looked around and headed to the front door. I opened it and followed him outside.

"Bill he's in the yard." I explained thrilled.

"He's a good dog Danny." Bill sighed.

"Thanks Bill, I'll call you tomorrow." I said then hung up.

As Rusty did his business I realized I never made it to work. The women took the kids to go buy stuff for Rusty but I hadn't even put a leash on him to take him out. When he finished Rusty walked to the edge of the street. Rusty looked down the dark quiet street and then back at me.

"Rusty I reckon I can't stop you if you leave, but you'll only end up back here or dead." I warned him.

Rusty looked back down the street again and then to my amazement he turned and walked past me to the door. He looked up at me as I opened it, he moved back to the spot he occupied all day and laid down.

I went upstairs and got ready for bed. Lizzy was no longer waiting for me since she was fast asleep. I never heard a sound but somehow I knew there was movement in the house. I could blame the lack of sleep on Rusty but that wasn't it.

I waited another ten minutes before my curiosity got the best of me. Throwing on a robe I opened the bedroom door and looked out. There by the front door lay Rusty, he had still not moved. Cuddled up beside him was Hunter fast asleep.

Lizzy startled me when she moved in beside me.

"What is it?" She asked sleepily.

"Look." I pointed to the two lying by the door.

"Danny, Hunter can't sleep on the floor, it's too cold." Lizzy protested. A bit over dramatic but a point taken.

"Ok." I agreed.

I made my way down the stairs, Rusty raised his head watching me approach. When I got close enough I heard that low warning growl. As I reached out for Hunter the growl got louder and more threatening.

"Danny! He's going to bite you!" Lizzy whispered loudly down the stairs.

I glared down at Rusty as he growled even louder now. "No he won't, will you Rusty?" I challenged him. "I just want to move him off the floor. Ok?" I asked the dog.

Picking Hunter up I moved to the stairs but as the growl still continued I had a better idea. I took Hunter over to the couch and laid him down. I placed a pillow under his head and covered him with a blanket.

Rusty continued to growl until I started up the steps. When I reached the bedroom Lizzy was smiling.

"Look Danny." She whispered.

I turned to see Rusty had moved lying directly under Hunter at the front of the couch. Rusty looked up at me as if to let me know it was only with his permission, was I allowed to move my son. Funny but I don't remember my head hitting the pillow after that.

I was up early as usual looking down the stairs it came as a surprise to see Rusty now laying on the couch with Hunter. I descended the stairs, as I approached Hunter, Rusty started a low growl again. Obviously his opinion of me had not changed since we last met. I reached out and shook Hunter.

"Hey buddy time to get up." I said softly as Rusty glared at me still growling.

Hunter looked at the floor to find the dog missing.

"Dad.....!" Hunter protested before he saw the dog at the other end of the couch.

"I suggest you take your dog out before you go up and get dressed." I said walking into the kitchen.

"My dog?" Hunter questioned happily.

"Don't ask me, ask him." I replied not looking back. "Hunter, with acceptance comes responsibility." I warned him.

"I understand dad!" Hunter said excitedly.

Jumping up he ran to the deck door. "Come Rusty." Hunter called out.

Rusty sat up on the couch looking at me then Hunter without moving. I leaned close to Hunter and whispered a few words. He looked at me confused, I nodded in the direction of the dog and smiled.

"Rusty be a good dog!" Hunter called out.

Rusty jumped off the couch and trotted over to where Hunter now opened the door. The dog stopped at the opening, looked over at me, hesitating just long enough to let me know it was his decision then went out back with Hunter.

"Dad he pooped." Hunter explained when they came back in.

"You'll need to clean that up after breakfast." I replied.

"Aw! Gross!" Hunter protested.

"With acceptance comes responsibility." I reminded him.

"I know but it's still gross." Hunter lamented.

Hunter headed upstairs, Rusty head back to the spot by the front door. He looked at me long and hard, let his head settle on the floor and closed his eyes. My guess he hadn't slept a wink all night.

It was a short nap at best because soon the house was buzzing with morning activities. Everyone stopped by to pet him, Lizzy gave him another kiss. Kyle made sure Casen didn't end up with a fistful of fur.

Rusty was still in his spot when I headed out to the office. Kat, Christi and Lizzy headed out with the kids to get party supplies for the New Year Eve. I so wanted to stop by Bill's house and see him, ok to see her. I knew I could use Rusty as an excuse. I called instead.

"Hello Danny." Sally answered. I hesitated for a moment just to savor her voice.

I almost called her mom. "Sally how are you?" I responded instead.

"Fine Daniel... thanks to you." Sally replied.

"I'm sorry I didn't come myself. I just thought this way....."

"I understand, really I do." Sally said politely. "Do you need Bill, he's just outside."

"Not really, just wanted to let him know Rusty was ok so far." I answered.

"He'll be glad to hear that....."

"We will see you at the party?"

"Wouldn't miss it." Sally replied excitedly.

"Well I better go. I love you Sally!" I struggled to say without getting too emotional.

"I know you do son. I know this is hard for us both, but 'Daniel', you did the right thing." Sally said her voice wavering. "The farmer would be proud of you.....I know his wife is."

After we hung up I thought back to when it all started. It had been so long since we talked about the farmer. I was more convinced than ever what I was going to do was the right thing.

I arrived home to the bustle and excitement of a house full of party planners. Everyone had ideas and Kat made sure each of them would be used. Rusty it seemed had not joined the excitement, instead staking out his spot beside the front door.

As far as we could tell Rusty had not eaten much. Lizzy was worried and so was Christi who had a dog at one time. Drastic situations call for drastic measures. Male dogs are much like male humans. Our desires are basic. Sex, entertainment, and food.

Since the first was not available and the second was so far not working, that left the third. Now I had no intention of playing fair, so I stacked the odds in my favor. Tonight was hamburgers and hotdogs, beef hotdogs.

I will spare you the details but with ten people and more than half under ten, well I can assure you that kitchen floor had never been so clean after a meal. That and the leftover meat Hunter put in his bowl. Well no one went hungry that night!

To this day that dog patrols the area around the table like a beat cop watching his own neighborhood. No scrap of food escapes his notice, not even the occasional hand below the table. But I'm getting ahead of myself.

That night Hunter was in a quandary. Should he sleep in his bed or slip back down after Lizzy and I went up. Kat knew he was conflicted, the question was how to get the dog to move from the spot he had been almost glued to since he came.

Lizzy and Christi had taken Casen, Kenzi, and Mikayla up. Kyle and Cindy said their goodnights and started up. Hunter looked at me and mom.

"Hunter take your dog outside and then head up to bed." I said.

Hunter took that as he was not allowed to sleep down here with Rusty. Begrudgingly Hunter took Rusty out back and followed him in the house. Rusty went to his spot and Hunter started up the steps.

"Sweetie take your dog up with you." Kat suggested to Hunter.

"But Kitty, he won't go!" Hunter protested.

"Did you ask him?" Kat replied.

Hunter came back down the few stairs he was up and walked over to Rusty.

"Come on boy." Hunter said firmly.

Rusty stood but did not move with Hunter. "Come boy." Hunter repeated.

Rusty stood his ground.

Kat stood and moved in their direction. Rusty looked at me and then Kat.

"Rusty go with Hunter!" Kat barked.

Amazingly the dog moved next to Hunter.

"Take his collar and show him your room." Kat said to Hunter.

Hunter took Rusty by the collar and together they ascended the stairs. I went in and checked up on Hunter and Cason like I do every night before I go to bed. Rusty saw me and started that low growl again.

I kissed each boy, then headed to the door. Rusty stopped growling when I stepped outside. He looked up at me, I started to close the door. He laid his

head to the floor and closed his eyes. I left the door open just enough he could get out if he wanted.

Tuesday December 31st the house was full of friends and family. It was a casual affair, many people stopped by earlier with their kids for some fun and games Kat and Lizzy had organized. At nine the adult party started. The house was buzzing, when they showed up.

"SALLY!" Lizzy shrieked.

Kat turned around, Christi was surprised.

"DANNY! It's Sally!" Lizzy called out no longer able to hold back her excitement. "She's here, Danny come, she's here!!!"

The whole house became almost too quiet as Lizzy raced across the room and flung herself in Sally's arms. The kiss they shared I'm sure raised a few eyebrows. I looked at Bill and saw he too was affected. When he looked at me I smiled and nodded my approval.

As if there wasn't enough going on out of nowhere Rusty bolted through the room and jumped up to greet Bill. Rusty's big paws rested on Bills shoulders as the two of them connected for the first time in almost a week.

I stood patiently as everyone took turns welcoming Sally back into town. We shared a few brief glances between her welcomes before Kat came to join me. Mom took my hand and held it in hers.

"You should go see her." Kat whispered.

"I will when the time is right, for now I just need to take this all in." I explained.

Kat stood with me still holding my hand as we silently looked on at the amazing welcome that greeted Sally. Lizzy made her way over to us and snuggled up against me.

"You did this didn't you?"

"Happy New Years!" I teased.

The three of us now looked on at the throng of friends and family huddled around Sally. She was holding Cindy the two of them much the center of attention. Sally looked good even though she appeared to have added a few pounds since I last saw her.

No doubt her time in Italy with Maggie helped in that department. I excused myself and approached Bill. We talked about their time together since he picked her up at the airport. Bill admitted Sally was probably more nervous than he was when she arrived.

It was a bitter sweet reunion when we finally stood in front of each other. I politely bent and kissed her on the cheek. Sally graciously accepted my sign of affection knowing the limits of my promise. I did allow her to pull me tightly against her breasts in a hug I will not soon forget.

"Oh Daniel how I miss you." She whispered so only I could hear.

"Please be happy." I replied.

"Except for 'that', I am." Sally replied as she released me.

Knowing this was a party we separated smiling, each moving on to another guest. 'That' Sally referred to was my promise to George before he passed

away. He was a man of many attributes some good, some not, just like all of us.

We had our differences, but one thing we shared was the love of a special woman, his wife Sally. Though he shared his bed with Maggie, and I with Sally, George refused to divorce her. Before he died George asked me to honor one last request.

I won't go into details but the gist of it was I agreed to remove myself from Sally's intimate life. George agreed Sally would be allowed to choose how she lived her life after he passed. I knew Bill has had feelings for Sally since he first met her. I knew now Sally felt the same way for him.

The party was a smashing success, Lizzy and I embraced for a long and passionate kiss when the ball dropped. Even Rusty seemed resigned to the fact he would be staying as he headed up to the boys room when Bill and Sally left.

It had been a long and emotional night for everyone as old and new friends as well as family gathered, but none were affected more than Lizzy. There has been a void in her life, an uneasiness if you will. A feeling of helplessness and insecurity.

I have known it for some time and up to now my efforts to change it have failed. It was Kat that suggested I was missing something, I knew I was right when Sally told me tonight to trust my instincts. They were right, I had missed it. Lizzy was not the same as the other women in my life.

I was sitting on the edge of the bed in just the shorts I wear to sleep in. Lizzy entered from the bathroom wearing her normal pajamas.

"You're waiting for me?" Lizzy asked sexily.

"Come here." I replied. "We need to talk."

Lizzy made her way to in front of me, the smile on my face enticed her closer. Standing tall before me I opened my legs so she could move even closer. My hands reached up and rested on her hips, her big brown eyes searched mine for meaning.

"So what do you want to talk about?" Lizzy teased shaking her ass.

"Ssshhh, not a word, not yet." I offered.

I gripped the waist of her pajama bottoms and rolled them over her hips and down her long ebony legs. Lizzy slowly stepped out of them not quite sure of my intentions. I pulled her to me, my face kissed her chest between her breasts over her top.

My hands caressed her legs slowly and patiently before they gripped her fine ass. I guided Lizzy back and closed my legs now between hers. Lizzy mewed as my nose nudged the hem of her top. Lizzy pulled it over her head and tossed it as my lips encircled one hard nipple.

"Danny?" She moaned.

"Sshh." I reminded her.

With her legs open, and my continued caressing of her legs and ass, her scent filled my nostrils. Still I made her wait as I continued my journey.

I moved my legs wider forcing Lizzy to open her stance. Dark brown lips dangled glistening in the soft light in the room. With one hand I stroked between her pussy coating my fingers. Lizzy responded by bucking against them.

I widened my legs again, this forced Lizzy to lower her ass even further. Her arms went around the back of my neck to support herself. I moved one hand under her ass to assist as well. Her pussy was now obscenely gaping in front of me. My shorts tented doing nothing to hide my excitement.

I reached around and fingered my wife's pussy from behind. Lizzy leaned her forehead against mine as she bounced on the oily digits. Lizzy was grunting with each thrust but I knew she wanted more.

Lizzy pushed my shorts down and pulled my cock free. Lizzy moaned as I pulled my fingers from her quim. I positioned her dripping cunt over my cock and we both watched it disappear inside her.

Laying back I scooted over the bed and chucked my shorts. Lizzy rode me steadily offering me her tits to suck on. I caressed her back she bit my lip all the while my cock stretched her pussy.

Lizzy loved to be on top, she loved to be in control, she would pull up and tease the mushroom head driving me crazy. Lizzy enjoyed mashing her tits against my chest or watch me struggle to suck a nipple as she held them just out of reach.

Most of all Lizzy loved to grind her clit against my groin and orgasm just as I pumped her pussy full of cum.

"Hurry Danny!" Lizzy pleaded her voice desperate.

I thrusted up hard lifting her from the bed. Lizzy groaned in pleasure.

"Cum with me!" She panted.

"Yes!" I agreed.

"Now!" Lizzy yelled grinding her pussy had against me.

I felt the first contraction of her orgasm clench around my cock then released a torrent of cum deep inside her. Lizzy bucked against me each of us lost in our own world of orgasmic bliss.

Lizzy pulled up so we could both watch the frothy excitement coat my cock and drip from her engorged lips.

"I love you Danny." Lizzy whispered as she collapsed on top of me.

"I love you Elizabeth." I replied pulling her tight.

Lizzy mewed as she snuggled in deep against me. I wanted to tell her the news. I wanted to see the excitement in her eyes. I wanted to hear the shriek as it sunk in. But then I realized...Lizzy was asleep.

I was up early as usual, the partiers holding on for those last precious moments of sleep. I loved this time of day. It allowed me to reflect in silence on the day that was and the one at hand. Don't get me wrong, I enjoy my time with people too.

It's just when you are the first one up the day seems to unfold like a flower opening its petals. Each day I am blessed with so many little joys that come my way.

Nikki and Sharon invited everyone down to the cond for an early dinner. Kat and Christi took Rusty and all but Mikayla and Casen to go play on the beach. I was in the den working, Lizzy just put the kids down for a nap. She walked in just as I was finishing up a proposal. "Danny you never told me

what you wanted to talk about last night." Lizzy asked as she leaned against the door.

"Yeah well someone fell asleep!" I reminded her.

Lizzy sauntered over and plopped in my lap. She giggled as she nestled her ass over my cock.

"Well I did have one especially sexy dream." Lizzy teased then kissed me.

"I think I had that same dream." I replied back.

"So what do you want to talk about?" Lizzy asked happily.

"Lizzy it think it's time for you to come home and not work." I said.

"Oh Danny! Really?" Lizzy squealed.

"So you would consider it?" I asked not wanting to over commit.

"What about Molly and the company?" Lizzy asked.

"For now Christi will take your place if that is ok with you." I suggested.

"For now? What does that mean?" Lizzy asked confused.

"Well if you want to go back, or sometime in the future I was thinking Christi may want to start her own security company. There is plenty of business and she has the experience." I explained.

"What about Mrs. Martinez?" Lizzy asked as she started to process more.

"I think there is enough to keep her busy as well." I knew Lizzy would be hurt if we let her go.

Lizzy sat there silently for many long moments taking it all in. I didn't say a word so as not to make it one of my sales pitches. Lizzy shifted uncomfortably looking at me and then out of the door den to the house.

"Can we afford it if I don't work?" Lizzy asked nervously.

"You let me worry about that." I replied.

"Why Danny? Why now? Why are you doing this for me?" Lizzy asked becoming very serious now.

"Because my love it's what you need right now." I explained.

"How long have you known?" Lizzy probed.

"Sally mentioned it before..... for me it was at the resort." I lifted my hand to her cheek and let her nuzzle against it. "I thought it was because she was leaving, then I thought it was because of mom and Christi."

Lizzy's sad eyes continued to search mine to see how much I had figured out. I kissed her other cheek softly.

"But this isn't about Sally, or Kat, or even Christi is it?" I whispered. "It's Nikki, isn't it? I'm sorry it took so long for me to figure out."

"I'm sorry Danny, I thought I wanted to be like her....." Lizzy started to weep.

I pulled her tight as tears started to flow over her cheeks. Lizzy idolized Nikki so much, they were so close. Lizzy tried to be that career driven, working mom, and strong willed woman. Heck Lizzy even tried to be open sexually.

"Honey it's time to just be Lizzy. Nikki would be the first to tell you that." I whispered as she let her emotions out.

"But she....."

"Is a different person and in some ways a good role model. But so is Mrs. Martinez." I offered. Lizzy pulled back to see if I was serious. "Yes Liz, even her. Do you think she cares about reports, or sales projections, or profit and loss?"

"No." Lizzy sniffled as she smiled.

"You're right. Not at all. But she does perk up when the bus stops down the street, or the kids come in from the back yard." I stated. "Just like you did when you baby sat Kyle, Kenzi and Hunter."

"Oh Danny!" Lizzy squealed.

She threw her arms around my neck and happily hugged me. Lizzy kissed my cheek and then my lips. She forced her tongue in my mouth to show me how truly happy she was. I caressed her back as she whispered how much she loved me.

I reminded her she was my wife and I was here to make her happy. We kissed and I groped her ass.

"Now are you going to tell me your other secret?" I asked as she sat on my lap.

Lizzy's happiness sobered up quickly now.

Chapter 13

I reminded Lizzy she was my wife and I was here to make her happy. We kissed and I groped her ass.

"Now are you going to tell me your other secret?" I asked as she sat on my lap.

Lizzy's happiness sobered up quickly now.

"Danny, I can't." Lizzy complained. "Please don't make me!"

I could see the fear in her eyes and feel the stress in her body. I had waited this long, trying to pry it out of her now would do no good. We needed to leave soon, the whole family would be waiting so I backed off. I pulled Lizzy close and held her tight.

"When you're ready then." I whispered.

Lizzy instantly relaxed knowing she had won a reprieve. I kissed her cheek and then her nose.

"You go get the kids up and I'll load the car."

Lizzy stood up and walked to the door before stopping.

"I love you Danny." Lizzy said smiling, then turned down the hall.

(Lizzy)

Daniel and I just welcomed in the New Year 2014, and with it he offered me the opportunity to be a stay at home mom. I should have known he would do something like this. I've been wanting to tell him how I've been feeling of late but I didn't want to disappoint him, or Nikki.

Danny asked me about my secret, he probably knows that too since he would never just come out and ask, that's not his style.

No, he will find some subtle way to get me to reveal it. He knows that way I can take credit and feel good about myself. That's what I love about Danny. He almost always thinks about the other person first.

My name is Elizabeth Master's, Daniel's second wife and mother of our daughter Mikayla and our son Casen. Danny and I adopted Cindy, who calls me mom. Kyle, Kenzi and Hunter, are his oldest three children with Nikki his first wife.

I just want to go on record to let you know I was against this whole idea of sharing our story, his story. Call me selfish if you will but that was how I felt. Then I talked to Sally last night.

I was just thirteen when my mom Sharon came home from work one day. She told us this extraordinary story about Kathryn and her son Daniel. Kathryn had come in to apply for a job, but it was Daniel that made a huge impression with mom. I can still remember how excited she was, almost giddy as she recounted the meeting. Sharon hired Kat that very day, something she had never done before or since.

"Val you just have to meet them both!" Mom gushed as she told my grandmother and her lover.

I'll never forget the twinkle in her eye. I knew then I needed to meet him. Funny thing when I did he was nothing like I expected. Now you need to remember my grandmother Valerie is African American, and so is my dad. Only my mother Sharon is Caucasian. That makes me and my brothers African American as well.

In my mind Danny was some dark chocolate or maybe caramel colored black man. He would be taller than me, big and strong, bulging muscles, my own personal Adonis. I knew he had to be the star football, basketball, or baseball player.

He would drive a sports car, have massive gold chains around his neck. His teeth would be pearly white, his clothes would be impeccably in style, maybe glasses for that sophisticated look. In my dreams he had to be a smooth talking personable guy. This man that so impressed my mom must be some player for sure. I can still see that gleam in her eyes. I knew this woman, she's my mother.

Then I met the real Daniel Masters, and I was right about just one thing, he is taller than me! All those dreams and fantasies came crashing down that fateful Fourth of July when he and Kathryn stopped by the house to see mom.

I almost ran to my room and cried I was so crushed. Danny is white? Tall and skinny, he was awkward as he moved, thoroughly average in the looks department, that and he has this crooked front tooth. Not by much, but every time he smiled it was all I could see.

Danny's clothes were clean and tidy, but, well, dated ..... and boring. They hung on his skinny ass bones almost like rags. There wasn't a muscle to be found including his bright white chicken legs. Danny was and to some extent still is a dweeb.

My little brother Sam however saw the real Danny that first day. Mom had already seen it. I went over to my grandmother Val.

"He looks like a dork!" I whispered to her.

"Lizzy, that is one book you can't read by the cover." Val whispered back. "You read the pages of that book and you will find a man like few others."

Even from forty feet away Val had seen what mom and Sam had seen. It took me awhile longer.

I didn't see Danny very often back then but circumstances would change that. Val died when I was fourteen. Our dad was having a rough time then. Mom told us Danny would be coming to spend the a few days.

Jr. and I knew what that meant so we asked to go to our aunt's instead of staying at home. Sam of course insisted on staying just to see Danny. When mom called the next day I knew they made love the night before. I could hear it in her voice.

I told Jr we needed to go back home the next night and kick Danny out. Our mom is still married and so is Danny. What did she see in him? Besides he is at least ten years younger than mom.

He had bulked up slightly over those last few years but then, and to this day, is still a slender man. He wore suits now, but boring suits, like business suits. On top of that he still had that slightly crooked tooth. I thought I hated him.

When we got home from school mom was waiting for us. The moment I walked in the door and saw her my heart sank. She was in love. Oh mom would never admit it of course, but she had that look, that look she had each day she came home and saw my grandmother Val.

Jr and I were not nice to Danny that night. Early the next morning he came out of mom's room. I know what they did, I listened to them with my ear pressed against the door.

"Sam was looking for you." I whispered.

Danny nodded in acknowledgment as I looked at mom's room again.

"Is she happier now?" I asked, my voice dripping with sarcasm.

Danny glanced over his shoulder at the room. Turning back to face me I expected him to boast about his conquest.

"She misses Val and your dad. But to answer your question, yes I think so." He whispered.

Danny started to walk past me, I grabbed the sleeve to his robe.

At that very moment I knew what Val meant long before when she told me Danny was special. There was no boasting, no smugness, not even the slightest smirk. Danny looked me straight in the eyes and I knew he loved my mom as much as she loved him.

His being here was not just about sex, it was about helping Sharon grieve and deal with the drama that would surely come. Mom told me Nikki and Kathryn sent him, now I wanted him to stay.

It would be years before events would unfold in ways I couldn't have imagined back when I was just fourteen. Then the day after I turned twenty one all of my dreams and desires stood before me. It was Danny. Nikki had

told me her plan just days ago, since I didn't know Danny was home he took me by surprise.

He stood in our kitchen unshaven and in a rumpled suit. He was babbling about standing my ground when all I could think of was throwing myself at him. I was confused, and excited, and mad, and ecstatic all rolled up in one ball of emotions.

When he knelt on his knee and presented that black diamond engagement ring ..... I knew he would be mine forever. Crooked tooth and all.

With all the fortitude I could muster I gained my composure and listed my terms. I was hot and sweaty from packing when he carried me up the stairs to the shower. I squealed in delight we frolicked in the mist. I made Danny promise me we would get married right away.

The reality set in that we were going to make love, and to be honest I panicked. Short of intercourse I had done some pretty heady stuff the last few years, but Danny had so many lovers. I sent Danny to clean up and bolted to my room. Then I called my mom Sharon.

"Mom Danny proposed and I said yes!" I blurted out.

"I'm so happy for you baby!" Mom shrieked.

"Mom I'm scared ..... I've never...." I started to explain.

"Lizzy, its ok." Mom whispered.

"What if I'm not good enough?" I whimpered.

"Elizabeth, Danny is in love with you....." Mom whispered. "Close your eyes baby and think of the first kiss you ever gave him."

"Their closed." I replied.

"This will be a hundred times better." Sharon giggled as she assured me.

"Mom I have to go!"

I wore the sexy things Nikki helped me buy for just this occasion. I was waiting for him when Danny came in my room. His eyes warm, soft and playful, fixed on mine like they did each time we kissed.

I can tell he sees only me at this moment, Danny undressed me then picked me up and lay me back in the bed. His tongue delved between my pussy lips and made my toes curl. Danny had me on the verge of my first orgasm almost immediately.

I struggled to find the will to stop him but I knew if I waited any longer I would never recover. I grabbed his head and jerked it from my pulsing gash.

"Later!" I hissed.

Danny looked up, his eyes met mine letting me know that crooked tooth smile was for me. I gripped his cock and guided it inside my pussy. Oh my goodness he is so big! His eyes never left mine as he moved in deeper.

I had to look. After all of these years, all of the kisses, all of the teasing, I had to make sure it wasn't a dream. Danny knew what I wanted even that first time, I wanted to see. I looked down and confirmed what my pussy was telling me wasn't a dream. Danny was making love to me.

I gasped at the size of his cock splitting me open. He drug the rippled veins over my clit sending shock waves through me. I gasped in pleasure and pushed my pelvis up to let him know I wanted more. Danny drove me into the bed as my fingernails raked over his back.

"I'm cumming Danny." I faintly remember saying.

I drove my nails deeper in his back to let him know he shouldn't stop. He pulled back and drilled me again as the brunt of my orgasm slammed like waves against the shores of my body. I had never felt such an intensity of pleasure like that in my life.

I wrapped my legs behind him and tried to pull Danny deeper. He responded by pinning me to the mattress without moving as I fucked myself with his cock.

"Touchdown!" I cried out as my bucking subsided. I wanted to acknowledge Danny had delivered Nikki's present.

"Oh god Danny that was so..... soooo...INCREDIBLE!" I purred. "Fill me with your love. Cum in me! I want your baby!" I gushed.

"You're not protected?" Danny asked. He was clearly upset neither one of us was.

"Danny I'm a virgin why do I need birth control? Do you want to stop?" I remember saying afraid he might be mad.

"Should we shoot for twins?" He asked with a wicked grin.

Danny did love me, we made love several more times that afternoon. Exhausted, satisfied, and happy, I reached between us and guided Danny's hard slick cock back in my pussy. I whimpered as it slid back deep inside.

"Ah. Right there." I cooed.

I laid my head on Danny's chest and closed my eyes. I fell asleep with his hard cock stretching my young black pussy.

.....

Jr's girlfriend at the time and now his wife Rachel asked me how I could share Danny with all of the women in his life. I understand the question, but I'm not she will ever understand the answer. To do that you would need to understand Danny himself, and Kathryn.

As for Danny and the women? Nikki explained it best when she answered that same question for me.

"Lizzy when Danny is with you he is with only you."

It took me a while to truly understand what she was saying but it's true. I like to explain it like this, Danny is not just 'with' you, he gives himself to you.

I told that to Christi one day when we were talking on the subject. Her eyes opened wide and a big grin crossed her face.

"That's exactly how I feel when I'm with Kat!" She squealed.

"Exactly." I agreed.

.....

Rachel suggested Danny was some kind of Svengali or polygamist. I have to admit those thoughts had crossed my mind a time or two. The fact is he is neither. Far from being reclusive or controlling Danny encourages independent thinking.

He has supported my mom Sharon in her professional career and even helped her take over her own business. His first wife Nikki is some ways his boss now, his Aunt Sally was his most trusted assistant. His mom Kat has had many job offers and Danny made it clear he would support her decision.

When Nikki's mom Mary decided to get back with her ex, Mark, Danny facilitated the reunion. When his uncle died it was Danny that promised George he would end it with Sally. Danny is the one that brought Bill and Sally together.

Danny has never stood between any woman and her desires in life. We chose to be with him, to love him, and yes to share him if needed. And it's not the sex, although his talents have been the subject of many a late night among the women when wine was involved.

Danny is not particularly handsome, but he is striking. If he walked into a party the room would not light up, but if you happened to talk to him as he stood in the shadows watching it all, you would go home glad you met him.

Danny does not so much sell real estate as he lets people buy it. He rarely speaks but when he does you would have heard every word and thought he was so smooth. Danny is friendly but not overly outgoing.

He is flexible but has an inner strength and a firm believer in fairness. Danny is generous but frugal, sleeps only four to five hours a night. Loves children as much as they love him. Danny is funny, he can take a joke as well as give one.

Danny is handy with most tools but not an expert. He would watch sports with friends but prefers spending time with the kids. He fishes on occasion but never alone. A voracious reader, he rarely watches TV.

Danny is in most ways an average guy. A nice guy, a dweeb if you will. But he is unique in ways few people get close enough to see. That part of his life he does control.

No, it's not Danny that is in control of the women in his life, it's Kathryn. Behind it all she alone is responsible for sharing Danny with us. It was Kat that shared Danny with Nikki. Kat encouraged Sally to seduce her son. Kat protected Nikki from Becky, and yet stood aside without complaint when my mom Sharon stepped in.

Before we married Kat promised me two things. First that she would never come between me and Danny. Second she would let me be myself sexually, and along with Sally, keep my secret. It was Kat that agreed I could bring Christi back to live with us.

So you see as much as this story is about Danny, it really about Kathryn as well. There is no way to explain the love and devotion they have for each other. I think they would both be truly lost without one another. That's why I promised Kat I would never come between her and Danny.

My secret.

It started when I was younger mostly listening at the door of my mom's room. By the time I turned eighteen I got bored of doing it alone. It was in college that I enjoyed the first time with others. Even though they didn't know I was there I felt like part of them.

I had more failures than successes as a student. Most friends refused or found it creepy. That all changed after I married Danny. Sally was the first to figure

it out, she even helped me for a while. As time went on Sally knew that she was not the one that could truly satisfy me.

Then there was that fateful day with Kathryn. I was pregnant and emotional. Sally had been so willing. I felt I owed her something in return. I needed my grandmother Val but she passed years earlier. If there was a woman most like her it was Danny's mom Kathryn.

I wanted it to be right, I wanted it to be special for Sally. I had never made love to a woman before. In my desperation I told Kat what I wanted to do. Kat tried to tell me Sally would help, that she would understand.

It was me that insisted. The more Kat tried to dissuade me the more emotional I became. Seeing how upset I was becoming she finally agreed to teach me what she taught Danny. Kathryn taught me how to satisfy her orally.

Something happened that day as Kat patiently and lovingly helped me learn how to please a woman. We made a connection, spiritually more than sexually. As you know from Danny's telling of the story I often say Lizzy is not a lezzy. That is mostly true, so let me explain.

I did bring Kat off that day to a glorious orgasm. I fingered myself to my own sexual bliss. I took the lesson Kat taught me and used it on Sally one night as Danny and I made love to her. After that night Sally made me promise I would never do that to her again.

The third time I made love to a woman was after Danny's uncle died. Kat was with us in the hotel, emotions were high. They had both leaned the fate of someone significant in their lives. It brought back memories of losing my grandmother Val.

I made love to Kat, and to be honest it was the first time I truly enjoyed the entire event. This was not a lesson or a payback. This was my way of showing Kat how much I loved her. Our connection only deepened.

We all knew that George was not going to live much longer. Danny told me he would be sending Sally home where she belonged. She had moved out of our bedroom long before, I knew then Sally would never set foot in it again.

When we took Sally to the resort it was my way of saying goodbye to Sally. It was there we met Christi. I had been with Danny long enough to see the way he looks at people. Like I said he is reserved, observant, and usually very private about his family.

I knew that first day as Christi escorted the two of us back to the cabana. I was getting randy with Sally on the beach when Christi busted us, Danny saw something in her. Later that week Kat called and asked if Christi could spend the night. Even though Danny and I both agreed, I was a bit hurt.

Christi came to visit to see how she would fit in with our family. Danny even sent here along with Cindy and Kat to see Sally. I know Danny wanted Sally's opinion of Christi not only with Kat but with Sally's favorite child, Cindy. When they came home I knew Danny would send Christi back to the resort.

What I didn't expect is he would let his mom leave days later. As you know he has done this many times over the years, but this time was different. As close as Kat and I had become I could still not fill the needs she had as a woman. I was afraid I would lose Kat to Christi if Christi returned. Now I was more afraid of losing Kat forever if she didn't.

When I protested Danny played his hand. Win, lose, or draw he sent me after Kat, and if I wanted, Christi. Danny knew any outcome would be up to me, leaving himself off the hook. Did I ever mention how smart he is?

I found Kat waiting for me at the cabana we had all spent the week in. According to Kat, Danny called, but all he would share was when I would arrive. Upon seeing her I started sobbing that she had left me. Kat wrapped her arms around me just like my grandmother Val use to. Kat stroked my hair and whispered that everything would be ok. I so wanted to believe her.

After lunch we headed to the beach in our bikinis, not long after I saw Christi in her uniform looking on. Our eyes met, she looked happy to see me, but I could see the anxiety Christi had as her eyes searched mine for answers.

I came to get Kat, not just for Danny but for myself. I was conflicted about Christi, part of me wanted her to come, and part of me wanted her to stay. Danny could have told me what to do, but he didn't. He was letting me decide and I knew he would support me whatever I did.

I probably hurt Christi when I looked away not giving her an answer. Kat too seemed disappointed but didn't say anything. When I gathered the courage to look back Christi was gone.

Kat and I enjoyed a wonderful dinner at a restaurant alone. She never mentioned Christi and when I did Kat would change the subject. It was clear she was not about to try and sway me either.

Back at the cabana Kat and I prepared for bed in separate rooms. I heard the knock on the front door. When I came out Christi was in the living room with Kat. They were kissing.

"Good night Lizzy." Kat said as she walked Christi in the direction of her bedroom.

"Lizzy." Christi greeted me warmly but cautiously.

Could I blame her after the way I treated her earlier?

"Kat!" I called out just as they entered the bedroom.

Leaving Christi in her room Kat came out pulling the door closed behind her.

"I want you to come home with me." I blurted out emotionally.

"Ok, but what about Christi?" Kat whispered as she caressed my face.

"I don't know?" I sobbed.

"Don't you think it's time you found out?" Kat asked bluntly.

I just stood there unable to move. Kat kissed my cheek and wiped my tear.

"I love you Lizzy, goodnight."

Kathryn opened her door and went in, she closed the door but left it open just a crack. Kat had left me for Christi.

I ran to my room closing the door. I cried for a few minutes feeling completely alone. In my desperation I called home. Cindy answered the phone.

"Lizzy?" Danny asked as Cindy handed him the phone.

"Danny!" I started crying. "I messed up bad!"

"Tell me baby." He asked calmly.

"She's with Christi!" I sobbed in the phone.

"Did you give her the ring?" He asked.

"No. I want to come home!" I was sobbing uncontrollably.

"Lizzy? Remember the day I proposed?" Danny asked. "Remember how you made me come to you?"

"Yes." I sniffled.

"Open the box and take out the ring." He suggested.

"Now?"

"Yes baby now." Danny replied.

I opened the outer and inner box and knew he was right. Danny knew me better than myself.

"Danny are you sure?" I squealed in happiness.

"Remember what I said last night?"

"Sometimes when you let go, you get more love back than you gave." I repeated.

"Make sure she opens the case with Christi." Danny insisted.

We hung up and I just sat there for a moment stunned that Danny knew all along what I needed. The question was, was he doing this for the family and Kat? Or did he also know my secret as well? Right now it didn't matter. I had rings to deliver.

I opened my door and looked across the hall. Kat's door was still open just slightly. I grinned now, like Danny she had done this on purpose. I looked in the opening, the soft flicker of light filled the room as candles burned. I could smell the fragrance as I peered closer to the opening. My timing couldn't have been better. Did Kat plan this as well?

The shadow outlined her full breast as it dangled just above Christi's moist lips. The tip of her nipple disappeared and pulled taunt just as her whimper reached my ears. Oh God they were so beautiful together.

I watched as Kat caressed Christi. Fingers and lips, tongues and legs intertwined. Moans and quiet whispers I longed to hear waited just inside the door. My left hand moved between my legs and rubbed the sensitive spot they had not yet reached with each other.

"Yes!" I heard Kathryn moaned.

I closed my eyes so I could focus on my fingers pleasuring myself. Just then I enjoyed my first shudder. I wanted to look and see what they were doing but my pussy begged for more attention.

"Yes?" Kat asked?

This time the voice was close and clear. I opened my eyes and there she stood opening the door facing me. My eyelids were heavy with lust, I looked past Kat and saw Christi looking at me frigging my pussy.

"Oh Kat! I am so sorry!" I blurted out. I pulled my hand from my panties and handed her the box. "I brought this for you."

Kat looked back at Christi, taking my arm she led me into the hall and started to close the door behind her.

"Please can we go inside your room?" I pleaded.

Kat looked into my eyes and found her answer. A slight grin formed, she kissed me quickly and led me into her bedroom. Christi was sitting up now, god she is beautiful. Her concern turned to curiosity as Kat led me to sit beside her.

"Lizzy has something for me." Kat whispered showing Christi the gift wrapped box. "I would like you to open it."

"Me?" Christi asked.

Kat looked at me to make sure she read me right. I felt the weight of the world slip from my shoulders. Danny was right, I was going to get back more than I gave.

"Yes Christi, I would like you to open it." I announced.

Kat gave me the box, I gave it to Christi. As she started to open it Kat reached for my hand and gave it a gentle squeeze. I knew then Kat would never leave me.

I don't remember being this excited to see someone open a present even at Christmas. Christi removed the bow and then the outer box. Her hands trembled as she held the small velvet covered case. Christi looked at us both after she lifted the lid.

"But why two?" Christi looked at Kat puzzled.

"Because Lizzy wants us both home where we belong." Kat explained.

Christi was stunned as it started to sink in. She looked at Kat and then me. I took Kat's ring and placed it back on her finger. I took the second ring and held it up to Christi.

"Danny and I would like you to be part of our family." I offered.

Christi lunged at me pinning me to the bed. Her lips pressed to mine as I invited her tongue inside. We kissed for several moments before Christi pulled up.

"Yes! I can't believe you came all the way to ask me that." There was lust in her eyes and a fierceness in her voice. "I want to make love to you!"

I was not prepared for such an outburst and in my surprised state I looked at Kat for support. Kat realized my predicament and quickly stepped in.

"Christi darling maybe another time?" Kathryn whispered brushing Christi's hair to the side. "I have a better idea, let me hold you while Lizzy shows you something."

"Mom!" I protested. "I thought we agreed?"

Christi by now understood the position she put me in but was intrigued by the suggestion she was about to learn something juicy.

"Baby, Christi deserves to know before she makes the final decision." Kat replied with a wink.

"Right now?"

Kat gave me a naught grin, Christi looked at her then back at me. I knew Kat wanted this and the dampness between my legs confirmed I did too. Kat pulled Christy into her lap as I stood up beside them.

Leaning over I gave Kat a long sensuous kiss. Only when she whimpered did I pull back and then kissed Christy. My hand moved to Christi's shoulder as I broke our kiss I gripped her chin gently.

"I'm not here." I whispered in her ear.

Christi was taken back at first but as I guided her lips to Kat she seemed to understand. Kat took Christi from me and pulled her into a loving kiss. Christi wrapped her arms around Kat and pulled her tight as they continued to make out. I moved behind Kat and softly stroked her hair. Kathryn pulled from Christi and offered me her whole head. Left hanging Christi looked at me bewildered.

"Her breast." I mouthed without making a sound.

Not quite sure what was happening Christi tilted her head in a questioning way.

"I'm not here." I repeated softly.

Christi's eyes followed mine to Kat's chest. Her eyes grew big as she quickly understood the game. With unbridled passion Christi attacked Kat's tit.

"MMMmmm." Kat cooed opening her eyes briefly to acknowledge her approval.

I finished my massage and let Kat roll Christi to the side. They were locked in another kiss when I guided Kat lower over Christi. Kat kissed every inch of

Christi starting at her neck. By the time she let the second nipple slip between her teeth Christi was moaning in desire.

Standing beside the bed I watched intently. Christi opened her eyes only to find me pleasuring myself again. She looked up and down my body, one hand inside my panties, the other pulling on my nipple under my top.

Christi's eyes were pleading as Kat continued to slowly pleasure her body. I knew what she wanted but I continued to tease her.

"Please take them off!" Christi hissed.

"Shhh, I'm not here." I whispered.

Kat looked up briefly, chuckled, and then proceeded to kiss her way lower. I continued to tease Christi a bit longer. She groaned in frustration as the two of us kept her on the edge. I pulled my top off and let her watch me squeeze my tit and tug my nipple, all the while my other hand still hidden in my panties out of sight.

"Oh God EAT ME!" Christi yelled out.

Her hands forced Kat between her legs as her back arched and her stomach tightened in response. The sound of Kat lapping at her sodden pussy filled the room. Christi continued to gaze at me lustily. I moved behind Kat and slid over her turned up ass.

With my tits resting just over Kat's ass cheeks my hands rubbed her back and kneaded her shoulders. Kat's muffled moan told me her desires were progressing as well. Looking at me over Kat's shoulders I could see Christi was close to cumming.

With devilish intentions I gently gripped Kat's hair and pulled her face from Christi's pussy.

"Aaarrrgggghhhhh!" Christi protested. "I need to cum!"

Christi's legs strained to raise her cunt to reconnect with Kat but I pulled her further away. Christi reached down to rub her pussy but I smacked her hand away. She glared at me now as I denied her pleasure. I only grinned back.

Releasing Kat I allowed her to eat Christi anew. Christi's orgasm may have subsided but her desire hadn't. Not wanting to forget Kat I now reached under her and gripped her tits. Her body shivered accompanied by another muffled moan.

Christ looked on as I played with Kat's tits. We both knew this drove Kat crazy and Christi seemed pleased I knew it. I knew the time would soon come but I wasn't finished yet. I reached over and gripped Christi's ankles and pushed them up and out.

"Oh God yes! Eat me Kat! Make me cum for your baby!" Christi hissed.

The bed now quivered as her hips rotated with me in control of her legs. Christi's chest was heaving, her hands guiding Kat to her most sensitive places. Before long Christi was once again on the verge of orgasm.

This was all too much even for me. My desire was building out of control. I knew I needed to show her my secret soon. I released her legs and pulled Kat from her pussy again.

"NO YOU FUCKING BITCH!" Christi wailed.

Ignoring her protests I did something I rarely do. I moved beside Kat and kissed her long and juicily. I prefer Danny's cum to pussy but I was overcome with passion now too.

"You cum when she cums." I whispered to Christi.

"I thought you weren't here?" She continued to protest.

"We need to shut her up." I chuckled to Kat.

Kathryn knew what was on my mind. As I pulled her legs Kat raised up on her knees and soon Christi was smothered with Kat's dripping pussy.

Standing up I slid off my panties and watched as Christi accepted her fate and proceeded to worship Kat. I was standing at the end of the bed, Christi's legs draped over the edge. Kat was facing away on her hands and knees taunting Christi with her pussy.

Christi's hands were pushing or pulling Kat's ass cheeks trying to control her movements. It wasn't my favorite scene but it was perfect for the night. My long black fingers wrapped over my mons and fingered my cunt.

Except when Danny makes love to me, I could finally enjoy myself the way that makes me most happy. Watching someone else make love. Especially two women. It started with just curiosity when I was young listening to my mom Sharon and my Grandmother Val make love.

It turned sexual when I found some old tapes hidden in the basement years after Val passed away. They weren't very good quality but for a nineteen year old learning her own sexuality they were award winning performances.

Some were fixed angles, the newest ones were taken by a third person. I always wondered if it was my dad or another lover of theirs. I remember the first time I orgasmed watching them, it was so intense I thought my mom would know just by looking at me that day.

Later in college I would find ways to spy on friends when they made love. After Danny and I got married, I insisted Sally stay with us just so I could watch them make love. Sally learned soon enough but promised not to tell Danny.

I think he knows now but won't admit it. I'm too embarrassed to tell him. I did tell Kat, you might say she seduced it out of me. Oh how I love watching her make love. She lets me watch her and Danny often. On special occasions she let me watch her with Nikki.

Seeing Kat with Christi is so fucking hot. Just knowing they love each other gets me even more excited. My pussy is dripping past my fingers now, it won't be long before this urge to climax will be more than I can resist.

"Hurry Kat!" I hiss through clenched teeth.

They can hear me now as my fingers churn deep in my twat. My wrist is starting to cramp, my left nipple is burning from twisting it. Looking down I see Christi's hand move to her pussy. I slap it away keeping her from pleasuring herself.

Over my moans I hear her groan in protest as Kat grinds her pussy hard on Christ's mouth. Again her hand reaches to pleasure herself. Again I swat it away both of our hands stinging from the force. I spank her clit to warn her. Her legs struggle to find the edge of the bed to protect her sex.

"Lizzy!" Kat cries out huskily.

I look to see her ass moving in a fevered pitch. Yes! I think to myself. I'm ready, please mom hurry!

"Cumming ....." Kat shrieks.

I pinch my clit between two fingers and tug it side to side. My pussy explodes as the room fills with joyous celebration from Kat and wails of frustration from Christi. My own body is in shambles as my orgasm rocks me to the core.

I fall to my knees between Christi's legs. Her hands once again reach for her pussy. With a surge of energy I grab her hands and force my tongue deep in her cunt. "But Lizzy .....!" Christi protested.

I released her wrists and pulled her legs over my shoulders. Her hands gripped my hair firmly and soon her frustration was forgotten as Christi rode my face to her own massive orgasm. Her legs clamped my head holding me from moving.

Only when her clit was too sensitive did she release me. Kat looked at me with a happy grin letting me know she understood. Christi glowing in her post orgasmic blissed reached down and offered to pull me up.

I slithered over her body until our lips met and our tongues shared the passion of the moment. When we parted Christi pulled Kat near and just held us both. Not a word was said for a long time.

"I thought you.....?" Christi broke the silence.

"Lizzy isn't a lezzy." I reminded her.

"I just like to watch." I giggled. "It may never happen again."

Christi didn't seem to understand what just happened. She looked at Kat to see if there was something she missed.

"Sally only once, twice with me." Kat nodded. "Christi, we haven't told Danny."

"So he doesn't know?" Christi reeled in thought.

"He probably knows but I haven't told him." I confessed.

"So all this time ..... you just watch?" Christi asked. You could see Christi thinking back to all the times she saw me with Sally and the others.

"I like to cuddle and kiss afterword. Just no icky stuff." I teased.

"So you will spend the night?" Christi beamed.

"Of course she will." Kat agreed.

I left Christi and Kat talking as I went to clean up and call Danny. We talked about the kid's day and how much I missed them, and him. When I joined Kat and Christi they too had freshened up.

Still naked we cuddled together.

"Go ahead ask her." Kat nudged Christi.

I could see her apprehension as Christi faced me.

"It's about Danny." Christi started nervously. "That morning here you pulled my dress up before you left me alone with him. Did you mean that?"

I'll admit it was a bit brazen even for me. I looked at Kat and knew she was right. If Christi were to come home with us she should know where she stood regarding Danny.

"As you know he's special....."

"And he is your husband." Christi bluntly pointed out.

"Only because Kathryn is so unselfish." I looked at Kat knowingly. "You see Christi, I know Danny loves me, probably more than any man loves his wife....."

"Lizzy you don't have to do this." Kat protested.

"It's true Kathryn, and you know it." I replied with tears in my eyes. "Christi, Danny's true love is his mom. He loves her so much he let Kat leave to be with you."

"Then why are you here?" Christi asked, she herself starting to tear up.

I looked over at Kat and stared deep in her eyes. I could not only see it, I could feel it. It was Kat that brought me here. Kat wanted to know if I loved her as much as she loved me.

Danny was right sometimes when you let go, you get more love back than you give. Kat let go of Danny and me. It was only fair I give her Christi, Danny, and me in return. My lips quivered, I had never said it before.

"I'm here because I'm in love with my mother in-law." I admitted as I looked deep in Kat's eyes. "She loves you Christi....." Turning to my new lover I met her damp eyes " ..... I love you Christi..... I want you both to come home where you belong."

"What about Danny?" Christi asked desperate for an answer.

"The offer still stands ....." I looked to Kat for confirmation. Christi looked with me, Kat nodded in agreement. "..... if that's what you want."

"If that is what Danny wants." Kat chimed in.

"I understand." Christi hugged me sobbing.

"One last question?" Christi said after hugging Kathryn. "When do we leave?"

Danny

"Lizzy honey, it's time to go." I whispered with a gentle shake.

"Danny what time is it?" Sleeping beauty asked a bit startled.

"Almost four." I explained as she sat up still drowsy.

"Were late!" Lizzy exclaimed.

"Nah, just talked to mom, the kids are playing so we'll be just fine." I kissed her softly. "You bring Rusty and I'll get the kids buckled in."

This is my favorite kind of day. Home with the kids, nothing to do, and nowhere I really have to be. We drove down the coast and pulled in the parking lot. We each took a kid and headed for the condo. Rusty followed until he spotted Hunter on the beach.

Kat was waiting to take Casen, Cindy ran in to get Mikayla from Lizzy. I went to the fridge and grabbed two cold beers, handing one to Lizzy as I guided her to the patio. It had rained earlier but the sun was out now. It was mid-sixties, Sharon and Nikki had on light sweaters, Christi had on a wind breaker.

Kat was following with Casen. Cindy and Mikayla had now joined the other kids in the sand. Rusty had found a perch on the side to keep an eye on them all. Christi stood to face Elizabeth.

"Kat said Danny told you. Are you sure you're ok with this?" Christi asked tentatively. "I could find something else to do."

Lizzy was affected by the selfless suggestion. She looked at Nikki to see her reaction before she answered. Nikki smiled and nodded her approval.

"Danny and I talked, he says we can afford for me not to work. I've always wanted to be an at home mom." Lizzy replied as her mom Sharon and Nikki stood. "The job is yours if you want it, I know Molly will approve."

There were hugs and kisses. I stayed around only long enough to confirm there were no hard feelings. Quite the contrary in fact. As women do they were planning lunches together and arranging schedules so Lizzy would have some time to herself.

"I love you son." Kat kissed me as I joined her on the beach.

I took Casen from her so she could join the other women back on the patio. I had a good feeling about this I told myself. The rest of the day was one of the best.

It's been just a couple of months since Christi took over for Lizzy at the management company. From all indications the transition has been made with little disruption for all concerned. Mrs. Martinez for sure thought she would be leaving.

It took a month for Lizzy and myself to convince her otherwise. The kids still have school, and even the youngest attend day care two days a week. We do this so they can learn to interact with kids other than their siblings.

On other fronts there is not much new to report. The first of March that would change. Taking Kat's suggestion to heart, on occasion I have accompanied Sharon, Lizzy's mother on business trips. Not often maybe every other month.

It was, and is the only time the two of us spend time together romantically. To my knowledge it has been a good plan to avoid what could be a sticky problem. That said you could imagine my surprise when I was informed Kat would be accompanying Sharon on her next trip.

I knew right away something was fishy. When Lizzy told me the dates involved my suspicions were confirmed even further. Kat would be gone March 1st, Christi's birthday.

My first instinct was to try and figure it out. My ultimate decision was not to. I decided that if information was freely given I would analyze it. On the other had I would take no action to search for it.

Friday February 28th I was home in the morning with Mrs. Martinez while Lizzy took her mom Sharon and Kat to the airport for their trip. I had an afternoon appointment down the peninsula and then offered to take Nikki to dinner since Sharon was gone.

Mrs. Martinez was going to watch the kids until I arrived home. Lizzy and Christi were going out with Molly and friends from work to celebrate Christi's birthday, which is tomorrow. Saturday the kids had planned to hold a big party for Christi at home.

My meeting went well enough but took longer than I anticipated. I arrived at the condo just after six for Nikki. Her day had not gone much better, the toilet in the main bathroom was not shutting off and the shower head in the master bedroom broke.

Nikki had bought replacement parts at the hardware for me to install. I had brought a change of clothes for our casual dinner but I had nothing to wear for working on the plumbing. Undeterred I decided these two small jobs would not take long.

Removing my work clothes, Nikki gave me some old sweats to slip on, and an old tee shirt. The sweats were mega too short but oh well. With the few tools we keep at the condo I was able to easily replace the toilet valve in no time.

The shower head which should have been easier, of course took longer. The salt air plays hell on steel pipes, even some stainless. The problem was the shower head was connected to some cheap steel pipe that had been chromed.

Announcing I had finished, I stood back proud of my handiwork. Looking at myself in the mirror I could only laugh at the mess I myself was. Some rust stains were on my nose and cheek but mostly at my forehead where I wiped sweat from my brow.

Nikki came in and just laughed. Here I was in her clothes, much too small and covered in rust head to toe. Nikki looked at the showerhead.

"Maybe you should use that before we leave?" She giggled.

It had been over a year since we last made love, for a moment I thought she might join me. When she turned and left the answer was clear. I showered alone and was drying off, hurrying as I was quite hungry by now.

I opened the door and there she stood without a stitch of clothing. It was Christi.

Was I shocked? I'd like to say I was surprised. I knew they were up to something but hadn't expected it here. I was in fact shocked.

"Why are you here?" I snapped at this lovely creature.

I looked for Nikki to see why she would spring this on me like this? I have a wife, a wife I love. A wife that has been struggling with her sexuality, and maybe my infidelities. I promised myself this would not happen unless she approved.

This blatant disregard for Christi's feelings and my responsibilities was unacceptable. Nikki needed to come here and explain herself.

I looked at Christi closely now. Naked and vulnerable my words had hurt her. I felt terrible for lashing out at her. It was Nikki that deserved my wrath, not Christi.

Christi was going to answer but her eyes led mine back to the direction of the bedroom door.

"She's gone now, hurry before he comes out!" We both heard. She bound in the room with her endless energy.

It was my wife Elizabeth. She was wearing my favorite lingerie heading straight for Christi by the bed. When Christi didn't answer Lizzy knew something was wrong.

"Is everything ok?" Lizzy asked.

She could see Christi was upset, but hadn't seen me yet as I was to one side. Shocked is the word. For Lizzy and me both. Christi's eyes led my wife's to mine.

"Oh! Danny, I can explain..."

Christi

It all sounded so fun and sexy when Lizzy suggested we surprise Danny for my birthday. We planned for weeks, Lizzy even called Sally to learn the best way to keep it a secret. Everyone pitched in, Kat was going with Sharon, Nikki would watch the kids. But standing here naked and alone when he came out of the bathroom and asked me why I was here? It all seemed ..... stupid.

Danny knew right away his words hurt me. He softened his glare and looked towards the bedroom door. I only learned later he thought Nikki set this up. That makes sense considering she was the only one in the house when he went in to take a shower.

When Lizzy pranced in all happy I could tell Danny knew who put me up to this. He was shocked, but so was Lizzy. If only Danny had seen Lizzy first like we planned, maybe then I wouldn't feel this way. Maybe I wouldn't feel cheap.

Part of me wanted to run and hide, part of me wanted to stay. I had come this far and now I was so close. So much time and effort went into setting this

night up not only for me but for Lizzy. If I ran now we may never get another opportunity.

"Oh! Danny, I can explain..." Lizzy pleaded when she saw him by the bathroom door.

I thought she may have made a mistake saying that. I doubt she could see it but I did. When Danny grinned slightly I knew we had a chance. It only took milliseconds but we all glanced at each other several times.

"Danny, Lizzy was ....."

"Christi!" Danny interrupted me holding up one finger. "Hold that thought."

He had done this before and I didn't like it any more now than I did then. Then Danny focused on me just a bit too long. In those two or three seconds it was clear he was telling me something.

"Lizzy why is she here?" Danny now directed his seeming displeasure to his wife.

I say seemingly based only by his choice of words. Everything else about Danny led me to believe he wasn't mad at all. We may have caught him off guard but I soon realized Danny knew what was going on.

"I invited her." Lizzy replied defiantly. "

"Why would you do that?" Danny challenged her.

"You're her surprise birthday present." Lizzy giggled unaffected by his fake scorn. "Only you get the surprise."

"Why are you here then? You know that's not the way I do things." Danny said.

Kat warned me Danny preferred just one person. I wanted to explain but somehow I knew this was about more than just Danny and me. At first I thought he was trying to make a point but it was more than that too. I could feel the tension build in the room.

I looked at Lizzy, all of her confidence had drained from her body. Her lips quivered, Lizzy rocked in place, and she couldn't seem to find a place for her hands. Lizzy wasn't only scared she was terrified. I couldn't stand to see her like this any longer.

I had to save her and hopefully the night as well. I knew if I didn't get what I wanted Lizzy would lose another opportunity to reveal her secret. If she couldn't say it, I could.

"She wants to watch." I said boldly. "If we make love I promised Lizzy she could watch."

Danny looked at Lizzy for what seemed like hours, but it was only seconds. I expected him to say something to acknowledge what I just said. He loves her that much is clear, and he knew. With just a quick nod he turned his attention to me.

"You said if we make love. Is that what you want?" Danny whispered he eyes boring into mine.

"Yes." I replied clearly.

"Ok then." Dandy answered his attention never wandering from me.

There was a confidence in his voice like he knew all along this would happen, not just with me but with Lizzy as well.

I expected him to come closer but he stood firm. He asked, I answered, he agreed but oddly he didn't move. Then I remembered the morning at the resort when Lizzy offered me up. She said he wouldn't come to me then.

If I really wanted this I would have to go to him. Oh how I wanted this. I moved slowly in Danny's direction afraid he might change his mind any moment knowing Lizzy was watching.

When I was close enough the towel around his waist brushed up against me I stopped. I reached my hand up and caressed his cheek. My whole body was sending conflicting signals. My pussy was wet in anticipation, my nipples hard and stiff, my mouth suddenly dry.

Danny bent down and gave me the most passionate kiss I have ever shared with anyone. It was like a gulp of creamy hot chocolate with a marshmallow melted in it. The warmth of his kiss seemed to radiate throughout my body warming every nerve ending.

I pulled the towel from his waist and then felt his stiff cock press against my stomach. Danny was warm and fresh. His arms caressed my sides then gripped the cheeks of my ass. Our lips had barely parted and then only to reposition for another kiss.

I don't even remember making our way to the bed. I do remember sliding back and gripping his cock to follow me. It was so big my hand couldn't reach around it and so long I was touching neither the head nor his balls.

When Danny started kissing my body there was something familiar about it. It had been almost twenty years since I made love to a man. And still.....

Danny lifted my ass and delved his tongue in my pussy. My body responded with a familiar shiver. OMG! It's Kat all over again! No man has ever made me feel this way and only one woman, Danny's mother Kat. Just like when she makes love to me, I wanted time to stand still.

My hand combed through his still damp hair, not to guide him but to stop him if he tried to bolt. I closed my eyes tight and thrusted my pelvis up hard against his mouth. Only the roughness of his day old beard reminded me it wasn't Kat.

I promised Lizzy we would do this together, for now at least she was on her own. The pleasure in my body left no room for another input, my pussy was greedily demanding all of my attention. I bucked hard against Danny's expert tongue.

Danny has my ass raised almost to the point just my shoulders were still touching the bed. My legs draped over his shoulders, my toes starting to curl with my desires. It had been a good fifteen minutes and unlike Kat he hadn't teased me once.

Danny licked along my perineum, a favorite spot, then flicked my clit before smothering it with kisses. He tested my asshole then nibbled on my engorged labia's. Danny wasn't teasing me he was taking me on a journey.

With most of my senses in overload it's a wonder I heard it. I opened my eyes to find the overhead lights out and just soft glow from a lamp on the dresser. I searched for the sound and located Lizzy in the overstuffed chair.

Lizzy's eyes were half open, her right hand snaked between her dark legs, her left hand mashing her tit firmly to her chest. For a few seconds our eyes connected, Lizzy pulled her glistening fingers from her pussy and spanked her clit.

She was waiting for me to cum! I couldn't make out how wet she was but I could hear it. Looking between my legs I could see my excitement making its way over my neatly trimmed V heading for my stomach.

I looked a little higher and found Danny waiting to make eye contact with me. His eyes never left mine, I soon realized he was waiting for permission to make me cum. I must have had four mini orgasms by now, they were satisfying but left me wanting another and another.

Did I really want a big one to end it all? I heard Lizzy fingering herself again followed by the smack of her clit and now the desperate moan for relief. Still Danny focused on me, he could have looked up at his wife but he never did.

For now I was his lover. I closed my eyes and knew I owed her.

"Lizzy come with me." I whispered.

I think I heard "YES." from her but I can't be sure. What I do know is my clit exploded when Danny flicked it side to side. I know my stomach tightened, by back arched and some woman was screaming bloody murder somewhere in this room.

I opened my eyes to find a pair look back at mine. Even in the dim light I knew they were Lizzy's dark brown and not Danny's blue eyes. Her lips moved in against mine. Her hand caressed my stomach and over my mound but fortunately avoiding my clit.

"Where's Danny?" I gasped as our lips parted.

"Shhhh. It's ok, he'll be right back. I sent him to clean up." Lizzy giggled. "You squirted a bit."

"What?" I tried to protest. "Are we done?"

I must have looked terrified or disappointed or both.

"Oh baby." Lizzy gave me a quick peck. "You have just started."

I saw a shadow move across the room. Lizzy's black hand made its way up my stomach and gripped my tit as she started to leave. I grabbed her wrist and stopped her.

"Please stay." I whimpered.

Her white teeth glistened as a big smile crossed her face. "You'll enjoy it more if you're alone with him." Lizzy laughed.

I held firmly to her wrist but she stood anyway.

"Don't worry, I'll be back later."

Lizzy looked at her wrist until I released it, moving to Danny she kissed him.

"I'll be back in a couple of hours." She said to Danny before she left closing the door behind her.

We were clearly alone, and would be for some time. The months, weeks, and now days in anticipation were too much for me. The orgasm I just experience will be on my top ten list maybe forever, but I came here to get fucked.

"I need you in me!" I blurted out in desperation.

"Ok then." Danny teased me repeating the words from earlier.

I spread my legs and pulled Danny over me. With a gentleness I didn't expect Danny guided his cock to the entrance of my pussy. I've had male lovers in the past, I've used many different dildos and vibrators over the years. None of that prepared me for what was entering my body at this very moment.

I had heard the girls talk and make jokes, Kat even warned me before she left. Even when I saw and held it, it didn't register with me. When I groaned Danny stopped.

"Please don't." I mumbled.

I knew the moment I said it he might be confused. Did that mean don't stop or don't go any further? I locked my heels behind his shins, my hands gripped his ass and urged him to continue. Danny read the signals I clearly sent and probed further in my sex.

I'm not sure what I expected but it wasn't this. Danny moved with purpose but not speed. My pussy still throbbing from the earlier orgasm appreciated his patience. He slowly continued filling me until I truly could take no more.

My hands shifted to his hips and gave a gentle nudge. I opened my eyes and found Danny's looking into mine.

"It's been awhile since I've done this." I whispered sheepishly.

"Then we should make sure you want to do it again." Danny answered lovingly.

I closed my eyes and gave myself over to him. As Danny's cock pulled back my pussy clung to every contour of his manhood. I waited for Danny to plunge in deeper but instead he eased back into my pussy slowly.

My excitement from earlier only intensified, my pussy swollen and stretched gushed in arousal. I could feel his hot breath, Danny's lips kissed every inch he could reach and still his movements were slow and deliberate.

Every time I felt the tingle of an orgasm he would pause at my opening waiting for the quivering within to subside. When he nudged my cervix I would arch my back begging him to fill me with his love only have him wait patiently for my greed to dissipate.

It was like he was reading my mind, knowing I didn't really want to cum, afraid we might stop. Danny did allow me small gratifications, nothing like the earlier orgasm my body craved. How did he know? He couldn't really read my mind could he?

Seconds became minutes, minutes passed for more than an hour. Oh how he drove me crazy with his patience. At first I wanted to scream but then I came to appreciate what he was doing. My body longed for release but my brain wanted this to never end.

In my entire life no one, not even a woman, had made love to me this long. How does he do it? My pussy was starting to adjust to his size but not his length. I dare to wonder how Lizzy's pussy could handle his cock let alone Kat's ass.

"Can I be on top?" I whimpered.

Danny grinned devilishly and without a word spoken shifted allowing me to ride him. Sitting up I guided him back in my sopping pussy and started to lower myself over his cock. I plunged down until I groaned in discomfort.

Danny's cock started bending, he was nowhere close to all the way in. He winced not so much in pain as concern for me. Instantly his hands gripped my hips and held me in place.

"Maybe another time?" Danny suggested.

So there would be another time? My heart filled with joy knowing it was at least an option.

"I would like that." I agreed.

Gripping my hips tighter Danny slowed me down to the previous speed. I bent over him slightly allowing my modest breasts to dangle in front of him. Danny's hands slid along my sides until his thumbs pressed against the under sides.

"They're not as sensitive as your mom's but I do enjoy a firm touch." I hinted.

"I bet you do." Danny teased.

With his hands now caressing my tits my hips were free to fuck him like I wanted. I jerked him off with my tight pussy quickly several times then settled over his cock waiting for his response. When Danny didn't object I set about doing it again.

I plunged up and down his cock, the sound of our excitement churning in my cunt clearly audible. Danny gripped my tits as my pussy refused to be tormented any longer. My ass bobbed up and down, I could feel myself losing control.

Torn between extending the tortious pleasure or succumbing to another orgasm I chose the latter. I threw my head back arching my back. I could feel his cock pulse inside me. My clit was desperate for contact.

Danny knew right away what needed to be done he gripped my hips and positioned his cock to caress my G-spot.

"Oh my God!" I screamed.

His strong hands drug my clit over his pelvis on the way out, his cock caressed my pussy from the inside. It wasn't exactly slow but it wasn't fast either.

"Please cum with me?" I begged.

"Ok then." Danny replied.

I opened my eyes to see he was teasing me. That big broad smile assured me I was not just another piece of ass. He loved me. I could hear it in his voice, I could see it in his eyes, and mostly I could feel it infiltrate my entire body. I needed to hear it.

"Please I need to know." I pleaded.

Danny thrust deep inside me, I groaned as my cervix blocked any deeper advancement.

"You know." Danny countered.

His cock swelled inside me. My pussy all but a puddle of emotions contracted around his cock.

"Please Danny." I begged not sure my orgasm would wait much longer.

"Cum for me first." Danny negotiated.

"Please Danny, it's important." I argued.

"Cum Christi!" Danny demanded.

He placed one hand over my ass and forced it hard over his cock, with the other he placed it on my back and pulled me hard against his chest.

"I need to know!"

"DANNY LOVES YOU!" Lizzy shouted out. "Now hurry up and cum!"

Startled I looked up and in the shadows Lizzy was frigging her pussy again. I felt a surge of Danny's cock and the sensation of his hot cum fill my pussy. My orgasm ripped through my body as Danny sent another gift of love in my pussy.

"I love you." I faintly heard Danny whisper as my orgasm consumed my universe. I was aware of Lizzy's orgasm as we competed to announce it to the world. Danny continued to hold me tight all the while slowly working his softening cock in and out of my satisfied pussy.

As the last tremor dissipated I felt a second set of hands caress my back and shoulders. Lizzy rolled me off but not before I kissed Danny in gratitude.

Her lips found mine, and in a natural move for me, our legs intertwined as our tits pressed firmly into one another.

"Thank you." I cooed.

Lizzy just pulled me tighter, I could feel the dampness of her sex on my thigh. I pressed mine against hers letting her know I approved. I'm not sure where Danny went but I fell asleep in Lizzy's embrace. Later that night I woke to a gentle rocking of the bed. It didn't take long to realize what was going on. I turned over to find Lizzy riding Danny's cock.

Seeing I was awake Lizzy squealed in delight. Reaching for me Lizzy pulled me up for a prolonged kiss.

"I was getting him ready for you!" Lizzy moaned.

She was doing more than getting him ready she was fucking him franticly. I watched in amazement as his cock disappeared inside her dark brown pussy. When she pulled up her pink lips drug along the pink shaft.

When the head was just barely visible Lizzy thrust down in one quick motion the slurping of their excitement drowning out her whimper. I was staring intently at her stomach astounded this petite woman could take what I could not.

Lizzy seemed to recognize my infatuation immediately. She never slowed her motion but took my hand and placed it where the end of Danny's cock impaled her.

"That is so not right." I hissed in her ear.

"I know. Really?" Lizzy whimpered. "Here you take him I need to cum."

Before I could protest Lizzy pulled off Danny.

"Lizzy!" Danny protested from the sudden abandonment.

I looked down concerned he might be mad.

"Christi will finish you off, I need to cum." Lizzy giggled.

Before I knew it she was straddling Danny feeding him her pussy. Facing me she offered Danny's cock. Danny franticly guided my well used pussy back over his straining prick. It was a love hate relationship all over.

I loved the feeling as he filled me up and hated that I couldn't accommodate all he had to offer.

"Fuck him!" Lizzy demanded.

She reached for me, and I for her. We kissed as her hands gripped my sides and urged me to fuck Danny faster. My tongue found hers as we struggled to maintain contact with all that was taking place below.

I had never been in a threesome before, I had never made love to a black woman before. Doing them both at the same time was almost more than I could take.

The feeling of Danny inside me, with the visuals of Lizzy's brown hands roaming my body, excited me in ways I couldn't process fast enough. Even when my hands roamed her body, which I had done before now seemed more surreal, more intense.

I thought of Lizzy and Sally on the beach. I thought of the first night with Kat. I thought of Lizzy watching Kat and I make love. I thought of them both sharing Danny with me. I raise my hands and frame her face.

"I love you Elizabeth." I groaned, my body on the edge of a massive climax.

"I love you Christi."

"Cum with me." I gasped.

"Ok then." Lizzy teased me with Danny's response.

I felt my stomach tighten, Lizzy bore down on Danny, he thrust up deep in my cunt, I wrapped my arms around Lizzy to keep from being bucked off.

"I'm cumming!" I announced not sure why.

My body shook violently, Lizzy's joined me within seconds. Danny's hands gripped my waist keeping me in place so he could fill my cunt once again. There came a point I couldn't handle another thrust, another touch, another kiss.

I pulled loose from Lizzy and rolled off Danny to curl up in a fetal position. I heard Lizzy and Danny kissing and reaffirming their love for one another. As the last spasm subsided I again drifted asleep.

"Christi come with me." Lizzy shook me.

"Where are we going?" I asked in a daze.

"Just to clean up." Lizzy helped me to my feet.

I didn't see Danny before or after our shower. Lizzy and I were dressed in just panties and oversized tee shirts. When Lizzy returned me to the bed it was empty but made with new linens.

"Where's Danny?" I asked.

"He's in the other room. You can join him if you'd like." Lizzy offered.

"And you?" I asked concerned about keeping them apart.

"It's your birthday, you decide." Lizzy grinned.

It was my birthday and until she reminded me I had forgotten all about it. I wanted to go see Danny but it seemed rude to leave Lizzy behind. I accepted Lizzy's offer and slipped into bed with her. We talked very briefly before Lizzy fell asleep. I tried to join her but it was a fitful attempt. Around three thirty Lizzy reached over to get my attention.

"It's ok, you can go to him." She smiled.

"Are you sure?" I protested weakly.

"If it means I can get some sleep, for sure." She teased.

I kissed her before I left. I walked to the other bedroom but it was empty. I went into the living room to find Danny awake and reading in a big overstuffed chair. I stood before him humbled by what the two of them had shared.

"Happy birthday." Danny smiled happily.

He put down the book and extended his hand offering me to join him. I accepted his offer and made my way to him.

"Thank you." I replied both for the wishes and the night.

"Did you find the answers you were looking for?" Danny asked as he guided me across his lap.

"I think so." I blushed.

Danny reached up and brushed the hair from my face. His hand lingered on my cheek as he leaned over and gave me a peck on the lips.

"Ok then." He repeated yet again.

Without another word he picked up his book and started reading. I nuzzled in deeper and fell soundly asleep.

That's the way it is with Danny. One moment you could be making love with him and the next it could be washing dishes and you always felt he loved you just as much.

At forty I am not a young woman anymore. I have fallen in and out of love several times. I have had several lovers both male, but mostly female, and except for Kat, I would trade them all for Danny.

I didn't know what to expect with Danny that night. At first I was a bit disappointed he wasn't more passionate. Then as time passed and we continued to make love I realized I didn't need passion, Kathryn supplied more than enough of that, what I needed was acceptance.

Danny purposely and patiently made love to me letting me know I was worthy of being part of his family. I was worth his time. Not once during that

night and those that followed have I ever felt used, or marginal. Kat was right, when he is with you, he is with just you.

After that night except on rare occasions we were always alone. Not even Lizzy was allowed to watch unless I invited her. Each time was a new experience, uniquely special, and always satisfying. It was as if he could read my needs and match his love making to fulfill them.

The reality is I have fallen in love with Kat and she with me. I realized, compared to Kat, my sexual desire was not that strong. The fact is Lizzy's wasn't either. Over time as Kathryn spent her nights with Danny, Lizzy and I became much closer.

Not lovers, not in the physical sense. We were almost always at least covered, we groped and kissed. On extremely rare occasions we would rub pussies together for a satisfying orgasm. Mostly we just talked and caressed each other, oh, did I mention we kissed?

We talked about Danny, or Kat, or work. Mostly we talked about the kids. How they were growing, how they were all developing into their own little persons. Some nights that's all we would talk about.

Danny rarely sleeps more than a few hours each night. On more than one occasion, if I couldn't sleep, I would join him as he read in peace and quiet in his favorite chair. He would lay down his book, guide me to his lap, give me a peck on the lips, and then pick his book up.

Danny would give me that warm smile, without a word I would nod and close my eyes. He would open the book and start to read, "Ok then," he would whisper. These are always a special night for me.

Daniel

As you can see 2014 started out in an unusual fashion. In a very short time Christi really has become one of the family. My first wife Nikki was not only mom's lover but in a way Lizzy's mentor. When Nikki moved on to be with Lizzy's mom Sharon, there has been a sort of void in Lizzy's life.

It is Christi who has filled that void and taken a very unique role in our lives.

With Christi the dynamics have changed completely. In many ways Nikki had been like a big sister to Lizzy, Christi is more like a good friend. With Nikki, Lizzy always felt she had to live up to a certain standard, to be like Nikki. With Christi there is no such expectations.

Christi has made it very clear her desires do not lie in my direction. Christi is a taskmaster at work, but at home she is just the opposite. She understands and embraces the fact that this is Lizzy's house. There were some growing pains at first but Kat handled those before I needed to.

Lizzy and Christi are best of friends now, and the children are the bond they share completely. Many nights Kat will show up at my bedroom explaining how the two of them are in bed planning the next days or next weekend's events.

That leads me into another change since Christi moved in. My time with mom has become more frequent. It's been two years since Casen was born. Since then Lizzy's sexual drive has never been the same. Don't get me wrong she is still a passionate and willing lover but her desires that were once many times a week are more like twice a week, at times even less.

Sometimes I think after a long day of raising six children she just loves to be held. Many nights she will curl up on my lap and talk, and kiss, or sleep. To compensate Lizzy sends mom to spend several nights with me instead.

Sometimes she will stay and watch pleasuring herself as Kat and I make love. Usually she will then join us for the night or Kat will leave to be with Christi.

(And make love with her again usually). On the nights Lizzy does not watch she spends the night with Christi and mom stays with me.

By the end of 2014 I believe my life and family had found a balance I had searched so hard to find. Of course there were daily challenges. Sick kids, bad days at work, a minor fender bender, the need to start wearing glasses.

Time didn't stop for us it just played a happier tune. Even Rusty managed to cut me some slack but he still misses Bill.

New Year's Eve 2015 brought friends and family to Florida for the biggest party yet. I need to jump ahead for a moment to explain the early part of 2015.

Friday June 26th was the day that many close friends and relatives had been waiting for, none more than my first wife Nikki and Lizzy's mom Sharon. The right to get married. The whole family waited for weeks as the highest court decided their fate.

That said I take you back to January.

Sam, Lizzy's younger brother has been in college the last few years. He is a great guy and has been dating a sweet young lady named Scarlet. Over the holidays he proposed and Scarlet accepted. The date for the wedding Saturday, July 4th, Independence day. Or as Sam likes to joke the day he loses his.

.....
.....

I kissed Sharon while pushing her against the wall. Her arms went around my neck. I cupped her ass and picking her up. Sharon spread her legs as I thrust my cock deep in her pussy.

"Just so we're clear. What you really want is a big hard cock to fuck you? Am I right?" I asked as she clung to me.

Sharon grunted as I fucked her hard. I pinned her against the wall and forced my tongue in her mouth.

"Yes. Oh god yes!" Sharon squealed. She kissed me back.

Once again we were fucking in the shower. It seemed to be the place we always ended up.

I grunted as her pussy clenched my around my cock. "But you. You know what you want. I'm right aren't I?"

"Yes Daniel! Yes!" Sharon groaned as I slammed her pussy hard again.

I fucked her over and over, as her pussy clamped down on my cock. I could feel her first climax wash over her. Sharon pulled me into a kiss her hips bouncing in my hands. I kicked the door open to the shower and carried her to the bedroom. I placed her on the bed and started fucking her all over again. I wanted to play with her tits so I rolled us over. Sharon was on top still dripping from the shower.

"Cum for me Sharon. Open your pussy, show me how juicy you are. Let me see how much I stretched you open." Sharon gave me a naughty grin.

Sharon gripped her pussy lips and spread them. She pulled off and we both looked at her swollen cunt gaping open. Her pussy pulsated, I could see her eyes roll back in her head, she plunged my cock back in and fucked it twice real hard then fell forward.

"I am cumming you bastard!" Sharon cried out. Her hips and pelvis forced her pussy over my cock I could feel her cum soaking my balls. "Oh damn you made me cum again. You fucking bastard." Sharon continued to franticly pump my cock in her pussy.

"Is it still mine?" I growled. I caressed her back her tits mashed to my chest. Her breathing just starting to get back to normal.

"Yes you fucker. It's yours!" Sharon mumbled. I smacked her ass hard.

"Good now get on your knees milf!" She jumped when I smacked her then hesitated before I rolled her off. With her ass in the air I positioned my cock and slowly slipped in her. Sharon pushed back until I was balls deep.

"When I say cum you need to cum. Play with your clit if you need to but you will cum do you hear me?" I barked at her.

"Yes Danny!" Sharon panted.

I started fucking Sharon again. Her pussy was so red and swollen, it was gaping open. I pulled from her and spanked her asshole with my cock I could see it tighten and loosen hoping I would take it but my focus was on her pussy and her pussy only.

"Now get ready to cum!" I plunged back in her pussy with vigor. Sharon moaned. I fucked her several times.

"Cum baby!" I demanded. She whimpered in frustration. I leaned over and whispered in her ear. "It's ok you can cum now." Sharon was rubbing her clit. She was getting desperate. "It's ok Sharon you can cum now!"

She slammed back against me. I pummeled her pussy filling it with hot molten lava.

"Fuck my pussy. Fuck your pussy. Daniel fuuccckkk yyooouuurrr pppuuussyyyy!" Sharon shrieked as she collapsed on the bed. I turned Sharon to me and kissed her thoroughly. She was drained as much as I was.

"Daniel that was unfucking believable!" Sharon struggled to say. She looked completely satisfied.

"Does that mean you're happy?" I couldn't help but remind her of her earlier remarks.

"I'm very happy." Sharon admitted. "Thank you for coming."

Sharon shifted in the bed and nuzzled back against me. I wrapped my arm over her and gripped a meaty tit. Sharon mewed in reply knowing this would end soon enough. This was her favorite game, making love like we did the first time.

I'm a bit older than I was, Sharon is a few pounds heavier but not much. Still we're able to pull off a standing fuck. Sharon loves the pure animal lust of it. The feeling of my cock buried against the weight of her body.

The hot water of the shower, her back slapping the wall. Mostly it's the feeling of being a rag doll held suspended in my arms as I take her at will. It is one of the few times she trusts anyone to take charge. To be submissive, to be vulnerable.

"Do you really think so Daniel?" Sharon whispered.

"I have a good feeling about this." I replied kissing her bare shoulder.

"I should be home Nikki will be a basket case." Sharron replied concerned.

"It's ok she's with Kat, Christi and Lizzy." I consoled her.

"Can we go home right after the last seminar?" Sharon turned to face me.

"Consider it done." I grinned.

The date was Monday April 27th, Sharon and I were at an insurance convention in another state. That night we learned the Supreme Court had agreed to take on the case of gay marriage. Nikki and Sharon were nervous about the outcome.

Years ago Kat suggested Sharon and I spend some time alone but not at home. Taking her advice Sharon and I take five or six short trips each year. Always for business, either real estate or insurance seminars, mostly to keep our licenses current.

I did have a good feeling about their struggle to get married. I also had a bad feeling that our days together would come to an end as a result. That part I kept to myself.

The summer of 2015 we celebrated Sam and Scarlet's wedding. That fall we celebrated Nikki and Sharon tying the knot, the details I have been asked to keep private.

One Friday just before November I had come home from a particularly satisfying week at work. With the economy on the mend real estate was starting to sell more consistently than any time in my career. In one week I closed on over ten properties. I had been working on some of them for months.

The house was unusually quiet as I entered, even Rusty was nowhere to be seen. Concerned, I called out only to hear my voice echo in the vast emptiness. I walked into the kitchen and looked at the fridge to see if I had forgotten some important event. The calendar was free of notations for this day, just as I remembered from this morning.

I looked at my phone to see if there was some message I missed during the day. Slipping off my suitcoat and tie I slung them over the back of the counter stool. With only my car in the driveway, I slid open the door-wall to look in the garage.

"Leaving so soon? You just got home." Lizzy whispered.

I turned to see my beautiful wife standing at the bottom of the stairs wearing just a pink see-through bra and matching panties. She knew it was my favorite, well maybe the yellow ones too? Her hair is in an Afro, again just the way I love it.

Because Lizzy is so skinny and with her hair all frizzed up I have been known to refer to her as a black Q-tip. I thought better of it today. On the other hand I stupidly looked in the room to see if someone else was with her. Lizzy reacted with disappointment just briefly, but long enough for me to know I screwed up.

"It's just me." My wife explained.

"Thank God, I thought they'd never leave!" I teased.

In that moment I knew I had won her back.

Lizzy stood nervously not quite sure what to do next. It reminded me of the day I proposed.

"Now don't move, you have me where you want me." I teased her.

Lizzy started to smile broadly now.

"Do you have me where you want me?" Lizzy giggled.

"Not yet, let me get closer and I will." I laughed.

"Danny!" Lizzy squealed as I wrapped my hands around her and gripped her ass.

"I love you Elizabeth Masters."

"I love you Daniel Masters." Lizzy replied. A seriousness in her tone suggested there was a deeper meaning behind the words.

I let my hands glide up over her waist along her slender back. Lizzy looked up at me her doe like eyes pierced deeply into mine. My hands released the clasp of her bra, Lizzy allowed me to remove it never breaking our gaze.

Her tits settled lower on her chest, the almost black areolas and stiff nipples tempting me to break our concentration. With utmost softness I caressed her charms, Lizzy struggled to maintain her composure.

Undaunted I tweaked each fat nipple then moved lower for a new destination. When my fingers located the top of her panties Lizzy gripped my wrists.

"Danny I need to tell you ....." She started to explain.

"Shh." I smiled.

"But .....?" Lizzy protested.

"Trust me." I whispered. "Now close your eyes."

Lizzy closed her eyes and drifted back in my arms. I laid her gently on the steps and spread her legs. I could smell her heavenly scent as I brushed against the gusset of her panties.

"Oh Danny!" Lizzy moaned as she wiggled in front of me.

I munched on the gauzy material of her panties, Lizzy arched her back in response. Gripping the top of her panties I rolled them over her hips and along her long slender legs as she folded them above my head.

I pushed her legs against her chest and focused on her puckered rose bud.

"Please don't tease me." Lizzy moaned.

I plunged my tongue deep in the vise like orifice, Lizzy clamped it shut even harder. We've never tried anal, at least not with my cock, tonight would be no different. Still I liked to keep her guessing and this always distracted her.

Spreading her legs as wide as the staircase Lizzy's pussy gaped open the early signs of excitement started to seep.

"Show me pink." I grunted.

Lizzy loved this part as much as I did. With a naughty smile her long slender fingers splayed her pussy open for me to savor.

"It's all pink on the inside!" Lizzy squealed.

I searched her eyes and saw a happiness that had been missing recently. I hesitated just to tease her, Lizzy gripped my hair firmly forcing my face against her sex.

"Make me come like your mother taught you!" Lizzy now growled at me.

I closed my eyes and gripped her hands. I could feel it now, I sensed it the moment I saw her on the steps, but now I knew it was true.

Thinking back to one of the earliest lessons Kathryn taught me I started to orally satisfy me wife. Lizzy's fingers combed through my hair. I tugged one juicy pussy lip then letting it slip out and snap back to join the other.

I licked under the nub of her clit until her hips pressed her sex hard against my teeth. At just the last moment I drove my tongue deep inside her overheated pussy making her squeal in protest.

"Oh God you do that even better that Kat." Lizzy complimented me. "Hurry Danny I need you inside me."

That usually worked but not tonight, I had an empty house and a willing wife, Lizzy would need to beg before this night was over. I used every trick in the book on her pussy, many of them multiple times before she caved in.

There on the steps leading to the second level Lizzy had her first tormented climax. Pushing my head from between her legs, Lizzy almost fell those last

few steps as her body rocked in orgasm. I picked her up in my arms and carried her up to the bedroom.

Carrying her up was not an issue since Lizzy is now back to her weight since before she gave birth. She has worked long and hard to accomplish this. It was never an issue with me, to be honest I preferred the few extra pounds. For Lizzy it was an important goal she set and I am happy she followed it through.

Lizzy looked up at me from the bed with glassy eyes as I finished undressing.

"I love you Danny." Lizzy said in almost a dreamy state.

"I know Liz." I grinned.

"No you don't, I really mean it...." She almost argued.

"Then show me." I replied knowing what she really meant.

"Ok I will!" Lizzy replied defiantly. "I get top."

This was a good sign. Lizzy loved to be on top, to be in control so to speak. She had the freedom to move about, to express herself. It had been some time since she insisted on being there. I welcomed the offer.

I laid back as Lizzy moved on top of me. She gripped my cock and slowly started to stroke me. I had teased her and expected her to tease me in exchange.

"I talked to Sally today." Lizzy mentioned out of nowhere.

This was odd I thought. Sally lives with Bill just across town, we see them often but true to my word Sally and I have not been together since my Uncle George passed. I was going to say something but Lizzy put a finger to my lips.

"I talked to Mary as well." Lizzy giggle raising an eyebrow. "I also talked to Nikki and my mom Sharon."

It was obvious where she was going but why? I wanted to speak but thought better of it.

"I talked to Kat and Christi." Lizzy whispered.

It was the way she looked at me that made my heart skip a beat. Holding up one finger indicating I should wait a moment Lizzy raised up and guided my cock to the opening of her pussy. Slowly my engorged manhood disappeared inside my wife's cunt.

"I'll never again take that feeling for granted." Lizzy said soberly.

Her long black frame descended over mine. The softness of her small breasts pressed firmly against me.

"Tell me about her." Lizzy looked up her chin resting on my chest.

"Who?" I asked confused.

Did Lizzy think I had a mistress? Someone on the side? I would never.....

"Your mom." Lizzy stunned me.

"Kat?" I stupidly asked.

Lizzy grinned then shook her head no.

"Eve?"

"She is your mom isn't she?" Lizzy whispered.

Was would have been the proper tense, but I was too surprised she brought it up to care.

"Make love to me like you did to her the first time." Lizzy raised up dangling her tits in front of me. "Tell me all about how she tried to seduce you. Tell me about that bikini she wore just for her son."

My cock swelled as the memories flooded back about the time Eve and I had together.

Lizzy wiggled sliding down, I could feel my cock at the opening of her pussy. I tried to thrust but she made it clear she didn't want that.

"I need to know Danny."

Lizzy wiggled again this time the tip just entered her pussy.

I told Lizzy about how as a kid I spent part of the summer with my grandparents.

Lizzy slid further down my hard cock. Very slightly, maybe an inch.

I told her about the orange bikini Eve wore just when I came to stay, never when Charles was around however.

Lizzy wiggled her pussy sliding down another inch.

I told Lizzy about my dad Duane, and how Kat and I became physical. My cock swelled in her tight cunt. Lizzy drove me wild by not moving.

I told Lizzy about my birthday with Nikki and me making love. How Kat and I had intercourse that same night. I told Lizzy about how Eve and I made love that night as well. Since Lizzy is tormenting me by fucking me the same way Eve did she obviously knew that part.

Lizzy slid down my cock almost completely in her.

"So Charles knew you fucked his wife?" Lizzy screeched?

"He did." I replied embarrassed.

Lizzy wiggled again, I was in her fully now. Other than her painstakingly taking my cock we hadn't moved. Lizzy reached down and stroked my face.

"Daniel, I do love you. I'm sorry, I have been selfish and not always a good wife." Lizzy confessed.

I wanted to refute that statement but knew now was not the time. Lizzy clenched her pussy tight on my cock. For the first time she moved up, just a little and then pushed down trying to get my cock deeper.

"I love you Elizabeth. Somehow I have always known this day would come. I'm so happy it's now!"

Lizzy slipped up my chest my cock barely able to stay in her. We kissed as she worked my cock back in her pussy.

"Now fuck me nice and slow. I want to feel every inch stretch this pussy before you fill it up the first time." Lizzy said cryptically.

I knew this would be special, it had been almost a year since I filled her pussy more than once in a single night. Lizzy pushed herself up and impaled her tight cunt over my manhood. It felt like she rolled a too small condom over it.

Her skinny ass bounced with purpose, Lizzy's titties danced on her chest for my enjoyment. I truly love this woman. She is spunky, sassy, but also strong, and practical. Lizzy is a wonderful mother not only to our children but the three I had with Nikki and of course Cindy who we adopted.

It didn't surprise me she asked about Eve, well except that it took so long, and of course the timing. For Lizzy it's all about family. I laid back watching her concentrate on making me happy. Her Afro jiggled, she bit firmly on her lower lip. When she made love like this Lizzy is like a spring under pressure.

I knew just how to set her off.

I reached up and pulled her down on top of me. Thrusting up I buried my cock deep inside her. Lizzy moaned in protest, I could feel the heat of her body radiate over mine. I snaked my right hand over her back and between her ass cheeks.

"No Danny ....." Lizzy mumbled.

She knew what was coming, her body betrayed her protest. Lizzy wanted me to cum first. Dipping my finger in our combined excitement I rimmed her tight ass.

"OOHH.....Please cum in me!"

Pushing back on my finger Lizzy's pussy bottomed out on my cock. I knew her next move would send us both over the top. Lizzy's body tensed above me, she gave a sort of slithering move, she pulled up and one last plunge.....

"Oh fuck I love you!" Lizzy screamed.

My finger was lodged in her ass, my cum spewing cock painted her pussy walls a milky white. I too was climaxing. Groping and thrusting I pulled Lizzy off so we could consummate our coupling with a kiss.

"Can you spend the night?" I teased.

It was a gamble I was taking but I needed to know for sure. As you know it's not easy being married to me. Lizzy pushed herself up, perspiration collected at the hairline on her forehead. Her big brown eyes looked deep into mine.

"If I had their rings I would put them on the counter." I said honestly.

I was talking about Kat and Christi and Lizzy knew it. The offer was the same as before I proposed. Lizzy seem taken back and maybe a bit confused by my offer.

"No Danny it's not about that. I love them too you know?" Lizzy replied struggling to explain.

"Then what?" I asked.

"It's something Sally reminded me from years ago." Lizzy bent over and kissed me.

"And that is?"

"Eve and Kat raised you to make people happy." Lizzy grinned.

"And.....?"

"And ... I want to be happy!" Lizzy giggled.

"Well, if what we did so far didn't make you happy, there is only so much more we can do." I explained reaching for her ass again.

"You wish! Not going to happen anytime soon buster." Lizzy teased placing both hands under her ass. "The sex was great and we can still do that again ..... but, there is something I would like to talk to you about in the morning."

It was my turn to be taken back and maybe a bit confused. On the bright side Mr. Happy was awake and raring to go. If she wanted to talk in the morning I knew of a few things to kill some time until then!

It was about five in the morning when I took a shower and headed down stairs to the den. It was about six when I heard the shower running upstairs. Ten to seven Lizzy was curled up in my lap. I wrapped my arms around Lizzy and held her tight. She smelled wonderful.

"So you wanted to talk?" I kissed the back of her neck.

"Danny, Sally said if anyone can do it you can." Lizzy replied softly.

"And exactly is it you want me to do?" I asked cautiously.

"I'm not supposed to tell anyone but Scarlet may be pregnant." Lizzy confessed.

Scarlet is married to her younger brother Sam. They just got married this past July 4th. Sam transferred to the college Nikki and I attended two years ago. He will be graduating college in December, Scarlet in May of next year.

Oddly enough Sam and Scarlet live in the same small house I grew up in. George left it to me when he passed. When Sally moved out I let them stay rent free, they just pay the bills.

"May be pregnant? Lizzy she is or isn't." I laughed.

"Well ok she is." Lizzy replied in a huff.

"So of course you told everyone?"

"Just Sally, Kat, Christi, Nikki, and my mom." Lizzy grinned.

"Not Mary?" I teased.

"Well I may have mentioned it?" Lizzy giggled. "Then I was thinking Rachel is due in January....."

Rachel is Jr.'s wife Lizzy's older brother the pilot. They live in the house Lizzy grew up in just a few miles from Sam.

"Lizzy is there a point you are trying to make?" I asked confused.

Lizzy sat up in my lap and faced me. Her hands framed my face her eyes begged for understanding.

"Danny I want you to get them to move here." Lizzy burst out.

Its times like this that woman tests me. I wanted to protest, to explain how crazy this is. Then I remembered my youth and how Kat would challenge me as well.

"Have you even tried?" Mom would ask. "If it was easy I wouldn't need you." Was another.

Embarrassed with myself for being so childish I vowed to do better. Looking deep in those eyes I remembered what Lizzy said last night. "I want to be happy."

"So I assume you have a plan?" I asked calmly.

"I do, I want you to go talk to them." Lizzy grinned happy with herself. "In person."

She said it as if I was asking for her brothers to help move furniture, or watch the dog for a weekend. To Lizzy this was just another sale on a house for me to close. Or maybe to land a man on the moon? I replied the only way that made sense.

"Ok then."

Lizzy smiled broadly now.

"Where would they live?" I inquired.

"You're in real estate, figure it out."

"Ok then." I repeated knowing I had not only lost the battle but the war.

"I love you Daniel Masters!" Lizzy squealed in delight.

Popping up she ran to the stairs and stopped then looked back with a wonderful smile.

"Tonight you can be on top! I'm going back to bed and rest up." Lizzy teased.

"Ok then." I winked.

Lizzy had just come back down and was drinking coffee when the troops arrived home. I was on the couch looking at new listings. Cindy came running in and plopped in my lap.

"Daddy, Aunt Scarlet is going to have a baby!" Cindy announced proudly.

I looked over my shoulder at Lizzy. The look I got was priceless.

.....
....

I would have my chance to work on a solution soon enough but first the man upstairs threw me a bone. Mrs. Martinez informed Lizzy and me she and her husband would be moving out of state. Rafael had accepted a transfer from work that would allow them to live close to one of their children.

Mrs. Martinez would stay on through the end of the year but then would be babysitting her own grandchildren. Lizzy was disappointed to hear the news, I myself took it as a positive sign.

Just before Christmas Sam graduated from college. Lizzy insisted he and Scarlet join us in Florida for the holidays. I talked to Jr. and invited him and Rachel to come and visit as well. With the cast all expected to be assembled for the holidays I had but one more hurdle to jump.

One of the boys could buy or rent the house in back that Mrs. Martinez was no longer going to live in. Would they want to share or would they want separate homes? Who would get this house? Would either one even want it?

As fate would have it I soon had the answer I was looking for.

Bill had brought Sally over to the house one day a few days before Christmas. Lizzy and Christi were going to take Bill shopping for a Christmas gift for Sally. Kyle was at a friend's house, Kenzi, Mikayla, and Casen went with Kat and Nikki to the mall to see Santa.

Cindy and Hunter were out back with Rusty. Sally and I were in the kitchen talking among other things about Lizzy's request to have her bothers move closer. I laid out my plan to approach them and several housing options for them to consider if they were interested.

We discussed the scenarios that might play out including them both turning me down.

"Give me your hand." Sally asked seriously.

"What?" I stammered.

"Your hand." Sally insisted.

Reaching for my left hand Sally took it between hers and closed her eyes. I sat silently for several awkward moments. It had been years since she had done this. I could feel her love and happiness flow throughout my body.

"Ice cream." Sally jumped up releasing my hand.

"What?" I muttered.

Without replying Sally went to the door-wall and called Hunter and Cindy.

"How would you kids like to go get an ice cream?" Sally called out.

The positive reply was clear even from where I was sitting.

"Can Rusty come?" Hunter asked.

"I insist!" Sally laughed.

So off we went the four of us and one dog on a chilly but not especially cold winter day walking to our favorite soft serve ice cream stand. It reminded me of the time years ago when Cindy swung between Sally and me during a particularly difficult time for us all.

On the way back Hunter and I are walking in front with the dog. Cindy is talking non-stop behind us with Sally. We turn on Pine the same street the second house is located on just like we did years ago. Rafael and Mrs. Martinez have started to move out and are away for a few days.

We are within maybe five houses when around the corner pulls the same pickup with realtor signs in the back. He pulls into the drive beside our house and parks the truck. He jumps out and grabs a sign, turns and sees me. He knows the moment our eyes meet.

"Not you again!" He moans.

"Excuse me is that house for sale?" I asked laughing

"No just had some signs to get rid of. Thought this looked like a nice place to put one." He replied just like he did years ago.

"I'm sorry. Could you hold on one moment?" I asked him as I dialed my phone.

This time he just held out his hand. I slipped another fifty dollars in it just like last time.

He loaded up the sign and left even before I called the agent.

"What's he doing?" Hunter asks.

"This is how dad buys houses." Cindy laughed.

"You knew?" I asked Sally.

"You might say I had a feeling it was a good day to buy ice cream." Sally replied with a wink.

.....
.....

It's May of 2016 Sam and Scarlet are on the way to Florida with Sharon and Nikki. Scarlet is due in a few weeks so they decided to leave right after Scarlet graduated college. Jr. and Rachel and their baby flew home this morning so Jr. can work tonight.

Jr and Sam both live on Pine Street now. They actually flipped a coin to determine which house they would get. All I know is Lizzy is happy and so am I. As for the rest of the family, well, I guess you could say the only tears shed were happy tears.

Sam found a good job to start right out of college. Jr. is now flying out of Daytona and occasionally Orlando. With an abundance of babysitters around them Lizzy is hoping for many nieces and nephews.

Lizzy, Kat, Christi and I are all back in the town where I grew up. Jr. sold his home, the same one he bought from his mom Sharon. Kat and I are closing on the home George left us when he passed. Sam has been staying here while in college. With no more family around we decided to sell it.

This was a tough decision.

It is a beautiful Sunday in May. The sun is out, the morning chill has turned to a nice warm spring day. The gentle breeze brings out the fresh smell of grass and trees quickly growing again.

"Daniel this is not a good idea." Kat reminds me for the third time.

"Too late now." I chuckle as I make the last turn.

"Is it really that bad?" Christi leans over and gives mom another peck on the cheek.

"So this is where it all started?" Lizzy squealed not waiting for an answer.

"Seems so remote." Christi mentions as we pass by fields of newly planted farmland.

"Must be around here someplace?" I looked at Kat in the rearview mirror.

"Top of the hill on your left." She pointed knowing there was no turning back now.

I could almost feel it as I pulled into the gravel drive. It was nothing but a small clearing that held a building at one time. The opening was surrounded by trees on three sides. There is an old broken slab of concrete and a gravel drive circling it.

I turned off the truck and we all piled out. Walking around we surveyed the grounds around the truck. Small trees were growing in the cracks of the concrete. There was an eeriness even in the daylight. The occasional car would pass so quickly it was hard to know even what color it was.

At night this would be a perfect place to seduce some desperate woman. That or even worse. There is not even a house within eyesight.

"So he tried to shove his cock down your throat?" Christi asked as she took Kat's hand. It seemed like they were all looking at me in disgust.

"Twice." Mom replied. "I warned him after the first time."

"So you bit his cock?" Lizzy giggled.

"I did." Mom answered looking at me.

"Why did you go out with him if he was such a douche?" Christi whispered.

Mom didn't answer, instead she looked at me with that look I knew all familiar. Kat was scared. She was scared then and she is scared now. Scared I might not know the real reason she went out that night.

"Are you going to tell them?" I whispered.

Lizzy and Christi both knew something was not quite right. They looked at me and then Kathryn.

"I can't" Mom said choking up.

"She went out with him because she thought Nikki and I were going to make love that night at home." I answered. "Mom didn't want to come between us."

Christi and Lizzy both gasped a bit. Mom just gazed into my eyes as hers filled with tears.

"You did know?" Kat asked as Lizzy handed her a tissue.

"I always knew." I whispered. "I knew I wanted you as much as you wanted me."

"Oh Danny! I have always loved you." Kat stood shaking.

I moved to my mom and held her in my arms. Lizzy and Christi walked to the other side of the truck as I kissed my lover passionately. In over fifteen years

of kissing and making love there had never been a more meaningful and passionate moment between us.

I held mom and dried the tears from her eyes. Her smile brought out the rascal in me. Pulling her skirt up I grabbed her ass making Kat squeal in delight.

"Later big boy!" Mom now laughed. "Tonight I want your cum dripping from my ass!"

Just before I could reply I heard screaming from the other side of the truck.

"Lizzy found it!" Christi yelled as she ran around the back of the truck.

Startled mom and I both asked at the same time.

"Found what?"

"The shoe!" Lizzy yelled "The other shoe."

Dangling from her finger was the shoe mom left behind the night she bit the guys cock. It was dirty and weathered from the elements but it was the missing shoe. I wanted to keep it but the girls convinced me it was better left behind. A memory no longer needed in our life.

We talked and laughed for a bit longer. Kat retold some juicier parts of that night and a few others. Mostly she embarrassed me by telling the girls some of my earliest attempts to impress her as a lover.

As we headed back I took the opportunity to stop by Coach Anderson's house. The picnic table was gone and so was Coach. He died almost two years ago. Unfortunately I was not able to attend the funeral.

The four of us walked to the porch, I knocked on the screen door. Gladys turned the corner and saw me immediately.

"Ma'am." I grinned broadly.

"Daniel!" She cried out walking faster now. "I wish I had known you were coming."

"We were in the area, I thought we would stop in and say hello." I answered.

"I am so glad you did, please come in." Gladys unlocked the door and pushed it open.

Leading us into the den it looked just like it did the first time I saw it. All of Coach's awards and trophy's on display and a few I hadn't seen. The four of us stood, Gladys looked us each over quickly.

"You remember my mom Kathryn?" I asked as I introduced mom.

"I do." Gladys replied stepping in front of Kat.

With a slightly unsteady hand Gladys reached up and caressed Kat's cheek. There was something in the way she held it there, her expression, the change in the tone in her voice.

"So Kathryn, did Daniel keep his word to Coach and look after you like he promised?"

Kat hesitated, I think we all were taken by surprise by the way she asked. Kat recovered quickly.

"He has." Mom grinned looking up at me.

Gladys looked my way as well.

"Yes. Yes, I believe he has." Gladys grinned.

Then in a shocking move Gladys moved closer and kissed mom on the lips. You could have heard a pin drop.

"And who is this beautiful woman." Gladys asked without skipping a beat.

"This is Elizabeth my wife." I replied proudly.

"So she is." Gladys said coyly.

Moving to Lizzy she again caressed Lizzy's cheek. Lizzy stood nervously as Gladys studied her closer.

"I knew your grandmother Valerie." Gladys explained. "She too was a very sharing woman. Then your mother came along. Sharon gave her the grandchildren I never could. Fortunately for me Coach swept me off my feet."

"You and Val?" Lizzy asked stunned.

"Never mind that, just know she would be proud of you Lizzy. Val never stopped talking about you." Gladys leaned in and gave Lizzy a kiss on the lips as well.

"And this lovely woman? Another of your lovers?" Gladys asked me bluntly.

The question was more of a clear statement that she knew mom was my lover.

"She's with me." Kat replied bluntly hoping to protect me. "This is Christi."

"So she is.....with you I mean." Gladys replied still focused on Christi. "Tell me dear, is he really that good? Can he make you orgasm?"

I wanted to stop this but Christi looked at me and warned me off.

"Yes ma'am he is. They all are, even Lizzy and she is ....."

"..... not a lesbian?" Gladys cut her off. She looked at Lizzy and winked. "I've heard."

"Coach was enough for me too." Gladys addressed Lizzy. "Still, a girl should keep her options open!" Gladys winked at Lizzy again.

"Christi you are one lucky woman. If I were forty years younger I just might consider shipping you back to that resort myself."

Gladys leaned in and gave Christi a long sensuous kiss. After they parted Christi looked around at the three of us. "I guess I should be glad she's not forty years younger!"

We all laughed. The old woman looked tired and we had stayed longer than we should have. Kat picked up that too and suggesting we needed to get back as it was getting late. Gladys walked over to the shelf and picked up a gold pocket watch.

"Daniel I want you to have this. It was coach's most prized possession." Gladys said as she held it in her hand.

"I really couldn't take it." I replied. "It looks like a retirement watch."

"It is, it was." Gladys smiled. "Coach hated it. The day they gave it to him he wanted to throw it away."

"But you said it was his most prized possession." Lizzy asked puzzled.

"When Daniel came for Kathryn the night she walked here from up the road..... Coach knew .....the next day Danny brought the sheet back.....I knew."

"Knew what?" Kat asked.

"You two would become lovers." Gladys admitted. "The way he looked at you in the truck, the way you looked at him in the house."

"The watch?" Christi asked.

"Daniel came and asked Coach to help him get better at playing sports. It gave Coach a whole new reason to live after they pushed him out, forced him to retire." Gladys placed the watch in my hand. "He would come home and tell me about this dorky kid that refused to give up and his mom that would never let him."

"And the watch?" I asked.

"Every day Coach would pick it up and tell that watch he wasn't a quitter. He may not have always won but he never again gave up at what he loved. Coaching." Gladys said. "Daniel because of you he coached to the day he died. Danny because of you he died happy."

Gladys pulled me down and locked lips with me. I wrapped her in my arms and let her tongue find mine. It was a wonderful kiss, not passionate but loving just the same. It was a meaningful kiss that ended far too soon.

"Thank you for coming Daniel, Kat, Lizzy and Christi. Now if you will excuse me you need to go, I'm an old woman and need my rest." Gladys said bluntly.

Kat pulled Gladys to her and kissed her firmly. It was Gladys's turn to be shocked.

"If you'd like, Danny could stay the night." Kat offered.

The old woman started to smile.

"Thank you but I'm not sure Coach would understand the next time I see him." Gladys laughed.

The old woman guided us to the door, a polite way of asking us to leave.

"It really is more than just a kiss isn't it" Lizzy added.

Gladys looked my way then back at Lizzy. She cocked her head in a questioning manner.

"You're sure you really don't want him to stay?" Lizzy teased.

"Thank you for stopping in, now you really must leave....." Gladys winked at Lizzy."....I might just change my mind."

It was quiet in the truck for the first few miles.

"Would you have really stayed?" Christi asked.

I didn't answer for many reasons. Fortunately I didn't need to.

"Of course he would have." Christi answered her own question. "God I love you all so much."

We passed Nikki's old house and then went by Sharon's old house. Jr. bought it from his mom and recently sold it to move next to us. Lizzy wanted to take one last look around but the new owners had already moved in.

We drove up the mountain and showed Christi the house George traded us. Kat and Lizzy filled her in on many of the stories you read here. Lizzy asked if I wanted to tell Christi about Sally but it just didn't feel right. Heading back down the mountain we headed to Kat's house. The house where it all started.

It belonged to me, well it did until just a few weeks ago. Sam and Scarlet had been living here while going to college. They just moved into the house on Pine next to Jr. and Rachel down in Florida.

I got fair money for it considering how out of place it is in this neighborhood. As I opened the door for what will be the last time, memories flooded back instantly. I almost expected to see Nikki greet me like she did so many years ago. Maybe Kyle waddle with a diaper full of poo.

Instead we found an emptiness. The bones were the same but inside was all different. I'm not usually sentimental but this place holds special meanings. George's elevator took us up to the second floor. The shower where Sharon and I first made love was one of the few items still intact.

Walking down the stairs we turned to the laundry room. The same washer and dryer from when we lived there stood silently as a testament of their durability. Kat moved closer to the washer, the stool was gone, but when she bent over and shook her ass I knew what she was doing.

"Do you remember this lesson?" Mom taunted me.

"Lesson?" Christi asked suspiciously.

Still bent over Kat shook her ass then moved it slowly in a circle. "Well big boy do you?" Mom teased again.

"You mean you wanted him to do that?" Lizzy squealed. "On the washing machine?"

"Did and still do." Kat winked at me. "Before we could have intercourse this was my favorite sexual act. Come to think of it, it still is."

Kat was laughing as Lizzy tried to pull her free of the washer. Christi looked at me in a confused way. Obviously this is one story Kat never shared with Christi. As I locked the door behind us there was a sense of sadness and relief.

I will never forget those days, but it feels good to be moving on as well. The future, my future is here with me now. We headed back to the hotel.

"What can be taking her this long?" I asked myself.

It had been almost an hour since we came home from dinner. It was late and we were planning on getting an early start. Not a problem for me but these three think were on a vacation. I was lounging in the room Lizzy and I shared wearing just boxers. Lizzy was in the adjoining room mom and Christi shared. I had the TV on but couldn't really find anything that caught my eye.

Turning my attention to the door adjoining the rooms I had a strong feeling the three of them were up to no good. I soon found out I couldn't have been more wrong, well, in a way.

"Danny are you on a bed?" Lizzy asked from the other room.

"Yes." I replied tentatively.

"Close your eyes." Lizzy giggled still out of sight.

"Ok they're closed."

"No peeking" She squeaked.

I heard her enter but not alone. I tried to tell by their scent but they were all present. I felt the bed compress, there was only one but it wasn't Lizzy. I knew the moment she touched me it was Kat. Her hand caressed my face, her lips pressed hard against mine.

I started to pull back to question what was going on but mom held me in place.

"Please Danny let us do this." She whispered.

Us, us who? Lizzy? Christi? The three of them? We've never done it that way.

"Mom, what are you doing?" I asked.

"A new lesson my son." Kat whispered as she slipped a blindfold over my eyes. "Now like you're wife said no peeking."

I felt her hand slip under the waist band of my shorts. Kat slowly stroked my cock until it strained beyond her grip. Her lips pressed to mine then pressed against my jaw.

"Please be a good boy and don't make me wait too long." Mom sighed.

A second set of hands pulled at my shorts, I wanted to resist but knew there was point to it. I lifted my butt and the shorts slid off my legs. Mom pushed me back on the bed and straddled my chest. A warm set of lips encircled my cock.

These were not Lizzy's so it must be Christi. Mom lowered a meaty tit to my mouth, she cooed as I tugged gently on her nipple. Christi was clearly not experienced at blowjobs but who was I to complain?

What she lacked in technique she more than made up in effort. Relegated to darkness I laid back and enjoyed the two of them pleasuring me. Mom shifted above me and offered me her other tit. Christi meanwhile was doing her best to bring me off.

I was building up a head of steam when the distinct scent of Lizzy filled my senses. Mom pulled up and two greasy fingers painted my lips with her nectar. Instantly they left my mouth and I could hear Lizzy moan as she thrust them back in her gushing twat.

"Please don't make us wait too long." Mom whispered.

Lizzy frigged her pussy then forced her fingers in my mouth. I sucked them clean just as Christi went down on me hard. My cock swelled the pressure in my balls tightened to the bursting point.

"Hurry Danny I need to cum!" Lizzy groaned.

Mom moved aside and my wife's pussy mashed against my lips. Christi gagged as I thrust deeper in her mouth. Kat combed through my hair, from the sounds of it they were kissing. Christi started sucking even harder, and Lizzy was slathering my face with her excitement.

"GGGRRRMMMPPPHHH!" I bellowed in a muffled orgasm.

Lizzy ground down forcefully, the pressure sending her over the edge to join me. My cock spewed like an overheated kettle on a stove sending a steady stream of cum in Christi's mouth. I groaned as the cool air hit my cock, then I felt the mom's unmistakable hand stroke me.

My cock continued to spew as Lizzy rolled off. I could hear Kat and Christi kissing most likely sharing my cum.

I lay there momentarily as my body slowly recovered from the weakening spasms. Lizzy moved over and took my cock in her mouth sending a special shiver up my spine. Still in the dark I felt shifting on the bed.

"I'm sorry I didn't expect that much so soon." Christi whispered.

I pulled her to me and kissed her firmly tasting just the remnants of my passion. Christi taken back at first embraced me firmly.

"I love all of you." She whispered as we parted.

Lizzy pulled off my semi hard cock and moved back up to join us. Her long slender fingers pulled the blindfold off as she leaned over me. Her black tits hung down to long coned points, the nipple fat and swollen.

"Hurry Kat needs you." Lizzy said coyly.

I looked over to where Christi moved to see mom on all fours, her ass covered in lube. Lizzy pulled my now growing cock and handed me off to Christi. Christi guided me to mom's asshole and lined me up.

"Put it in!" Kat begged.

"But luv surely it won't fit?" Christi replied.

It dawned on me Christi knew mom loved anal, and we did it often, but until now she had never seen us do it in the light.

"Please Danny!" Mom pleaded not even answering Christi.

I pushed forward as Kat leaned back. The excess lube was scraped over the large purple head disappearing inside of her. As mom's sphincter closed just over the engorged helmet she moaned.

"Oh Danny promise to never stop doing that." Kat hissed.

"That is so wicked!" Christi squealed in awe.

"All of him baby, put it all in!" Mom demanded.

Christi gripped my cock with one hand and gently pushed my ass forward with her other. Before we reached the end I felt that familiar shudder as a mini orgasm pulsed through mom. She buried her head in a pillow as her back arched then slammed back forcing my cock all the way in.

"Fuck me baby. Don't stop even if I beg!" Kat growled.

I hadn't pumped her more than a just a few strokes when out of the corner of my eye I see Lizzy approach. Between her shapely legs is a long slender black cock secured in a harness. Lizzy's white teeth shone brightly as she happily approached.

Christi giggled in anticipation as she helped Lizzy under mom. I thought I would cum as Christi guided the cock in mom's pussy along beside mine. It was then I knew the three of the choreographed this entire night. Mom knew that getting me to cum first would desensitize my cock enough to last longer in her ass.

Only Christi seemed to be ignored, but as soon as Lizzy and I were both firmly established deep inside my mom she moved beside Lizzy so Kat could eat her pussy. They may have planned it but I doubt they had practiced.

We were all laughing and shifting to make it work. Lizzy and I would alternate one time then synchronize a few strokes later. Kat was crying out in pleasure as Christi complained when Kat abandoned her pussy.

The harness rubbed Lizzy's clit but only at the proper angle. I was laughing just from watching it all unfold after being kept in the dark earlier. Then after about five minutes there was a sort of silence taking place as the three of them started to pleasure each other.

I looked on in amazement as I continued to ram my cock in Kat's ass along the dildo in her pussy. After ten to fifteen minutes their gentle movements became more meaningful. The quiet whimpers and cooing turned to moans and grunts.

Christi had been watching me fuck mom's ass but now her eyes were closed, she seemed to be closest. Christi was forcing mom's head hard against her cunt. Her chest was heaving her stomach tensed, her upper teeth dug into her lower lip.

Lizzy was next with her eyes closed too. I could see the perspiration along Lizzy's hair line, the speed at which she was fuckin mom was very fast. Lizzy's mouth was open and she grunted out 'oh','oh,'oh', like a tennis player would each time they strike the ball.

Then out of nowhere mom's orgasm came like an asteroid crashing to earth. The chain reaction was incredible. Christi fell back letting go of Kat. She arched her back and thrust her pelvis up with her legs.

Lizzy slammed hard into mom burying the dildo to the hilt. Lizzy machine gunned mom's pussy as well as her own from below so rapidly the vibrations sent me over the edge.

"Yes Danny fill my ass!" Mom cried out just once as stabbed her in concert with my orgasm. The bed that had been shaking with all of the passion, all of our needs, and most of all the love, suddenly stopped in one heaping mound of sexual release. You could almost see the steam rising from their bodies.

Cum was leaking from mom's gaping ass, excitement coated the dildo Lizzy pulled from her pussy. Christi's pussy was red and swollen her clit naked and exposed. My cock still semi hard dripped semen from the tip. The smell of sex filled the stagnant air.

At first it was all kisses and embracing. Groping and fondling was replaced with giggles and laughter as we each realized what we had done. Mom rolled over placing Lizzy in the middle. The three all looked up at me as I leaned back still out of breath.

"We love you Danny." Kat said soberly. "Will promise to keep us happy?"

I looked at Lizzy and could see that twinkle in her eye.

"Lizzy I belong to you." I stated seriously.

Lizzy reached over and took a hand from both Christi and Kat. She looked at Christi.

"And Lizzy is not a Lezzy?" She asked just as seriously.

"I promise." Christi leaned over and kissed my wife.

Lizzy faced Kat.

"And I can watch?" Lizzy asked mom.

"Always." Kat replied with a kiss.

"Ok then." Lizzy grinned. "Danny will you keep us all happy?"

I hesitated several moments for it to sink in, for all of us. I looked at them each but especially Lizzy.

"Yes my love. As you wish." I leaned in to kiss her.

Lizzy pulled me on top of her.

"Good now fuck me before these greedy bitches get what's left of that cum."

Squeals of laughter erupted as Christi and mom realized what she said. With several pillows under Christi's ass Lizzy was pussy to pussy on top of her. Mom reached over to me and started feeding my erect cock in my wife's pussy. I fucked Lizzy as they ground their clits against one another.

"Now me!" Christi yelled breaking free from Lizzy's kisses.

Kat pulled my engorged cock from my wife's black pussy and shoved it in Christi's white one. Mom and I looked on as Lizzy's excitement dripped on my cock fucking Christi.

"Fuck is he so big." Christi mumbled. "Can you feel it Liz?"

"MMMMM." Lizzy cooed.

Every time one would get too excited mom would pull me out and guide me in the others dripping cunt. Kat would stroke my balls egging me on. Christi and Lizzy were kissing and moaning desperate to cum.

Mom toyed with them, one time she spread Lizzy's ass cheeks while I spanked her brown star with my oily cock.

"No way buster!" Lizzy yelled. Her ass pushed up in the air her body betraying her words.

"Do it!" Christi teased.

Lizzy slammed her pussy on Christi as mom stuffed me back in her cunt.

"I'm need to cum!" Lizzy hissed.

"Yesss..." Christi agreed.

Kat moved beside them stroking them and alternating kissing them.

"Now Danny, do it now, make us happy." Kat demanded.

It was as if my cock was wired in some way to her voice. Almost on que I started filling Lizzy's overheated cunt. Milky white froth oozed from her pussy as she convulsed in orgasm dripping into the equally convulsing pussy of Christi.

Before long my erection faded to the point I could no longer stay with the girls as they rode out their climaxes together. I flopped on the bed where Kat met me with a passionate kiss.

It was about four in the morning when I woke, later than usual, but considering last night it was expected. I had taken a shower alone before turning in, the girls frolicked together for theirs. I remember Lizzy joining me in bed before drifting asleep for good.

With mom and Christi in the other room I left Lizzy in bed and sat in the padded chair at the desk. With just the light from the computer screen I check my e-mail. Around four thirty I saw Lizzy's eyes glow in the dark.

Naked she joined me curling up in my lap and drifted back to sleep.

Around five Christi appeared at the opening between the rooms. She too was naked. When she saw Lizzy with me she looked disappointed. Christi turned to leave.

"It's ok you can have him." Lizzy startled us both when she spoke.

Moving slowly Lizzy unraveled herself from my lap and stepped across the room.

"Are you sure?" Christi asked as Lizzy stood beside her at the door.

Lizzy's black hand moved to caress Christi's face. She kissed her softly, her hand drifted lower caressing Christi's body. First one tit then the other was covered with Lizzy's long slender fingers. Moving further Lizzy passed over Christi's stomach stopping just over the small patch above her pussy.

Lizzy looked back over her shoulder at me, our eyes met, her lips parted and her bright white teeth pierced through the darkened room in a smile. At that moment I knew she understood how much I loved her.

"I'm sure." Lizzy finally replied still focused on me. "I'll go keep mom warm."

"She would like that." Christi answered.

Lizzy faced her, they kissed like lovers as they both caressed each other's bodies. Lizzy passed through the door out of sight. Christi joined me in the chair curling up in my lap. I kissed the top of her head as I turned back to face the computer.

Christi watched me as I worked. Before long the distinct sound of Kat moaning became apparent. I stopped typing, the sounds became louder and more distinct. It was clear they were both in the throes of passion.

"Do you want to go join them?" I whispered.

"I can't, Lizzy is not a lezzy." Christi bluntly reminded me. "I love them both, but sometimes the two of them together are just too much."

"Ok then." I laughed with her.

"Besides, I'm happy right where I am." Christi stretched up to kiss me.

She rested her head on my shoulder and closed her eyes. I listened for a bit longer then went back to work.

It was around seven when Lizzy walked back through the opening and stopped to look at Christi still curled up in my lap.

"You're up early?" I stated.

Christi lifted her head and rubbed her eyes. Looking at the clock she glanced over at Lizzy still at the open door.

"Is something wrong?" Christi asked concerned.

We both looked at Lizzy waiting for an answer. There was a calmness about her, a confidence she had not shown of late. Christi shifted uncomfortably as Lizzy focused on my eyes. Then that infectious smile crossed her face.

"No my love, everything is as it should be." Lizzy replied now looking at Christi.

Lizzy moved in the direction of the bathroom stopping just before entering.

"Would you like to join me?" Lizzy asked Christi by extending her hand.

"But you said.....?" Christi tensed up then looked at me a bit confused.

"Just a shower." Lizzy assured her.

I could feel Christi's whole body relax. The boundaries were again clear. I kissed Christi on top of the head and she moved to stand up. Christi walked to Lizzy where she received a quick peck on the lips. Standing naked together Lizzy leaned down and whispered in her ear.

Christi joyfully embraced my wife in response to the secret message. Their body's pressed together, one white, one black. Four tits mashed together, legs now intertwined, lips filled with passion pressed tight.

"I love you Elizabeth!" Christi blurted as soon as their lips parted.

When they separated Lizzy took Christi by the hand and looked at me.

"Danny your mother is waiting for you. When you're done your wives want to go home and be with their kids." Lizzy said with a big smile and a wink.

"Ok then." I replied standing up returning the wink.

They walked to the bathroom as I moved to the opening between the two rooms.

"Ok, and Danny, were in a hurry....." Lizzy giggled. She gripped one of Christi's nipples and gave it a firm tug. "..... then again maybe you could take your time."

Christi squealed in delight as Lizzy closed the door, a sign I was not invited. As it turned out it was for the best. I found Kat in bed anxiously awaiting my arrival. With lube in her hand she greased up my hard cock.

I moved in behind her, mom guided my cock to her quivering asshole. She held her breath as I slowly pressed through her pretend resistance. When I was fully embedded in her ass mom exhaled.

"Oh Danny, I'm so happy." Mom gushed. "Please go slow I want to enjoy every minute."

"Ok then." I laughed.

.....

We are on the way back home, the three of them talked all morning. We just finished lunch and now Lizzy is riding in the back with Christi sleeping. I can tell mom wants to join them for a nap but I think our marathon morning ass fuck has her a bit tender. She keeps shifting in her seat.

"Sorry." I say with a smirk.

"Don't be it reminds me of how much you love me." Kat replies.

I fold up the arm rest, mom lays a pillow across the console. Laying down now she closes her eyes. I reach over and stroke her hair. Mom grabs my hand and guides it inside her blouse and places it over her braless tit.

"Are you happy now?" She looks up one last time.

"I am." I grin.

"Ok then." Kat winks.

They're all asleep now, the miles pass steadily by. I take time to think about all that took place this past week, as well as the years before. I am happy. All I've ever wanted to do is make other people happy.

Not just the women in my life, not just my kids, not just my mom. Well to be honest especially my mom. But what I have truly tried to do is leave each person happier than when I met them. I haven't always succeeded, I am human too.

I've had my bad days, days I have not been at my best. I've learned there are some people you can never make happy. Still I try.

The thing is, it was not a price I paid, during it all I was happy too. Yes I have lost friends and family, I really never knew my dad, my first marriage ended in divorce, and my uncle was estranged for several years.

But I am happy, I have lived an incredible life at this young age.

.....
.....

It's the middle of June now. Jr. his wife Rachel and their 6 month old child moved into the house directly behind ours in February. They are settled in and doing quite well now that things have settled down. Sam and his wife welcomed their new baby at the end of May. They moved into the house beside Jr. in April just before Scarlet graduated college.

Lizzy is happier than ever before. Not only does she have six kids at home she has two new babies to dote over. With her sister's -in law so near they have grown closer as well. Cindy is already planning the days when she gets to babysit.

Sharon and Nikki still live just down the coast in the condo. They have been married for almost nine months and I can honestly say Nikki has never been happier. Sharon and I have not spent any alone time since before they got married. Nikki has given her blessing but Sharon and I both agreed that for now its best we avoid our encounters.

Sally and Bill have been traveling often. We see them regularly when they are in town. I have not gone back on my word with my uncle and never will. If it's possible I think we love each other even more. Sally with me for keeping my word, me with her for understanding why.

Kat later told me about the conversations she had with Christi and Lizzy during the trip back at our previous home. There was a meeting of the minds so to speak. An agreement of sorts, a pact they entered into.

Christi has been an incredible addition to the family. Regarding the other women she is strictly Kat's lover. There has never been any question or suggestion that will ever change. Christi and I rarely spend time alone intimately and for now without Lizzy watching.

Christi still joins me regularly early in the morning curling up in my lap while I read. Lizzy still enjoys watching Kat and Christi but rarely stays the night. Lizzy and Christi still sleep together as before and there is physical contact but as Lizzy says, panties must stay on at all times.

As for Lizzy since that trip she has been a much happier person. With Jr. Rachel, Sam and his wife Scarlet now living next door, Lizzy is now is surrounded by her whole family. Elizabeth is completely back to her old self. The confidence is back, her energy is back, but most of all that wonderful smile is back like it used to be.

The bond between Lizzy and Kat is hard to explain. Kat has filled a void in Lizzy's life her grandmother Val once filled. The loving, nurturing and trustworthy part Val once played. Unlike her mother Sharon, Lizzy has no desire to be a business woman. Like Val she just wants to be a mom.

Is Lizzy a lesbian? Will she ever be? No, I don't think so. As for the rare times she and Kat do get intimate? After listening all those years to Sharon and Val make love? After watching their movies together? I think Lizzy loves Kat so much she wants to show mom the only way she knows how.

Sally thinks so too. Besides Lizzy and I make love more often now than ever before. It's true, I finally have my wife back.

Lastly there is Kathryn my mom. We are as in love as we ever were. With Lizzy's renewed appetite for sex mom and I spend a few less nights together alone, a few more nights together with Lizzy.

Its 6: am Sunday June 19th, Christi is curled up in my lap sleeping. Lizzy just walked naked to the railing at the top of the stairs. Mom is joining her dressed in a robe. She leans on the railing as well her full tits spilling from inside the robe over the railing.

I know they are up to no good. As I chuckle I wake Christi, she rubs her eyes. Looking up at Kat and Lizzy, Christi giggles. Moving from my lap Christi sheds her pajamas and walks naked towards the stairs.

"Are you joining us?" Christi whispers.

Without waiting for an answer she slowly climbs the steps. Looking up I see Kat and Lizzy just breaking off a lingering kiss. Kat is naked now, she turns in the direction of our bedroom, I can see the impression of her favorite butt plug stuffed in her ass.

I watch as she egurates her movements for my benefit. When she is out of sight I look to find Lizzy and Christi embracing each other. Lizzy knows this drives me crazy. She bends Christi over the railing gripping both of Christi's

white tits. Her long black fingers slip over the creamy slopes until Christi moans as Lizzy tugs her nipples.

"Are you coming now?" Lizzy asks in her sultry voice. "It is father's day you know?"

With an invitation like that I scribble two words on the paper I was reading and head up the steps.

THE END